SUNAN ABU DAWUD

English Translation with Explanatory Notes
by
Prof. Ahmad Hasan

Volume - III
SUNAN ABU DAWUD

ENGLISH TRANSLATION WITH EXPLANATORY NOTES
by
AHMAD HASAN
Professor, Islamic Research Institute
Islamia University, Islamabad

Volume III (Chapters 1338-1890)

KITAB BHAVAN
New Delhi-110002
CONTENTS

XVIII. KITAB AL-AQDIYAH (Book of the Office of Judge). pp. 1013-1033

1338. Seeking the Office of Judge, 1013
1339. On A Judge who Commits an Error, 1013
1340. Seeking the Office of Judge and Making Haste in Arriving at A Decision, 1014
1341. Disapproval of Bribe, 1015
1342. Presents for Rulers, 1015
1343. Procedure of Adjudication, 1016
1344. The Validity of the Decision of a Judge if He Commits an Error, 1016
1345. How Should the Litigants Sit Before the Judge, 1018
1346. Giving Judgment by a Judge when He is in Anger, 1018
1347. Judgment between the Protected People (i.e. Unbelievers), 1018
1348. Employment of Opinion in Giving Judgment, 1019
1349. Conciliation, 1020
1350. Witnesses, 1020
1351. On A Man who Helps the Litigants but He Does not know Their Case, 1021
1352. False Witness, 1022
1353. Persons whose Testimony is Rejected, 1022
1354. The Testimony of a Nomad Arab against a Townsman, 1022
1355. Bearing Witness to Fosterage, 1023
1356. Witness of the Protected People and about Leaving a Will during Journey, 1023
1357. When a Ruler Knows the Truth of a Single Witness, He is Permitted to Give His Judgment on Its Basis, 1024
1358. To Make a Decision on the Basis of an Oath and a Witness, 1025
1359. If Two Persons Claim a Thing, but have no Evidence how Should a Judge Decide This Case, 1027
1360. The Defendant Should Take an Oath, 1027
1361. How Should One Take an Oath, 1028
1362. If the Defendant is a Protected Man (Unbeliever) Should he Take an Oath, 1028
1363. Asking the Defendant to Take an Oath for His Knowledge about An Action which He has Done Himself, 1028
1364. How Should a Protected Man (Unbeliever) be Adjourned, 1029
1365. A Man may Take an Oath to Establish His Right, 1029

[iii]
1366. Imprisonment in the Case of Payment of Debt and Other Cases, 1030
1367. Acting as an Attorney or Agent, 1031
1368. Some More Problems regarding Office of a Judge, 1031

XIX. KITĀB AL-‘ILM (Book of Knowledge), pp. 1034-1039

1369. Exhortation to the Pursuit of Knowledge, 1034
1370. Transmission of Traditions from the People of the Book, 1035
1371. Writing the Knowledge, 1035
1372. Gravity in Lying about the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), 1035
1373. Interpretation of the Book of Allah without Knowledge, 1036
1374. Repetition of a Tradition, 1037
1375. Quick Narration of Traditions, 1037
1376 Precaution in Giving Legal Decisions, 1037
1377. Disapproval of Concealing Knowledge, 1038
1378. Excellence of Spreading Knowledge, 1038
1379. Relating Traditions from the Children of Banū Isrā‘īl, 1039
1380. Seeking Knowledge not for the Pleasure of Allah, 1039
1381. Relating Anecdotes and Giving Instructions, 1039

XX. KITĀB AL-ASHRIBAH (Book of Drinks), pp. 1041-1055

1382. Prohibition of Wine, 1041
1383. Grapes Pressed for Wine, 1042
1384. Turning Wine into Vinegar, 1042
1385. From what Wine is Made, 1043
1386. Prohibition of Intoxicants, 1043
1387. Dadhi, 1045
1388. Vessels of Wine, 1045
1389. Drink Made from Mixing of Various Kinds of Dates or Dates and Raisins, 1048
1390. Drink Made from Unripe Dates, 1049
1391. Description of the Drink Made from Raisins or Dates (Nabiah), 1050
1392. Drink Made from Honey, 1051
1393. On Nabīd (Date-Drink) when It Ferments 1051
1394. To Drink while Standing, 1052
1395. Drinking from the Mouth of a Water-Skin, 1053
1396. Drinking by Inverting the Heads of Skin Vessels, 1052
1397. Drinking from the Broken Place of a Cup, 1053
1398. Drinking from Gold and Silver Vessels, 1053
1399. Sipping Water with the Mouth, 1053
### Contents

1400. When Should the Supplier Drink, 1053
1401. Blowing in a Drink and Breathing into It, 1054
1402. What Should be Said while Drinking Milk, 1054
1403. Covering Vessels, 1055

**XXI. KITĀB AL-AT‘IMAH (Book of Foods), pp. 1056-1082:**

1404. Acceptance of Invitation for a Feast, 1056
1405. Recommendation for Holding a Wedding Feast, 1057
1406. Duration for Holding Wedding Feast, 1057
1407. Entertainment after Returning from Journey, 1058
1408. Hospitality, 1058
1409. Abrogation of the Rule that a Guest may Take His Due from the Property of Another Person, 1059
1410. Hospitality Provided by two Rivalling People, 1060
1411. Disapproved Action in the House in which a Guest is Entertained, 1060
1412. Which of the Two Men who Issue Invitation Together is More Entitled, 1060
1413. What Should A Man do when the Time of the Night Prayer Comes and the Evening Meal is Ready, 1061
1414. Washing Hands before Taking Food, 1061
1415. Washing only One Hand before Taking Food, 1062
1416. Taking Food in Haste, 1062
1417. Abomination of Expressing Disapproval of Food, 1062
1418. Taking Food Together, 1063
1419. Mentioning Allah's Name on Food, 1063
1420. Eating while Reclining, 1064
1421. Eating from the Top of the Dish, 1064
1422. Sitting at a Cloth to Eat Things that are Disapproved, 1065
1423. Eating with Right Hand, 1065
1424. Eating Meat, 1066
1425. Eating Pumpkin, 1066
1426. Eating *Tharid*, 1067
1427. Disapproval of Expressing the Dislike of Food, 1067
1428. Prohibition of Eating the Animal which Feeds on Filth and Drinking Its Milk, 1067
1429. Eating Hares-Flesh, 1068
1430. Eating Hare, 1068
1431. Eating Lizard, 1069
1432. Flesh of Bustard, 1070
1433. Eating Insects and Little Creatures of Land, 1070
1434. Things for which There is no Mention of Their Prohibition. 1070
1435. Eating the Hyena. 1071
1436. Prohibition of Eating Beasts of Prey. 1071
1437. Eating the Flesh of Domestic Asses. 1072
1438. Eating Locusts. 1073
1439. Eating the Fish which Dies in the Sea and Floats. 1074
1440. Eating Dead Meat of Necessity. 1074
1441. Gathering Two Kinds of Food. 1075
1442. Eating Cheese. 1075
1443. Vinegar. 1075
1444. Eating Garlic. 1076
1445. Dates. 1077
1446. Examining and Removing the Worms from the Dates while Eating Them. 1077
1447. Taking Two Dates Together. 1078
1448. Eating by Combining two Kinds of Food. 1078
1449. Eating in the Vessels of the People of the Book. 1078
1450. Animals of the Sea. 1079
1451. Falling of a Mouse into Clarified Butter. 1079
1452. Falling of a Fly in One's Food. 1080
1453. The Falling Down of a Morsel on the Ground. 1080
1454. Wiping Hands with a Handkerchief. 1081
1455. A Servant may Eat with His Master. 1081
1456. What Should A Man Say after Eating Food. 1081
1457. Washing Hands after Finishing the Food. 1081
1458. Prayer for A Man with whom One Eats as a Guest. 1082

XXII. KITĀB AL-TĪBB (Book of Medicine), pp. 1083-1094

1469. A Man should have Medical Treatment. 1083
1470. Prevention. 1083
1471. Cupping. 1084
1472. Place of Cupping. 1084
1473. Dates on which it is Commendable to Get Oneself Cupped. 1084
1474. Cutting of a Vein and Place of Cupping. 1085
1475. Cauterisation by Fire. 1085
1476. Snuffing of Medicine. 1086
1477. A Charm for One who is Possessed (Nashrah). 1086
1478. Using Antidote. 1086
1479. Disapproved Medicines. 1086
1480. 'Ajwah Dates. 1087
1471 Compressing the Uvula for Medical Treatment, 1088
1472 Command for the Use of Collyrium, 1088
1473 Evil Eye, 1088
1474 Suckling during Pregnancy or Intercourse with A Woman while She is Suckling A Child, 1089
1475 Hanging Amulets, 1089
1476 Spells,' 1090
1477 How Should the Spell be Used, 1091
1478 Medicine for Making Women Fat, 1094

XXIII. KITĀB AL-KAHANAH WA AL-TATAYYUR (Book of Divination and Omens), pp. 1095-1100

1479 The Diviner, 1095
1480 Astrology, 1095
1481 Geomancy by Drawing Lines and Augury from the Flight of Birds, 1096
1482 Taking Omens, 1096

XXIV. KITĀB AL-‘ITQ (Book of Emancipation of Slaves), pp. 1101-1112

1483 A Slave who has Entered into an Agreement to Purchase His Freedom Mukātab and Made a Part Payment, but Finally He is Unable to Complete the Amount or Dies, 1101
1484 Sale of Slave who entered into an Agreement to Purchase His Freedom when the Agreement is Repudiated, 1102
1485 Emancipation of a Slave on a Certain Condition, 1103
1486 Emancipation of Share in a Slave, 1104
1487 The View that the Slave will be Required to Work to Pay the Price of the Remaining Portion, 1104
1488 The View that a Slave will Not be Required to Work for Purchasing His Freedom, 1105
1489 Possession of a Slave who is a Relative to the Master and is Within the Prohibited Degrees, 1106
1490 Freedom of Slave Mothers, 1107
1491 Freedom of a Slave after the Death of His Master (Mudābbar), 1108
1492 Emancipation of Slaves Whose Price Exceeds One-third of the Property, 1109
1493 Emancipation of a Slave who has Property, 1110
1394 Emancipation of a Bastard Slave, 1110
1495 Reward for Emancipating a Slave, 1110
1496 Which of the Slaves is Better that Should be Emancipated, 1111
1497 Emancipation of a Slave while the Master is Healthy, 1112
XXV. KITĀB AL-HURŪF WA AL-QIRA’ĀT (Book of Dialects and Readings of the Qur’ān). pp. 1113-1121

1498 No Caption, 1113

XXVI. KITĀB AL-ḤAMMĀM (Book of Hot Baths), pp. 1122-1124

1499 Hot Baths, 1122
1500. Prohibition of Nudity, 1123
1501. Nudity, 1123

XXVII. KITĀB AL-LIBĀS (Book of Clothing) pp. 1125-1157

1502. No Caption, 1125
1503. Prayer for A Man who Puts on a New Garment, 1126
1504. On Wearing Shirt, 1126
1505. Outer Garments with Full-length Sleeves (Qabā‘), 1126
1506. Wearing Clothes for Gaining Fame, 1127
1507. Wearing Clothes of Wool and Hair, 1128
1508. Wearing Clothes of Superior Quality, 1128
1509. Wearing Coarsing Clothes, 1128
1510. Wearing Clothes Made of Silk and Wool (Khazz), 1129
1511 Wearing Silk, 1129
1512. The View that Disapproves of Wearing Silk, 1130
1513. Permission for Wearing Garment Ornamented with Silk and a Garment with the Warp of Silk, 1132
1514. Wearing a Garment of Silk for Some Excuse, 1133
1515. Wearing Silk by Women, 1133
1516. Striped Cloaks of the Yemen, 1133
1517. White Garments, 1134
1518. Washing the Clothes and Wearing Wornout and Dirty Clothes, 1134
1519. Garment Dyed with a Yellow Colour, 1134
1520. Green Colour, 1135
1521. Red Colour, 1135
1522. Concession in Wearing Red Clothes, 1136
1523. Wearing Black Clothes, 1137
1524. Fringe of Clothes, 1137
1525. Turbans, 1137
1526 Wrapping Oneself Completely in a Garment (Sāmma‘), 1138
1527. Opening the Buttons of the Collar, 1138
Contents

1528. Covering the Head with a Cloth, 1139
1529. Hanging Down the Lower Garment below the Ankles, 1139
1530. Pride, 1141
1531. Up to What Extent One Should Wear the Lower Garment, 1142
1532. Women's Dress, 1143
1533. On the Meaning of the Qur'anic Verses "that they Should Cast their Outer Garments over their Persons," 1144
1534. On the Meaning of Qur'anic Verse: "that they Should Draw Their Veils over Their Bosoms," 1144
1535. How Much Beauty can a Woman Display 1144
1536. A Slave is Allowed to see the Unveiled Head (i.e. Hair) of His Mistress, 1145
1537. Meaning of the Verse: "... or Male Servants Free of Physical Needs" 1145
1538. On the Meaning of the Qur'anic Verse: "and Say to the Believing Women that they Should Lower their Gaze," 1146
1539. Veil of a Woman, 1147
1540. Wearing Fine Linen by Women, 1148
1541. Hanging Down of Lower Garment by Women, 1148
1542. Skins of the Dead Animals, 1149
1543. The View that the Skins of the Dead Animals Should not be Made Use of, 1150
1544. Skins of Leopards and Beasts of Prey, 1151
1545. Wearing Sandals, 1152
1546. Bedding, 1153
1547. Hanging Curtains, 1154
1548. Figure of a Cross in the Garment, 1155
1549. Picture, 1155

XXVIII. KITĀB AL-TARAJJUL (Book of Combing the Hair), pp. 1158-1173

1550. No Caption, 1158
1551. Recommendation for Using Perfume, 1159
1552. Setting the Hair Right, 1159
1553. Dye of Women, 1159
1554. Adding False Hair, 1160
1555. Return of Perfume, 1161
1556. On A Woman who Uses Perfume when She Goes out, 1161
1557. Use of Khaliq by Men, 1162
1558. Parting of the Hair, 1164
1559. Extent to Which the Hair should Hang, 1165
1560. Growing Long Hair, 1165
1561. Plaiting the Hair by a Man, 1165
1562. Shaving the Head, 1165
1563. Lock of Hair, 1166
1564. Concession for Keeping Lock of Hair, 1166
1565. Clipping the Moustaches, 1166
1566. Plucking out Grey Hair, 1167
1567. Hair Dye, 1168
1568. Yellow Dye, 1169
1569. Black Dye, 1169
1570. Use of Ivory, 1170

XXIX. KITĀB AL-KHATAM (Book of Signet Rings), pp. 1171-1176
1571. Fashioning a Seal in the Form of a Ring, 1171
1572. Abandonment of Wearing Signet Rings, 1172
1573. Signet Ring of Gold, 1172
1574. Signet Ring of Iron, 1173
1575. Wearing the Signet Ring on the Right or Left Hand, 1174
1576. Wearing Little Tinkling Bells on Legs, 1174
1577. Fastening Teeth with Gold, 1175
1578. Wearing Gold by Women, 1175

XXX. KITĀB AL-FITAN WA AL-MALĀḤIM (Book of Trials and Fierce Battles), pp. 1177-1189
1579. Fitan and Their Predication, 1177
1580. Prohibition of Running to Commotion (Fitnah), 1182
1581. Restraining the Tongue during the Period of Commotion, 1185
1582. Concession for Living in the Desert during the Period of Commotion and Trial, 1186
1583. Prohibition of Fighting during the Period of Commotion, 1186
1584. Gravity of the Sin of Killing a Believer, 1186
1585. There is an Expectation of Forgiveness after being Killed during the Period of Commotion (Fitnah), 1189

XXXI. KITĀB AL-MAHDI (Book of the Promised Deliverer), pp. 1190-1193
1586. No Caption, 1190

XXXII. KITĀB AL-MALĀḤIM (Book of Battles), pp. 1191-1211
1587. Description of Happenings in Every Century, 1194
1588. Battles with the Byzantines, 1194
1589. Signs of Battles, 1195
1590. Order of the Battles, 1195
1591. Nations Summoning One Another to Attack Muslims, 1196
1592. Bastion of Muslims during the Great Wars, 1196
1593. The End of Civil Strife among Muslims during Battles, 1196
1594. Prohibition of Agitating the Turks and Abyssinians, 1197
1595. Fighting Against the Turks, 1197
1596. On the Mention of al-Basrah, 1198
1597. Prohibition of Agitating the Abyssinians, 1199
1598. The Signs of the Last Hour, 1199
1599. Uncovering of a Treasure by Euphrates, 1201
1600. The Coming Forth of the Dajjāl (Antichrist), 1201
1601. Al-Jassāsah, The Spy of the Dajjāl, a Beast which is to Seek for News to Take to the Dajjāl (Antichrist), 1203
1602. The Story of Ibn Sāvād, 1205
1603. Command and Prohibition, 1207
1604. The Coming of the Last Hour, 1210

XXXIII. KITĀB AL-ḤUDŪD (Book of Prescribed Punishments) pp. 1212-1256

1605. Punishment of an Apostate, 1212
1606. Punishment of A Man who Abuses the Prophet (may peace be upon him), 1214
1607. Fighting against Allah and His Prophet (may peace be upon him), 1216
1608. Intercession regarding Punishments, 1218
1609. Forgiving Faults which Involve Prescribed Punishment before They are Reported to the Authorities, 1219
1610. Concealing Crime of Criminals to whom Prescribed Punishment Applies, 1219
1611. On A Man to whom Prescribed Punishment Applies Comes and Accepts the Crime, 1220
1612. Suggestion to a Criminal to whom the Prescribed Punishment Applies, 1220
1613. Acknowledgment of a Criminal who Does not Name His Crime Definitely, 1221
1614. Investigation by Beating a Criminal, 1221
1615. For How Much Property a Thief’s Hand Should be Cut Off, 1222
1616. The Hand is Not to be Cut Off for Snatching and Treachery, 1224
1617. On a Man who Steals from a Fortified Place, 1224
1618. Cutting of the Hands in Case One Denies the Loan, 1225.
1619. On A Lunatic who Commits Theft or a Crime to which the Prescribed Punishment Applies, 1226
1620. On A Boy who Commits a Crime to which the Prescribed Punishment Applies, 1227
1621. On a Man who Commits Theft during a Warlike Expedition—Should His Hand be Cut Off, 1228
1622. On Cutting the Hand of a Man who Steals the Shroud of a Dead Body from the Grave, 1228
1623. On a Thief who Commits Theft Repeatedly, 1229
1624. Hanging the Hand of a Thief on His Neck, 1229
1625. Sale of a Slave when he Commits Theft, 1230
1626. Stoning of a Fornicator, 1230
1627. Stoning of Mā'īz B. Mālik, 1232
1628. On a Woman of the Tribe of Juhainah whom the Prophet (may peace be upon him) Ordered to be Stoned for Committing Fornication, 1237
1629. Stoning a Jew and a Jewess for Committing Fornication, 1239
1630. On a Man who Commits Fornication with his Female Relative within Prohibited Degrees, 1243
1631. On a Man who Commits Fornication with His Wife's Slavegirl, 1244
1632. On a Man who Does as Lot's People Did, 1245
1633. On the Punishment of a Man who has Sexual Intercourse with an Animal, 1246
1634. On a Man who Confesses Committing Fornication with a Woman who does not Confess, 1246
1635. On a Man who does with a Woman everything except Sexual Intercourse (i.e. Kissing and Embracing) and then Repents before He is Seized by Authorities, 1247
1636. On a Slavegirl who Commits Fornication, but She is not Married, 1247
1637. Inflicting Prescribed Punishment on a Person who is Sick, 1248
1638. On a person who Launches a Charge of Fornication against Another Person, 1249
1639. Prescribed Punishment for Drinking Wine, 1250
1640. On a Man who Drinks Wine Repeatedly, 1252
1641. Inflicting Prescribed Punishment in the Mosque, 1255
1642. Flogging, 1256
1643. On Striking the Face while Inflicting Prescribed Punishment, 1256

XXXIV. KITĀB AL-DIYAT (Book of Types of Blood-Wit), 1257-1289
1644. Life for Life, 1257
1645. One Should Not be Punished for Wrong Done by One's Brother or Father, 1257
1646. If Authorities ask Relatives of a Slain to Forgo Their Right, what Should They Do, 1258
1647. If the Legal Heir of a Man who has been Killed Intentionally Agrees to Accept Blood-wit the Slayer will be Asked to Pay Him, 1261
1648 Killing the Slayer after Accepting Blood-wit from Him. 1262
1649. If A Man Gives anyone Poison to Drink or Eat, will Retaliation be Taken on Him or Not. 1262
1650. If A Man Kills His Slave or Cuts Off one of His Limbs, Retaliation will be Taken on Him. 1265
1651. Taking Oaths by the People of a Locality regarding a Murder Therein, 1266
1652. Abandonment of Retaliation in the Case of Qasāmah (Taking Oaths), 1268
1653 Retaliation shall be Taken on the Slayer with a Stone or in the Same Manner as He Killed, 1269
1654 Should A Muslim be Killed for an Infidel, 1270
1655. If A Man finds Someone with His Wife, should He Kill Him, 1271
1656. If Someone is Injured Accidentally by the Collector of Zakāt, what Should be Done, 1272
1657 Taking Retaliation without a Weapon of Iron, 1272
1658 Retaliation for Striking and Giving Retaliation by a Ruler on Himself, 1273
1659. Forgiving Retaliation by Women, 1273
1660. On A Person who is Killed among his People and His Slayer is Not Known, 1274
1661. The Amount of Blood-wit, 1275
1662. Blood-wit for Accidental Killing, that is Quasi-Intentional Killing, 1276
1663. Ages of Camels, 1278
1664. Blood-wit for Limbs, 1279
1665. Blood-wit for an Unborn Child, 1281
1666. Blood-wit for a Mukātab, a Slave who has Made an Agreement to Purchase His Freedom, 1284
1667. Blood-wit for a Dhimmi, a Protected Man, in a Muslim Country, 1285
1668. On A Man who Fights against Another Man who Defends Himself from Him, 1285
1669. On A Man who Practises Medicine without Having Its Knowledge and Does Harm to the Patient, 1286
1670. Blood-wit for Unintentional Murder which Resembles Intentional, 1287
1671. On the Offence of a Slave who Belongs to the Poor People, 1287
1672. On a Man who is Killed Blindly when the People are Fighting with Each Other, 1287
1673. On An Animal which Kicks with Its Leg, 1288
1674. No Retaliation is Payable for a Wound Caused by a Dumb Animal, for a Mine and for A Well, 1288
1675. The Spreading of the Fire, 1289
1676. Retaliation for a Tooth, 1289
XXXV. KITĀB AL-SUNNAH (Book of Model Behaviour of the Prophet), 1290-1452.

1677. Explanation of the Sunnah, 1290
1678. Prohibition of Controversy and Following the Allegorical Verses in the Qur’ān, 1291
1679. Keeping Away from Heretics and Hating Them, 1292
1680. The Abandonment of Saluting the Heretics, 1292
1681. Prohibition of Controversy about the Qur’ān, 1293
1682. Adherence to the Sunnah, 1293
1683. Adherence to the Sunnah, 1295
1684. Order of the Companions in Respect of Merit, 1299
1685. The Caliphs, 1300
1686. Excellence of the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), 1306
1687. Prohibition of Abusing the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), 1307
1688. Proof of Abū Bakr’s Caliphate, 1308
1689. Instructions regarding Refraining from Speech during the Period of Turmoil, 1308
1690. Making a Distinction between the Prophets, 1309
1691. Refutation of the Murji’ah, 1311
1692. Proof of Increase and Decrease of Faith, 1312
1693. Belief in Divine Decree, 1314
1694. The Offspring of Polytheists, 1320
1695. The Jahmīyyah, 1324
1696. The Vision of Allah, 1325
1697. Refutation of the Jahmīyyah, 1325
1698. The Qur’ān, the Word of Allah, 1325
1699. Intercession, 1326
1700. The Resurrection and the Blowing of the Trumpet, 1326
1701. The Creation of Paradise and Hell, 1327
1702. The Pond, 1327
1703. Questioning and Punishment in Grave, 1329
1704. The Scale, 1331
1705. The Antichrist, (Dajjal), 1331
1706. On the Killing of the Khawārij, 1332
1707. Fighting against the Khawārij, 1333
1708. Fighting with the Thieves, 1336
XXXVI. KITĀB AL-ADAB (Book of General Behaviour) pp. 1338-1383

1739. Tolerance and the Character of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), 1338
1740. Dignified Bearing, 1339
1741. On A Man who Suppresses His Anger, 1339
1742. What Should be Said at the Time of Anger, 1340
1743. Forgiveness, 1341
1744. Good Living with the People, 1341
1745. Modesty, 1343
1746. Good Character, 1344
1747. Disapproval of Boasting in Matters, 1344
1748. Disapproval of Praising Mutually, 1344
1749. Gentleness, 1345
1750. Thanking for an Act of Kindness, 1346
1751. Sitting in the Roads, 1346
1752. Spaciousness in Meetings, 1347
1753. Sitting Partly in Shade and Partly in Sun, 1348
1754. Sitting in a Circle, 1348
1755. Sitting in the Middle of a Circle, 1348
1756. On A Man who Gets up from His Place for Another, 1349
1757. The Man with whom One Should Keep Company, 1349
1758. Disapproval of Disputing, 1350
1759. The Manner of Speech, 1351
1760. Address, 1351
1761. Treatment of People according to Their Ranks, 1352
1762. On A Man who Sits between Two Men without Their Permission, 1352
1763. How Should A Man Sit, 1352
1764. Disapproved Manner of Sitting, 1353
1765. Prohibition of Talking After Night Prayer, 1353
1766. On A Man who Sits Cross-Legged, 1353
1767. Whispering, 1354
1768. If A Man Gets Up from his Place and then Returns, He is Entitled to his place, 1354
1769. It is Disapproved that A Man Gets up from the Meeting and does not Remember Allah, 1354
1770. Atonement of an Assembly, 1355
1771. Complaint against Someone in the Assembly, 1355
1772. To be Careful of the People, 1356
1773. On the Walking of a Man, 1357
1744. Placing One Leg Over the Other while Lying on the Back, 1357
1745. Publishing Secrets and Talks of Others, 1357
1746. On a Mischief-maker, 1358
1747. A Two-Faced Man, 1358
1748. Back-biting, 1358
1749. On A Man who Guards a Muslim from Slandering, 1360
1750. The Man whose Slander is not Taken into Consideration, 1361
1751. If A Man Slanders another Man He Makes it Lawful for Him, 1361
1752. Searching for the Faults of the People, 1362
1753. Concealing the Faults of A Muslim, 1362
1754. Brotherhood, 1363
1755. Humbleness, 1363
1756. Taking Revenge, 1364
1757. Prohibition for Abusing the Dead, 1365
1758. Prohibition of Oppression and Pride, 1365
1759. Envy, 1366
1760. Cursing, 1367
1761. Cursing the One who Oppresses, 1368
1762. On A Man who Keeps Apart from His Muslim Brother, 1368
1763. Suspicion, 1370
1764. Sincerity and Protection, 1370
1765. Putting Things Right between People, 1370
1766. Singing, 1371
1767. Disapproval of Singing and Blowing Pipe, 1372
1768. Rules about Hermaphrodites (Mukhannathun), 1372
1769. Playing with Dolls, 1373
1770. Swing, 1374
1771. Prohibition of Playing Backgammon, 1374
1772. Playing with Pigeons, 1375
1773. Mercy, 1375
1774. Sincere Conduct, 1375
1775. Helping A Muslim, 1376
1776. Change of Names, 1377
1777. Changing the Bad Name, 1377
1778. Nickname, 1380
1779. On Giving the Kunyah (Surname) Abu 'Isa, 1380
1780. Calling the Son of Another Man My Sonny, 1381
1781. On A Man who Gives Himself the Kunyah Abu al-Qasim, 1381
1782. The View that Both the Name and Kunyah of the Prophet (may peace be upon
him) should be Combined in Giving Names. 1381
1781 Permission for Combining both His Name and the Kunyah, 1382
1784. On A Man who Calls Himself by a Kunyah but He Has no Child, 1383
1785. On Giving the Kunyah to a Woman, 1383
1786. Allusions, 1384
1787 Using the Phrases “They alleged” or “It is alleged” by a Man, 1384
1788. Using the Phrase “To proceed” (Ammā ba’d) by a Man in His Address, 1385
1789 On Calling the Grapes Kerm, and Safeguarding the Tongue, 1385
1790. A slave Should not Say to His Master and Mistress “My Lord”, 1385
1791. One should not Say “Khabuthat Nafsī” (My heart is heaving), 1386
1792. The same Caption as Above, 1386
1793 Calling the Night Prayer (‘Isha’) Atamah, 1387
1794 Permission for That, 1388
1795 Strict Prohibition of Lying, 1389
1796. To Harbour Good Thoughts, 1389
1797. Promise, 1390
1798 To Boast of Receiving a Thing which a Man Has not been Given, 1391
1799 Joking, 1391
1800. On A Man who Takes Something in Jest, 1392
1801. Eloquence, 1392
1802. Poetry, 1393
1803. Visions, 1395
1804. Yawning, 1397
1805. Sneezing, 1398
1806. Response to the One who Sneezes, 1398
1807. How Many Times should One Respond to the One who Sneezes, 1399
1808. How should One Invoke Blessing on a Dhimmi (Protected Non-Muslim) when He Sneezes, 1399
1809. On A Man who Sneezes and Does not Praise Allah, 1400
1810. On a Man who Lies on His Stomach, 1400
1811. Sleeping on the Roof of a House with no Stone Palisade, 1401
1812. Sleeping in the State of Purification, 1401
1813. Where should One Face while Sleeping, 1401
1814. What should A Man Say when Going to Sleep, 1402
1815. What should A Man Say when He is Alarmed while Asleep at Night, 1404
1816. Glorifying Allah at the Time of Going to Bed, 1405
1817. What should One Say in the Morning, 1406
1818. What should a Man Say when He Sights the New Moon, 1412
1819. What should a Man Say when He Goes out of His House, 1413
1820. What should a Man Say when He Goes into His House, 1413
1821. What should a Man Say when a Stormy wind Blows, 1413
1822. Rain, 1414
1823. Cocks and Beasts, 1414
1824. The Braying of Asses and the Barking of Dogs, 1415
1825. When a Child is Born, *Adhān* (Call to Prayer Should be Called in Its Ear, 1415
1826. On A Man who Seeks Refuge from Another, 1416
1827. To Ward Off the Evil Promptings, 1416
1828. On A Man (Slave) who Falsely Attributes Himself to a Man as His Emancipator who is not His Emancipator, 1417
1829. Pride of Ancestry, 1418
1830. Party Spirit, 1418
1831. If A Man Loves another Man, He should Inform Him about it, 1419
1832. Consultation, 1420
1833. On a Man who Guides to a Good (Deed), 1420
1834. Abstention from Evil Desire, 1421
1835. Intercession, 1421
1836. If A Man Writes a Letter, He should begin It with His Name, 1421
1837. How to Write a Letter to an Unbeliever, 1422
1838. Kindness to the Parents, 1422
1839. Excellence of a Man who Cares for An Orphan, 1424
1840. On A Man who Takes the Responsibility of An Orphan, 1424
1841. Rights on Neighbourhood, 1424
1842. Rights of a Slave, 1425
1843. On a Slave who shows Sincere Conduct, 1427
1844. On A Man who Corrupts the Slave against His Master, 1428
1845. Asking Permission to Enter a House, 1428
1846. How should a Man Ask Permission, 1429
1847. How many Times should a Man ask Permission to Enter the House, 1429
1848. Asking Permission by Knocking at the Door, 1431
1849. If A Man is Invited, it Will be Considered Permission, 1432
1850. Asking Permission to Enter the House on three Occasions of Underset by the Qur’ān, 1432
1851. Spreading Salutation, 1434
1852. How Should one Salute, 1434
1853. Excellence of the One who is First to Give a Salutation, 1435
1854. Who Should give a Salutation First, 1435
1855. If A Man Separates from Another Man and then Meets Him, He should Salute Him, 1435
Saluting the Children, 1436
Saluting the Women, 1436
Saluting the Protected People (Ahl al-Dhimmah) Non-Muslims, 1436
Saluting at the Time of Leaving an Assembly, 1437
Disapproval of Saluting "Upon you be Peace," 1437
It is Sufficient if one Man from among the Assembly Reply to the Salutation, 1438
On Shaking Hands, 1438
Embracing, 1438
Standing Up in Honour of Some Person, 1439
On Father Kissing the Children, 1440
Kissing between Both Eyes (Forehead), 1440
Kissing on the Cheeks, 1440
Kissing the Hand, 1441
Kissing the Body, 1441
Kissing the Foot, 1441
On A Man who Says: May Allah Make me Ransom for You, 1442
On A Man who Says: May Allah Make Your Eye Happy, 1442
On A Man who Says to Another Man: May Allah Guard You, 1442
The Standing Up of a Man for Another Man, 1442
On A Man who Says: So and S. Gives You a Greeting, 1443
On A Man who Calls Another Man and He says: At Your Service, 1443
On A Man who Says to Another Man: May Allah Make Your Teeth Laugh, 1444
Building a House, 1444
Building a Room Upstairs, 1445
Cutting a Lote-tree, 1445
Removing a Harmful Thing from the Road, 1446
Extinguishing the Fire at Night, 1447
Killing the Snakes, 1447
Killing the Geckos, 1449
Killing the Ants, 1450
Killing Frogs, 1451
Throwing Pebbles, 1451
Circumcision of Girls, 1451
The Walking of Women with Men in the Road, 1452
On a Man who Abuses Time, 1452
INDEX, 1453-1535
Chapter 1338
SEEKING THE OFFICE OF JUDGE

(3564) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who has been appointed a judge has been killed without a knife.  

(3565) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who has been appointed a judge among the people has been killed without a knife.

Chapter 1339
ON A JUDGE WHO COMMITS AN ERROR

(3566) Buraidah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Judges are of three types, one of whom will go to Paradise and two to Hell. The one who will go to Paradise is a man who knows what is right and gives judgment accordingly; but a man who knows what is right and acts tyrannically in his judgment will go to Hell; and a man who gives judgment for people when he is ignorant will go to Hell.

Abū Dāwūd said: On this subject this is the soundest tradition, that is, the tradition of Ibn Buraidah: Judges are of three types.

(3567) ‘Amr b. al-‘Āṣ reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a ruler gives a decision having tried his best to decide correctly and is right, he will have double reward; and when he gives a decision having tried his best

3010 A number of traditions express disapproval of undertaking the office of judge, for there is always a danger of giving a wrong decision. An animal killed with a knife does not feel so much trouble as the one which is killed without a knife. This simile refers to profound and perpetual trouble for a judge. If he gives right decision the defeated party will be displeased with him. If he gives wrong judgment, he will be punished in the next world. This tradition indicates that a man should avoid the office of judge as far as possible, for it involves great responsibility.
to decide correctly and is wrong, he will have a single reward.3011

I narrated it to Abū Bakr b. Ḥazm. He said: Abū Salamah reported from Abū Hurairah in a similar manner.

(3568) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone seeks the office of judge among Muslims till he gets it and his justice prevails over his tyranny, he will go to Paradise; but the man whose tyranny prevails over his justice will go to Hell.

(3569) Ibn 'Abbās said: "If any do fail to judge by (the light of) what Allah, hath revealed, they are (no better than) unbelievers" up to "wrongdoers."3012 These three verses were revealed about the Jews, particularly about Quraizah and al-Naḍlr.3013

Chapter 1340

SEEKING THE OFFICE OF JUDGE AND MAKING HASTE IN ARRIVING AT A DECISION

(3570) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Bishr al-Anṣārī al-Azraq said: Two men from the locality of Kindah came while Abū Mas‘ūd al-Anṣārī was sitting in a circle. They said: Is there any man who decides between us. A man from the circle said: I. Abū Mas‘ūd took a handful of pebbles and threw at him, saying: Hush! It is disapproved to make haste in decision.3014

(3571) Anas b. Malik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone desires the office of judge and seeks help for it, he will be left to his own devices; if anyone does not desire it, nor does he seek help for it, Allah will

3011. This shows that a competent mujtahid is not a sinner if he commits an error in his decision, rather he will get a single reward. In case he is right, he will get double reward: one for his effort and the other for right decision. But it is remarkable that a competent man should exercise ijtihād. Every layman is not allowed to derive the rules of law from the Qur’ān and the Sunnah. A mujtahid must have perfect knowledge of the Qur’ānic injunctions, traditions (Sunnah) of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), consensus (ijma‘) of the Muslims, opinions of the Companions and method of employing analogy (qiyyās) ('Awn al-Ma‘b d. III, 325).


3013. It means that if a Muslim decides unjustly or does not give his judgment according to the Qur’ānic injunctions, he does not become an unbeliever. He is a sinner and evil-doer. Ibn ‘Abbās says that these verses were revealed about the Jews who violated the covenant with the Prophet (may peace be upon him). These verses refer to Jews and not to Muslims. An unjust and tyrannical judgment is grave sin but not unbelief.

3014. One should deeply consider the matter when one gives a decision. A man sometimes commits an error in giving judgment if he decides a matter in a hurry.
Ch. 1342  ]  Presents for Rulers  [ 1015

send down an angel who will direct him aright.\[^{3015}\]  
Wakil said: (This tradition has also been transmitted) by Isrāʾīl, from ʿAbd al-Aʿlāʾ, from Bilāl b. Abl Mūsā, from Anas, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Abū ʿAwānah said: from ʿAbd al-Aʿlāʾ, from Bilāl b. Mirdās al-Fazārī, from Khaithamah al-Bāṣrī, from Anas.

(3572) Abū Buradah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: We will never employ or we shall not employ (the narrator is doubtful) in our work one who wants it.\[^{3016}\]

Chapter 1341

DISAPPROVAL OF BRIBE

(3573) ʿAbd Allah b. ʿAmr said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) cursed the one who bribes and the one who takes bribe.\[^{3017}\]

Chapter 1342

PRESENTS FOR RULERS

(3574) ʿAdl b. ʿUmairat al-Kindt reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: O people, if any of you is put in an administrative post on our behalf and conceals from us a needle or more, he is acting unfaithfully, and will bring it on the Day of Resurrection. A black man from the Ḍuʿār, as if I am seeing him, stood and said: Apostle of Allah, take back from me my post. He asked: What is that? He replied: I heard you say such and such. He said: And I say that. If we appoint anyone to an office, he must bring what is connected with it, both little and much. What he is given, he may take, and he must refrain from what is kept away.

3015. This shows that a man should not seek the office of judge himself. If he is given this office without his desire, Allah will help him in his work.

3016. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) refused to employ a man for an important work if he desired this office himself. The reason is that Allah does not help such a man who seeks an office himself.

3017. This tradition shows that giving or taking bribe is a grave sin. One should avoid it. Some scholars define bribing as presenting some gift to an authority in order to nullify the due of another man or to establish what is not due. If injustice has been done to a man and he bribes to take his due, it is lawful to bribe according to some scholars. Al-Shawkānī says that giving or taking bribe is not permissible in any circumstances, as this tradition clearly shows (ʿAwn al-Maʿbūd, III, 327).
Chapter 1343

PROCEDURE OF ADJUDICATION

(3575) ‘All said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent me to the Yemen as judge, and I asked: Apostle of Allah, are you sending me when I am young and have no knowledge of the duties of a judge? He replied: Allah will guide your heart and keep your tongue true. When two litigants sit in front of you, do not decide till you hear what the other has to say as you heard what the first had to say; for it is best that you should have a clear idea of the best decision. He said: I had been a judge (for long); or he said (the narrator is doubtful): I have no doubts about a decision afterwards.3019

Chapter 1344

THE VALIDITY OF THE DECISION OF A JUDGE
IF HE COMMISSIONS AN ERROR

(3576) Umm Salamah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I am only a human being, and you bring your disputes to me, some perhaps being more eloquent in their plea than others, so that I give judgment on their behalf according to what I hear from them. Therefore, whatever I decide for anyone which by right belongs to his brother, he must not take anything, for I am granting him only a portion of Hell.3020

3018. Presents are generally given to government authorities or employees by people to get their work done illegally. An employee is constrained to do a work illegally after accepting a gift. This is a sort of bribe. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to accept any gift by the employees.

3019. This tradition provides a procedure for making a decision in a legal case. One should not give judgment in haste. A judge should hear both the parties what they have to say, and then deeply think over their statements so that the case becomes clear to him. He should not have any doubt about his decision. His judgment should be unequivocal.

3020. A judge decides on the basis of evidence. If the evidence is false, he will not be held responsible for the wrong decision. He does not make an unlawful thing lawful and vice versa by his decision. If one party of the litigants knows that it is in the wrong, but the decision is given in its favor on the basis of false evidence and advocacy of the defendant, that party should not take it as right and lawful. Allah knows the truth, who is right and who is wrong. This is the widely held view. Abû Hanîfah holds that the decision of a judge makes marriage lawful, and not properties. If two witnesses bear false witness to a marriage or a divorce, and the judge gives decision for the validity of marriage or divorce, they will be considered valid legally and really according to Abû
(3577) Umm Salamah said: Two men came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who were disputing over their inheritance. They had no evidence except their claim. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then said in a similar way.  

Thereupon both the men wept and each of them said: This right of mine may go to you. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then said: Now you have done whatever you have done; so divide it up, aiming at what is right, then draw lots, and let each of you consider the other to have what is legitimately his.  

(3578) Umm Salamah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying when two men were disputing over inheritance and old things: I decide between you on the basis of my opinion in cases about which no revelation has been sent down to me.  

(3579) ‘Umar b. al-Khattāb said while he was (sitting) on the pulpit: O people, the opinion from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was right, because Allah showed (i.e. inspired) him; but from us it is sheer conjecture and artifice.  

(3580) Mu‘ādh b. Mu‘ādh said: Abū ‘Uthmān al-Shaml, whose name is Ḥarīz b. ‘Uthmān, told me. I think I did not see anyone from Syria better than him.

Hanīfah. According to other scholars, they will be valid only legally and not in reality. The disciples of Abū Ḥanīfah disagreed with him on this question (‘Awn al-Mu‘tūd, III, 328).

3021. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said as mentioned in the previous tradition: If I give a decision in favour of one respecting what is rightly his brother's, I am allotting him only a portion of Hell.

3022. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked them to divide the property equally between them by drawing lots, and each of them to consider the other to have what was legitimate. This was not a legal judgment, but it was suggested by the Prophet (may peace be upon him) out of piety and precaution.

3023. This tradition is a basis for justification of the use of qiyās (analogy) in cases not covered by the text (māṣṣ).

3024. This refers to the Qur’ānic verse: “We have sent down to thee the Book in truth, that thou mightest judge between men, as guided by Allah: so be not (used) as an advocate by those who betray their trust” (Qur’ān, iv. 105).

3025. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) by virtue of his acumen and revelation from Allah, made right decisions even by his opinion. But the use of opinion by the people other than the Prophet (may peace be upon him) is merely a conjecture, a process of trial and error. A decision made on the basis of opinion may sometimes be right and sometimes wrong.

This tradition has a broken chain (masqal), as Ibn Shihāb al-Zuhri did not see ‘Umar b. al-Khattāb.

3026. This tradition is not available in some copies of Sunan Abū Dāwūd. It is not revelant here.
Chapter 1345

HOW SHOULD THE LITIGANTS SIT BEFORE THE JUDGE?

(3581) ‘Abd Allah b. al-Zubair said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave the decision that the two adversaries should be made to sit in front of the judge.3027

Chapter 1346

GIVING JUDGMENT BY A JUDGE WHEN HE IS IN ANGER

(3582) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abî Bakrah reported on the authority of his father that he wrote to his son: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: A judge should not decide between the two while he is in anger.3028

Chapter 1347

JUDGMENT BETWEEN THE PROTECTED PEOPLE
(I.E. UNBELIEVERS)

(3583) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Qur’ānic verse: “If they do come to thee, either judge between them, or decline to interfere”3029 was abrogated by the verse: “So judge3030 between them by what Allah hath revealed.”3031

(3584) Ibn ‘Abbās said: When this verse was revealed: “If they do come to thee, either judge between them, or decline to interfere. . . . If thou judge, judge in equity between them.”3032 Banû al-Naḍîr used to pay half blood-money if they killed anyone from Banû Quraizah. When Banû Quraizah killed anyone from Banû al-Naḍîr,

3027. This shows that it is necessary for the disputants to sit before the judge.
3028. The judgment of a judge is very important. It involves the rights of people. It is, therefore necessary for him to decide a legal case with a cool mind. Anger makes a man abnormal. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to decide a case in anger. The prohibition also applies to excessive hunger, alarming fear, and painful disease, by analogy (‘Awn al-Ma’būd, III, 330).
3029. Qur’ān v. 45.
3031. Earlier the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was given a choice between judgment or neglecting them. Later on this command was repealed by another Qur’ānic verse. Now the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was ordained to judge between the unbelievers according to the Qur’ānic injunctions.
3032. Qur’ān, v. 45.
they would pay full blood-money. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) made it equal between them. 3033

Chapter 1348

EMPLOYMENT OF OPINION IN GIVING JUDGMENT

(3585) Some companions of Mu‘ādh b. Ẓabāl said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) intended to send Mu‘ādh b. Ẓabāl to the Yemen, he asked: How will you judge when the occasion of deciding a case arises? He replied: I shall judge in accordance with Allah’s Book. He asked (What will you do) if you do not find guidance in Allah’s Book? He replied: (I will act) in accordance with the Sunnah of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He asked: (what will you do) if you do not find guidance in the Sunnah of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and in Allah’s Book? He replied: I shall do my best to form an opinion and spare no pains. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then patted him on the breast and said: Praise be to Allah Who helped the messenger of the Apostle of Allah to find a thing which pleases the Apostle of Allah. 3034

(3586) Mu‘ādh b. Ẓabāl said that when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon

3033. As there was disparity in the payment of blood-money between Banū al-Naḍīr and Banū Quraidah, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) decided on the payment of equal blood-money by both the tribes. This judgment was given by him according to the Qur’ānic command to do justice.

3034. This tradition shows that exercise of individual opinion and analogy in deciding a case not covered by the Qur‘ān and the Sunnah is allowed. The Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) made a number of decisions on the basis of their opinion and by exercising analogy when they did not find any rule of law in the Qur‘ān and the Sunnah. While making a decision in a case one should in the first instance search for the rule in the Qur‘ān, then in the Sunnah, then in the ijma‘ (consensus) of the community or of the Companions and in the last have a resort to exercising one’s opinion and analogy.

This tradition has been criticised by some traditionists. Al-Jauzaqānī considers it to be spurious, for the narrator al-Ḥārith b. ‘Amr is obscure, and the companions of Mu‘ādh from Ḫimṣ are also unknown. Al-Tirmidhī says that this tradition is known to him only through this chain, and its chain is not continuous. Al-Bukhārī observes that the tradition transmitted by al-Ḥārith b. ‘Amr from the companions of Mu‘ādh is not sound, and it is known only through that chain. It is a mursal tradition. To all this criticism it has been replied by scholars that this tradition is supported by the statements of ‘Umar. Ibn Mas‘ūd, Zaid b. Thābit and Ibn ʿAbdās recorded by al-Baihaqī in his Sunan. Further, this tradition has been cited by jurists from early times down to this day in support of ijtihād. It seems unlikely that such a large number of scholars quoted a spurious tradition. Its constant transmission by scholars since early period is a proof of its soundness (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, III, 331).
him) had sent him to the Yemen. . . . He then narrated the rest of the tradition to the same effect.

Chapter 1349
CONCILIATION

(3587) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Conciliation between Muslims is permissible. The narrator Ahmad added in his version: "except the conciliation which makes lawful unlawful and unlawful lawful." 3035 Sulaiman b. Dawud added: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Muslims are on (i.e. stick to) their conditions. 3036

(3588) Ka'b b. Malik said that in the time of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) he made demand in the mosque for payment of a debt due to him from Ibn Abi Hadrad, and their voices rose till the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), who was in his house, heard them. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then went out to them and, removing the curtain of his apartment, he called to Ka'b b. Malik, addressing: Ka'b! He said: At your service, Apostle of Allah. Thereupon he made a gesture with his hand indicating: Remit half the debt due to you. Ka'b said: I shall do so, Apostle of Allah. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then said: Get up and discharge it. 3037

Chapter 1350
WITNESSES

(3589) Zaid b. Khalid al-Juhani reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Shall I not tell you of the best witness? He is the one who produces his deposition or gives his evidence (the narrator is doubtful) before he is asked

3035. Conciliation between two disputing parties is permissible on condition that it does not make lawful things unlawful and vice versa. For example, conciliation is not valid if a woman stipulates that her husband will not divorce her, or he will not marry another woman. If a man stipulates for conciliation that he will have intercourse with a slave-girl who is not lawful for him, or he will take the property of a man which is unlawful for him, such a conciliation is not valid.

3036. The Muslims are bound to fulfil the conditions set by them at the time of conciliation. But this refers to those conditions that are allowed by the Sha'i'. One is not bound to fulfil void conditions.

3037. This shows that it is the duty of the authorities concerned to settle the matter between the two litigants by compromise if they agree. Besides, this tradition also indicates that the creditor may remit a part of the debt if the debtor is unable to pay it.
for it.3038 'Abd Allah b. Abî Bakr doubted which of them he said.

Abû Dâwûd said: Malik said: This refers to a man who gives his evidence, but he does not know for whom it is meant. Al-Hamdânî said: He should inform the authorities. Ibn al-Sarh said: He should give it to the ruler. The word ikhbar (inform) occurs in the version of al-Hamdânî. Ibn al-Sarh said: Ibn Abî 'Amrah and not 'Abd al-Rahmân.

Chapter 1351

ON A MAN WHO HELPS THE LITIGANTS BUT HE DOES NOT KNOW THEIR CASE

(3590) Yahyâ b. Râshid said: We were sitting waiting for 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar who came out to us and sat. He then said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone's intercession intervenes as an obstacle to one of the punishments prescribed by Allah, he has opposed Allah;3039 if anyone disputes knowingly about something which is false, he remains in the displeasure of Allah till he desists;3040 and if anyone makes an untruthful accusation against a Muslim, he will be made by Allah to dwell in the corrupt fluid flowing from the inhabitants of Hell till he retracts his statement.3041

(3591) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn 'Umar from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators to the same effect. In this version he also said: He who assists in a dispute unjustly deserves the anger of Allah, Most High.

3038 It has been explained in a twofold way: First, it refers to the man who has knowledge about the right of another man, but he does not know that he can bear witness to him. He should come to him and inform him that he can bear witness for him. This witness is a kind of trust. This is the interpretation of Malik and the followers of al-Shâfi‘î and is considered to be a sound interpretation. Secondly, it means bearing witness to case concerning divorce, emancipation of slaves, religious endowments, wills and capital punishments. If a man has knowledge of these things, he should go to the judge and inform him about them.

3039. This shows that a man should not intercede for a man who is going to be punished for a crime as prescribed by Allah. It is necessary for the authorities to implement the punishment according to the command of Allah. This should not be stopped by the intercession of anyone

3040. To dispute a man falsely is a grave sin. If a man knows that his claim is false, he should withdraw it.

3041. This threat refers to backbiting and false accusation against a Muslim. One should avoid backbiting in one's mutual talks.
Chapter 1352

FALSE WITNESS

(3592) Khuraim b. Fatik said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) offered the morning prayer. When he finished it, he stood up and said three times: False witness has been made equivalent to attributing a partner to Allah. He then recited: "So avoid the abomination of idols and avoid speaking falsehood as people pure of faith to Allah, not associating anything with Him."

Chapter 1353

PERSONS "WHOSE TESTIMONY IS REJECTED

(3593) 'Amr b. Shu'aib on his father's authority told that his grandfather said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) rejected the testimony of a deceitful man and woman, of one who harbours rancour against his brother, and he rejected the testimony of one who is dependent on a family, and he allowed his testimony for others.

Abu Dawud said: Ghimr means malice and enmity; qâni' (dependant), a subordinate servant like a special servant.

(3594) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Sulaimân b. Mûsâ through a different chain of narrators. This version has: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The testimony of a deceitful man or woman, of an adulterer and adulteress, and of one who harbours rancour against his brother is not allowable.

Chapter 1354

THE TESTIMONY OF A NOMAD ARAB AGAINST A TOWNSMAN

(3595) Abu Hurairah said that he heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon

3042 Qur'an, xxii. 30. This shows the seriousness of false witness. It has been declared equivalent to making partnership with Allah, a sin which will not be pardoned. One should, therefore, avoid bearing false witness, for it involves the rights of people.

3043 A man who deceives others is not eligible for bearing witness.

3044 If a man hates his Muslim brother and harbours malice and enmity against him, he will surely bear false witness. Hence he has been declared ineligible for becoming witness.

3045 An old servant is like a member of one's family. He may likely favour his patrons and bear false witness. Hence his testimony is rejected.
Chapter 1355

BEARING WITNESS TO FOSTERAGE

(3596) 'Uqbah b. al-Ḥārith said: I married Umm Yahyā daughter of Abū Iḥāb. A black woman entered upon us. She said that she had suckled both of us. So I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and mentioned it to him. He turned away from me. I said (to him): Apostle of Allah! she is a liar. He said: What do you know? She has said what she has said. Separate yourself from her (wife).

(3597) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by 'Uqbah b. al-Ḥārith to the same effect through a different chain of narrators.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ḥammād b. Zaid looked at al-Ḥārith b. ‘Umair and said: He is from reliable narrators from Ayyūb.

Chapter 1356

WITNESS OF THE PROTECTED PEOPLE AND ABOUT LEAVING A WILL DURING JOURNEY

(3598) Al-Sha‘bl said: A Muslim was about to die at Daqūqā', but he did not find any Muslim to call him for witness to his will. So he called two men of the people of the Book for witness. Then they came to Kūfah, and approaching Abū Mūsā al-Ash’arī they informed him (about his) will. They brought his inheritance and will. Al-Ash’arī said: This is an incident (like) which happened in the time of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and never occurred after him. So he made them to swear by Allah after the afternoon prayer to the effect that they had not misappropriated, nor told a lie, nor changed, nor concealed, nor altered, and that it was the

3046. The testimony of nomad Arabs is not accepted because they are vulgar in religion, ignorant of the laws of the Shari‘ah, and generally do not guard the witness.

3047. This shows that the evidence of a single woman is sufficient for the validity of fosterage. But this witness should be given by a woman who suckled the child. This is held by Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal and a group of scholars. Mālik holds that two women are necessary to bear witness to suckling. Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that the witness of one woman is sufficient for affairs relating to woman. But two men or one man and two women should bear witness to fosterage. The witness of one woman is not valid. According to al-Shāfi‘i, the witness of a suckling woman is valid along with three other women (‘Auṇ al-Ma‘būd, III, 336).

3048. The name of a place between Baghdad and Irbil.
will of the man and his inheritance. He then executed their witness.  

(3599) Ibn ‘Abbās said: A man from Banū Sahm went out along with Tamīm al-Dāri and ‘Adī b. Baddā. The man of Banū Sahm died in the land where no Muslim was present. When they returned with his inheritance, they (the heirs) did not find a silver cup with lines of gold (in his property). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) administered an oath to them. The cup was then found (with someone) at Mecca. They said: We have bought it from Tamīm and ‘Adī. Then two men from the heirs of the man of Banū Sahm got up and swore saying: Our witness is more reliable than their witness. They said that the cup belonged to their man. He (Ibn ‘Abbās) said: The following verse was revealed about them: “O ye who believe! when death approaches any of you . . . .”  

Chapter 1357

WHEN A RULER KNOWS THE TRUTH OF A SINGLE WITNESS, HE IS PERMITTED TO GIVE HIS JUDGMENT ON ITS BASIS

(3600) ‘Umarah b. Khuzaimah said that his uncle who was a Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) told him that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) brought a horse from a bedouin. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) took him with him to pay him the price of his horse. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) walked quickly and the bedouin walked slowly. The people interrupted the bedouin and began to bargain for the horse with him, and they did not know that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had bought it. The bedouin called the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) saying: If you buy this horse, (then buy it), otherwise I shall sell it. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) stopped when he heard the call of the bedouin, and said: Is it not that I have bought it from you? The bedouin said: I swear by Allah, I have not sold it to you. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Yes, I have bought it from you. The bedouin began to say: Bring a witness. Khuzaimah b. Thābit then said: I bear witness that you have bought it. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) turned toward Khuzaimah and said: On what

3049. According to the Qur’anic verse v. 109, a non-Muslim can bear witness to the will of a Muslim. During the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) a Muslim left his will before two non-Muslims and verse v. 109 confirmed the acceptance of the evidence of two non-Muslims for the will of a Muslim. According to Aḩmad b. Hanbal, the evidence of non-Muslims is valid for the will of a Muslim when Muslims are not found. Al-Shāfī’ī holds that the witness of non-Muslims is not valid for Muslims and non-Muslims both. Mālik also holds this view. Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that the evidence of non-Muslims is valid for non-Muslims but not for Muslims. Some scholars hold that the witness of Jews is valid for Jews and not for others (‘Awn al Ma’būd, III. 337).

(ground) do you bear witness? He said: By considering you trustworthy, Apostle of Allah! The Prophet (may peace be upon him) made the witness of Khuzaimah equivalent to the witness of two persons.3051

Chapter 1358

TO MAKE A DECISION ON THE BASIS OF AN OATH AND A WITNESS

(3601) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave a decision on the basis of an oath and a single witness.3052

(3602) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Amr b. Dīnār through a different chain of narrators and to the same effect. Salamah has in his version: ‘Amr said: In the rights (of the people).3053

(3603) Abū Hurairah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave a decision on the basis of an oath and a single witness.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Rabī‘ b. Sulaimān al-Mu‘adhdhin told me some additional words in this tradition: Al-Shāfi‘i told me from ‘Abd al-‘Azīz. I then mentioned it to Suhail who said: Rabi‘ah told me—and he is reliable in my opinion—that I told him this (tradition) and I do not remember it. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz said: Suhail suffered from some disease which caused him to lose a little of his intelligence, and he forgot some of his traditions. Thereafter Suhail would narrate traditions from Rabi‘ah on the authority of his father.

(3604) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Rabi‘ah through the chain of Abū Mus‘ab and to the same effect. Sulaimān said: I then met

3051. It is not a general principle to accept the witness of one man like the witness of Khuzaimah. This was only peculiar with him. After the death of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), Zaid b. Thābit accepted his witness as a witness of two persons when a verse of Sūrat al-Barā‘ah was found only with Khuzaimah. He rejected the witness of ‘Umar who also brought a verse of stoning, because he had no other witness with him. In the Shari‘ah the standard of witness is two men or one man and two women. This tradition shows that this was Khuzaimah’s privilege. It cannot be generalised (‘Awn al-Ma’bud, III, 341).

3052. This tradition shows that if a plaintiff has no other witness, he may produce one witness and take an oath himself in place of another witness. But this is reserved for matters concerning finance and property, that is, civil suits. This view is held by Abū Bakr, ‘Alī, ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, Mālik, al-Shāfi‘i, Aḥmad and most of the scholars. Abū Ḥanīfah, al-Sha‘bī, al-Ḥakam, al-Auzā‘i and al-Laith b. Sa‘d do not follow this tradition. According to them, only the witness of two men or one man and two women is valid. This tradition contradicts the Qur‘ān.

3053. It means that this tradition applies to civil suits and to criminal cases. This sort of witness is not acceptable in criminal cases.
Suhail and asked him about this tradition. He said: I do not know it. I said to him: Rabî‘ah transmitted it to me from you. He said: If Rabî‘ah transmitted it to you from me, then transmit it from Rabî‘ah on my authority.

(3605) Zubaib al-‘Anborî said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent an army to Banû al-‘Anbar. They arrested them at Rukbah in the suburbs of al-Ṭā‘if. They drove them to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him). I rode and hastened to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Peace be on you, Apostle of Allah! and mercy of Allah and His blessings. Your contingent came to us and arrested us, but we had already embraced Islam and cut the sides of the ears of our cattle. When Banû al-‘Anbar arrived, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to me: Have you an evidence for the fact that you had embraced Islam before you were arrested in these days? I said: Yes. He said: Who is your witness? I said: Samurah, a man from Banû al-‘Anbar, and another man, whom he named. The man testified but Samurah refused to testify. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: He (Samurah) has refused to testify for you, so take an oath with your other witness. I said: Yes. He then administered an oath to me and I took an oath to the effect that we embraced Islam on such-and-such day, and that we cut the sides of the ears of the cattle. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Go and divide half of their property, but do not touch their children. Had Allah not disliked the wastage of action, we would not have taxed you even a rope. Zubaib said: My mother called me and said: This man has taken my mattress. I then went to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) and informed him. He said to me: Detain him. So I caught him with a garment around his neck, and stood with him on our spot. Then the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) looked at us standing. He asked: What do you intend (doing) with your captive? So I left him free from my hand. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) then stood and said to the man: Return to this (man) the mattress of his mother which you have taken from her. He said: Prophet of Allah, it has gone from my hand. He said: The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) took the sword of the man and gave it to me, and said to him: Go and give him some ṣā‘s of foodgrain. So he gave me some ṣā‘s of barley.

3054. A valley of al-Ṭā‘if.
3055. This might be the sign of those who embraced Islam in those days.
3056. When they embraced Islam, as a rule the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) should not have taken anything from their property. But as the evidence was defective, he ordered to take half of their property. Moreover, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) also wanted to give something to those Muslims who took part in this army and arrested the people of Banû al-‘Anbar presuming them non-Muslims. Had they produced perfect evidence, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) would not have taken anything from them. It may be noted that the chain of the tradition is weak.
Chapter 1359

IF TWO PERSONS CLAIM A THING, BUT HAVE NO EVIDENCE, HOW SHOULD A JUDGE DECIDE THIS CASE?

(3606) Abu Musa al-Ash'ari said: Two men claimed a camel or an animal and brought the case to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him). But as neither of them produced any proof, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) declared that they should share it equally.3057

(3607) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Sa'id through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

(3608) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Qatadah through a different chain of narrators to the effect that two men laid claim to a camel and both of them produced two witnesses, so the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) divided it in halves between them.3058

(3609) Abu Hurairah said: Two men disputed about some property and brought the case to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him), but neither of them could produce any proof. So the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Cast lots about the oath whatever it may be, whether they like it or dislike it.3059

(3610) Abu Hurairah reported the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When two (men) dislike the oath or like it, lots will be cast about it. Salamah said on the authority of Ma'mar who said: When the two are compelled to take an oath.

(3611) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Sa'id b. 'Urubah through the chain as narrated by Ibn Minhāl. This version has: About an animal and they had no proof. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered to cast lots about the oath.

Chapter 1360

THE DEFENDANT SHOULD TAKE AN OATH

(3612) Ibn Abi Mulaikah said: Ibn 'Abbās wrote to me that the Apostle of Allah

3057. This shows that if both the parties claim a thing, but produce no proof, the thing shall be divided equally between them.

3058. This means that both men were to have equal use of the camel.

3059. The lots will be cast about taking an oath. The man whose name is determined by lots will take an oath.
Chapter 1361
HOW SHOULD ONE TAKE AN OATH

(3613) Ibn 'Abbās said: The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to a man whom he asked to take an oath: Swear by Allah except whom there is no god that you have nothing belonging to him, i.e. the plaintiff.3061

Chapter 1362
IF THE DEFENDANT IS A PROTECTED MAN (UNBELIEVER), SHOULD HE TAKE AN OATH?

(3614) Al-Ash'ath b. Qais said: A Jew and I shared some land and he denied my right, so I took him to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him). The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to me: Have you any proof. I said: No. He then said to the Jew: Swear an oath. I said: Apostle of Allah, he will swear an oath and go off with my property. So Allah sent down: “Those who barter for a small price Allah's covenant and their oaths...”3062 to the end of the verse.3063

Chapter 1363
ASKING THE DEFENDANT TO TAKE AN OATH FOR HIS KNOWLEDGE ABOUT AN ACTION WHICH HE HAS DONE HIMSELF

(3615) Al-Ash'ath b. Qais said: A man from Kindah and a man from Ḥadramawt came to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) with their dispute about a land in the Yemen. The Ḥadrami said: Apostle of Allah, the father of this (man) had usurped land belonging to me, and it is in his possession. He asked: Have you any proof? He replied: No, but I can have him swear an oath. Allah knows that it is my land, and his father seized it from me. The Kindi was prepared to take an oath. He

3060. If the plaintiff fails to produce proof the defendant shall have to take an oath. If he takes an oath, the case will be decided in his favour.
3061. In this tradition the mode of administering the oath to the defendant has been explained by the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him).
3062. Qur'ān, iii. 77.
3063. This shows that an oath will also be administered to an unbeliever if the plaintiff has no proof. The Qur'ānic verse indicates that if an unbeliever or a Muslim takes a false oath, he will suffer for that in the Hereafter.
then narrated the rest of the tradition.\footnote{3064}

(3616) 'Alqamah b. Wā'il b. Hujr al-Ḥaḍramī said on the authority of his father: A man from Ḥaḍramaw and a man from Kindah came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Ḥaḍramī said: Apostle of Allah, this (man) has seized land which belonged to my father. Al-Kindī said: That is my land in my possession and I cultivate it; he has no right to it. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to the Ḥaḍramī: Have you any proof? We said: No. He (the Prophet) said: Then he will swear an oath for you. He said: Apostle of Allah, he is a reprobate and he would not care to swear to anything and stick at nothing. He said: That is only your recourse.

\textit{Chapter 1364}

\textbf{HOW SHOULD A PROTECTED MAN (UNBELIEVER) BE ADJURED?}

(3617) Abū Hurairah said: The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to the Jews: I adjure you by Allah Who sent down the Torah to Moses! do you not find in the Torah (a rule about a man) who commits adultery. He then narrated the rest of the tradition relating to the story of stoning.

(3618) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Zuhri through a different chain of narrators. This version has: A man from Muzainah who followed the knowledge and memorised it to me that Sa'īd b. al-Musayyab transmitted it. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect.

(3619) 'Ikrimah said: The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to Ibn Šūriya': I remind you by Allah Who saved you from the people of Pharaoh, made you cover the sea, gave you the shade of clouds, sent down to you manna and quails, sent down your Torah to Moses, do you find stoning (for adultery) in your Book? He said: You have reminded me by the Great. It is not possible for me to belie you.\footnote{3065} He then transmitted the rest of the tradition.

\textit{Chapter 1365}

\textbf{A MAN MAY TAKE AN OATH TO ESTABLISH HIS RIGHT}

(3620) 'Awf b. Mālik said: The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave a decision between two men, and the one against whom the decision was given turned

\footnote{3064. This shows that the defendant can take an oath on the basis of his knowledge.}

\footnote{3065. This shows that one should adjure the non-Muslims by their deity and Holy Books in which they believe.}
away and said: For me Allah sufficeth, and He is the best disposer of affairs.\textsuperscript{3066} The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Allah, Most High, blames for falling short, but apply intelligence, and when the matter gets the better of you, say; For me Allah sufficeth, and He is the best disposer of affairs.\textsuperscript{3067}

\textit{Chapter 1366}

IMPRISONMENT IN THE CASE OF PAYMENT OF DEBT AND OTHER CASES

(3621) Al-Sharîd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Delay in payment on the part of one who possesses means makes it lawful to dishonour and punish him. Ibn al-Mubârak said that "dishonour" means that he may be spoken to roughly and "punish" means he may be imprisoned for it.\textsuperscript{3068}

(3622) Hirmâs b. Ḥabib, a man of desert, on his father's authority said that his grandfather told: I brought my debtor to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said to me: Stick to him. He again said to me: O brother of Banû Tamîm, what do you want to do with your prisoner?\textsuperscript{3069}

(3623) Bahz b. Ḥâkim, on his father's authority, said that his grandfather told that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) imprisoned a man on suspicion.\textsuperscript{3070}

(3624) Bahz b. Ḥâkim, on his father's authority, said that his grandfather\textsuperscript{3071} told (or as Ibn Qudâmah's version has: his grandfather's brother or uncle reported): The narrator Mu'ammal said: He (his grandfather Mu'âwiyah) got up before the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) who was giving sermon; and he said: Why have

\textsuperscript{3066}. Cr. Qur'ān iii. 173.

\textsuperscript{3067}. This tradition indicates that a man should try his best to use all possible means to get his right.

\textsuperscript{3068}. This means that if a man is well-to-do and can afford to pay the debt, but he delays intentionally, he can be imprisoned and spoken to roughly so that he may pay the debt. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars about imprisonment. The judge Shuraîh holds that both well-to-do and poor men shall be imprisoned in the case of delay in payment of a debt. Mâlik holds that a poor man will not be imprisoned. The creditor must wait till he is able to pay the debt. Al-Shâfi'i maintains that if the poverty of a debtor is obvious, he will not be imprisoned (\textit{Awn al-Ma'bud, III. 349}).

\textsuperscript{3069}. This shows that the creditor is allowed to remain all the time with the debtor until he pays the debt. The view of the majority of scholars say that sticking to the debtor is not in practice now. The creditor should watch him perpetually. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) intended to intercede for the prisoner (\textit{Awn al-Ma'bud, III 349}).

\textsuperscript{3070}. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) imprisoned the accused before the establishment of the charge against him. When the charge could not be proved, he let him go.

\textsuperscript{3071}. The name of his grandfather was Mu'âwiyah.
your companions) arrested my neighbours? He turned away from him twice. He (his grandfather Mu‘awiyah) then mentioned something. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) then said: Let his neighbours\textsuperscript{3072} go. Mu‘ammal did not mention the words ‘He was giving sermon.’

**Chapter 1367**

**ACTING AS AN ATTORNEY OR AGENT**

(3625) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: I intended to go (on expedition) to Khaibar. So I came to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him), greeted him and said: I am intending to go to Khaibar. He said: When you come to my agent, you should take from him fifteen wasaqs (of dates). If he asks you for a sign, then place your hand on his collar-bone.\textsuperscript{3073}

**Chapter 1368**

**SOME MORE PROBLEMS REGARDING OFFICE OF A JUDGE**

(3626) Abū Hurairah reported the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If you dispute over a pathway, leave the margin of seven yards.\textsuperscript{3074}

(3627) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you asks permission for inserting a wooden peg in his wall, he should not prevent him.\textsuperscript{3075} So they (the people) lowered down their heads. Then he (Abū Hurairah) said: What is the matter? I am seeing you that you are neglecting (to hear this tradition), I shall spread it among you.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition of Ibn Abī Khalaf is more perfect.

(3628) Abū Šīrmah reported the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone harms (others), Allah will harm him, and if anyone shows hostility to others, Allah will show hostility to him.

(3629) Abū Ja‘far Muhammad b. ‘Alī reported from Samurah b. Jundub that he

3072. The Companions of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) arrested some people of the tribe of Mu‘āwiya, the grandfather of Bahz b. Ḥakīm, in a certain case. When the charge could not be proved, he set them free.

3073. This tradition indicates the legality of working as an agent or attorney on behalf of some person.

3074. If there is a dispute over a pathway where people pass, it is better to leave the margin of seven yards.

3075. If the neighbour asks some person to insert a peg in his wall, he should give him permission. This is necessary, according to Ahmad b. Ḥanbal and the traditionists, but commendable according to others.
had a row of palm-trees in the garden of a man of the Ānṣār. The man had his family with him. Samurah used to visit his palm-trees, and the man was annoyed by it and felt it hard on him. So he asked him (Samurah) to sell it to him, but he refused. He then asked him to take something else in exchange, but he refused. So he came to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) and mentioned it to him. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked him to sell it to him, but he refused. He asked him to take something else in exchange, but he refused. He then said: Give it to him and you can have such and such, mentioning something with which he tried to please him, but he refused. He then said: You are a nuisance. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said to the Ānṣārī: Go and uproot his palm-trees.

(3630) ‘Abd Allah b. al-Zubair said that a man disputed with al-Zubair about streamlets in the lava plain which was irrigated by them. The Ānṣārī said: Release the water and let it run, but al-Zubair refused. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to al-Zubair: Water (your ground), Zubair, then let the water run to your neighbour. The Ānṣārī then became angry and said: Apostle of Allah! it is because he is your cousin! Thereupon the face of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) changed colour and he said: Water (your ground), then keep back the water till it returns to the embankment. Al-Zubair said: By Allah! I think this verse came down about that: “But no, by thy Lord! they can have no (real) faith, until they make thee judge: . . .”

(3631) Tha‘labah b. Abī Mālik said that he heard his elders say that a man from the Quraish had his share with Banū Quraizah (in water). He brought the dispute to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) about al-Mahzūr, a stream whose water they shared together. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then decided that when water reached the ankles, the upper waters should not be held back to flow to the lower.

(3632) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib on his father’s authority said that his grandfather told that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) decided regarding the stream al-Mahzūr that its water should be held back till it reached the ankles, and that the upper waters should then be allowed to flow to the lower.

(3633) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: Two men brought their dispute about the pre-

---

3076. Qur’ān, iv. 65. The full verse reads: “But no, by thy Lord, they can have no (real) faith, until they make thee judge in all disputes between them, and find in their souls no resistance against thy decisions, but accept them with the fullest conviction.” This shows that one must obey the command of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) unquestioningly.

3077. Al-Mahzūr is the name of a valley (wādī) of the Banū Quraizah near Medina. Water flowed in it when rain fell.

3078. This means that when the ground of a man on the upper side is sufficiently irrigated, he should let the water flow to the lower side and should not hold it back to harm others.
cincts of a palm-tree to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). According to a version of this tradition, he ordered to measure and it was measured. It was found seven yards. According to another version, it was found five yards. He made a decision according to that. ‘Abd al-‘Azîz said: He ordered to measure with a branch of its branches. It was then measured. 3079

3079. Ḥarîm of a tree is the surrounding ground or precincts which remains in the possession of the owner of the tree. The owner of the tree has all the rights to it. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) decided that the area of the Ḥarîm or precincts of a palmtree would be determined by the length of the tree. If it measures seven yards, the Ḥarîm will be seven yards. If it measures five yards, the precincts will be five yards. The area of precincts may vary according to the length of the tree (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, III, 354).
XIX. KITAB AL-‘ILM
[ BOOK OF KNOWLEDGE ]

Chapter 1369

EXHORTATION TO THE PURSUIT OF KNOWLEDGE

(3634) Kathfr b. Qais said: I was sitting with Abû al-Dardâ’ in the mosque of Damascus. A man came to him and said: Abû al-Dardâ’, I have come to you from the town of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) for a tradition I have heard that you relate from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). I have come for no other purpose. He said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If anyone travels on a road in search of knowledge, Allah will cause him to travel on one of the roads of Paradise, the angels will lower wings from good pleasure with one who seeks knowledge, and the inhabitants of the heavens and the earth and the fish in the depth of the water will ask forgiveness for the learned man. The superiority of the learned man over the devout is like that of the moon on the night when it is full over the rest of the stars. The learned are the heirs of the Prophets, and the Prophets leave neither dinâr nor dirham, leaving only knowledge, and he who takes it takes an abundant portion.3080

(3635) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abû al-Dardâ’ through a different chain of narrators to the same effect from the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him).

(3636) Abû Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone pursues a path in search of knowledge, Allah will thereby make easy for him a path to Paradise; and he who is made slow by his actions will not be speeded by his genealogy.3081

3080 This tradition indicates the excellence of seeking knowledge, especially the knowledge of religion. The people in the early days of Islam travelled to distant lands in order to hear the traditions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

But this tradition is weak. Al-Tirmidhî calls its narrator Qais b. Kathîr and not Kathîr b. Qais. There is also confusion in the text in its different versions. This is sometimes said about Kathîr b. Qais himself who went to Abû al-Dardâ’ for a tradition. Some versions mention Egypt (‘Awn al-Ma’bud, III. 355).

3081. If a man has not done good works in this world, thereby remained behind in virtue, his genealogy cannot avail him to make him fast.
Chapter 1370

TRANSMISSION OF TRADITIONS FROM THE PEOPLE OF THE BOOK

(3637) Abū Namlāt al-Anṣārī said that when he was sitting with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and a Jew was also with him, a funeral passed by him. He (the Jew) asked (him): Muḥammad, does this funeral speak? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Allah has more knowledge. The Jew said: It speaks. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Whatever the people of the Book tell you, do not verify them, nor falsify them, but say: We believe in Allah and His Apostle. If it is false, do not confirm it, and if it is right, do not falsify it.3082

(3638) Zaid b. Thābit said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered me (to learn the writing of the Jews), so I learnt for him the writing of the Jews. He said: I swear by Allah, I do not trust Jews in respect of writing for me. So I learnt it, and only a fortnight passed that I mastered it. I would write for him when he wrote (to them), and read to him when something was written to him.3083

Chapter 1371

WRITING THE KNOWLEDGE

(3639) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr said: I used to write everything which I heard from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). I intended (by it) to memorise it. The Quraysh prohibited me saying: Do you write everything that you hear from him while the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) is a human being: he speaks in anger and pleasure? So I stopped writing, and mentioned it to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He signalled with his finger to his mouth and said: Write, by Him in Whose hand my soul lies, only right comes out from it.3084

(3640) Al-Muṭṭalib b. ‘Abd Allah b. Ḥanṭab said: Zaid b. Thābit entered upon Mu‘awiyah and asked him about a tradition. He ordered a man to write it. Zaid said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered us not to write any of his

3082. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked the Muslims to remain indifferent about the traditions of the people of the Book, i.e. Jews and Christians. If they narrate some tradition from their Prophet, one should neither confirm it nor falsify whether they are speaking the truth or telling a lie.

3083. This shows that it is a duty of Muslims to learn foreign languages to preach Islam and to promote the cause of religion.

3084. This refers to the recording of the traditions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The collection of the traditions of ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr is known as Sahifah Ṣādiqah.
traditions. So he erased it.  

(3641) Abū Hurairah said: When Mecca was conquered, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) stood up. He (Abū Hurairah) then mentioned the sermon of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: A man of the Yemen, who was called Abū Shāh, got up and said: Apostle of Allah! write it for me. He said: Write for Abū Shāh.

(3642) Al-Walīd said: I asked Abū ‘Amr: What are they writing? He said: The sermon which he heard that day.

Chapter 1372
GRAVITY IN LYING ABOUT THE APOSTLE OF ALLAH
(MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM)

(3643) ‘Abd Allah b. al-Zubair said on the authority of his father: I asked al-Zubair: What prevents you from narrating traditions from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as his Companions narrate from him? He replied: I swear by Allah, I had a regard and reverence for him. But I heard him say: He who lies about me deliberately will certainly come to his abode in Hell.

Chapter 1373
INTERPRETATION OF THE BOOK OF ALLAH
WITHOUT KNOWLEDGE

(3644) Jundub reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone interprets the Book of Allah in the light of his opinion even if he is right, he has erred.

3085. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) either prohibited to write traditions in the beginning and then allowed to write, or it means that he prohibited writing traditions to avoid confusion with the Qur'ān.

3086. This shows the permission for writing the traditions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

3087. Literally, "he should make his abode in Hell". This is a threat to a man who attributes false traditions to the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

3088. It means that interpretation of the Qur'ān without due knowledge and competence is a sin, even if one is correct in one's interpretation.
Chapter 1374

REPETITION OF A TRADITION

(3645) Abū Salām said on the authority of a man who served the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) that whenever he talked, he repeated it three times.3089

Chapter 1375

QUICK NARRATION OF TRADITIONS

(3646) ‘Urwah said: Abū Hurairah sat beside the apartment of ‘Ā’ishah while she was praying. He then began to say: Listen, O lady of the apartment, saying twice. When she finished her prayer, she said: Are you not surprised at him and his narration of traditions? When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave a talk, a man could count it if he wished to count.3090

(3647) ‘Ā’ishah, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), said: Are you not surprised at Abū Hurairah? He came and sat beside my apartment, and began to narrate traditions from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) making me hear them. I was saying supererogatory prayer. He got up (and went away) before I finished my prayer. Had I found him, I would have replied to him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not narrate traditions quickly one after another as you narrate quickly.3091

Chapter 1376

PRECAUTION IN GIVING LEGAL DECISIONS

(3648) Mu‘āwiyah said: The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the discussion of thorny questions.3092

(3649) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone is given a legal decision ignorantly, the sin rests on the one who

3089. It means that the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to repeat his talk three times so that the people could understand it well. Here talk means his sayings which he expressed before the people to teach them religion.

3090. This shows that one should not narrate traditions quickly.

3091. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) narrated traditions with short breaks between the words. He paused after narrating one tradition or giving one talk for a short while. Then he gave another talk. He did not narrate them quickly and consecutively as people did after him.

3092. This refers to those questions by which the learned are deluded thereby straying from the right path. This sometimes results in the spread of evil and perversion.
Chapter 1377

DISAPPROVAL OF CONCEALING KNOWLEDGE

(3650) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who is asked something he knows and conceals it will have a bridle of fire put on him on the Day of Resurrection.

Chapter 1378

EXCELLENCE OF SPREADING KNOWLEDGE

(3651) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: You hear (from me), and others will hear from you; and people will hear from them who heard from you.

(3652) Zaid b. Thābit said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: May Allah brighten a man who hears a tradition from us, gets it by heart and passes it on to others. Many a bearer of knowledge conveys it to one who is more versed than he is; and many a bearer of knowledge is not versed in it.

(3653) Sahl b. Sa‘d reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: I swear by Allah, it will be better for you that Allah should give guidance to one man...
through your agency than that you should acquire the red ones among the camels.3099

Chapter 1379

RELATING TRADITIONS FROM THE CHILDREN OF BANU ISRA'IL

(3654) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Relate traditions from the children of Isra'il; there is no harm.3100

(3655) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to relate to us traditions from the children of Isra'il till morning came; he would not get up except for obligatory prayer.3101

Chapter 1380

SEEKING KNOWLEDGE NOT FOR THE PLEASURE OF ALLAH

(3656) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone acquires knowledge of things by which Allah's good pleasure is sought, but acquires it only to get some worldly advantage, he will not experience the 'arf, i.e. the odour, of Paradise.3102

Chapter 1381

RELATING ANECDOTES AND GIVING INSTRUCTIONS

(3657) ‘Awf b. Mālik al-Ashja‘î said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Only a ruler, or one put in charge, or one who is presumptuous,

3099. This refers to camels of the most valuable breed. This phrase is also used figuratively of anything which is valuable.

This tradition shows that if a man gets guidance through the efforts of a Muslim, this is a great achievement of him. It is better for him than all the valuable things in the world.

3100. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) permitted to relate traditions from the children of Isra'il, as the responsibility of soundness and falsity of these traditions rests with them. The narrator, however, should neither confirm them nor falsify them.

3101. The history of the children of Isra'il is full of lessons for Muslims. Hence the Qur'an has dealt with it in greater detail. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) also informed the Muslims about their treatment of the Prophets and their obedience to Divine injunctions.

3102. This shows that a Muslim should acquire knowledge for the pleasure of Allah.
gives instructions.\textsuperscript{3103}

(3658) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: I sat with the company of the poor members of the Emigrants.\textsuperscript{3104} Some of them were sitting together because of lack of clothing while a reader was reciting to us. All of a sudden the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came along and stood beside us. When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) stood, the reader stopped and gave him a salutation. He asked: What were you doing? We said: Apostle of Allah! we had a reader who was reciting to us and we were listening to the Book of Allah the Exalted. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: Praise be to Allah Who has put among my people those with whom I have been ordered to keep myself.\textsuperscript{3105} The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then sat among us so as to be like one of us, and when he had made a sign with his hand they sat in a circle with their faces turned towards him. The narrator said: I think that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not recognise any of them except me. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: Rejoice, you group of poor Emigrants, in the announcement that you will have perfect light on the Day of Resurrection. You will enter Paradise half a day before the rich, and that is five hundred years.

(3659) Anas b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: That I sit in the company of the people who remember Allah the Exalted from morning prayer till the sun rises is clearer to me than that I emancipate four slaves from the children of Isrā’īl, and that I sit with the people who remember Allah from afternoon prayer till the sun sets is dearer to me than that I emancipate four slaves.

(3660) ‘Abd Ailah (b. Mās‘ūd) said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: Recite to me Sūrat al-Nisā’. I asked: Shall I recite to you what was sent down to you? He replied: I like to hear it from someone else. So I recited (it) until I reached this verse “How then shall it be when We bring from every people a witness?”\textsuperscript{3106} Then I raised my head and saw tears falling from his eyes.

\textsuperscript{3103} This tradition shows that only responsible persons are allowed to give sermon and to preach people. They may relate stories for a lesson to the people. A man who is presumptuous also relates stories and anecdotes in his sermon for show and ostentation.

\textsuperscript{3104} The Arabic word is \textit{du‘āfī} meaning weak. It is said that this refers to the people who lived in the \textit{Suffah}, a kind of verandah at the mosque in Medina, where certain poor people lived and acquired the knowledge of religion.

\textsuperscript{3105} Cf. Qur’ān, xviii. 28.

\textsuperscript{3106} Qur’ān, iv. 41.
Chapter 1382

PROHIBITION OF WINE

(3661) ‘Umar said: The prohibition of wine came down when (the Qur’ānic verse) came down. It was made from five things, namely, grapes, dates, honey, wheat, barley. Wine (khamr) is what infects (khāmara) the mind. There are three things I wished that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) would not leave us until he explained them fully to our satisfaction: (share of) grandfather, one who leaves no descendants or ascendants as heirs, and the details of usury.3107

(3662) ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb said that when the prohibition of wine came down, he said: O Allah, give us about wine a satisfactory explanation. So the following verse of Sūrat al-Baqarah came down; “They ask thee concerning wine and gambling. Say: In them is great sin. . . .”3108 ‘Umar was then called and it was recited to him. He said: O Allah, give us about wine a satisfactory explanation. Then the following verse of Sūrat al-Nisā’ came down: “O ye who believe! approach not prayers with a mind befogged. . . .”3109 Thereafter the herald of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would call when the (congregational) prayer was performed: Beware, one who is drunk should not come near prayer. ‘Umar was again called and it was recited to him). He said: O Allah, give us about wine a satisfactory explanation. This verse was revealed: “Will ye not then abstain?”3110 ‘Umar said: We abstained.3111

(3663) ‘Ali b. Abī Ṭālib said that a man of the Ansār called him and ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Awf and supplied them wine before it was prohibited. ‘Ali then led them in the evening prayer, and he recited; “Say: O ye who reject faith.”3112 He was confused in it. Then the following verse came down: “O ye who believe! approach not
prayers with a mind befogged until you can understand all that ye say."³¹¹³

(3664) Ibn 'Abbās said: The Qur'ānic verse: "O ye who believe, approach not prayers with a mind befogged until you can understand all that ye say,"³¹¹⁴ and the verse: "They ask thee concerning wine and gambling. Say: In them is great sin and some profit for men,"³¹¹⁵ were repealed by the verse in Sūrat al-Mā'idah: "O ye who believe, intoxicants and gambling, (dedication of) stones..."³¹¹⁶

(3665) Anas said: I was serving wine to the people in the house of Abū Ṭalhah when it was prohibited and that day our wine was made from unripe dates.³¹¹⁷ A man entered upon us and said: The wine has been prohibited, and the herald of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) made an announcement. We then said: This is the herald of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

Chapter 1383

GRAPES PRESSED FOR WINE

(3666) Ibn 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah has cursed wine, its drinker, its server, its seller, its buyer, its presser, the one for whom it is pressed, the one who conveys it, and the one to whom it is conveyed.³¹¹⁸

Chapter 1384

TURNING WINE INTO VINEGAR

(3667) Anas b. Mālik said: Abu Ṭalhah asked the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about the orphans who had inherited wine. He replied: Pour it out. He asked: May I not make vinegar of it? He replied: No.³¹¹⁹

³¹¹³. Qur'ān, iv. 43.
³¹¹⁴. Qur'ān, iv. 43.
³¹¹⁵. Qur'ān, ii. 219.
³¹¹⁶. Qur'ān, v. 94.
³¹¹⁷. This shows that wine prohibited by the Qur'ān means all sorts of wine, whether made from wheat, barley, dates, etc. It is not peculiar to grapes.
³¹¹⁸. This shows that all those persons are cursed by Allah who are involved in wine in any way directly or indirectly.
³¹¹⁹. The caption of this chapter shows that the pressing of grapes for making wine is forbidden, and not for other purposes.
³¹¹⁹. This shows that making vinegar of wine is forbidden. This is held by most of the scholars. According to Abū Ḥanīfah and al-Auzā'ī, it is lawful to make vinegar of wine (ʿAwn al-Maʾbūd, III, 367).
Chapter 1385

FROM WHAT WINE IS MADE

(3668) Al-Nu‘mān b. Bāshīr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: From grapes wine is made, from dried dates wine is made, from honey wine is made, from wheat wine is made, from barley wine is made.3120

(3669) Al-Nu‘mān b. Bāshīr said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Wine is made from grape-syrup, raisins, dried dates, wheat, barley, millet, and I forbid you from every intoxicant.

(3670) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Wine comes from these two trees, the date-palm and the grape-vine.

Abū Dāwūd said: The name of Abū Kāthīr al-'Ubarī is Yazīd b. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Ghufailat al-Sahmī. Some said: Uzainah. What is correct is Ghufailah.

Chapter 1386

PROHIBITION OF INTOXICANTS

(3671) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Every intoxicant is forbidden.3121 He who drinks wine in this world, and dies when he is addicted to it, will not drink it in the next.

(3672) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Every intoxicant is khamr (wine) and every intoxicant is forbidden. If anyone drinks wine, Allah will not accept prayer from him for forty days, but if he repents, Allah will accept his repentance. If he repeats it a fourth time, it is binding3122 on Allah that He will give him tinat al-khabāl to drink. He was asked: What is tinat al-khabāl, Apostle of Allah? He replied: Discharge of wounds flowing from the inhabitants of Hell. If anyone serves it to a minor who does not distinguish between the lawful and the unlawful, it is binding on Allah that He will give him the discharge of wounds flowing from the inhabitants of Hell to drink.

(3673) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)

3120. During the lifetime of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) wine was made from these things. Now if wine is made from some other things than those mentioned in this tradition, that will also be prohibited. Wine is not confined to the things mentioned in this tradition.

3121. This means that everything which is intoxicant like wine is forbidden. One should avoid all kinds of intoxicants, in whatever form they may be.

3122. There is none who makes anything binding on Allah. It is He Who Himself makes binding anything on Himself. This expression has been used for emphasis.
as saying: If a large amount of anything causes intoxication, a small amount of it is prohibited.\footnote{3123}

(3674) ‘Ā’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked about \textit{bit’}.\footnote{3124} He replied: Every liquor which intoxicates is forbidden.\footnote{3125}

Abū Dawūd said: I read out this tradition to Yāzīd b. ‘Abd Rabbih al-Jurjisī. Muḥammad b. Ḥarb told you this tradition from al-Zabīdī from al-Zuhrī through his chain of narrators. This version added: \textit{Bit’} is the \textit{nabidh}\footnote{3126} from honey, which the people of the Yemen would drink.

Abū Dawūd said: I heard Ḩāmid b. Ḥanbal say: There is no god but Allah, there was none stronger in memory and like al-Jurjisī among the people of Ḥims.

(3675) Dailam al-Ḥimyarī said: I asked the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! we live in a cold land in which we do heavy work and we make a liquor from wheat to get strength from it for our work and to stand the cold of our country. He asked: Is it intoxicating? I replied: Yes. He said: You must avoid it. I said: The people will not abandon it. He said: If they do not abandon it, fight with them.\footnote{3127}

(3676) Abū Mūsā said: I asked the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about wine made from honey. He said: That is \textit{bit’}. I said: And the one made from barley and millet? He said: That is \textit{mizr}. He then said: Tell your people that every intoxicant is prohibited.

(3677) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr told that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade wine (\textit{khamr}), game of chance (\textit{maisir}),\footnote{3128} drum (\textit{kabah}),\footnote{3129} and wine made

2123. This shows that wine and other intoxicants are forbidden whether they are taken in large or small quantity. Abū Ḥanīfah says that the last drop which causes intoxication is prohibited. This is not correct, for one drop alone cannot produce intoxication unless the preceding amount is not added to it. One should avoid using large and small quantity of intoxicants.

3124. Wine made from honey.

3125. This shows that there is no difference between wine made from grapes and one made from other commodities. This distinction has been made by Abū Ḥanīfah. But his view conflicts with the traditions of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him). He applied the word \textit{khamr} (wine) to all intoxicants whether made of grapes or other ingredients.

3126. \textit{Nabidh} is a drink manufactured from dates, raisins, honey, wheat. This is generally made from dates. Hence it is known as date-wine. The Hanafīs allowed the use of this drink, for the ingredients were steeped in water in a vessel, and it was used before fermentation took place. Hence it was lawful. The other jurists did not allow its use.

3127. This shows that it is not permissible to drink wine in cold countries to protect from cold.

3128. \textit{Maisir} is a game of chance.

3129. \textit{Kūbah} means a kind of drum wide at the ends and narrow in the middle. This may be a wide term embracing all sorts of musical instruments.
from millet (ghubairah), saying: Every intoxicant is forbidden.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn Sallām Abū ‘Ubaid said: Ghubairah was an intoxicant liquor made from millet. This wine was made by the Abyssinians.

(3678) Umm Salamah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade every intoxicant and everything which produces languidness.

(3679) ‘Ā’ishah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Every intoxicant is forbidden; if a faraq of anything causes intoxication, a handful of it is forbidden.

Chapter 1387

DĀDHI

(3680) Mālik b. Abī Maryam said: ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ghanam entered upon us and we discussed tilā and he said: Abū Mālik al-Ash‘arī told me that he heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Some of my people will assuredly drink wine calling it by another name.

Abū Dāwūd said: An old man of the people of Wāsīt narrated from Abū Manṣūr al-Ḩarīth b. Manṣūr saying: I heard Sufyān al-Thawrī who was asked about al-dādhi. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Some of my people will assuredly drink wine calling it by another name.

Abū Dāwūd said: Sufyān al-Thawrī said: Al-dādhi is a wine of evil-doers.

Chapter 1388

VESSELS OF WINE

(3681) Ibn ‘Umar and Ibn ‘Abbās said: We testify that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade (the use of) gourds, green jarrs, receptacles smeared with pitch, and hollowed stumps of palm-trees.

3130. Ghubairah was a kind of wine prepared by the Abyssinians from millet.

3131. Faraq measures three sā’s or sixteen rots. The point is that anything much of which causes intoxication a little of it is also forbidden.

3132. Dādhi is a kind of wine. Dādhi is a corn put in nabīd (drink made from dates) to make it intoxicant.

3133. The liquor two-third of which is burnt out and one-third remains.

3134. Change of name of an intoxicant does not make it lawful. If a liquor is intoxicant, it is prohibited. The wine called dādhi is, therefore, prohibited.

3135. These vessels were used by the Arabs for making wine. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade them to use them for any drink because they cause intoxication. Some scholars are of opinion that the prohibition of using these vessels was restricted to the early period of Islam.
(3682) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade the nabidh (date-wine) of jarr. I was alarmed by his statement: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade the nabidh of jarr. I then entered upon Ibn ‘Abbās and asked him: Are you listening to what Ibn ‘Umar says? He asked: What is that? I said: He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade the nabidh of jarr. He said: He spoke the truth. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade the nabidh of jarr. I asked: What is jarr? He replied: Anything made of clay.3136

(3683) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The deputation of ‘Abd al-Qais came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: This is the tribe of Rabî‘ah, and the infidels of Muḍar are between us and you. We are able to come to you only in the sacred month. So give a decisive command which we may follow ourselves and to which we call those at home behind us. He (the Prophet) said: I command you to observe four things, and forbid you four things: Belief in Allah, the testimony that there is no god but Allah, and that Muhammad is the Apostle of Allah, observance of prayer, payment of zakât, and your giving the fifth of the booty. I forbid you the use of pumpkins, green jarrs, vessels smeared with pitch, and hollow stumps of palm-trees. Ibn ‘Ubaid’s version has the word muqayyar (vessels smeared with pitch) instead of naqir (hollow stumps). Musaddad’s version has naqir and muqayyar (pitch); he did not mention muzaffat (vessels smeared with pitch).

Abū Dāwūd said: The name of Abū Jamrah is Naṣr b. ‘Imrān al-Ḍubā‘I.

(3684) Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to the deputation of ‘Abd al-Qais: I forbid you the use of hollow stumps, vessels smeared with pitch, green jarrs, pumpkins, and a skin cut off at the top, but drink from your skin and tie it with a string.

(3685) In the story of the deputation of ‘Abd al-Qais Ibn ‘Abbās said: They (the people) asked: In which should we drink, Prophet of Allah? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: You should use those skin vessels that are tied at their mouths.3137

(3686) A man of the deputation of ‘Abd al-Qais who came to the prophet (may peace be upon him) reported from the traditions of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) reported by Būrāidat al-Aslāmī. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: I forbade you to use some vessels. Now drink with any vessel, but do not drink intoxicants (‘Awām al-Maḥbūb, III, 380).

3136. This refers to glazed jar made of clay. It was used for preparing wine.

3137. If a skin or a vessel remains open, anything may fall in it. Hence the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to tie the mouths of the skins and cover the vessels.
peace be upon him) said—the narrator 'Awf thinks that his name was Qais b. al-Nu'mān: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do not drink from hollowed stumps, vessels smeared with pitch, pumpkins, and green jarrs, but drink from a skin which is tied with string. If the drink ferments, lighten it by infusing water. If you are helpless, then pour it away. 3138

(3687) Ibn 'Abbas said: The deputation of 'Abd al-Qais asked (the Prophet): From which (vessels) should we drink? He (the Prophet) replied: Do not drink from pumpkins, vessels smeared with pitch, and hollow stumps, and steep dates in skins. They asked: Apostle of Allah, if it ferments? 3139 He replied: Infuse water in it. They asked: Apostle of Allah..." (repeating the same words). He replied to them third or fourth time: Pour it away. He then said: Allah has forbidden me, or he said: He has forbidden me wine, game of chance and kūbah (drums). He said: Every intoxicant is unlawful. Sufyān said: I asked 'All b. Badhīmah about kūbah. He replied: Drum.

(3688) 'Ali said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade us the use of pumpkins, green jarrs, hollow stumps 3140 and wine made from barley.

(3689) Buraidah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I forbade you three things, and now I command (permit) you for them. I forbid you to visit graves, now you may visit them, for in visiting them there is admonition. I forbid you drinks except from skin vessels, but now you may drink from any kind of vessels, but do not drink an intoxicant. I forbid you to eat the meat of sacrificial animals after three days, but now you may eat and enjoy it during your journeys. 3141

(3690) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade the use of (wine) vessels, the Anṣār said: They are inevitable for us.

3138. Sometimes nabīdḥ or any other drink ferments in the skin. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) suggested that fermentation should be removed by infusion of water. If the fermentation still remains in the drink, it should not be used.

3139. Nabīdḥ can be used for one or two days until it ferments. When it ferments, it should be poured away.

3140. In the early days of Islam the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the use of these vessels so that people might not again form the habit of drinking. Or nabīdḥ sometimes fermented in these vessels. Later on the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed to use these vessels, as reported by Buraidah: I have forbidden you receptacles, for while a receptacle does not make anything lawful or unlawful, every intoxicant is unlawful. In a version he said: I have forbidden you drinks except from skin vessels, but now you may drink from any kind of vessels, but do not drink an intoxicant. Muslim transmitted it.

3141. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade these things in the beginning for certain expediency, but later on he allowed them.
Thereupon he said : If so, then no.\textsuperscript{3142}

(3691) 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr said : The Prophet (may peace be upon him) mentioned the vessels : pumpkins, green jarrs, vessels smeared with pitch and hollow stumps. A desert Arab said : We have no vessels (except these). He said : Drink (from them) what is lawful.\textsuperscript{3143}

(3692) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Sharîk through a different chain of narrators. This version has : Avoid that which produces intoxication.

(3693) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah said : Dates were steeped for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) in a skin, but when they could not find a skin, they were steeped for him in a small stone vessel.\textsuperscript{3144}

\textbf{Chapter 1389}

\textbf{DRINK MADE FROM MIXING OF VARIOUS KINDS OF DATES OR DATES AND RAISINS}

(3694) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah said : The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade mixing raisins and dried dates; and unripe dates and fresh dates.\textsuperscript{3145}

(3695) 'Abd Allah b. Abî Qatâdah said that his father Abû Qatâdah forbade mixing raisins and dried dates, mixing unripe dates and fresh dates, and mixing dates beginning to take on colour and fresh dates. He said : Make nabîdîh (drink) from each separately.

He (the narrator Yahyâ) said : Abû Salamah b. 'Abd al-Rahmân narrated to me this tradition on the authority of Abû Qatâdah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

\textsuperscript{3142}. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the use of these vessels in case the people did not need them. When he was informed that they were in need of them, he withdrew his prohibition. Another version has : I forbade your vessels, for while a vessel does not make anything lawful or unlawful, but every intoxicant is unlawful. The Ansâr told him that they used to prepare their drink (nabîdîh) in these vessels and these were essential to them. Hence he allowed them to use those vessels.

\textsuperscript{3143}. This means that a man can drink a lawful thing from any vessel. There is no harm in using the vessels in which they used to make wine or drink wine from them. As they had no other vessels except these, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed them to use these vessels.

\textsuperscript{3144}. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to drink nabîdîh made from dates. It was not an intoxicant. It was prepared in a skin, and when it was not found, they prepared it in a small stone vessel. When this drink fermented, it was poured away.

\textsuperscript{3145}. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to make a drink from the mixture of two kinds of dates or dates and raisins for fear of fermentation. In another version of this tradition he allowed to make nabîdîh (drink) from each separately.
(3696) A man from among the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade (mixing) unripe dates and dried dates, and (mixing) raisins and dried dates.

(3697) Kaḥshah, daughter of Abū Maryam, asked Umm Salamah (Allah be pleased with her): What did the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibit? She replied: He forbade us to boil dates so much so that the kernels are spoiled, and to mix raisins and dried dates.

(3698) 'Ā’ishah (Allah be pleased with her) said: Raisins were steeped for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and then dried dates were infused in them, or dried dates were steeped and then raisins were infused in them.

(3699) Safiyyah, daughter of ‘Atiyyah, said: I entered upon ‘Ā’ishah with some women of ‘Abd al-Qais, and asked her about mixing dried dates and raisins (for drink). She replied: I used to take a handful of dried dates and a handful of raisins and put them in a vessel, and then crush them (and soak in water). Then I would give it to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to drink.

**Chapter 1390**

**DRINK MADE FROM UNRIPE DATES**

(3700) Qatadah said on the authority of Jābir b. Zaid and ‘Ikrimah that they disapproved of the drink made exclusively from unripe dates. This they reported on the authority of Ibn ‘Abbās. Ibn ‘Abbās said: I am afraid it may not be muzzā from which (the people of) ‘Abd al-Qais were prohibited. I asked Qatadah: What is muzzā? He replied: Drink of dates made in a green jar and a vessel smeared

3146. Boiling the dates extremely spoils the kernels and the drink becomes tasteless. Or it means that the kernels were used as fodder for animals. Hence the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade their extreme boiling.

3147. This shows that mixing dried dates and raisins is allowed for making a drink if there is no apprehension of intoxication. If there is such an apprehension, it is forbidden to mix them as the previous traditions indicate.

3148. This tradition indicates that making a drink by mixing two kinds of commodities is permissible. The traditions which prohibit such a drink may be taken to mean the drink which ferments or becomes intoxicant by mixing the two ingredients. In ordinary circumstances it is allowed.

3149. Muzzā is a drink made from mixing unripe dates and dried dates and it ferments. Abū ‘Ubayd says that it is an intoxicant.

This tradition indicates that the mixing of dried dates and unripe dates to prepare a drink is forbidden if it produces intoxication. If the drink made from unripe dates intoxicates or ferments, it is also prohibited.
Chapter 1391

DESCRIPTION OF THE DRINK MADE FROM RAISINS OR DATES (NABIDH)

(3701) Al-Dailami said: We came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said to him: Apostle of Allah, you know who we are, from where we are and to whom we have come. He said: To Allah and His Apostle. We said: Apostle of Allah, we have grapes; what should we do with them? He said: Make them raisins. We then asked: What should we do with raisins? He replied: Steep them in the morning and drink in the evening, and steep them in the evening and drink in the morning. Steep them in skin vessels and do not steep them in earthen jars, for if it is delayed in pressing, it becomes vinegar.3150

(3702) ‘A’ishah said: Dates were steeped for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) in a skin which was tied up at the top and had a mouth. What was steeped in the morning he would drink in the evening and what was steeped in the evening he would drink in the morning.

(3703) ‘Amrah said on the authority of ‘A’ishah that she would steep dates for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) in the morning. When the evening came, he took his dinner and drank it after his dinner. If anything remained, she poured it out. She then would steep for him at night. When the morning came, he took his morning meal and drank it after his morning meal. She said: The skin vessel was washed in the morning and in the evening. My father (Hayyān) said to her: Twice a day? She said: Yes.

(3704) Ibn ‘Abbas said: Raisins were steeped for the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and he would drink it in the morning and the night after, the following day and the night after. He then gave orders and it was given to servants to drink or poured away.3151

Abū Dāwūd said: That “it was given to servants to drink” means before it spoiled.

Abū Dāwūd said: Abū ‘Umar Yahyā al-Bahrānī.

3150. Since the drink generally ferments in clay jars, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to steep dates or raisins in them.

3151. All the traditions in this chapter indicate that the use of drink made from steeping dates or raisins called nabidh is permissible before it ferments or causes intoxication. It is forbidden if it intoxicates.
Chapter 1392

DRINK MADE FROM HONEY

(3705) ‘Ā’ishah said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to stay with Zainab, daughter of Jahsh, and drink honey. I and Ḥafṣah counselled each other that if the Prophet (may peace be upon him) enters upon any of us, she must say: I find the smell of gum (maghāfir) from you. He then entered upon one of them; she said that to him. Thereupon he said: No, I drank honey at (the house of) Zainab daughter of Jahsh, and I will not do it again. Then the following verse came down: “O Prophet! why holdest thou to be forbidden that which Allah has made lawful to thee?”

(3706) ‘Ā’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) liked sweetmeats and honey. The narrator then mentioned a part of the tradition mentioned above. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) felt it hard on him to find smell from him. In this tradition Saudah said: But you ate gum? He said: No, I drank honey. Ḥafṣah gave it to me to drink. I said: Its bees ate ‘urfūt. Abū Dāwūd said: Maghāfir is a gum; jarasat means ate; ‘urfūt is a bees’ plant.

Chapter 1393

ON NABIDH (DATE-DRINK) WHEN IT FERMENTS

(3707) Abū Hurairah said: I knew that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to keep fast. I waited for the day when he did not fast to present him the

3152. Maghāfir (sing. muğhfur) is a kind of gum having bad smell. This was disliked by the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him).
3153. Qur’ān, lxvi. 1.
3154. Qur’ān, lxvi. 4.
3155. Qur’ān, lxvi. 3.
3156. This shows that the drink made from honey was liked by the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) and it is permissible to use this drink.
3157. This tradition shows that the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) drank honey at the house of Ḥafṣah, and the previous tradition shows that he drank it at the house of Zainab. The previous version of this tradition is correct. It is ‘Ā’ishah and Ḥafṣah who counselled and not ‘Ā’ishah and Saudah as this version shows.
3158. ‘Urfūt is a bitter shrub. The bees suck the juice of its flowers which is bitter and smells badly. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like bad smell. Hence she referred to the gum of this shrub.
drink (nabidh) which I made in a pumpkin. I then brought it to him while it fermented. He said: Throw it to this wall, for this is a drink of the one who does not believe in Allah and the Last Day.  

Chapter 1394
TO DRINK WHILE STANDING

(3708) Anas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade that a man should drink while standing.  

(3709) Nazzāl b. Samurah said: ‘All asked for water and he drank it while standing. He then said: Some people disapprove of doing this (drinking while standing), but I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) doing as I have done.

Chapter 1395
DRINKING FROM THE MOUTH OF A WATER-SKIN

(3710) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade drinking from the mouth of a water-skin, and riding the animal which feeds on filth and eating the animal which is killed in confinement.  

Abū Dāwūd said: Jallālah means an animal which eats filth and impurities.

Chapter 1396
DRINKING BY INVERTING THE HEADS OF SKIN VESSELS

(3711) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited to drink by inverting the heads of skin vessels.  

(3712) A man of the Anṣār quoting his father said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade as a precaution, One must take out water and then drink it. There may fall in the vessel something which may harm him.  

3159. This tradition indicates that when nabidh ferments, it is unlawful to use it.  
3160. It is only abominable to drink while standing and not forbidden. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) is also reported to have drunk while standing to show its permissibility.  
3161. This shows that drinking a thing while standing is permissible.  
3162. He forbade as a precaution. One must take out water and then drink it. There may fall in the vessel something which may harm him.  
3163. By eating filth and impurities its sweat smells badly, and the clothes of a rider are smeared with it.  
3164. It is a great wrong to kill an animal in confinement and then eat its flesh. Since the animal dies after feeling severe pain, its meat may be harmful.  
3165. The reason for this prohibition is that the clothes may become wet by water or the mouth of the skin may be contaminated by bad smell.
be upon him) called for a skin-vessel on the day of the battle of Uḥud. He then said:
invert the head of the vessel and he drank from its mouth.\textsuperscript{3166}

Chapter 1397

DRINKING FROM THE BROKEN PLACE OF A CUP

(3713) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade drinking from the broken place (of a cup) and blowing into a drink.\textsuperscript{3167}

Chapter 1398

DRINKING FROM GOLD AND SILVER VESSELS

(3714) Ibn Abl Laflālā said: When Ḥudhaifah was in al-Madā’in, he asked for water. A peasant brought him a silver vessel. He threw it away and said: I threw it away, for I prohibited (him) but he did not stop. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade to wear silk or brocade, and to drink from gold and silver vessels. He said: Others have them in this world and you will have them in the next.\textsuperscript{3168}

Chapter 1399

SIPPIN G W ATER W ITH  T H E M OUTH

(3715) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) went to visit a man of the Anṣār accompanied by one of his Companions who was watering his garden. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If you have any water which has remained over night in a skin (we should like it), or we shall sip\textsuperscript{3169} (from a streamlet).

Chapter 1400

W HEN SHOULD THE SUPPLIER D R INK  ?

(3716) ‘Abd Allah b. Abī Awfā reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him)

\textsuperscript{3166}. This shows permission for drinking by inverting the mouth of a vessel when there is a need for it. Normally one should avoid this practice.

\textsuperscript{3167}. If a man drinks from the broken place, the water will flow on his clothes. He forbade to blow into a drink so that anything may not fall in it.

\textsuperscript{3168}. Drinking from gold and silver vessels and eating in them is forbidden for all Muslims.

\textsuperscript{3169}. This shows that if a man has no vessel to drink water, he may drink by sipping from the streamlet.
as saying: The supplier of the people is the last (man) to drink.\textsuperscript{3170}

(3717) Anas b. Mâlik said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was brought milk that was mixed with water. A nomad Arab was on his right and Abû Bakr was on his left. He himself drank and gave it to the nomad Arab, and said: He who is on the right, then he who is on his right.\textsuperscript{3171}

(3718) Anas b. Mâlik said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) drank, he used to breathe three times in the course of a drink and say: It is more wholesome, thirst-quenching and healthier.\textsuperscript{3172}

\textbf{Chapter 1401}

\textbf{BLOWING IN A DRINK AND BREATHING INTO IT}

(3719) Ibn 'Abbâs said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade blowing or breathing into a vessel.

(3720) 'Abd Allah b. Busr from Banû Sulaim said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to my father and he was a guest with him. He offered food to him and he brought \textit{hais}.\textsuperscript{3173} He then brought a drink which he drank and he gave it to the one on his right. He ate dried dates and began to put the kernels on the back of his ring finger and middle finger. When he got up, my father also got up, and held the rein of his mount. He said: Pray to Allah for me. He said: O Allah, bless them in what you have provided them, forgive them, and have mercy on them.

\textbf{Chapter 1402}

\textbf{WHAT SHOULD BE SAID WHILE DRINKING MILK}

(3721) Ibn 'Abbâs said: I was in the house of Maimûnah. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) accompanied by Khâlid b. al-Walîd entered. Two roasted long-tailed lizards (\textit{dabb}) placed on the sticks were brought to him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) spat. Khâlid said: I think that you abominate it, Apostle of Allah. He said: Yes. Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)...

\textsuperscript{3170} The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) taught etiquette of eating and drinking in a company. The man who distributes or supplies a thing should take it himself in the last.

\textsuperscript{3171} This shows that people should hand a drink to the one on the right irrespective of the importance of the people.

\textsuperscript{3172} This shows that one must breathe three times while drinking. He should give short breaks.

\textsuperscript{3173} A dish made of dates mixed with clarified butter and dried curd. Sometimes flour was added to it.
was brought milk, and he drank (it). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: When one of you eats food, he should say: O Allah, bless us in it, and give us food (or nourishment) better than it. When he is given milk to drink he should say: O Allah! bless us in it and give us more of it, for no food or drink satisfies like milk.

Abū Dāwūd said: This is Musaddad’s version.

Chapter 1403

COVERING VESSELS

(3722) Jābir reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Shut your door and make mention of Allah’s name, for the devil does not open a door which has been shut; extinguish your lamp and make mention of Allah’s name, cover up your vessel even by a piece of wood that you just put on it and make mention of Allah’s name, and tie up your water-skin mentioning Allah’s name.3174

(3723) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying—this version is not complete—“for the devil does not open a shut door, or loosen a water-skin, or uncover a vessel, for a mouse sets a house on fire over its inhabitants.”

(3724) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Gather your children when darkness spreads, or in the evening (according to Musaddad), for the jinn are abroad and seize them.

(3725) Jābir said: We were with the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and he asked for something to drink. A man from the company asked: Should we not give you nabidh (drink made from dates) to drink? He replied: Yes. The man went quickly and brought a cup of nabidh. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Why did you not cover it up even by putting a piece of wood on it?

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Asmā‘ī’s version has: “You put it on it...”

(3726) ‘Ā’ishah said: The water from al-Suqyā’ was considered sweetest by the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Qutaibah said: It was a well on two days’ journey from Medina.

3174. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) has provided teaching for all facets of life. This tradition shows how a Muslim should pass his night at home. Another version recorded by al-Bukhārī and Muslim says: When the darkness of night comes, or in the evening, collect your children, for the devil is abroad at that time, and when an hour of the night has passed, let them free and shut the doors, for the devil does not open a shut door. If Muslims act upon this tradition, nothing can do them any harm at night. Many things are not intelligible to reason, but one should obey the teachings of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him).
XXI. KITAB AL-AT‘IMAH

[BOOK OF FOODS]

Chapter 1404

ACCEPTANCE OF INVITATION FOR A FEAST

(3727) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you is invited for a wedding feast, he must attend it.3175

(3728) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Umar to the same effect through a different chain of narrators. This version has the additional words: If he is not fasting, he should eat, and if he is fasting, he should leave it.

(3729) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If one of you invites his brother, he should accept (the invitation), whether it is a wedding feast or something of that nature.

(3730) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Nāfi‘ to the same effect through the chain of narrators as mentioned by Ayyūb.

(3731) Jābir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you is invited to a meal, he must accept. If he wishes he may eat, but if he wishes (to leave), he may leave.

(3732) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who does not accept an invitation which he receives has disobeyed Allah and His Apostle, and he who enters without invitation enters as a thief and goes out as a raider.3176

3175. There are three points of view about accepting the invitation to a wedding feast: first, obligatory for the one who is invited, but not necessary for a man who has some valid excuse; second, it is a collective obligation (fard kifayah), i.e. some people must attend it; third, it is commendable to attend it. According to the Zāhirīs it is obligatory to attend the feast. As for feast other than that of wedding, Mālik and most of the scholars hold that it is commendable to attend it (‘Awn al-Ma‘bud, III. 394).

3176. This tradition is the basis of argument of those who hold that acceptance of invitation is obligatory. One should not, however, attend a feast without invitation. Acceptance of invitation causes to increase love between two Muslims, and attending feast without invitation causes ill-feelings and hostility.
(3733) Abu Hurairah said: The worst kind of food is that at a wedding feast to which the rich are invited and from which the poor are left out. If anyone does not attend the feast to which he was invited, he has disobeyed Allah and His Apostle (may peace be upon him).

**Chapter 1405**

**RECOMMENDATION FOR HOLDING A WEDDING FEAST**

(3734) Thabit said: The marriage of Zainab daughter of Jahsh was mentioned before Anas b. Malik. He said: I did not see that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) held such a wedding feast for any of his wives as he did for her. He held a wedding feast with a sheep.

(3735) Anas b. Malik said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) held a wedding feast for Safiyyah with meal and dates.

**Chapter 1406**

**DURATION FOR HOLDING A WEDDING FEAST**

(3736) Zuhair b. Uthmân reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The wedding feast on the first day is a duty, that on the second is a good practice, but that on the third day is to make men hear of it and show it to them.

Qatadah said: A man told me that Sa‘îd b. al-Musayyab was invited to a wedding feast on the first day and he accepted it. He was again invited on the second day, and he accepted. When he was invited on the third day, he did not accept; he said: They are the people who make men hear of it and show it to them.

(3737) Qatadah reported this story from Sa‘îd b. al-Musayyab. This version adds:

3177. This tradition has also been narrated from the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) by al-Bukhari and Muslim.

3178. This shows that a man should invite not only the rich to his feast but he should also invite the poor.

3179. It is commendable to hold a wedding feast. But it is disputed when it should be held. What is more correct is that it should be held after consummation of marriage. This is held by Malik and most of the scholars. According to some, it should be held at the time of contract before having intercourse.

3180. The Arabic word is sawiq. It is a kind of mush made from wheat or barley and sometimes with sugar and dates.

3181. This shows that sumptuous meal is not necessary for the wedding feast. One may arrange a simple feast.

3182. This tradition determines the period of holding the wedding-feast. It can be held only for one or two days.
When he was invited on the third day, he did not accept but threw pebbles on the messenger.

Chapter 1407

ENTERTAINMENT AFTER RETURNING FROM JOURNEY

(3738) Jābir said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) returned to Medina, he would slaughter a camel or a cow.3183

Chapter 1408

HOSPITALITY

(3739) Abū Shuraiḥ al-Ka'bl reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who believes in Allah and the Last Day should honour his guest. Provisions for the road are what will serve for a day and night: hospitality extends for three days; what goes after that is sadaqah (charity); and it is not allowable that a guest should stay till he makes himself an encumbrance.3184

Abū Dāwūd said: Malik was asked about the saying of the Prophet; “Provisions for the road are what will serve for a day and a night.” He said: He should honour him, present him some gift, and protect him for a day and a night, and hospitality for three days.

(3740) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Hospitality extends for three days, and what goes beyond that is sadaqah (charity).3185

(3741) Abū Karlmah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is a duty of every Muslim (to provide hospitality) to a guest for a night. If anyone comes in the morning to his house, it is a debt due to him. If he wishes, he may fulfill it, and if he wishes he may leave it.

(3742) Al-Miṣqam Abū Karlmah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If any Muslim is a guest of people and is given nothing, it is the duty of every Muslim to help him to the extent of taking for him from their crop

3183. The narrator is doubtful whether the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) slaughtered a camel or a cow. This shows that it is commendable to entertain the people after returning from journey.

3184. Hospitality for three days was compulsory in the early days of Islam. But now it is recommended. The host should entertain the guest profusely first, and provide him with what is available in his house. If a man stays more than three days, he should spend himself.

3185. After three days it depends on the discretion of the host whether he entertains the guest or not.
Abrogation of the Rule that A Guest may Take His Due . . .

and property\textsuperscript{3186} for the entertainment of one night.

(3743) ‘Uqbah b. ‘Amir said: We said: Apostle of Allah! you send us out and we come to people who do not give us hospitality, so what is your opinion? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If you come to people who order for you what is fitting for a guest, accept it; but if they do not, take from them what is fitting for them to give to a guest.\textsuperscript{3187}

Abū Dāwūd said: And this is an authority for a man to take a thing if it is due to him.

\textit{Chapter 1409}

\textbf{ABROGATION OF THE RULE THAT A GUEST MAY TAKE HIS DUE FROM THE PROPERTY OF ANOTHER PERSON}

(3744) Ibn ‘Abbās said: When the verse; "O ye who believe! eat not up your property among yourselves in vanities, but let there be amongst you traffic and trade by mutual good-will,"\textsuperscript{3188} was revealed, a man thought it a fault to eat in the house of another man after the revelation of this verse. Then this (injunction) was revealed by the verse in Qur'ān: "No blame on you whether you eat in company or separately."\textsuperscript{3189} When a rich man (after revelation) invited a man from his people to eat food in his house, he would say: "I consider it a sin to eat from it, and he said: A poor man is more entitled to it than I. The Arabic word \textit{tajanna} means sin or fault. It was then declared lawful to eat a thing\textsuperscript{3190} on which the name of Allah was mentioned, and it was made lawful to eat the flesh of an animal slaughtered by the people of the Book.\textsuperscript{3191}

\textsuperscript{3186.} Hospitality for one day was obligatory in the early days of Islam. Later on this rule of law was abrogated. It is now commendable.

\textsuperscript{3187.} In the early days of Islam the Muslims used to go on expeditions. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him), ordered the people to entertain them, as there was no arrangement for their boarding and lodging. Hospitality was compulsory in those days. It is not binding now. It is commendable. Another explanation of this tradition is that one of the conditions of pact between Muslims and non-Muslims was that the latter would provide hospitality to the former when they came over in their land. According to this treaty, they were bound to entertain the Muslims. If they did not do so, Muslims were asked to take their due from their property for only one night, and not more than that.

\textsuperscript{3188.} Qur'ān, iv. 29.

\textsuperscript{3189.} Qur'ān, xxiv. 61.

\textsuperscript{3190.} It refers to the animal slaughtered according to the established practice in Islam.

\textsuperscript{3191.} It means that Muslims should eat what is lawful. It is no sin to eat food in the house of others or to eat the animal slaughtered by the people of the Book.
Chapter 1410

HOSPITALITY PROVIDED BY TWO RIVALLING PEOPLE

(3745) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade that the food of two people who were rivalling one another should be eaten.3192

Abū Dāwūd said: Most of those who narrated it from Jarīr did not mention the name of Ibn ‘Abbās. Hārūn al-Nahwī mentioned Ibn ‘Abbās in it, and Ḥammād b. Zaid did not mention Ibn ‘Abbās.

Chapter 1411

DISAPPROVED ACTION IN THE HOUSE IN WHICH A GUEST IS ENTERTAINED

(3746) Safinah Abū ‘Abd al-Rahmān said that a man prepared food for ʿAll b. Abī Ṭālib who was his guest, and Fāṭimah said: I wish we had invited the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and he had eaten with us. They invited him, and when he came he put his hands on the side-ports of the door, but when he saw the figured curtain which had been put at the end of the house, he went away. So Fāṭimah said to ʿAll: Follow him and see what turned him back. I (ʿAll) followed him and asked: What turned you back, Apostle of Allah? He replied: It is not fitting for me or for any Prophet to enter a house which is decorated.3193

Chapter 1412

WHICH OF THE TWO MEN WHO ISSUE INVITATION TOGETHER IS MORE ENTITLED

(3747) Ḥumaid b. ʿAbd al-Rahmān al-Ḥimyarī said: A Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) reported him as saying: When two people come together to issue an invitation, accept that of the one whose door is nearer in neighbourhood, but

3192. This refers to the two persons who rival each other in providing hospitality to the guest. It is forbidden because it involves show and ostentation of one’s richness. One should not accept such an invitation.

3193. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) went back because he disliked luxury and unnecessary decoration in the house. This shows that if an unlawful action is done in a house where a guest has been entertained, he may come back or refuse the invitation.
if one of them comes before the other accept the invitation of the one who comes first.\textsuperscript{3194}

\textit{Chapter 1413}

\textbf{WHAT SHOULD A MAN DO WHEN THE TIME OF THE NIGHT PRAYER COMES AND THE EVENING MEAL IS READY}

(3748) Ibn 'Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When the evening meal is brought before one of you and the congregational prayer is also ready, he should not get up until he finishes (eating). Musaddad's version adds: When the evening meal was put before 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar, or it was brought to him, he did not get up until he finished it, even if he heard call to prayer (just before it), and even if he heard the recitation of the Qur'an by the leader-in-prayer.\textsuperscript{3195}

(3749) Jabir b. 'Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Prayer should not be postponed for taking meals nor for any other thing.\textsuperscript{3106}

(3750) 'Abd Allah b. 'Ubaid b. 'Umar said: I was with my father in the time of Ibn al-Zubair sitting beside 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar. Then Abbâd b. 'Abd Allah b. al-Zubair said: We have heard that the evening meal is taken just before the night prayer. Thereupon 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar said: Woe to you! what was their evening meal? Do you think it was like the meal of your father?\textsuperscript{3197}

\textit{Chapter 1414}

\textbf{WASHING HANDS BEFORE TAKING FOOD}

(3751) Ibn Abbâs said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came out

\textsuperscript{3194}. This shows that when two men issue invitation together, one should accept that of the one who lives nearer, or of the one who comes first, or of the one who is superior in piety and learning. In case both are equal in all respects, one should draw lots.

\textsuperscript{3195}. The commentators have taken this tradition to mean recommendation and not an obligation. It depends on one's condition. If a man is too much hungry, he should first take his meals and then should pray. In ordinary circumstances one may first pray, then eat food.

\textsuperscript{3196}. The former tradition allows to postpone the prayer for taking meals, but this tradition forbids it. These can be reconciled by saying that the former applies to a man who is extremely hungry, while this tradition refers to a man who does not feel much hunger. He can wait for some time and take his food after saying his prayer.

\textsuperscript{3197}. The food in the time of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) was very simple. The Companions used to take it hurriedly before prayer. The food of Ibn al-Zubair, who was the ruler of Mecca, was sumptuous. That could not be taken hurriedly.
from the privy and was presented to him. They (the people) asked: Should we bring you water for ablution? He replied: I have been commanded to perform ablution when I get up for prayer.\textsuperscript{3198}

\textit{Chapter 1415}

\textbf{WASHING ONLY ONE HAND BEFORE TAKING FOOD}

\textsuperscript{(3752)} Salmān said: I read in the Torah that the blessing of food consists in ablution before it. So I mentioned it to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: The blessing of food consists in ablution before it and ablution after it.\textsuperscript{3199} Sufyān disapproved of performing ablution before taking food.\textsuperscript{3200}

Abū Dāwūd said: It is weak.

\textit{Chapter 1416}

\textbf{TAKING FOOD IN HASTE}

\textsuperscript{(3753)} Jābir b. ʿAbd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came out from the valley of a mountain where he had eased himself. There were some dried dates on a shield before us. We called him and he ate with us. He did not touch water.\textsuperscript{3201}

\textit{Chapter 1417}

\textbf{ABOMINATION OF EXPRESSING DISAPPROVAL OF FOOD}

\textsuperscript{(3754)} Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) never expressed disapproval of food; if he desired it, he ate it, and if he disliked it, he left it alone.\textsuperscript{3202}

\textsuperscript{3198} This shows that ablution is not necessary before taking meals. One may wash one’s hands. It is recommended and not compulsory.

\textsuperscript{3199} Ablution in this tradition means washing the hands. This shows that it is commendable to wash hands before and after the food. Ibn Qayyim says that there are two points of view about washing hands. According to one view, it is commendable to wash hands before meals and according to another it is not commendable.

\textsuperscript{3200} Sufyān al-Thawrī might have followed the tradition of Ibn ʿAbbās as mentioned before.

\textsuperscript{3201} This shows that if a man is in a hurry, he may leave washing hands before taking food.

\textsuperscript{3202} If a man dislikes food, he should leave it, but he is not allowed to express his disapproval.
Chapter 1418

TAKING FOOD TOGETHER

(3755) Wahshl b. Ḥarb on his father’s authority said that his grandfather told of the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) saying: Apostle of Allah! we eat but we are not satisfied. He said: Perhaps you eat separately. They replied: Yes. He said: If you gather together at your food and mention Allah’s name, you will be blessed in it.3203

Abū Dāwūd said: If you are invited to a wedding feast and the evening meal is placed before you, do not take it until the owner of the house (i.e. the host) allows you (to eat).

Chapter 1419

MENTIONING ALLAH’S NAME ON FOOD

(3756) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said that he heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say: When a man enters his house and mentions Allah’s name on entering and on his food, the devil says: You have no place to spend the night and no evening meal; but when he enters without mentioning Allah’s name on entering, the devil says: You have found a place to spend the night, and when he does not mention Allah’s name at his food, he says: You have found a place to spend the night and an evening meal.3204

(3757) When we were at food with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) none of us put in his hand till the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) put his hand first. Once we were at food with him. A nomad Arab came in as though he were being pushed, and he was about to put his hand in food when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) seized him by the hand. Then a girl came in as though she were being pushed, and she was about to put her hand in the food when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) seized her by the hand, and he said: The devil considers the food lawful when Allah’s name is not mentioned over it, and he brought this nomad Arab that it might be lawful by means of him, so I seized his hand; then he brought this girl that it might be lawful by means of her, so I seized her hand. By Him in Whose hand my soul is, His hand is in my hand along with their hands.

3203. This is an etiquette of taking food in the house by a family. If all the people take food together, they will be blessed in it.

3204. This shows that one should mention Allah’s name while entering the house and at the time of taking food. Rather one should mention Allah’s name while doing every work. It causes blessing.
(3758) 'A'ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you eats, he should mention Allah's name; if he forgets to mention Allah's name at the beginning, he should say: “In the name of Allah at the beginning and at the end of it.”

(3759) Umayyah b. Makhshî, who was a Companion of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was sitting and a man was eating. He did not mention Allah's name until there remained the last morsel. When he raised it to his mouth, he said: In the name of Allah at the beginning and at the end of it. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) laughed and said: The devil kept eating along with him, but when he mentioned Allah's name, he vomited what was in his belly.

Abû Dâwûd said: Jâbir b. Šubh is grandfather of Sulaimân b. Ḥarb from his mother's side.

Chapter 1420

EATING WAILE RECLINING

(3760) Abû Juhaftah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: I do not eat while reclining.3205

(3761) 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr reported: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was sitting while eating, nor walking with two men at his heels.3 06

(3762) Anas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) sent me (for some work), and when I returned to him found him eating dates and squatting.

Chapter 1421

EATING FROM THE TOP OF THE DISH

(3763) Ibn 'Abbâs reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you eats, he must not eat from the top of the dish, but should eat from the bottom; for the blessing descends from the top of it.3207

(3764) 'Abd Allah b. Busr said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had a bowl

3205. This shows that taking food while reclining on one side to anything is disapproved. One should eat sitting straight. If a man is ill or has some other excuse, he may recline.

3206. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) would not walk in front of the people. He used to walk in the middle.

3207. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) taught the etiquette of eating. One must not eat from the middle of the dish, but from its sides, as another version of this tradition says. The blessing descends in the middle.
called gharrā'. It was carried by four persons. When the sun rose high, and they performed the forenoon prayer, the bowl in which tharid was prepared was brought, and the people gathered round it. When they were numerous, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sat on his knees. A bedouin said: What is this sitting? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Allah has made me a respectable servant, and He did not make me an obstinate tyrant. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Eat from its sides and leave its top, the blessing will be conferred on it.

Chapter 1422

SITTING AT A CLOTH TO EAT THINGS THAT ARE DISAPPROVED

(3765) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade two kinds of food: to sit at a cloth on which wine is drunk, and to eat by a man while lying on his stomach.3209

Abū Dāwūd said: Ja‘far did not hear this tradition from al-Zuhřī. His tradition is rejected.

(3766) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Zuhřī from a different chain of narrators.

Chapter 1423

EATING WITH RIGHT HAND

(3767) ibn ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When any of you eats, he should eat with his right hand, and when he drinks, he should drink with his right hand, for the devil eats with his left hand and drinks with his left hand.3210

(3768) ‘Umar b. ‘Abī Salamah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Come near, my son, mention Allah’s name, eat with your right hand and eat from what is next to you.

3208. Tharid: It is a kind of curry, made of bread crumbled and mixed with soup which may have pieces of meat in it.

3209. It is disapproved to associate with people who drink wine. One should avoid eating with such people as are eating a thing which is forbidden. It is also disapproved to eat while laying on one’s stomach.

3210. It is recommended to eat and drink with the right hand.
Chapter 1424

EATINING MEAT

(3769) 'A'ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not eat meat with a knife, for it is a foreign practice, but bite it, for it is more beneficial and wholesome.\(^{3211}\)

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition is not strong.\(^{3212}\)

(3770) Șafwān b. Umayyah said: I was eating with the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and snatching the meat from the bone with my hand. He said: Bring the bone near your mouth, for it is more beneficial and wholesome.

Abū Dāwūd said: 'Uthmān did not hear (traditions) from Șafwān. This is a mur-sal tradition.

(3771) 'Abd Allah b. Mas'ūd said: The bone dearer to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was the bone of sheep.\(^{3213}\)

(3772) The tradition mentioned above has also been narrated by Ibn Mas'ūd with a different chain of narrators. This version has: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) liked the foreleg (of a sheep). Once the foreleg was poisoned, and he thought that the Jews had poisoned it.

Chapter 1425

EATINING PUMPKIN

(3773) Anas b. Mālik said: A tailor invited the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to a meal which he had prepared. Anas said: I went along with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to that meal. He presented to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) barley bread and soup containing pumpkin and dried sliced meat. Anas said: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) going after the pumpkin round the dish, so I have always liked pumpkin since that day.\(^{3214}\)

3211. This refers to the meat boiled or cooked well, for it is soft and can be eaten easily without cutting with the knife. But this contradicts the traditions recorded by al-Bukhārī and Muslim. They allow to cut meat with a knife. They probably refer to the meat which has not been boiled or cooked well.

3212. This is a weak tradition. The narrator Abū Ma'shar is not reliable.

3213. 'Urāq is a bone from which meat has been removed, and there remains only a little meat on it.

3214. This shows that the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) liked pumpkin very much. It is, therefore, recommended for every Muslim to like pumpkin. But it is not obligatory on him to eat it.
Chapter 1426

**EATING THARID**

(3774) Ibn 'Abbās said: The food the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) liked best was *tharid* made from bread and *tharid* made from *ḥais*.5216

Abū Dāwūd said: It is a weak (tradition).

Chapter 1427

**DISAPPROVAL OF EXPRESSING THE DISLIKE OF FOOD**

(3775) Qābīlah b. Halb reported on the authority of his father: A man asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): Is there any food from which I should keep myself away? I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Anything which creates doubt should not occur in your mind by which you resemble Christianity.5217

Chapter 1428

**PROHIBITION OF EATING THE ANIMAL WHICH FEEDS ON FILTH AND DRINKING ITS MILK**

(3776) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited eating the animal which feeds on filth and drinking its milk.5218

(3777) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to drink the milk of the animal which feeds on filth.

(3778) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade riding the camel which feeds on filth and drinking its milk.

---

5215. *Ṯarīd* is a dish made from bread crumbled and mixed with soup which may have pieces of meat in it.

5216. Ḥais is a kind of dish made from the mixture of dates and clarified butter.

5217. This shows that one should not show one’s hatred and dislike of a lawful food. One should not have any doubt about permissible dishes. If a man dislikes a food, he need not mention or express his disapproval of it. He may not eat it, but leave it alone.

5218. The flesh of the animal which feeds on filth is also affected by filth. Its milk too becomes filthy by constant eating of filth. Hence the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade eating its flesh and drinking its milk and riding on it due to its filthy perspiration.
Chapter 1429

EATING HORSE-FLESH

(3779) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade the flesh of domestic asses on the day of Khaibar, but permitted horse-flesh.3219

(3780) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: On the day of Khaibar we slaughtered horses, mules, and asses. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade us (to eat) mules and asses, but he did not forbid horse-flesh.

(3781) Khālid b. al-Walid said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade us to eat horse-flesh, the flesh of mules and of asses. The narrator Ḥaiwah added: Every beast of prey with a fang.

Abū Dāwūd said: This view is held by Mālik.

Abū Dāwūd said: There is no harm in (eating) horse-flesh and this tradition is not practised.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been abrogated. A body of the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had eaten horse-flesh. Of them are: Ibn al-Zubair, Fuḍālah b. ‘Usaid, Anas b. Mālik, Asmaʿ daughter of Abū Bakr, Suwaid b. Ghaflah, ‘Alqamah; the Quraysh used to slaughter them (horses) during the time of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

Chapter 1430

EATING HARE

(3782) Anas b. Mālik said: I was an adolescent boy. I hunted a hare and roasted it. Abū Ṭalḥah sent its hunch through me to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). So I brought it to him and he accepted it.3220

(3783) Abū Khālid b. al-Ḥuwairith said: ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr was in al-Ṣafāh. The narrator Muḥammad (b. Khālid) said: It is a place in Mecca. A man brought a hare which he had hunted. He said: ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr, what do you say? He said: It was brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) when I was sitting

3219. The question of eating horse-flesh is disputed among scholars. According to al-Ṭabarī, Aḥmad, Iṣḥāq, Abū Yūsuf and Muḥammad, it is permitted to eat the flesh of horse. This is widely held by traditionalists and other scholars. Mālik, Abū Ḥanīfah and al-Ausī’ī maintain that it is disapproved to eat horse-flesh (‘Awn al-Mu‘ād, III, 413).

3220. This shows that eating the flesh of hare is lawful. This is a widely held view. But ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar, ‘Ikrimah and Ibn Abī Lailā are reported to have held it disapproved.
(with him). He did not eat it, nor did he prohibit to eat it. He thought that it menstruated.

Chapter 1431

EATING LIZARD

(3784) Ibn ‘Abbās said that his maternal aunt presented to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) clarified butter, lizards and cottage cheese. He ate from clarified butter and cheese, but left the lizards abominably. It was eaten on the food cloth of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). Had it been unlawful, it would not have been eaten on the food cloth of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).3221

(3785) Ibn ‘Abbās said on the authority of Khālid b. al-Walid that he entered the house of Maimūnah along with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). A roasted lizard was offered to him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) stretched his hand for it. Some of the women who were in the house of Maimūnah said: Inform the Prophet (may peace be upon him) of what he is going to eat. They said: It is a lizard. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) raised his hand. I (Khālid) asked: Is it forbidden, Apostle of Allah? He replied, No, but it is not found in the land of my people, so I find it distasteful. Khālid said: I then pulled it and ate it while the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was seeing.

(3786) Thābit b. Wadī‘ah said: We were in an army with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). We got some lizards. I roasted one lizard and brought it to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and placed it before him. He took a stick and counted its fingers. He then said: A group from the children of Isrā‘īl was transformed into an animal of the land, and I do not know which animal it was. He did not eat it nor did he forbid, (its eating).

(3787) ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Shibli said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade to eat the flesh of lizard.3222

3221. The long-tailed lizard is lawful according to the majority of scholars. According to Abū Ḥanīfah and some scholars, it is disapproved.

3222. According to Abū Ḥanīfah, to eat lizard is forbidden. He argues from this tradition. But this tradition is weak. The narrator Ismā‘Il b. ‘Ayyāsh is not reliable. The traditions which allow it are sound. This tradition may be interpreted in a different way. He might have prohibited in the beginning, but later on allowed it.
Chapter 1432

FLESH OF BUSTARD

(3788) Safinah said: I ate the flesh of a bustard along with the Prophet (may peace be upon him).\textsuperscript{3223}

Chapter 1433

EATING INSECTS AND LITTLE CREATURES OF LAND

(3789) Malqām b. Talabb said on the authority of his father: I accompanied the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), but I did not hear about the prohibition of (eating) insects and little creatures of land.\textsuperscript{3224}

(3790) Numailah said: I was with Ibn 'Umar. He was asked about eating hedgehog. He recited: "Say: I find not in the message received by me by inspiration any (meat) forbidden."	extsuperscript{3225} An old man who was with him said: I heard Abu Hurairah say: It was mentioned to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He said: Noxious of the noxious. Ibn 'Umar said: If the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had said it, it is as he said that we did not know.\textsuperscript{3226}

Chapter 1434

THINGS FOR WHICH THERE IS NO MENTION OF THEIR PROHIBITION

(3791) Ibn 'Abbās said: The people of pre-Islamic times used to eat some things and leave others alone, considering them unclean. Then Allah sent His Prophet (may peace be upon him) and sent down His Book, marking some things lawful and others unlawful; so what He made lawful is lawful, what He made unlawful is unlawful, and what He said nothing about is allowable. And he recited: "Say: I find not in the message received by me by inspiration any (meat) forbidden to be eaten by one who

\textsuperscript{3223} This shows that eating the flesh of a bustard is permissible.

\textsuperscript{3224} This refers to lizards, jerboa and hedgehog and daman. Silence does not show that they are lawful. Some of them are lawful and others unlawful.

\textsuperscript{3225} Qur'ān, vi. 145.

\textsuperscript{3226} Hedgehog is prohibited according to Abū Ḥanīfah and Ahmad, but lawful according to Mālik, Ibn Abī Lailā and al-Shāfī‘ī. This is a disputed question.
wishes to eat it. . .” up to the end of the verse.  

Chapter 1435

EATING THE HYENA

(3792) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: I asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) about the hyena. He replied: It is game, and if one who is wearing ṣhrām (pilgrim’s robe) hunts it, he should give a sheep as atonement.  

Chapter 1436

PROHIBITION OF EATING BEASTS OF PREY

(3793) Abū Tha‘labah al-Khushānī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited eating fanged beast of prey.  

(3794) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited the eating of every beast of prey with a fang, and every bird with a talon.  

(3795) Al-Miqdām b. Ma‘dikarib reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Beware, the fanged beast of prey is not lawful, nor the domestic asses, nor the fowl from the property of a man with whom treaty has been concluded, except that he did not need it. If anyone is a guest of people who provide no hospitality for him, he is entitled to take from them the equivalent of the hospitality due to him.  

(3796) Ibn ‘Abbās said: On the day of Khaibar the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited eating every beast of prey, and every bird with a talon.

(3797) Khalid b. al-Walid said: I went with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to fight at the battle of Khaibar, and the Jews came and complained that

3227. Qur‘ān, vi. 145

This shows that things were made lawful and unlawful by revelation and not by one’s opinion. This verse indicates that if there are no instructions about anything, it will be considered lawful. The question is disputed whether originally the things are lawful or unlawful. Opinion is divided on this point.


3229. The eating of fanged beasts of prey is forbidden. They are, for example: lion, wolf, leopard, elephant, monkey and every animal with fangs and which hunts other animals.

3230. These are birds of prey. They are: vulture, hawk and falcon or saker.

3231. This was practised in the early days of Islam. Later on this injunction was repealed. No one can take the property of the other people by force.
the people had hastened to take their protected property (as a booty), so the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The property of those who have been given a covenant is not lawful except for the dues which are levied. Domestic asses, horses, mules, every fanged beast of prey, and every bird with a talon are forbidden for you.

(3798) Abū al-Zubair quoted the authority of Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah for the statement that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade payment for a dog. Ibn ‘Abd al-Malik said: to eat a cat and to enjoy its price.

Chapter 1437

EATING THE FLESH OF DOMESTIC ASSES

(3799) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: On the day of Khaibar the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade us to eat the flesh of domestic asses, and ordered us to eat horse-flesh. ‘Amr said: I informed Abū al-Sha‘thā about this tradition. He said: Al-Ḥakam al-Ghifārī among us said this, and the “ocean” denied that, intending thereby Ibn ‘Abbās.3232

(3800) Ghālib b. Abjar said: We faced a famine, and I had nothing from my property which I could feed my family except a few asses, and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the flesh of domestic asses. So I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah, we are suffering from famine, and I have no property which I feed my family except some fat asses, and you have forbidden the flesh of domestic asses. He said: Feed your family on the fat asses of yours, for I forbade them on account of the animal which feeds on the filth of the town, that is, the animal which feeds on filth.3233

Abū Dāwūd said: This ‘Abd al-Raḥmān is Ibn Ma‘qil.

Abū Dāwūd said: Shu‘bah transmitted this tradition from ‘Ubaid Abī al-Ḥasan, from ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ma‘qil, from ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Bishr, from some people of Muzainah stating that Abjar, the chief of Muzainah, or Ibn Abjar asked the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

3232. As Ibn ‘Abbās was a learned man, he called him “ocean”. This means that Ibn ‘Abbās who was more knowledgeable than al-Ḥakam denied this tradition, i.e. eating the horse-flesh is unlawful. The other traditions indicate that flesh of a horse is lawful.

3233. This is not a sound tradition. There is a great confusion and variance in the chain of its narrators. If at all it is sound, it may be taken to mean that one can eat the flesh of domestic asses of necessity when one has nothing to eat. What is correct is that the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the flesh of domestic asses on account of its impurity and not on account of eating filth by the asses (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, III, 420).
(3801) Muhammad b. Sulaiman narrated from Abū Nu‘aim, from Mis‘ar, from Ibn ‘Ubaid, from Ibn Ma‘qil, from two men of Muzainah, one from the other, one of them is ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. ‘Uwaim, and the other is Ghālib b. al-Abjar. Mis‘ar said: I think it was Ghālib who had come to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) with this tradition.

(3802) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib told that his father narrated on the authority of his grandfather: On the day of Khaibar the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade (eating) the flesh of domestic asses, and the animal which feeds on filth: riding it and eating its flesh.

Chapter 1438
EATING LOCUSTS

(3803) Abū Ya‘fūr said: I heard Ibn Abī Awwām say when I asked him about (eating) locusts: I went on six or seven expeditions along with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and we ate them (locusts) along with him.3234

(3804) Salmān said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked about (eating) locusts. He replied: They are the most numerous of Allah’s hosts. I neither eat them nor declare them unlawful.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by al-Mu‘tamir, from his father, from Abū ‘Uthmān, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He did not mention Salmān.3235

(3805) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Salmān through a different chain of narrators. This version goes: Salmān said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked about locusts. He replied in a similar way (as mentioned above) saying: The most numerous of Allah’s hosts. The narrator ‘Alī said: His name is Fā‘id, that is the name of Abū al-Awwām.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by Hamīd b. Salamah, from Abū al-Awwām from Abū ‘Uthmān, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He did not mention Salmān (i.e. the Companion).

3234. Eating locusts is lawful according to most of the scholars. Abū Ḥanīfah, al-Shāfi‘i and Aḥmad allow them whether they die natural death or by hunting by a Muslim or a non-Muslim. Mālik and Aḥmad (according to another version) do not allow the eating of locusts when they die natural death (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, III, 421).

3235. This is a mursal tradition, i.e. the link of the Companion is missing. This version in its mursal form is sounder than the one narrated with perfect chain.
Chapter 1439

EATING THE FISH WHICH DIES IN THE SEA AND FLOATS

(3806) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: What the sea throws up and is left by the tide you may eat, but what dies in the sea and floats you must not eat.3236

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by Suﬁyān al-Thawrī, Ayyūb and Ḥammād from Abū al-Zubair as a statement of Jābir himself (and not from the Prophet). It has also been transmitted direct from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a weak chain by Abū Dhi‘b, from Abū al-Zubair on the authority of Jābir from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Chapter 1440

EATING DEAD MEAT OF NECESSITY

(3807) Jābir b. Samurah said: A man alighted at Ḥarrah3237 along with his wife and children. A man said (to him): My she-camel has strayed; if you find it, detain it. He found it, but did not find its owner, and it fell ill. His wife said: Slaughter it. But he refused and it died. She said: Skin it so that we may dry its fat and flesh and then eat them. He said: Let me ask the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). So he came to him (the Prophet) and asked him. He said: Have you something sufficient which fulfils your need? He replied: No. He then said: Then eat it. Then its owner came and he told him the story. He said: Why did you not slaughter it? He replied: I was ashamed of you.3238

(3808) Al-Faji’ al-‘Āmirī said that he came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and asked: Is not dead meat lawful for us? He said: What is your food? We said: Some food in the evening and some in the morning. Abū Nu‘aim said: ‘Uqba explained it to me saying: A cup (of milk) in the morning and a cup in the evening; this does not satisfy the hunger. So made the carrion lawful for them in this

3236. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars on eating the fish which dies in the sea and floats on water. Abū Bakr, Abū Ayyūb al-Anṣārī, Ibn Abī Rabah, Makhūl, Ibrāhīm al-Nakha‘ī, Ḍarā, al-Shāfi‘ī and Abū Thawr maintain that it is lawful to eat the fish which dies in the sea. Jābir, Ibn ‘Abbās, Ṭāwūs and Abū Ḥanīfah think that it is not permissible to eat the fish which dies on the sea (‘Awn al Mu‘bud, III, 421).

3237. A rocky place near Medina.

3238. This shows that a man is allowed to eat carrion when he has nothing to eat, and there is a danger of his dying of hunger. One can eat dead meat of necessity. There is no defined limit of necessity. It differs from man to man.
Abū Dāwūd said: *Ghabūq* is a drink in the evening and *zabūh* is a drink in the morning.

**Chapter 1441**

**GATHERING TWO KINDS OF FOOD**

(3809) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I wish I had a white loaf made from tawny and softened with clarified butter and milk. A man from among the people got up and getting one brought it. He asked: In which had it been? He replied: In a lizard skin. He said: Take it away. Abū Dāwūd said: This is a *munkar* (rejected) tradition.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ayyūb, the narrator of this tradition, is not (Ayyūb) al-Sakhtiyānī.

**Chapter 1442**

**EATING CHEESE**

(3810) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was brought a piece of cheese in Tabūk. He called for a knife, mentioned Allah’s name and cut it.

**Chapter 1443**

**VINEGAR**

(3811) Jābir reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: What a good condiment vinegar is!

(3812) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: What a good condiment vinegar is!

3239. This tradition indicates that it is lawful to eat dead meat if a man does not have sufficient food to give him nourishment. A man is allowed to eat dead meat for three days or so in severe hunger.

3240. As the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) disliked the lizard skin, he ordered the food to be taken away. Had it been unlawful on account of impurity of the skin, he would have ordered to throw it away and declared clearly to be unlawful. This tradition is not authentic.

3241. This shows that it is lawful to eat cheese and to use knife to cut it.

3242. In many traditions the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) has praised vinegar and recommended to use it.
Chapter 1444

EATING GARLIC

(3813) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who eats garlic or onions must keep away from us. Or he said: must keep away from our mosque or must sit in his house. A dish containing green vegetables was brought to him, and noticing that it had an odour he asked (about it). He was told that it contained some vegetables. He then said: Bring it near, to one of his Companions who was with him. When he saw it, he abominated eating it, and said: Eat, for I hold intimate converse with one with whom you do not. Aḥmad b. Ṣāliḥ said: Ibn Wahb explained the word ṣalāt as meaning dish.

(3814) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: The garlic and onions were mentioned before the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He was told: The most severe of them is garlic. Would you make it unlawful? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Eat it, and he who eats it should not come near this mosque until its odour goes away.

(3815) Abū Hudhaifah traced, I think, to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) the saying: He who spits in the direction of the qiblah will come on the Day of Resurrection in the state that his saliva will be between his eyes; and he who eats from this noxious vegetable should not come near our mosque, saying it three times.

(3816) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who eats from this plant should not come near the mosques.

(3817) Al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bāh said: I ate garlic and came to the place where the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was praying; one rak‘ah of prayer had been performed when I joined. When I entered the mosque, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) found the odour of garlic. When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) finished his prayer, he said: He who eats from this plant should not come near us until its odour goes away. When I finished the prayer, I came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah, do give me your hand. Then

3243. This shows that eating garlic and onions is permissible, but one must not attend the mosque, for they have odour. The odour of garlic and onions is disliked by angels. One may eat them after cooking. There is no intense odour when they are cooked.
3244. This refers to the angels.
3245. As the angels attend the mosque, one should not go there after eating garlic or onions. The people are also pained by its odour.
3246. This refers to garlic and onions.
3247. This also refers to garlic and onion. One should not attend even meetings or gatherings after eating garlic or onions.
I put his hand in the sleeve of my shirt, carrying it to my chest to show that my chest was fastened with a belt. He said: You have a (valid) excuse.\textsuperscript{3248}

(3818) Mu‘āwiyah b. Qurrah, quoting his father, said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade these two plants (i.e. garlic and onions), and he said: He who eats them should not come near our mosque. If it is necessary to eat them, make them dead\textsuperscript{3249} by cooking, that is, onions and garlic.

(3819) ‘All said: It is forbidden to eat garlic unless it is cooked.

Abū Dāwūd said: The full name of the narrator Sharik is Sharik b. Ḥanbal.

(3820) Khalīl said: Abū Ziyād Khiyār b. Salamah asked ‘Ā’ishah about onions. She replied: The last food which the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ate was some which contained onions.\textsuperscript{3250}

\textbf{Chapter 1445}

\textbf{DATES}

(3821) Yūsuf b. ‘Abd Allah b. Sałam said: I saw that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) took a piece of bread of barley and put a date on it and said: This is the condiment of this.

(3822) ‘Ā’ishah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A family which has no dates will be hungry.\textsuperscript{3251}

\textbf{Chapter 1446}

\textbf{EXAMINING AND REMOVING THE WORMS FROM THE DATES WHILE EATING THEM}

(3823) Anas b. Mālik said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was brought some old dates, he began to examine them and remove the worms from them.

(3824) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ishāq b. ‘Abd Allah b. Abl Ṭalḥah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version says: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was brought some dates which contained

\textsuperscript{3248}. This means that when the Arabs were very hungry they fastened their stomach or chest with a belt. As al-Mughirah had acute hunger, he ate garlic. So the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed him to attend the mosque after eating garlic of necessity.

3249. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed eating onion and garlic after cooking them, as their odour is removed by cooking.

3250. This shows that it is permissible to eat onions when cooked.

3251. The dates were the diet of the Arabs. Any house whose inmates had no dates would be hungry. Hence the importance of dates in the Arab society in the early days of Islam.
worms. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect.

Chapter 1447

TAKING TWO DATES TOGETHER

(3825) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited anyone taking two dates together with the exception that you ask permission from your companions.\[3252\]

Chapter 1448

EATING BY COMBINING TWO KINDS OF FOOD

(3826) ‘Abd Allah b. Ja’far said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to eat cucumber with fresh dates.

(3827) ‘A’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to eat melon with fresh dates, and he used to say: The heat of the one is broken by the coolness of the other, and the coolness of the one by the heat of the other.

(3828) The two SulamI sons of Busr\[3253\] said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to visit us and we offered him butter and dates, for he liked butter and dates.\[3254\]

Chapter 1449

EATING IN THE VESSELS OF THE PEOPLE OF THE BOOK

(3829) Jābir said: I was on an expedition along with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). We got the vessels and skins of the polytheists and used them. But he did not object to them (i.e. us) for that (action).\[3255\]

(3830) Abū Tha’labah al-KhushanI said that he asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): We live in the neighbourhood of the People of the Book and

3252. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) has taught the discipline of collective eating. If some people take many dates at a time, others may be deprived of them, and may not take their full share. However, if the companions allow to do so, one may eat two dates together.

3253. These are said to have been ‘Atiyyah and ‘Abd Allah.

3254. All these traditions show that it is permissible to eat two kinds of food at a time. It is, however, disapproved to gather a large number of rich food on the table spending a heavy sum of money on their preparation.

3255. The other traditions indicate that the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed them to use the vessels of the unbelievers conditionally. As they use unclean things in them, the Muslims should use them after washing them so that the impurity is removed.
they cook in their pots (the flesh of) swine and drink wine in their vessels. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If you find any other pots, then eat in them and drink. But if you do not find any others, then wash them with water and eat and drink (in them).  

Chapter 1450

ANIMALS OF THE SEA

(3831) Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent us on an expedition and made Abū ‘Ubaidah b. al-Jarrāḥ our leader. We had to meet a caravan of the Quraish. He gave us a bag of dates as a light meal during the journey. We had nothing except that. Abū ‘Ubaidah would give each of us one date. We used to suck them as a child sucks, and drink water after that and it sufficed us that day till night. We used to beat leaves off the trees with our sticks (for food), wetted them with water and ate them. We then went to the coast of the sea. There appeared to us a body like a great mound. When we came to it, we found that it was an animal called al-‘anbar. Abū ‘Ubaidah said: It is a carrion, and it is not lawful for us. He then said: No, we are the messengers of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and we are in the path of Allah. If you are forced by necessity (to eat it), then eat it. We stayed feeding on it for one month, till we became fat, and we were three hundred in number. When we came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), we mentioned it to him. He said: It is a provision which Allah has brought forth for you, and give us some to eat if you have any meat of it with you. So we sent some of it to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and he ate (it).  

Chapter 1451

 FALLING OF A MOUSE INTO CLARIFIED BUTTER

(3832) Maimūnah said: A mouse fell into clarified butter. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed the Muslims to use the pots of non-Muslims after washing them. This shows that the animals of the sea are lawful. It is not necessary to slaughter them. This view is held by al-Shāfi‘i. But frog, according to him, is not lawful. Abū Thawr thinks that all animals living in water are lawful. Only fish should not be slaughtered, but other animals should be slaughtered. Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that all sea animals are disapproved except fish. Al-Khaṭṭābī holds that all animals of the sea are lawful except those which are forbidden explicitly. This view is held by Mālik and al-Shāfi‘i. Āḥmad b. Ḥanbal thinks that animals of the sea which are considered good by the Arabs are lawful, and that which are considered noxious and bad are unlawful (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, 11, 429).
peace be upon him) was informed of it. He said: Throw what is around it and eat.\textsuperscript{3258}

(3833) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a mouse falls into clarified butter, if it is sold, throw the mouse and what is around it away, but if it is in a liquid state, do not go near it.

Al-Ḥasan said: ‘Abd al-Razzāq said: This tradition has been transmitted by Ma‘mar, from al-Zuhri, from ‘Ubaid Allah b. ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Abbās, from Maimūnāh, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

(3834) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Abbās, from Maimūnāh, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) like the tradition narrated by al-Zuhri, from Ibn al-Musayyab.

\textbf{Chapter 1452}

\textbf{FALLING OF A FLY IN ONE'S FOOD}

(3835) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a fly alights in anyone's vessel, he should plunge it all in, for in one of its wings there is a disease, and in the other is a cure. It prevents the wing of it in which there is a cure, so plunge it all in (the vessel).\textsuperscript{3259}

\textbf{Chapter 1453}

\textbf{THE FALLING DOWN OF A MORSEL ON THE GROUND}

(3836) Anas b. Mālik said that when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ate food, he licked his three fingers. And he said: If the morsel of one of you falls down, he should wipe away anything injurious on it and eat it and not leave it for the devil. And he ordered us to clean the dish, for one of you does not know in what part of his food the blessing lies.\textsuperscript{3260}

\textsuperscript{3258} This is applicable when the butter is solid. But if it is liquid, it should not be eaten, and all the butter should be thrown away.

\textsuperscript{3259} This shows that food does not become unclean by the falling of a fly in the vessel. It depends on one's like and dislike to eat. If a man does not want to eat he may give it to some other person. Many things are not intelligible to reason, but it is useful for man to follow the instructions of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him).

\textsuperscript{3260} It is recommended to lick fingers after eating food, to clean the dish and to eat the morsel which drops on the ground after wiping it. This is the etiquette of eating food by a Muslim.
Chapter 1454

A SERVANT MAY EAT WITH HIS MASTER

(3837) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If the servant of any of you prepares food for him, and he brings it to him, while he had suffered its heat and smoke, he should make him sit with him to eat. If the food is scanty, he should put one or two morsels in his hand. 3261

Chapter 1455

WIPING HANDS WITH A HANDKERCHIEF

(3838) Ibn `Abbas reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you eats, he must not wipe his hand with a handkerchief till he licks it or gives it to someone to lick. 3262

(3839) Ka'b b. Malik said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to eat with three fingers and not wipe his hand before licking it.

Chapter 1456

WHAT SHOULD A MAN SAY AFTER EATING FOOD?

(3840) Abu Umâmah said: When the food cloth was removed, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: "Praise be to Allah abundantly and sincerely, of such a nature as is productive of blessing, is not insufficient, abandoned, or ignored, O our Lord."

(3841) Abû Sa'îd al-Khudrî told that when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) finished his food, he said: "Praise be to Allah Who has given us food and drink and made us Muslims."

(3842) Abû Ayyûb al-Anşârî told that when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ate or drank, he said: "Praise be to Allah Who has given food and drink

3261. A servant who cooks food bears heat and smoke. He is, therefore, entitled to have a share in the food. If the food is not sufficient for two persons, still he should give him a little of it, and should not deprive him of the food.

3262. It is commendable to lick fingers after eating and then wipe them with a handkerchief. It is also commendable to use three fingers while eating. This shows that use of handkerchief for wiping is also permissible. Some traditions indicate the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) washed hands after eating. There is no contradiction between these traditions as his practice might be variant on different occasions.
and made it easy to swallow, and provided an exit for it.\textsuperscript{3263}

\textbf{Chapter 1457}

\textbf{WASHING HANDS AFTER FINISHING THE FOOD}

(3843) \textit{Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone spends the night with grease on his hand which he has not washed away, he can blame only himself if some trouble comes to him.}\textsuperscript{3264}

\textbf{Chapter 1458}

\textbf{PRAYER FOR A MAN WITH WHOM ONE EATS AS A GUEST}

(3844) \textit{Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: Abū al-Haitham b. al-Taihān prepared food for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and he invited the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and his Companions. When they finished (food), the said: If some people enter the house of a man, his food is eaten and his drink is drunk, and they supplicate (to Allah) for him, this is his reward.}\textsuperscript{3265}

(3845) \textit{Anas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) came to visit Sa’d b. ‘Ubādah, and he brought bread and olive oil, and he ate (them). Then the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: May the fasting (men) break their fast with you, and the pious eat your food, and the angels pray for blessing on you.}\textsuperscript{3266}
Chapter 1459

A MAN SHOULD HAVE MEDICAL TREATMENT

(3846) Usāmah b. Sharīk said: I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and his Companions were sitting as if they had birds on their heads. I saluted and sat down. The desert Arabs then came from here and there. They asked: Apostle of Allah, should we make use of medical treatment? He replied: Make use of medical treatment, for Allah has not made a disease without appointing a remedy for it, with the exception of one disease, namely old age.

Chapter 1460

PREVENTION

(3847) Umm al-Mundhar, daughter of Qais al-Anṣāriyyah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to visit me accompanied by ‘All who was convalescing. We had some ripe dates hung up. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) got up and began to eat from them. ‘All also got up to eat, but the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) kept on saying to ‘All: Stop, ‘All, for you are convalescing, and ‘All stopped. She said: I then prepared some barley and beet-root and brought it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: Take some of this, ‘Ali, for it will be more beneficial for you. Abū Dāwūd said: The narrator Ḥārūn said: al-‘Adawiyyah (i.e. Umm al-Mundhar).

3267. It means that they were sitting calm and quiet giving full attention to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him).
3268. A man should not be disappointed if he has a disease. He should do his best for its cure. There is a medicine for every disease. Only old age cannot be cured.
3269. This shows that a sick person should prevent himself from harmful things. This is also a part of treatment.
Chapter 1461

CUPPING

(3848) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The best medical treatment you apply is cupping.3270

(3849) Salmah, the maid-servant of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), said: No one complained to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) of a headache but he told him to get himself cupped, or of a pain in his legs but he told him to dye them with henna.

Chapter 1462

PLACE OF CUPPING

(3850) Abū Kabshat al-Anṣārī said (this is the version of Kathīr): The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to have himself cupped on the top of his head and between his shoulders, and that he used to say: If anyone pours out any of his blood, he will not suffer if he applies no medical treatment for anything.3271

(3851) Anas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had himself cupped three times in the two veins at the sides of the neck and on the shoulder. Ma’mar said: I got myself cupped, and I lost my memory so much so that I was instructed Surat al-Fātihah by others in my prayer. He had himself cupped at the top of his head.

Chapter 1463

DATES ON WHICH IT IS COMMENDABLE TO GET ONESELF CUPPED

(3852) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone has himself cupped on the 17th, 19th and 21st it will be a remedy for every disease.3272

(3853) Kabshah, daughter of Abū Bakrah, said—the narrator other than Musā

3270. Before the development of medical science, cupping was a general treatment applied by the Arabs in various diseases. Hence the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) recommended it.

3271. This shows that the place of cupping is the top of head and place between shoulders.

3272. As these dates occur in the middle of a month, the blood remains in a moderate condition during this period.
Ch. 1465 ]

Cauterisation by Fire

said that Kayyisah daughter of Abū Bakrah—said that her father used to forbid his family to have themselves cupped on a Tuesday, and used to assert on the authority of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) that Tuesday is the day of blood in which there is an hour when it does not stop.3273

(3854) Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had himself cupped above the thigh for a contusion from which he suffered.

Chapter 1464

CUTTING OF A VEIN AND PLACE OF CUPPING

(3855) Jābir said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) sent a physician to Ubayy (b. Ka‘b), and he cut his vein.

Chapter 1465

CAUTERISATION BY FIRE

(3856) ‘Imrān b. Ḥuṣain said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to cauterise; we cauterised but they (cauterisations) did not benefit us,3274 nor proved useful for us.3275

Abū Dāwūd said: He used to hear the salutation of the angels: When he cauterised, it stopped. When he abandoned, it returned to him.

(3857) Jābir said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) cauterised Sa‘d b. Mu‘ādh from the wound of an arrow.3276

3273. It means that if a man gets himself cupped on Tuesday, and he finds the hour when the blood does not stop, there is a danger of death for him. This might be based on some experience.

3274. In this version the subject is cauterisation. In the version of al-Tirmidhi the subject is we.

3275. Cauterisation is not allowed in ordinary diseases. If there is no treatment of a disease except cauterisation, it is allowed to apply it, as it was applied to Sa‘d b. Mu‘ādh when his bleeding was not stopped. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade ‘Imrān b. Ḥuṣain to cauterise as he had some disease in which cauterisation was harmful. The Arabs believed that cauterisation was a sure cure and healer. He who did not apply it, he was bound to die. Hence the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to prevent them from this belief.

3276. Sa‘d had a severe wound in his vein by an arrow in a battle. the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) cauterised him to stop bleeding. Cauterisation is the last treatment. It is applied only when there is no other alternative.
Chapter 1466

SNUFFING OF MEDICINE

(3858) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) snuffed medicine.

Chapter 1467

A CHARM FOR ONE WHO IS POSSESSED (NASHRAH)

(3859) Jabir b. ‘Abd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked about a charm for one who is possessed (nashrah). He replied: It pertains to the work of the devil.

Chapter 1468

USING ANTIDOTE

(3860) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If I drink an antidote, or tie an amulet, or compose poetry, I am the type who does not care what he does.

Abū Dāwūd said: This was peculiar to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), but some people have allowed to use it, i.e. antidote.

Chapter 1469

DISAPPROVED MEDICINES

(3861) Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited unclean medicine.

3277. The root meaning of nashrah is to dispense. It is a kind of a charm used for a man who is possessed because it disperses the trouble.

3278. The charm or spell recited generally contains words indicating polytheism or against the teachings of Islam. If such satanic words are uttered, it is prohibited to apply this charm. But if the charm contains some supplication from the Qur’ān or Hadith, or a prayer which seeks help from Allah, this sort of charm is allowed.

3279. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to use antidote because in those days it contained many unlawful ingredients such as wine, flesh of swine and snakes and the like. If it does not contain these unlawful things, the use of antidote is permitted. This tradition means that if a man does any such thing, he is an abandoned character.

3280. The Arabic word is khabith. It might mean unclean or unlawful (medicine).
(3862) Abd al-Rahmān b. Uthmān said: When a physician consulted the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about putting frogs in medicine, he forbade him to kill them.3281

(3863) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone drinks poison, the poison will be in his hand (on the Day of Judgment) and he will drink it in Hell-fire and he will live in it eternally.3282

(3864) Wā’il said: Ṭāriq b. Suwaid or Suwaid b. Ṭāriq asked the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about wine, but he forbade it. He again asked him, but he forbade him. He said to him: Prophet of Allah, it is a medicine. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: No, but it is a disease.3283

(3865) Abū al-Dardā’ reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah has sent down both the disease and the cure, and He has appointed a cure for every disease, so treat yourselves medically, but use nothing unlawful.

Chapter 1470

‘AJWAH DATES

(3866) Sa’d said: I suffered from an illness. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to pay a visit to me. He put his hands between my nipples and I felt its coolness at my heart. He said: You are a man suffering from heart sickness. Go to al-Ḥārith b. Kalādah, brother of Thaqīf. He is a man who gives medical treatment. He should take seven ‘ajwah3284 dates of Medina and grind them with their kernels, and then put them into your mouth.3285

(3867) Sa’d b. Abī Waqqās reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who has a morning meal of seven ‘ajwah dates will not suffer from any harm that day through poison or magic.3286

3281. He forbade the use of frog for its being unlawful or unclean. It may be noted that the flesh of frogs with olive oil was used as an antidote for snake bite, and the fat was considered helpful for extracting teeth. The prohibition of killing them probably applies only to killing them for medicinal purposes.

3282. This refers to suicide by eating poison. This is a threat to a man who commits suicide. One should not commit suicide because the life of a man is a trust from Allah. A man has no authority to finish his own life.

3283. This shows that it is not allowed to use unclean or unlawful medicine like wine. Wine and similar other medicines can be used only if there is no other alternative.

3284. The name of a good quality of Medina dates.

3285. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) himself knew the treatment, still he sent him to the physician. This shows that one should consult a physician in medical affairs.

3286. This shows the merit and excellence of the ‘ajwah dates of Medina.
Chapter 1471

COMPRESSING THE UVULA FOR MEDICAL TREATMENT

(3868) Umm Qais, daughter of Mi'ṣan said: I brought my son to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) while I had compressed his uvula for its swelling. He said: Why do you afflict your children by squeezing for a swelling in the uvula? Apply this Indian aloeswood, for it contains seven types of remedies, among them being a remedy for pleurisy. It is applied through the nose for a swelling of the uvula poured into the side of the mouth for pleurisy. 3287

Abū Dāwūd said: By aloeswood he meant costus.

Chapter 1472

COMMAND FOR THE USE OF COLLYRIUM

(3869) Ibn 'Abbas reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Wear your white garments, for they are among your best garments, and shroud your dead in them. Among the best types of collyrium you use is antimony (ithmid): it clears the vision and makes the hair sprout. 3288

Chapter 1473

EVIL EYE

(3870) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The evil eye is genuine. 3289

(3871) 'Ā'ishah said: The man casting evil eye would be commanded to perform ablution, and then the man affected was washed with it. 3290

3287. This tradition indicates that the Indian aloeswood is a useful medicine. It can be used for the swelling of uvula. It is better if one consults the physician and then uses it.

3288. It is commendable to use collyrium, especially ithmid at the time of sleeping. Ithmid is a kind of antimony most useful for eyesight.

3289. This means that evil eye is one of the causes of harm like other natural causes of affliction. As Allah has created many harmful things in the world, evil eye is also one of them. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) applied spell to the affected person by reciting some supplications, or the last two surahs of the Qur'ān or similar other treatment.

3290. This was the treatment of the victim of evil eye. The practice was that the man who caused evil eye was asked to wash his face, hands, elbows, knees, toes and inside his lower garment, i.e. private parts. The water was then collected in a vessel and poured over the man who was affected by the evil eye.
Chapter 1474

SUCKLING DURING PREGNANCY OR INTERCOURSE WITH A WOMAN WHILE SHE IS SUCKLING A CHILD

(3872) Asmā', daughter of Yazid b. al-Sakan, said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not kill your children secretly, for the milk,3291 with which a child is suckled while his mother is pregnant, overtakes the horseman and throws him from his horse.3292

(3873) Judāmat al-Asadlyyah said that she heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: I intended to prohibit suckling during pregnancy (ghailah), but I considered the Greeks and the Persians and saw that they practised it, without any injury being caused to their children thereby.3293 Mālik said: Ghailah means that a man has intercourse with a woman while she is suckling a child.

Chapter 1475

HANGING AMULETS

(3874) Zainab, the wife of ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd), told that ‘Abd Allah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) saying: Spells, charms and love-spells are polytheism. I asked: Why do you say this? I swear by Allah, my eye was discharging and I kept on going to so-and-so, the Jew, who applied a spell to me. When he applied the spell to me, it calmed down. ‘Abd Allah said: That was just the work of the devil who was picking it with his hand, and when he uttered the spell on it, he desisted. All you need to do is to say as the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to say: Remove the harm, O Lord of men, and heal. Thou art the Healer. There is no remedy but Thine which leaves no disease behind.3294

3291. This is called ghilah or ghailah. It means either suckling during pregnancy, or intercourse with a woman while she is suckling a child. Ghailah is the milk with which a child is suckled.
3292. It shows that a child which is suckled while his mother is pregnant will suffer from weakness in later life. The tradition implies that ghailah is prohibited.
3293. This tradition allows the practice of ghailah. It seems likely that earlier the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed ghailah, but later on he prohibited it. Or it means that it is allowed in case there is no fear or danger of weakness which manifests itself in later life.
3294. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited those amulets, charms and spells which contain the words of polytheism. If they contain words of the Qur’an, or some prayers of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) or any useful things lawful in Islam, there is no harm in such a spell. Once the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) was asked about spells used in pre-Islamic days. He asked to submit their spells to him. He then said: There is no harm in spells so long as they involve no polytheism. Muslim transmitted it.
(3875) 'Imrān b. Ḥūṣain reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: No spell is to be used except for the evil eye or a scorpion sting.3295

Chapter 1476

SPELLS3296

(3876) Muḥammad b. Yūsuf, quoting his father on the authority of his grandfather, said that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) entered upon Thābit b. Qais. The version of Ahmad (b. Ṣāliḥ) has: When he was i” He (the Prophet) said: Remove the harm, O Lord of men, from Thābit b. Qais b. Shammās. He then took some dust of Baḥrān,3297 and put it in a bowel, and then mixed it with water and blew in it, and poured it on him.3298

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn al-Sarḥ said: Yūsuf b. Muḥammad is correct (and not Muḥammad b. Yūsuf).

(3877) ‘Āwfi b. Mālik said: In the pre-Islamic period we used to apply spells and we asked: Apostle of Allah! how do you look upon it? He replied: Submit your spells to me. There is no harm in spells so long as they involve no polytheism.3299

(3878) Al-Shifā’, daughter of ‘Abd Allah, said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) entered when I was with Ḥafṣah, and he said to me: Why do you not teach this one the spell for skin eruptions as you taught her writing.3300

(3879) Sahl b. Ḥunaif said: I passed by a river. I entered it and took a bath in it. When I came out, I had fever. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was informed about it. He said: Ask Abū Thābit to seek refuge in Allah from that. I asked: O my lord, will the spell be useful? He replied: No, the spell is to be used except for the evil eye or a snake bite or a scorpion sting.3301

3295. This means that spell is more effective in evil eye and scorpion sting or sting by any poisonous insect. Spell can be used in other pains too.

3296. Spells and charm are also a kind of medical treatment of the diseases. Their use is allowed if they involve no polytheism.

3297. The name of a valley in Medina.

3298. There is no harm in seeking healing and remedy from Allah. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) first prayed to Allah to remove the harm from him.

3299. This tradition clearly indicates that it is allowed to apply spells if they involved no polytheism.

3300. The spell for skin eruptions was well known among the Arabs. It was some words uttered to a bride, saying: You assemble people, dye yourself and apply collyrium, and practise everything, except that you do not disobey the man (‘Awn al-Maḥbūd, 1V, 13).

3301. Spell can be used in other diseases too as other traditions indicate. But it is more effective preferably to apply spell in these afflictions.
Abū Dāwūd said: *Humah* means the biting of snakes and sting of the poisonous insects.

(3880) Anas reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: No spell is to be used except for the evil eye, or sting of poisonous insects, or bleeding.3303

The narrator al-‘Abbas did not mention the words “evil eye”. This is the version of Sulaimān b. Dāwūd.

Chapter 1477

HOW SHOULD THE SPELL BE USED?

(3881) Anas said to Thābit: Should I not use the spell of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) for you? He said: Yes. He then said: O Allah, Lord of men, Remover of the harm, heal, Thou art the healer. There is no healer but Thou; give him a remedy which leaves no disease behind.3304

(3882) ‘Uthmān b. Abī al-‘Āṣ said that he came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). ‘Uthmān said: I had a pain which was about to destroy me. So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Wipe it with your right hand seven times and say: “I seek refuge in the dominance of Allah, and His might from the evil of what I find.” Then I did it. Allah removed (the pain) that I had, and I kept on suggesting it to my family and to others.

(3883) Abū al-Dardā’ said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If any of you is suffering from anything or his brother is suffering he should say: Our Lord is Allah Who is in the heaven, holy is Thy name, Thy command reigns supreme in the heaven and the earth, as Thy mercy in the heaven, make Thy mercy in the earth; forgive us our sins, and our errors; Thou art the Lord of good men; send down mercy from Thy mercy, and remedy from Thy remedy on this pain so that it is healed up.

(3884) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, said that his grandfather reported that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to each them the following words in the case of alarm: I seek refuge in Allah’s perfect words from

3302. The word *humah* refers to snake bite, scorpion sting and the sting of other poisonous insects.

3303. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not prohibit the use of spell in other ailments. He meant that the spell is more efficacious in these afflictions than other medicines. The spell in Islam is nothing but the utterance of the Qur’ānic verses, prayers of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) and good names of Allah, and similar other supplications.

3304. This shows that uttering the prayer of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) is also a kind of spell allowed to be used in Islam.
His anger, the evil of His servants, the evil suggestions of the devils and their presence. 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr used to teach them to those of his children who had reached puberty, and he wrote them down (on some material) and hung on the child who had not reached puberty.\(^{3305}\)

(3885) Yazīd b. Abī 'Ubaid said: I saw a sign of injury in the shin of Salamah. I asked: What is this? He replied: I was afflicted by it on the day of Khaibar. The people said: Salamah has been afflicted. I was then brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He blew on me three times. I did not feel any pain up till now.\(^{3306}\)

(3886) ‘Ā’ishah said: When a man complained of pain the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to him pointing to his saliva and mixing it with dust: (This is) the dust of our earth, mixed with the saliva of some of us, so that our sick is remedied with the permission of our Lord.\(^{3307}\)

(3887) Khārijah b. al-Ṣalt al-Tamīmi quoted his paternal uncle as saying that he came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and embraced Islam. He then came back from him and passed some people who had a lunatic fettered in chains. His people said: We are told that your Companion has brought some good. Have you something by which you can cure him? I then recited Sūrat al-Fāṭihah and he was cured. They gave me one hundred sheep. I then came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and informed him of it. He asked: Is it only this? The narrator Musaddad said in his other version: Did you say anything other than this? I said: No. He said: Take it, for by my life, some accept it for a worthless chain, but you have done so for a genuine one.\(^{3308}\)

(3888) Khārijah b. al-Ṣalt quoted his paternal uncle as saying that he passed (some people): He recited Sūrat al-Fāṭihah over him for three days morning and evening. Whenever he finished it, he collected some of his saliva and spat it out, and he seemed as if he were set free from a bond. They gave him something as payment.

\(^{3305}\) This shows that hanging amulets on children's neck is permissible on condition that they contain the names of Allah, supplication of the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) or some verse of the Qur'ān.

\(^{3306}\) This tradition indicates that uttering the names of Allah and blowing them on some afflicted person is permissible.

\(^{3307}\) The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) took some of his saliva on the tip of his ring finger, mixed it with a little dust and put it on the affected part of the patient. When he put the saliva, he uttered these words. The version of al-Bukhārī has: "In the name of Allah, this is the dust of our earth..." It seems likely that the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) also spat on the affected part.

\(^{3308}\) This shows that it is permissible to accept the gift presented for applying a charm provided it is lawful according to Islamic teachings.
He then came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He then transmitted the rest of the tradition to the same effect as Musaddad narrated.

(3889) Suhail b. Abi Shalih, quoting his father, said: I heard a man who embraced Islam say: I was sitting with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). A man from among his Companions came and said: Apostle of Allah! I have been stung last night, and I could not sleep till morning. He asked: What was that? He replied: A scorpion. He said: Oh, had you said in the evening: "I take refuge in the perfect words of Allah from the evil of what He created," nothing would have harmed you, Allah willing.

(3890) Abu Hurairah said: A man who was stung by a scorpion was brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: Had he said the word: "I seek refuge in the perfect words of Allah from the evil of what He created," he would not have been stung, or he said, "It would not have harmed him."

(3891) Abu Sa'id al-Khudri said: Some of the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) went on a journey. They alighted with a certain clan of the Arabs. Someone of them said: Our chief has been stung by a scorpion or bitten by a snake. Has any of you something which gives relief to our chief? A man of the people said: Yes, I swear by Allah, I shall apply charm; but we asked you for hospitality and you denied it to us. I shall not apply charm until you give me some payment. So they promised to give some sheep to him. He came to him and recited Surat al-Fatiha over him and spat till he was cured, and he seemed as if he were set free from a bond. So they gave him the payment that was agreed between them. They said: Apportion them. The man who applied charm said: Do not do it until we approach the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and ask him for his permission. They then went to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and mentioned it to him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: From where did you learn that it was a charm? You have done right. Apportion them, and give me a share along with you.

(3892) Kharijah b. al-Salt quoted his paternal uncle as saying: We proceeded from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and came to a clan of the Arabs. They said: We have been told that you have brought what is good from this man. Have you any medicine or a charm, for we have a lunatic in chains? We said: Yes. Then they brought a lunatic in chains. He said: I recited Surat al-Fatiha over him three days morning and evening. Whenever I finished it, I would collect my saliva and spit it out, and he seemed as if he were set free from a bond. He said: They gave me some payment, but I said: No till I ask the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He (the Prophet) said: Accept it,3309 for, by my life, some accept it for a

3309. Literally, "eat or enjoy,"
worthless charm, but you have done so for a genuine one.

(3893) 'Ā'ishah, the wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) suffered from some pain, he recited mu'awwadhat3310 in his heart and blew (them over him). When the pain became severe, I recited (them) over him and wiped him with his hand in the hope of its blessing.

Chapter 1478

MEDICINE FOR MAKING WOMEN FAT

(3894) 'Ā'ishah said: My mother intended to make me fat to send me to the (house of) the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). But nothing which he desired benefited me till she gave me cucumber with fresh dates to eat. Then I became fat as good (as she desired).3311

3310. The last two surahs, xciii. and cxiv. of the Qur'ān.

3311. 'Ā'ishah was married to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) in her early age. Her mother wanted to send her to the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him). Hence she desired to make her fat and healthy.
Chapter 1479

THE DIVINER

(3895) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone resorts to a diviner and believes in what he says (according to the version of Musa), or has intercourse with his wife (according to the agreed version) when she is menstruating, or has intercourse with his wife through her anus, he has nothing to do with what has been sent down to Muḥammad (may peace be upon him)—according to the version of Musaddad.

Chapter 1480

ASTROLOGY

(3896) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone acquires any knowledge of astrology, he acquires a branch of magic of which he gets more as long as he continues to do so.

(3897) Zaid b. Khālid al-Juhani said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) led us in the morning prayer at al-Ḥudaibiyah after rain which had fallen during the night, and when he finished, he turned to the people and said: Do you know

---

3312. The soothsayers had their connection with the devil or jinns and predicted about the unseen in pre-Islamic Arabia. As no one has correct knowledge of the unseen except Allah, the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to resort to soothsayers and to believe in their predictions.

3313. It is disapproved to have intercourse with wife when she is menstruating.

3314. It is forbidden to have intercourse with wife through her anus. If a man does so, he should beg pardon of Allah.

3315. It means that if a man does these works, he will do against the teachings of the Qur'ān.

3316. There are some events which are known only to Allah. The astrologers predict about the happening of these events. Hence it is forbidden. But the use of astrology in determining the direction of the Ka'bah is allowed. It can be used for similar other purposes.
what your Lord has said? They said: Allah and His Apostle know best. He said: This morning there were among my servants one who believes in me and one who disbelieves. The one who said: “We have been given rain by Allah’s grace and mercy” is the one who believes in me and disbelieves in the star; but the one who said: “We have been given rain by such and such a rain star,” is the one who disbelieves in me and believes in the star.3317

Chapter 1481

GEOMANCY BY DRAWING LINES AND AUGURY FROM THE FLIGHT OF BIRDS

(3898) Qaṭān b. Qabīṣah told on his father’s authority that he said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Augury from the flight of birds, taking evil omens3318 and the practice of pessomancy pertain to divination.3319

Tarq: It is used in the sense of divination in which women threw stones.

‘Iyāfah: It means geomancy by drawing lines.

(3899) Muḥammad b. Jaʿfar said on the authority of ‘Awf: ‘Iyāfah means to make the birds fly by threatening them. Tarq means lines drawn on the earth.3320

(3900) Muʿāwiyah b. al-Ḥakam al-Sulaml said: I said: Apostle of Allah! among us there are men who practise divination by drawing lines. He said: There was a Prophet3321 who drew lines, so if anyone does it as he drew lines, that is right.3322

Chapter 1482

TAKING OMENS

(3901) ‘Abd Allah b. Masʿūd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be

3317. If a man believes that the rain falls due to the rain-star and it is not Allah Who sends rain, he is a disbeliever. But if a man thinks that it is actually Allah Who sends rain, and the rain-star is only a sign or cause for rain like other worldly causes, he is a believer. In this tradition the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) has falsified the pre-Islamic belief that it is the rain-star which sends rain.

3318. These are various forms of taking good or evil omens practised by the Arabs in pre-Islamic days. They took good or evil omens by the flight of birds, drawing lines and throwing stones by women. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade taking omens from these things.

3319. Jibt means devil and also divination. The other translation would be that these practices come from the devil.

3320. These were various practices to take good or evil omens in pre-Islamic days.

3321. The name of the Prophet who drew lines is said to be Daniel or Idrīs.

3322. As it is not known definitely whether a man draws the lines according to the lines of that Prophet, it is forbidden now to take omens by drawing lines. Hence geomancy is not allowed.
upon him) as saying: Taking omens is polytheism; taking omens is polytheism. He said it three times. Every one of us has some, but Allah removes it by trust (in Him).  

(3902) Ābu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is no infection, no evil, omen, no serpent, in a hungry belly and no ḥāmah. A nomadic Arab asked: How is it that when camels are in the sand as if they were gazelles and a mangy camel comes among them and it gives them mange? He replied: Who infected the first one? Ma'mar, quoting al-Zuhrl, said: A man told me that Ābu Hurairah narrated to him saying that he heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say: A diseased camel should not be brought with a healthy camel to drink water. He said: The man then consulted him and said: Did you not tell us that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had said: There is no infection, no serpent in a hungry belly and no ḥāmah? He replied: I did not transmit it to you. Al-Zuhrl said: Ābu Salamah said: He had narrated it and I did not hear that Ābu Hurairah had ever forgotten any tradition except this one.  

3323. Islam teaches strong belief in the unity of Allah. It is Allah Who does everything in this world. Now, those who take omens from various things have their belief in those things and not in Allah. Hence the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to take omens and called it polytheism. A Muslim should believe that every incident that happens in this world comes from Allah. As the Arabs were accustomed to taking omens, he told them that if the notion of evil omens occurs to one's mind, one should have trust in Allah, and do the work without any hesitation. One should not care for the notion of evil omen.  

3324. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) falsified the belief of the Arabs that disease comes from infection. He intended to bring home to them that it is Allah Who causes disease and not infection.  

3325. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to take evil omens from things. Allah is the sole agent of events in this world  

3326. The Arabic word is ạṣar. The pre-Islamic Arabs meant by this word a serpent which bites a man from within when he is hungry and causes the sense of stinging in hunger. It is also used in the sense of a disease within the belly more contagious than mange or scale. It also refers to the lunar month of Ṣafar from which the Arabs used to take evil omen.  

3327. Ḥāmah means an owl or a night-bird which frequents graves. The pre-Islamic Arabs believed that when vengeance had not been taken for the one who had been killed, a bird called Ḥāmah came forth from the dead and demanded vengeance. They also believed that if this bird sat on a house, calamity would befall on its inmates. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) removed such superstitions.  

3328. This contradicts the tradition "There is no infection." This can be reconciled by saying that the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to bring these two camels together so that one may not believe that the disease comes from infection in case the healthy camel becomes mangy. It does not mean that he will be infected.  

3329. According to the recognised principles of traditions, if a transmitter forgets a tradition its soundness is not affected. Secondly, the tradition of infection has also been narrated by al-Sā'ib
(3903) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is no infection, no ĥāmah, no other promising rain, and no serpent in a hungry belly.

(3904) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is no ghoul.\textsuperscript{3330}

Abū Dāwūd said: Mālik was asked about the meaning of his saying: There is no șafar. He replied: The people in pre-Islamic Arabia used to make the month of șafar lawful (for war). They made it lawful in one year and unlawful in another year. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: There is no șafar.

(3905) Muḥammad b. al-Muṣaffā said to us on the authority of Baqīyyah. He said: I asked Muḥammad b. Rāshid about the meaning of the word ĥāmah. He replied: The pre-Islamic Arabs used to say: When anyone dies and is buried, a bird comes forth from his grave. I asked: What did he mean by șafar? He said: I heard that the pre-Islamic Arabs used to take evil omen from șafar. So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: There is no șafar. Muḥammad (b. Rāshid) said: We heard someone say: It is a pain in the stomach. They said that it was infection. Hence he said: There is no șafar.

(3906) Anas reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is no infection and no evil omen, and I like a good omen. Good omen means a good word.\textsuperscript{3331}

(3907) Abū Hurairah said that when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) heard a word, and he liked it, he said: We took your omen from your mouth.

(3908) ‘Aṭā’ said: People said: șafar is a pain within the belly. I asked: What is ĥāmah? He said: People said (believed) that ĥāmah which is an owl or a night-bird and which shrieks is the spirit of men. It is not the spirit of men. It is an animal.

(3909) ‘Urwah b. ‘Āmir al-Qurashi said: When taking omens was mentioned in the presence of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he said: The best type is the good omen, and it does not turn back a Muslim. If one of you sees anything he dislikes, he should say: O Allah, no one brings good things except Thee, and no one

\textsuperscript{3330} It was a type of the jinn, devil or fiend which was believed to appear to people in various forms and lead them astray in the desert.

\textsuperscript{3331} Before starting a work, if one says some good words about it, a man who is at work is encouraged and delighted by it. It is not an omen in the strict sense of the word. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) used it figuratively. A tradition says that when the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) went out to attend some business, he was delighted to hear someone say: O rightly-guided one; O successful one.\textsuperscript{"}
averts evil things except Thee and there is no might and power but in Allah.

(3910) Buraidah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not take omens from anything, but when he sent out an agent he asked about his name. If it pleased him, he was glad about it, and his cheerfulness on that account was visible in his face. If he disliked his name, his displeasure on that account was visible in his face. When he entered a village, he asked about its name, and if it pleased him, he was glad about it, and his cheerfulness on that account was visible in his face. But if he disliked its name, his displeasure on that account was visible in his face.3312

(3911) Sa'd b. Malik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is no hāmah, no infection and no evil omen; if there is in anything an evil omen, it is a house, a horse, and a woman.3333

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition was read out to al-Ḥārith b. Miskīn and I was witness. It was said to him that Ibn Qāsim told him that Malik was asked about evil omen in a horse and in a house. He replied: There are many houses in which the people lived and perished and again others lived therein and they also perished. This is its explanation so far as we know. Allah knows best.

Abū Dāwūd said: 'Umar (may Allah be pleased with him) said: A mat in a house is better than a woman who does not give birth to a child.

(3912) Yāḥyā b. 'Abd Allah b. Buḥair said that he was informed by one who had heard Farwah b. Musaik tell that he said: Apostle of Allah! we have land called Abyan,3334 which is the land where we have our fields and grow our crops, but it is very unhealthy. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Leave it, for destruction comes from being near disease.3335

(3913) Anas b. Malik told that a man said: Apostle of Allah! we were in an abode in which our numbers and our goods were many and changed to an abode in which our numbers and our goods became few. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be

3332. This shows that the Muslims should give good names to their children and places. When the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) found a bad name, he changed it.

3333. This he said in the case of supposition of existence of evil omen. He meant that if evil omen is at all found in anything, it can be found in a house, a woman and a horse. But since the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) negated the existence of omen, it is not found in anything. However, if anyone dislikes one of these three things, he should better leave it. Another explanation is that the evil omen of a house is its smallness, the evil omen of a woman is her barrenness and the evil omen of a horse is its not going for fighting in the path of Allah ('Ayn al-Ma'bud, IV, 28).

3334. The name of a place to the east of Aden. Some early writers held that it was a name for Aden itself.

3335. This not a case of evil omen. But the tradition shows that a man should not live in a dark, dirty, closed and unhealthy place. It causes disease. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) advised to live in healthy places.
upon him) said: Leave it, for it is reprehensible.11,6

(3914) Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) took a man who was suffering from tubercular leprosy by the hand; he then put it along with his own hand in the dish and said: Eat with confidence in Allah and trust in Him.3337

3336. There was doubt (in their minds) about the reprehension of the abode. By this doubt they might believe that the abode was a cause of their damage. Hence the Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) advised them to leave the abode and shift to another place, so that there remained no superstition in his mind.

3337. This tradition contradicts another tradition which says: "There is no infection, no evil omen, no hāmah, and no serpent in a hungry belly, but flee from one who has tubercular leprosy as you would from a lion." It has been transmitted by al-Bukhārī on the authority of Abū Hurairah. These two traditions have been reconciled by saying that it depends on the strength of one's confidence, faith and trust in Allah. If a man has strong confidence in Allah, he may eat with a man who is suffering from tubercular leprosy. But if a man is weak in having trust in Allah, it is better for him to keep away from this patient, for he might believe that he got infection from him.
Chapter 1483

A SLAVE WHO HAS ENTERED INTO AN AGREEMENT TO PURCHASE HIS FREEDOM (MUKĀTAB) AND MADE A PART PAYMENT, BUT FINALLY HE IS UNABLE TO COMPLETE THE AMOUNT OR DIES

(3915) 'Amr b. Shu'aib, on his father's authority, told that his grandfather reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A slave who has entered into an agreement to purchase his freedom is a slave as long as a dirham of the agreed price remains to be paid.\textsuperscript{3338}

(3916) 'Amr b. Shu'aib, on his father's authority, told that his grandfather reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If any slave entered into an agreement to buy his freedom for one hundred āqiyahs\textsuperscript{3339} and he pays them all but ten, he remains a slave (until he pays the remaining ten); and if a slave entered into an agreement to purchase his freedom for one hundred dinārs, and he pays them all but ten dinārs, he remains a slave (until he pays the remaining ten).

Abū Dāwūd said: This narrator 'Abbās al-Jarīrī is not the same person. They said: It is a misunderstanding. He is some other narrator.

(3917) Umm Salamah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to us: If one of you has a slave, and he enters into an agreement to purchase his

\textsuperscript{3338} This is a disputed problem. According to one view, a mukātab (a slave who has entered an agreement to purchase his freedom) remains a slave until he pays the full price agreed between him and his master. This view is widely held by scholars like 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb, Zaid b. Thābit, 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz, al-Zuhārī, Qatādah, al-Shāfi‘ī and Aḥmad. Abū Ḥanīfah holds that if he leaves some property by which the remaining price is paid, he will be free, otherwise not. Mālik holds that if he leaves children, he will be free, otherwise not. Ibn 'Abbās, 'Aṭā' and some other scholars think that a mukātab is emancipated according to the proportion of the price he pays ('Awn al-Ma'bud, IV, 31).

\textsuperscript{3339} An āqiyah is equivalent to forty dirhams.
Chapter 1484

SALE OF A SLAVE WHO ENTERED AN AGREEMENT TO PURCHASE HIS FREEDOM WHEN THE AGREEMENT IS REPUDIATED

(3918) 'Urwah quoting 'Ā'ishah said that Barīrah came to her seeking her help to purchase her freedom, and she did not pay anything for her freedom. 'Ā'ishah said to her: Return to your people; if they like that I make payment for the purchase of your freedom on your behalf and I shall have the right to inherit from you, I shall do so. Barīrah mentioned it to her people, but they refused and said: If she wants to purchase your freedom for a reward from Allah, she may do so, but the right to inherit from you shall be ours. She mentioned it to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Purchase her (freedom) and set her free, for the right of inheritance belongs only to the one who set a person free. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then stood up and said: What is the matter with people who make conditions which are not in Allah's Book? If anyone makes a condition which is not in Allah's Book, he has no right to it, even if he stipulates it hundreds of times. Allah's condition is more valid and binding.3342

(3919) 'Ā'ishah said: Barīrah came seeking my help to purchase her freedom. She said: I have arranged with my people to buy my freedom for nine ṭiqiyahs: one to be paid annually. So help me. She ('Ā'ishah) said: If your people are willing that I should count them (ṭiqiyahs) out to them all at one time and set you free and that I shall have the right to inherit from you, I shall do so. She then went to her people. The narrator then transmitted the rest of the tradition like the version of al-Zuhrāl. He added to the wordings of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in the last: What is the matter with people that one of you says: Set free, O so-and-so, and the right of inheritance belongs to me. The right of inheritance belongs only to the one who has...
set a person free.

(3920) ‘Ä’ishah said: Juwairiyyah, daughter of al-Ḥārith b. al-Muṣṭaliq, fell to the lot of Thabit b. Qais b. Shammās, or to her cousin. She entered into an agreement to purchase her freedom. She was a very beautiful woman most attractive to the eye. ‘Ä’ishah said: She then came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) asking him for the purchase of her freedom. When she was standing at the door, I looked at her with an eye of disapproval. I realised that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would look the same thing in her which I had looked. She said: Apostle of Allah, I am Juwairiyyah daughter of al-Ḥārith, and with me there happened something which is not hidden from you. I have fallen to the lot of Thabit b. Qais b. Shammās, and I have entered into an agreement to purchase of my freedom. I have come to you asking for the purchase of my freedom. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Are you inclined to what is better than it? She asked: What is that, Apostle of Allah? He replied: I shall pay the price of your freedom on your behalf, and I shall marry you. She said: I shall do this. She (‘Ä’ishah) said: The people then heard that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had married Juwairiyyah. They released the captives in their possession and set them free, and said: They are the relatives of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) by marriage. We did not see any woman greater than her who brought blessing to her people. One hundred families of Banū al-Muṣṭaliq were set free on account of her.3343

Abū Dāwūd said: This evidence shows that a Muslim ruler may marry a slave-woman himself.

Chapter 1485

EMANCIPATION OF A SLAVE ON A CERTAIN CONDITION

(3921) Safinah said: I was a slave of Umm Salamah, and she said: I shall emancipate you, but I stipulate that you must serve the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as long as you live. I said: Even if you do not make a stipulation, I shall not leave the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). She then emancipated me and made the stipulation with me.3344

3343. The battle of Banū al-Muṣṭaliq is also called the battle of Muraisî. It took place in 6 A.H. Juwairiyyah was one of the prisoners of war. The Holy Prophet (may peace be upon him) purchased her and set her free. Then he married her. The Muslims set free all the captives of Banū al-Muṣṭaliq on account of their relationship with the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through Juwairiyyah.

3344. This was actually no condition but a promise which has been termed condition. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars on this issue. Most of them do not allow the validity of this condition. If a man sets a slave free on a certain condition, he will be free, and the fulfilment of condition will not be binding on him. Others opine that the slave should fulfil the condition.
**Chapter 1486**

**EMANCIPATION OF A SHARE IN A SLAVE**

(3922) Abū al-Mallh said on his father's authority (this is Abū al-Walid's version): A man emancipated a share in a slave and the matter was mentioned to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: Allah has no partner. Ibn Kathir added in his version: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed his emancipation.3345

(3923) Abū Hurairah said: A man emancipated his share in a slave. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed his (full) emancipation, and required him to pay the rest of his price.

(3924) Qatadah narrated with his chain of narrators: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: If a man emancipates a slave shared by him with another man, his emancipation rests with him3346 (who emancipated his share). This is the version of Ibn Suwaid.

(3925) Qatadah narrated with his chain of narrators. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: If anyone emancipates his share in a slave, he emancipates him (completely) by his property if he has property.3347 The narrator Ibn al-Muthanna did not mention al-Naḍr b. Anas. This is the version of Ibn Suwaid.

**Chapter 1487**

**THE VIEW THAT THE SLAVE WILL BE REQUIRED TO WORK TO PAY THE PRICE OF THE REMAINING PORTION**

(3926) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone emancipates a share in his slave, he should completely emancipate him if he has money; but if he has none, the slave will be required to work (to pay for his freedom), but he must not be overburdened.3348

3345. This shows that if a man emancipates a part of a slave or a share in a slave, he will be set free, for a free man and a slave are equal in the eyes of Allah. If another man has a share in the slave and he does not emancipate his share, the slave will be free and will pay the price of his share.

3346. This applies in case the man who has emancipated his share is rich. If he is poor, the slave will be required to work and pay the price to his other masters.

3347. This shows that the man who emancipates his share in a slave will emancipate the remaining portion if he is rich. If he is poor, it will not be binding on him to set him free completely.

3348. If a slave is owned by many persons, and one of them emancipates his share, the slave is immediately free and he will have to pay the price of the shares of other partners, provided he is rich. This is held by al-Shāfi‘ī, Ahmad, Abū Yūsuf and Muhammad. Abū Hanifah thinks that other
(3927) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone emancipates his share in a slave, he is to be completely emancipated by his money if he has money. But if he has no money, a fair price for the slave should be fixed, and the slave is required to work for his master according to the proportion of his price, but he must not be overburdened.

Abū Dāwūd said: In the version of both the narrators the words are “he will be required to work and must not be overburdened”. This is the version of ‘Alī.

(3928) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Sa‘īd (b. Abī ‘Arūbah) through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

Abū Dāwūd said: It has also been transmitted by Rawḥ b. ‘Ubdah from Sa‘īd b. Abī ‘Arūbah. In this version he did not mention the words “the slave should be required to work”. It has also been transmitted by Jarīr b. Ḥāzim and Mūsā b. Khalaf from Qatādah through the chain of Yazīd b. Zuray‘ and to the same effect. In this version they mentioned the words “the slave should be required to work”

Chapter 1488

THE VIEW THAT A SLAVE WILL NOT BE REQUIRED TO WORK FOR PURCHASING HIS FREEDOM

(3929) ‘Abd Allāh b. ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone emancipates his share in a slave, a fair price for the slave should be fixed, give his partners their shares, and the slave be thus emancipated; otherwise he is emancipated to the extent of the share which he emancipated.

(3930) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Umar to the same effect through a different chain of narrators. ‘Nāfi‘ sometimes said: He will be emancipated to the extent of the share which he emancipated, and sometimes he did not say these words.

(3931) The tradition mentioned above has also been narrated by Ibn ‘Umar from partners may either require the slave to work and pay the price, or require the man who emancipated his share to pay the price or emancipate their shares. If the man who emancipate his share is poor, the slave, according to al-Shāfi‘ī and Aḥmad, is free in proportion to his share, and slave in proportion to other shares. The partners cannot require him to work. But this is against this tradition. Abū Ḥanīfah and Abū Yūsuf maintain that other partners may ask the slave to work and pay the price. But they should not make haste and overburden him.

3349. They are: Yazīd b. Zuray‘ and Muḥammad b. Bishr.

3350. According to Mālik, al-Shāfi‘ī, Aḥmad and Abū ‘Ubaid, the slave will not be required to work to pay the rest of the price to the partners. The man who emancipated his share will also not be asked to pay the remaining price. The slave will be emancipated to the extent of the first man’s share. This tradition supports this view.
the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The narrator Ayyūb said: I do not know whether the following words are a part of the tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) or Nāfi‘ told them himself: “otherwise he will be emancipated to the extent of the first man’s share.”

(3932) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone emancipates his share in a slave, he should emancipate him completely if he has enough money to pay the full price; but if he has none, he will be emancipated to the extent of his share.

(3933) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Umar from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the same effect as mentioned by Ibrāhīm b. Mūsā through a different chain.

(3934) The tradition mentioned above has also been narrated by Ibn ‘Umar through a different chain of transmitters to the same effect as mentioned by Mālik. In this version there is no mention of the words “otherwise he will be emancipated to the extent of the first man’s share.” His version ends “and the slave be thus emancipated,” to the same effect as he (Mālik) mentioned.

(3935) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If a man emancipates his share in a slave, the rest will be emancipated by his money if he has enough money to pay the full price for him.

(3936) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If a man is shared by two men, and one of them emancipates his share, a price of the slave will be fixed, not more or less, and he will be emancipated by him in case he is rich.

(3937) Ibn al-Thalāb reported on the authority of his father: A man emancipated his share in a slave. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not put the responsibility on him to emancipate the rest.

Ahmad said: The name Ibn al-Thalabb is to be pronounced with ta‘ (and not with tha). As Shu‘bah could not pronounce ta, he said tha.

Chapter 1489

POSSESSION OF A SLAVE WHO IS A RELATIVE TO THE MASTER AND IS WITHIN THE PROHIBITED DEGREES

(3938) Samurah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: (The narrator Mūsā said in another place: From Samurah b. Jundub as presumed by Hammād): If anyone gets possession of a relative who is within the prohibited
degrees, that person becomes free.\textsuperscript{3351} Abū Dāwūd said: A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Samurūh from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain.

Abū Dāwūd said: Only Ḥammād b. Salamah has transmitted this tradition and he had doubt in it.

(3939) Qatādah\textsuperscript{3352} reported ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb (may Allah be pleased with him) as saying: If anyone gets possession of a relative who is within the prohibited degrees, that person becomes free.

(3940) Qatādah reported on the authority of al-Ḥasan: If anyone gets possession of a relative who is within the prohibited degrees, that person becomes free.

(3941) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Jābir b. Zaid and al-Ḥasan through a different chain of narrators.

Abū Dāwūd said: The narrator Sa‘īd retained the tradition more carefully than Ḥammād.

\textit{Chapter 1490}

\textbf{FREEDOM OF SLAVE-MOTHERS}

(3942) Sulāmah, daughter of Ma‘qil, a woman of the tribe of Khārijah Qais ‘Ailān, said: My uncle brought me (to Medina) in the pre-Islamic days. He sold me to al-Ḥubāb b. ‘Amr, brother of Abū al-Yusr b. ‘Amr. I bore a child ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥubāb to him and he (al-Ḥubāb) then died. Thereupon his wife said: I swear by Allah, now you will be sold (as a repayment) for his loan. So, I came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! I am a woman of Banū Khārijah Qais b. ‘Ailān. My uncle had brought me to Medina in pre-Islamic days. He sold me to al-Ḥubāb b. ‘Amr, brother of Abū al-Yusr b. ‘Amr. I bore ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥubāb to him. His wife said: I swear by Allah, you will be sold for his loan. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Who is the guardian of al-Ḥubāb? He was told: His brother Abū al-Yusr b. ‘Amr. He then sent for him and said: Set her free; when you hear that some slaves have been

\textsuperscript{3351}. This shows that if a man gets possession of a relative with whom marriage is prohibited like mother, daughter, sister, maternal and paternal aunt, that person will be free. This view is held by most of the Companions, and Successors. Abū Ḥanīfah and Aḥmad also hold the same view. According to al-Shāfi‘ī, only children, father and mother will be free and not other relatives. Mālik maintains that only children, parents and brothers will be free and not other relatives. According to the Zāhirīs, only possession of a person as a slave is not sufficient for his emancipation. The owner should set him free by his will (\textit{‘Amm al-Ma‘bud}, IV, 45).

\textsuperscript{3352}. This is a \\textit{manqūf} tradition. Qatādah did not hear any tradition from ‘Umar. He was born thirty years after the death of ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb
brought to me, came to me, and I shall compensate you for her. She said: They set me free, and when some slaves were brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), he gave them a slave in compensation for me.3353

(3943) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: We sold slave-mothers during the time of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and of Abū Bakr. When ‘Umar was in power, he forbade us and we stopped.3354

Chapter 1491

FREEDOM OF A SLAVE AFTER THE DEATH OF HIS MASTER (MUDABBAR)

(3944) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah said: A man declared that his slave would be free after his death, but he had no other property. So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered (to sell him). He was then sold for seven hundred or nine hundred (dirhams).3355

(3945) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah through a different chain of narrators. This version added: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: You are more entitled to his price, and Allah has no need of it.

(3946) Jābir said: A man of the Anṣār called Abū Madhkur declared that his slave called Yaʿqūb would be free after his death, but he had no other property. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) called him and said: Who will buy him? Nuʿaim b. ‘Abd Allah bought him for eight hundred dirhams.

3353. This shows that if a slave-girl bears a child, she will be free after the death of her master. After the birth of the child her master cannot sell her, nor present her to any other man as a gift. This is held by ‘Umar, ‘Uthmān, ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, al-Hasan, ‘Atâ’, Mujahīd, Sālim, al-Zuhrī, Ibrāhīm al-Nakha’ī, Mālik, Abī Ḥanīfah, al-Shāfiʿī al-Auzā’i, al-Thawrī, al-Laith, and others. The other view is that a slave-mother can be sold. This is held by Abū Bakr, ‘Ali, Ibn ‘Abbās, Ibn al-Zubair, Jābir, Abū Saʿīd al-Khūdri and others. This problem is disputed among scholars (‘Awn al-Maʿbūd, IV, 46).

3354. This tradition is a basis for the view that a slave-mother can be sold. It is said that a consensus (ijmāʿ) was established on the prohibition of her sale during the caliphate of ‘Umar.

3355. Mudabbar is a slave whose master declares him free after his death. It is disputed whether a mudabbar can be sold. Abū Ḥanīfah and Mālik maintain that he cannot be sold after the death of his master. Al-Shāfiʿī, Aḥmad, Abū Thawr, Ishaq, al-Zāhirī, Abī`ishāh, al-Hasan, Muṣājid, Tāwās allow him to be sold. Ibn ‘Umar, Zaid b Ṭhābit, Ibn ʿĪsā, Ibn al-Muṣayyab, al-Zuhrī, al-Shaʿbī, al-Nakha’ī, Ibn Abī Lailā and al-Laith b. Sa`d disapprove of his sale. Aḥmad allows his sale in case his master is indebted and has no property except that slave. According to Mālik, he can be sold when the master is dying, and not during his lifetime (‘Awn al-Maʿbūd, IV, 49).
Chapter 1492

EMANCIPATION OF SLAVES WHOSE PRICE EXCEEDS ONE-THIRD OF THE PROPERTY

(3947) ʿImrān b. Ḥuṣain said: A man who had no other property emancipated six slaves of his at the time of his death. When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was informed about it, he spoke severely of him. He then called for them, divided them into three sections, cast lots among them, and emancipated two and kept four in slavery.3357

(3948) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Qilābah through a different chain of narrators on the authority of ʿImrān b. Ḥuṣain to the same effect. But in this version he did not mention “He spoke severely of them.”

(3949) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Qilābah from Abū Zaid through a different chain of narrators to the same effect: A man of the Anṣār... The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Had I been present before his burial, he would not have been buried in a Muslim cemetery.

(3950) ʿImrān b. Ḥuṣain said: A man emancipated six slaves at the time of his death and he had no other property. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was in-

3356 This is a literal translation, or it may be translated: “do thus and thus,” “meaning that it should be distributed on his right and on his left. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) referred to his friends and acquaintances.

This tradition shows that alms (ṣadaqah) should be given first to one’s relatives. It is no justice to give to others when one’s family and relatives are in need of it.

3357 A man is allowed to leave one-third of his property as a will and at least two-thirds of a dead man’s property must go to his heirs. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) emancipated two slaves after casting lots and kept four in slavery. In emancipating some of the slaves, lots should be cast. This view is held by Mālik, al-Shāfiʿī, Aḥmad, Iṣḥāq, Dāwūd, Ibn Jarīr, and most of the scholars. Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that a portion of each slave should be emancipated and each of them should be required to work to pay the price of the remaining portions. The slaves will not be emancipated by casting lots. This view is also held by al-Shaʿbī, al-Nakhaʿī, Shuraiḥ and al-Ḥasan, Ann al-Maʿbūd, IV, 51).
formed about it. He cast lots among them, emancipated two and retained four in slavery.

Chapter 1493

EMANCIPATION OF A SLAVE WHO HAS PROPERTY

(3951) 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone emancipates a slave who has property, the property of the slave belongs to him except that the master makes a stipulation.

Chapter 1494

EMANCIPATION OF A BASTARD SLAVE

(3952) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The child of adultery is worst of the three.

Abū Hurairah said: That I give a flog in the path of Allah (as a charity) is dearer to me than emancipating a child of adultery.

Chapter 1495

REWARD FOR EMANCIPATING A SLAVE

(3953) Al-‘Arīf b. al-Dailami said: We went to Wāthilah b. al-Asqā and said to him: Tell us a tradition which has no addition or omission. He became angry and replied: One of you recites when his copy of a Qurān is hung up in his house, and he makes additions and omissions. We said: All we mean is a tradition you have heard from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: We went to the Prophet

3358 The antecedent of this pronoun is disputed. Some refer it to the master and others to the slave.

3359. If the master gives the property to the slave, it will be a gift to him.

3360. There are various explanations of this tradition. What seems more logical is that a bastard child is worse than his parents in lineage and stock, while his parents are better than him in lineage; otherwise the child is not at fault. The parents committed the crime.

3361. Abū Hurairah meant that it was no use emancipating a bastard slave, for bastard children are generally evil-doers by nature. It is, therefore, better to do some other good work than emancipating a bastard slave.
(may peace be upon him) about a friend of ours who deserved. Hell for murder.\textsuperscript{3362}
He said: Emancipate a slave on his behalf; Allah will set free from Hell a member of the body for every member of his.\textsuperscript{3363}

\textbf{Chapter 1496}

\textbf{WHICH OF THE SLAVES IS BETTER THAT SHOULD BE EMANCIPATED}

(3954) \textit{Abū Najīb al-Sulamī} said: Along with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) we blocked the palace of al-Ṭā'īf. The narrator Muṭādh said: I heard my father (sometimes) say: “Palace of al-Ṭā’īf,” and (sometimes) “Fort of al-Ṭā’īf,” which are the same. I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: He who causes an arrow to hit its mark in Allah’s path will have it count as a degree for him (in Paradise). He then transmitted the rest of the tradition. I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If a Muslim man emancipates a Muslim man, Allah, the Exalted, will make his every bone protection for every bone of his emancipater from Hell; and if a Muslim woman emancipates a Muslim woman, Allah will make her every bone protection for every bone of her emancipater from Hell on the day of resurrection.

(3955) \textit{‘Amr b. ‘Abasah} said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If anyone emancipates a Muslim slave, that will be his ransom from Jahannam.

(3956) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Muṭādh through a different chain of narrators. After mentioning the words “If any Muslim emancipates a Muslim slave . . .” and if a woman emancipates a Muslim woman, this version adds: “If a man emancipates two Muslim women, they will be his deliverance from Hellfire; two bones of theirs will be emancipation for each of his bone.”

\textit{Abū Dawūd} said: Sālim did not hear (traditions) from Shurahbīl. Shurahbīl died at Șiffīn.

\textsuperscript{3362} This refers to an incidence. A man killed another man unintentionally, and he feared that he would go to Hell.

\textsuperscript{3363} There is a great reward for emancipating a slave. By setting a slave free, a man is freed from Hell. In fact, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) aimed at annihilation of slavery which was rampant in Arabia. He wanted to eradicate it gradually. Hence he pronounced great reward for their emancipation. The Qur'ān also stresses their emancipation in various forms.
Chapter 1497

EMANCIPATION OF A SLAVE WHILE THE MASTER IS HEALTHY

(3957) Abū al-Dardā' reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: the similitude of a man who emancipates a slave at the time of his death is like that of a man who gives a present after satisfying his appetite.3364

3364. It carries no reward if a man emancipates a slave or gives something in charity when he does not need it. Allah gives a great reward to a man who emancipates a slave or gives something in charity when he himself is in need of it.
XXV. KITĀB AL-HURŪF WA AL-QIRĀ‘ĀT

[BOOK OF DIALECTS AND READINGS OF THE QUR’ĀN]

Chapter 1498

(3958) Jābir said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) read the Qur'ānic

3365. A tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) says: The Qur'ān was revealed in seven dialects. As various Arab tribes had divergent dialects, the Qur'ān was revealed in different dialects for their convenience. There are various other explanations of this tradition. The Qur'ān was transmitted from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the people through seven Qur'ān readers (qurra‘, sing. qāri‘). They are as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Place</th>
<th>First qāri‘</th>
<th>Second qāri‘</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Basrah</td>
<td>Abū ‘Amr (d. 153/770)</td>
<td>al-Dūrī (d. 246/860)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Damascus</td>
<td>Ibn ‘Amir (d. 118/736)</td>
<td>Hishām (d. 245/859)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kūfah</td>
<td>‘Āṣim (d. 127/744)</td>
<td>Ḥāfṣ (d. 190/805)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kūfah</td>
<td>Ḥamzah (d. 156/772)</td>
<td>Khalaf (d. 229/843)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kūfah</td>
<td>al-Kisā‘ī (d. 189/804)</td>
<td>al-Dūrī (d. 266/860)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mecca</td>
<td>Ibn Kathīr (d. 119/737)</td>
<td>al-Bazzā‘ (d. 220/854)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Medina</td>
<td>Nāfi‘ (d. 169/785)</td>
<td>Warsh (d. 197/812)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The three after seven

1. Basrah Ya‘qūb al-Ḥaḍramī (d. 205/820)
2. Kūfah Khalaf (d. 229/843)
3. Medina Abū Ja‘far (d. 130/747)

The four after ten

1. Basrah al-Ya‘zīdī (d. 202/817)
2. Basrah al-Ḥāsan al-Ḩasī (d. 110/728)
3. Kūfah al-A‘māsh (d. 148/765)
4. Mecca Ibn Muḥaisin (d. 123/740)

These Qur'ān-readers (qurra‘) transmitted various readings of certain verses of the Qur'ān. A consensus of opinion of the Muslims has been established that the seven readings of the Qur'ān (al-qir‘āt al-sab‘ah) are all valid and standard. A verse can be read in any of these seven readings transmitted by these Qur'ān-readers. Besides these seven readings, there are other readings too. But they are not reckoned as standard readings. Some of them are explanations of some verses. They are known as rare readings (al-qir‘āt al-shādhdhāh).
verse, 3366 “And take ye the Station of Abraham as a place of prayer. 3367

(3959) 'Ā'ishah said: A man 3368 got up (for prayer) at night, he read the Qur'ān and raised his voice in reading. When the morning came, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: May Allah have mercy on so-and-so! Last night he reminded me a number of verses which I was about to forget. 3369

(3960) Ibn 'Abbās said: The verse “‘And no prophet could (ever) be false to his trust” 3370 was revealed about a red velvet. When it was found missing on the day of Badr, some people said: Perhaps the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) has taken it. So Allah, the Exalted, sent down “‘And no prophet could (ever) be false to his trust” 3371 to the end of the verse.

Abū Dāwūd said: In the word yaghulla the letter ya has short vowel a. 3372

(3961) Anas b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: O Allah, I seek refuge in Thee from niggardliness 3373 and old age.

(3962) Laqīṭ b. Ṣābi rah said: I came in the deputation of Banū al-Muntafiq to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He then narrated the rest of the tradition. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: lā taḥsībanna (do not think) and did not say: lā taḥṣabanna (do not think). 3374

(3963) Ibn 'Abbās said: The Muslims met a man with some sheep of his. He said: Peace be on you. But they killed him and took those few sheep. Thereupon the following Qur'ānic verse was revealed: “... And say not to anyone who offers you a salutation: Thou art none of a believer, coveting the perishable goods of this

3366. Qur'ān, ii. 125.

3367. This is a well-known reading of this verse in the form of imperative, i.e. “and take ye” (wattakḥidhū). The other reading by Nāfi' and Ibn 'Amir is in the form of past tense, i.e. “and took they” (wattakḥadhū).

3368. His name was 'Abd Allah b. Yazīd al-Anṣārī.

3369. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not forget these verses himself but was made so from Allah as a teaching for the Muslims. This has been explained in the version of this tradition transmitted by al-Bukhārī.

3370. 3371. Qur'ān, iii, 161.

3372. Ibn Kathīr, the people of Baṣrah, and 'Āṣim read “yaghulla” in active voice. Nāfi' and al-Shāmī read it “yughalla” in passive voice.

3373. The Arabic word is bukhil. It has four forms: bukhil, bukhul, bakhl and bakhal.

Some copies of Sunan Abū Dāwūd have the wordings after this tradition. Abū Dāwūd said: The word bukhil is to be pronounced bakhl, i.e. ba and kha have short vowel a. The word bukhil in the Qur'ānic verse lvii. 24 has its variant readings.

3374. These are two variants of this word. This can be pronounced in both ways. The full tradition goes: “Do not think that we have slaughtered this sheep for you.” See Book I, Purification, hadith No. 142.

The word taḥṣabanna in verse iii, 188 has also its variant readings.
meaning these few sheep.  

(3964) Zaid b. Thābit said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to read: "Not equal are those believers who sit (at home) and receive no hurt (ghairu ʿullu ʿāli ʿarāri)" but the narrator Saʿīd did not say the words "used to read".

(3965) Anas b. Mālik said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) read the verse: "eye for eye" (al-ʿainu biʿl-ʿāni).  

(3966) Anas b. ʿĀblāk said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) read the verse: "We ordained therein for them: Life for life and eye for eye (al-nafsa biʿl-nafsi waʿl-ʿainu biʿl-ʿāni)."

(3967) ʿAbdullāh b. Saʿd al-ʿĀwfi said: I recited to ʿAbd Allah b. ʿUmar the verse: "It is Allah Who created you in a state of (helplessness) weakness (min ʿa faʿlin)." He said: (Read) min ʿuʿfin. I recited it to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as you recited it to me, and he gripped me as I gripped you.

(3968) Abū Saʿīd said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) read the verse mentioned above, "min ʿuʿfin."

(3969) Ubayy b. ʿAbd Allāh said: "Say, in the bounty of Allah, and in His mercy—in that let you rejoice."  

(3970) Ubayy (b. Kaʿb) said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) read the

3375. Qurʿān, iv 94. The other reading of the word salām in this verse is salām meaning submission. This incidence refers to a group of Muslims who were sent on an expedition by the Prophet (may peace be upon him). They killed this man by mistake presuming that he was showing himself a Muslim to save his life, and he was not actually a Muslim. But this was their error corrected by the Qurʿān in this verse. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave instructions to the Muslims that if they saw a mosque in a locality or heard adhān they should not attack it.

3376. Qurʿān, iv 95. The word ghair in this verse has three variants, namely, ghaira, ghairu and ghairi. This can be read with three vowels. Ibn Kathīr, Abū ʿAmīr, Ḥamzah and ʿĀṣim read it ghairu, with short vowel u. Nāfīʿ, Ibn ʿAmīr and al-Kisāʾī read it ghairi with short vowel a. A rare reading goes ghairi with short vowel i (ʿAwn al-Maʿbud, IV, 57).

3377. Qurʿān, iv 95. The word ʿaim (eye) in this verse has two readings: al-Kisāʾī read al-ʿaīnū and other following words with short vowel u; Ibn Kathīr, Ibn ʿĀmīr, Abū Jaʿfar and ʿĀṣim read the word jurāḥ (wounds) with short vowel u alone; others read all the words, nafṣa (life), ʿaina (eye), ansa (nose), udhuna (ear), sinna (tooth) with short vowel a (ʿAwn al-Maʿbud, IV, 57-58).

3378. Qurʿān, v 48. In this verse the word nafṣ has been read with short vowel a and the word ʿaim with short vowel u.

3379. Qurʿān xxx 54. The word duʾf in this verse has two readings: ʿĀṣim and Ḥamzah read it daʾfūn with short vowel a, and Ḥafs and others read it duʾfūn with short vowel u. The latter is a stronger reading.

3380. Qurʿān x 58. In this verse the word faʿl-yafrahī has two readings: Abū Jaʿfar and Ibn ʿĀmīr and others read it faʿl-yafraḥī (let them rejoice); and Yaʿqūb read it faʿl-yafraḥū (let you rejoice).
verse: "Say: In the bounty of Allah and in His mercy—in that let you rejoice: that is better than the wealth you hoard."  

(3971) Āsmā', daughter of Yazīd, said that she heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) read the verse: "He acted unrighteously."  

(3972) Shahr b. Ḥawshab said: I asked Umm Salamah: How did the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) read this verse: "For his conduct is unrighteous (innahu 'amalu 'amīl ghairu ṣāliḥ)." She replied: He read it: "He acted unrighteously" (innahu 'amila ghairu ṣāliḥ). 

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by Ḥārūn al-Naḥwī and Mūsā b. Khalaf from Thābit as reported by the narrator 'Abd al-'Azīz. 

(3973) Uḥayy b. Ka'b said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prayed, he began with himself and said: May the mercy of Allah be upon us and upon Moses. If he had patience, he would have seen marvels from his Companion. But he said: "(Moses) said: If ever I ask thee about anything after this, keep me not in thy company: then wouldst thou have received (full) excuse from my side":  

(3974) Ubayy b. Ka'b said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) read the Qur'ānic verse: "Thou hast received (full) excuse from me (min ladunni)" and put tashdīd (doubling of consonants) on nun (n). 

(3975) Ibn 'Abīl-Ḥāsā' said: Ubayy b. Ka'b made me read the following verse as the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) made him read: "in a spring of murky water" (fi 'ainī hamī'ī ati'ūn) with short vowel ā after h. 

(3976) Abū Sa'īd al-Khadr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A man from the 'illiyūn  

3382. Qur'ān, x. 58. In this verse the word tajma'ān has two readings: yajma'ān (they hoard); and tajma'ān (you hoard). 

3383. Qur'ān, xi. 46. The well-known reading of this verse is innahū 'amalun ghairu ṣāliḥ. Al-Kīsā'ī and Ya'qūb read 'amīla (acted) while others read 'amalun (act or conduct). 

3384. Qur'ān, xviii. 76. There are two readings of the word ladunni (from my side) in this verse. Abū Ja'far, Nāṣir and Abū Bakr read it laduni while others read it ladunni. Abū Bakr read it ladīni ('Awn al-Ma'būd, iv, 59). 

3385. Qur'ān, xviii. 86. The word hamī'ah in this verse has two readings: the well-known reading is hamī'ah (murky water). Ibn 'Amir, Ḥāmzah, al-Kīsā'ī and Abū Bakr read it hamīyah (warm water). 

3386. A highest rank in Paradise. 

3387. Qur'ān xxiv. 35. The word durri in this verse has three readings: durri, dir'i and dur'i. The well-known reading is durri, from durr meaning pearl. Abū 'Amr and al-Kīsā'ī read dir'i and Ḥāmzah and Abū Bakr read dur'i from dur'um meaning to avert.
Ch. 1498 ]

has short vowel ʿu and it has no hamzah (ʿ). Abū Bakr and ʿUmar will be of them and will have some additional blessings.

(3977) Farwah b. Musaik al-Ghūṭaifī said: I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He then narrated the rest of the tradition. 3388 A man from the people said: ʿApostle of Allah! tell us about Sabāʾ; 3389 what is it: land or woman? He replied: It is neither land nor woman; it is a man to whom ten children of the Arabs were born: six of them lived in the Yemen 3390 and four lived in Syria. 3391 The narrator ʿUthmān said Al-Ghāṭafānī instead of al-Ghūṭaifī. He said: It has been transmitted to us by al-Ḥasan b. al-Ḥakam al-Nakhaʿī.

(3978) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying—the narrator Ismāʿīl transmitted it from Abū Hurairah, and mentioned the tradition about the coming down of revelation—: “So far (is this the case) that when terror is removed from their hearts” 3392.

(3979) Umm Salamah, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: The reading of the following verse by the Prophet (may peace be upon him) goes: “Nay, but there came to thee (jāʾatki) my signs, and thou didst reject them (fakadhdhabti bihā); thou wast haughty (wastakbarti) and became one of those who reject Faith (wa kunti).” 3393

Abū Dāwūd said: This is a mursal tradition, i.e. the link of the Companion has been omitted, for the narrator al-Rābiʿ did not meet Umm Salamah.

(3980) ‘Āʾishah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)

3388. Al-Tirmidhī has recorded the full tradition. He says: I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and asked: Apostle of Allah! should I not fight against those who remained behind at home along with those who came forward? He permitted me to fight against them, and made me the commander. When I went out from him, he asked me: What did al-Ghūṭaifī do? He was informed that I had gone away. He said that someone should be sent to call me back. He called me back. I came to him while he was among his Companions. He said (to me): Call (your) people (to Islam). If any of them embraces Islam, accept it from him; if anyone does not embrace Islam, do not make haste until I tell you. He said: On this occasion some verses about Sabāʾ were revealed. Then a man said: Apostle of Allah, . . . The remaining portion has been recorded by Abū Dāwūd.

3389. This refers to the Qurʾānic verse: xxxiv. 15.

3390. Those who lived in the Yemen were: Azd, Ashʿarūn, Ḥimyar, Kindah, Madḥḥij and Anmār.

3391. Those who lived in Syria were Lakhm, Judhām, Ghassān and ʿĀmilah.

3392: Qurʾān, xxxiv, 23. The word fuzṣīʿaḥ in this verse has many readings: ʿAmr and Yaʿqūb read it fasaaʿak and others fasʿak, and some others fuzṣīʿaḥ. The last is the well-known reading. It is also reported that Abū Hurairah used to read it furrīghah. These are all rare readings and are not standard.

3393. Qurʾān, xxxix. 59. In this reading of the verse mentioned in the tradition feminine pronouns have been used, referring to soul (nafs) which is feminine in Arabic. But the well-known reading has masculine pronouns.
read: "(There is for him) Rest and satisfaction" (fa ruhun wa raihanun).\textsuperscript{3334}

(3981) Ṣafwān b. Ya‘lā quoting his father said: I heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) read on the pulpit the verse "They will cry: O Mālik."\textsuperscript{3335}

Abū Dāwūd said: That is, without shortening the name (Mālik).

(3982) ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) made me read the verse "It is I who give (all) sustenance, Lord of power, steadfast (for ever)."\textsuperscript{3336}

(3983) ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to read the verse "Is there any that will receive admonition (muddakir)?"\textsuperscript{3337} that is with doubling of consonant [(dal) (d)].

Abū Dāwūd said: The word muddakir may be pronounced as mim (m) with short vowel u, (dal) (d) with short vowel a and kāf (k) with short vowel i.

(3984) Jābir said: I saw the Prophet (may peace be upon him) reading the verse; "Does he think that his wealth would make him last for ever?"\textsuperscript{3338}

(3985) Abū Qilābah said that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) made a man read the verse. "For, that day His chastisement will be such as none (else) can be chastised. And His bonds will be such as none (other) can be bound."\textsuperscript{3339}

\textsuperscript{3334} Qur'ān, lvi. 89. The word rauḥ in this verse has two readings. Ya‘qūb read it rūḥun with short vowel u and others rawḥ with disphong aw. The well-known reading is rawḥ.

\textsuperscript{3335} Qur'ān, xliii. 77. Mālik is the name of the guard or angel in charge of Hell. This word has two readings: Māliku and Māli. In vocative case the last consonant of a name is dropped to shorten the name. This is called tarkhim. ‘Alī, Ibn Mas‘ūd, Ibn Waththāb and al-A‘māh are said to have read it Māli.

\textsuperscript{3336} Qur'ān, li. 58. The well-known reading of this verse is ‘For Allah is He Who gives (all) sustenance, Lord of power, steadfast (for ever).’ The reading of this verse as mentioned in this tradition is found in the copy of the Qur'ān of Ibn Mas‘ūd. But this is against the agreed reading.

\textsuperscript{3337} Qur'ān, liv. 15. The word muddakir was originally mudhakir. According to grammatical rules, it has been changed into muddakir. Some read it muḍḥakir. But this is a rare reading.

\textsuperscript{3338} Qur'ān, civ. 3. There are two problems in the reading of this verse: (1) particle of interrogation, (2) vowel of the letter sin(s) in the word yahṣabu. The well-known reading has no particle of interrogation. It goes: ‘He thinks that his wealth would make him last for ever’ (civ. 3). The word yahṣabu (thinks) has two readings: yahṣibu and yahṣabu. Al-Shāmī, ‘Āṣim and Ḥāmzah read it yahṣabu and the rest yahṣibu.

\textsuperscript{3339} Qur'ān, lxxxix, 86. In this tradition the name of the Companion has been omitted. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) made him read this verse. There are two readings of the words yu‘adḥhibu and yūḥiqu. The well-known reading is in active voice, i.e. yu‘adḥhibu and yūḥiqu. According to this reading, the verse goes: ‘For that day His chastisement will be such as none (else) can inflict. And His bonds will be such as none (other) can bind.’ The other reading is in passive voice as mentioned in the tradition, i.e. yu‘adhabhū and yūḥuqu, meaning that none can be punished like the punishment of Allah in this world, and no one can be bound in chains in this world as binding by Allah in the Hereafter.
Abū Dāwūd said: According to some (scholars), there is a narrator between the narrator Khālid and Abū Qilābah.

(3986) Abū Qilābah said: A man whom the Prophet (may peace be upon him) made the following verse read informed me, or he was informed by a man whom a man made the following verse read through a man whom the Prophet (may peace be upon him) made the following verse read: “For, that day His chastisement will be such as none (else) can be inflicted (lā yu’adhdhabu).

Abū Dāwūd said: ’Ajīm, al-A’īm, Tālḥah b. Muṣarrīf, Abū Ja’far Yazīd b. al-Qa’qā, Shaibah b. Naṣṣāḥ, Nāfi’ b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān, ‘Abd Allah b. Kathīr al-Dārī, Abū ‘Amr b. al-‘Alā’, Ḥamzat al-Zayyāt, ‘Abd al-Rahmān al-A’rāj, Qatādah, al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī. Mujāhid, Ḥamīd al-A’rāj, Abū Bakr b. ‘Abbās and ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Bakr recited: “For, that day His chastisement will be such as none (else) can inflict (lā yu’adhdhibu), and His bonds will be such as none (other) can bind (wa lā yathiqu),

Abu Dawud said: Khaḍīj, al-A’mash, Talhah b. Musarrif, Abu Ja’far Yazid b. al-Qaqaa, Shaibah b. Nasaah, Nafi’ b. ‘Abd al-Rahman, ‘Abd Allah b. Kathir al-Darli, Abu ‘Amr b. ‘Ala’, Hamzat al-Zayyat, ‘Abd al-Rahman al-A’raj, Qatadah, al-Hasan al-Basri. Mujahid, Hamid al-A’raj, Abub Bakr b. ‘Abbasi and ‘Abd al-Rahman b. Abub Bakr recited: “For, that day His chastisement will be such as none (else) can inflict (lā yu’adhdhabu), and His bonds will be such as none (other) can bind (wa lā yathiqu), except the verse mentioned in this tradition from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). It has been read yu’adhdhabu with short vowel a in passive voice.

(3987) Abū Sa’īd al-Khudrī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) related a tradition in which he mentioned the words “Jibrīl and Mīkā’il and he pronounced them, Jibra’īlā wa Mikā’īla.”

Abū Dāwūd said: Khaḍīj said: I did not put the pen aside from writing letters (ḥuraf) for forty years: nothing tired me (or made me incapable of writing), even Jibrīl and Mikā’il did not tire me.

(3988) Abū Sa’īd al-Khudrī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) mentioned the name of the one who will sound the trumpet (ṣāhib al-sur) and said: On his right will be Jibrīl and on his left will be Mikā’il.

(3989) Ibn al-Mussayyab said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him), Abū Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthmān used to read “māliki yawmīl-dīn (master of the Day of Judgment)”. The first to read mālikī yawmīl-dīn was Marwān.

3400. The narrator is doubtful whether he was informed by the Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) or by some other person who was informed by the Companion.

3401. Qur’an, lxxxix. 25-26. The well-known reading of these words is in active voice.

3402. Qur’an, ii. 98. In one copy of Sūrah Abū Dāwūd the words are Jibrā’il and Mikā’il. Al-Khaṭṭāfī says that there are thirteen readings of the word Jibrīl. The well-known of them is Jibrīl. This is the reading of Abū ‘Amr, Nāfi’, Ibn ‘Āmir and of Ḥafṣ from ‘Aṣim.

3403. He is Ibn Hisbām al-Baghḍādī.

3404. There are many readings of the word Mikā’il. Nāfi’ read it Mikā’il, while Abū ‘Amr, Ya’qūb and ‘Aṣim Mikā’il, and others Mikā’il. The Angel who will sound the trumpet on the day of Resurrection is Isrāfil.

3405. Qur’an, i. 4. There are two readings of the word mālik in this verse. ‘Aṣim, al-Kisā’ī and Ya’qūb read it mālik; and others read it mālik. The meaning of both the words is the same.
Abū Dāwūd said: This is sounder than the tradition transmitted by al-Zuhri from Anas, and al-Zuhri from Sālim, from his father (Ibn 'Umar).

(3990) Umm Salamah said that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to read: "In the name of Allah, the Cherisher and Sustainer of the worlds; most Gracious, most Merciful; Master of the Day of Judgment," breaking its reading into verses, one after another.

Abū Dāwūd said: I heard Aḥmad (b. Hanbal) say: The early reading is: Mālikī yawmi‘l-din.

(3991) Abū Dharr said: I was sitting behind the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who was riding a donkey while the sun was setting. He asked: Do you know where this sets? I replied: Allah and his Apostle know best. He said: It sets in a spring of warm water (ḥāmiyāh).

(3992) Ibn al-Asqa‘ said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) came to them in the dwelling place of immigrants and a man asked him: Which is the greatest verse of the Qur‘ān? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) replied: Allah, there is no god but He—the Living, the Self-Subsisting Eternal. No slumber can seize Him nor sleep.

(3993) Shaqiq said: Ibn Mas‘ūd read the verse: "Now come, thou" (haita laka). Then Shaqiq said: We read it, "hi’tu laka" (I am prepared for thee). Ibn Mas‘ūd said: I read it as I have been taught; it is dearer to me.

3406. Qur‘ān, i. 1-4.

The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to stop at every verse. He did not read all the verses in one breath continuously. It is commendable to stop at every verse while reading the Qur‘ān. This tradition also shows that tasmiyah (In the name of Allah) is a part of Sūrat al-Fātihah.

3407. Qur‘ān, i. 4.

3408. Qur‘ān, xviii. 86. The word ḥāmi‘ah in this verse has two readings. Abū Ja‘far, Abū ʿĀmir, Ḥamzah, al-Kisā‘ī and Abū Bakr read it ḥāmiyāh with long vowel a. Ḥāmiyāh means warm water. The others read it ḥāmi‘ah meaning musky water.

3409. Ṣußârāt al-Muhājirīn. This was a platform or shed reserved in the mosque of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) for the dwelling of some people from the immigrants who devoted themselves to the acquisition of the knowledge of Islam. They lived on donations of the people or worked themselves. They were sent on expeditions to teach the injunctions of Islam. They were volunteers who devoted their whole life to the cause of the religion.

3410. Qur‘ān, ii. 235. In this verse, the word qayyūm has many readings: qayyūm, qayyim, qayyūm and qa‘īm. ʿUmar and Ibn Mas‘ūd read it qayyūm and ʿAlqamah qayyim. The well-known reading is qayyūm.

3411. Qur‘ān, xii. 23. In this verse the word haita laka (now come, thou) has many readings. Haite is the reading of the people of Kūfah and Basrah. Hita is the reading of the people of Medina and Syria. Ibn Kathīr read it haite laka. Al-Sulamī and Qatādah hi‘tu laka (I am prepared for thee). There are many other readings too (ʿAwn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 67).
(3994) Shaqlq said: 'Abd Allah (b. Mas'ud) was told that the people had read this verse: "She said: Now come, thou" (hitilaka). He said: I read it as I have been taught; it is dearer to me. It goes "wa qālat halilaka" (She said: Now come thou).3412

(3995) Abū Sa'īd al Khudrī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Allah, the Exalted, said to the children of Israel: "... but enter the gate with humility, in posture and in words, and you will be forgiven your faults (tughfar lakum)".3413

(3996) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Hishām b. Sa'd with a different chain of narrators in a similar way.

(3997) 'Ā'ishah said: The revelation came down to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and he recited to us: "A surah which We have sent down and which We have ordained (faraqānāhā)".3414

Abū Dāwūd said: The letter ra (r) in the word faraḥānāhā has short vowel a (without doubling of consonant r), and then he reached the verses after this verse.

3412. Qur'ān, xii. 23.
3413. Qur'ān, ii. 58. In this verse the words "naghfir lakum" (We shall forgive your faults) have three readings. Nāfi' read it yughfar lakum (you will be forgiven), Ibn ‘Āmir read it tughfar lakum (you will be forgiven), and the rest read it naghfar lakum (We shall forgive you). The last is the well-known reading ('Aum al-Ma’bud, IV, 68).
3414. Qur'ān, xxiv. 1. In this verse the word "faraqānāhā" (and which we have ordained) has two readings. The majority of the readers read it "faraqānāhā" without doubling the consonant r. Ibn Kathīr and Abū 'Amr read it faraqa'nāhā with doubling of the consonant r. It means: "which We have described in detail."
Chapter 1499

HOT BATHS

(3998) ‘Ā’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade to enter the hot baths. He then permitted men to enter them in lower garments.3415

(3999) Abū al-Malîh said: Some women of Syria came to ‘Ā’ishah. She asked them: From whom are you? They replied: From the people of Syria. She said: Perhaps you belong to the place where women enter hot baths (for washing). They said: Yes. She said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If a woman puts off her clothes in a place other than her house, she tears the veil between her and Allah, the Exalted.3416

Abū Dāwūd said: This is the tradition narrated by Jarîr, and it is more perfect. Jarîr did not mention Abū al-Malîh. He said (on the authority of ‘Ā’ishah) that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said.

(4000) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: After some time the lands of the non-Arabs will be conquered for you, and there you will find houses called ḥammāmît (hot baths). So men should not enter them (to wash) except in lower garments, and forbid the women to enter them except a sick or one who is in a child-bed.3417

3415. In the early centuries of Islam, taking a bath in public baths was a common practice. Men and women took bath together. Non-Muslims did not care for uncovering their private parts. As immodesty is forbidden in Islam, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade Muslims to take bath in public baths. Later on he permitted only men to wash there, provided they wore loin clothes. He did not permit Muslim women to wash in public baths.

3416 This shows that women are not allowed to wash in public hot baths. They should take a bath in their houses.

3417. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed only a sick woman and the one who is in child-bed on account of necessity. These hot baths also provided a sort of medical treatment for certain diseases.
Chapter 1500

PROHIBITION OF NUDITY

(4001) Ya'la said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) saw a man washing in a public place without a lower garment. So he mounted the pulpit, praised and extolled Allah and said: Allah is characterised by modesty and concealment. So when any of you washes, he should conceal himself.3418

(4002) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ya'la from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators.

Abū Dāwūd said: The former is more perfect.

(4003) Jarhad said—Jarhad was one of the people of Suffah: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sat with us and my thigh was uncovered. He said: Do you not know that thigh is a private part?3419

(4004) ʿAll reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not uncover your thigh, and do not look at the thigh of the living and the dead.3420

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition disagrees with the generally reported traditions (nakārah).

Chapter 1501

NUDITY

(4005) Al-Miswar b. Makhramah said: I lifted a heavy stone. While I was walking my garment fell down. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: Take your garment upon you, and do not walk naked.3421

(4006) Bahz b. Ḥakim said that his father told on the authority of his grandfather: I said: Apostle of Allah, from whom should we conceal our private parts and to whom can we show? He replied: Conceal your private parts except from your wife and from whom your right hands possess (slave-girls). I then asked: Apostle of Allah, (what should we do), if the people are assembled together? He replied: If it is within your power that no one looks at it, then no one should look at it. I then asked:

3418. This shows that a man must cover his private parts when he takes a bath in the open or in a public place. But it is allowed to wash naked in a closed room.

3419. According to Abū Ḥanīfah and al-Shāfīʿī, thigh is a private part, as this tradition shows. Mālik and ʿAḥmad maintain that only urinal and stool outlets or organs are private parts. Thigh is not included in them.

3420. This tradition indicates that the rule of law for private parts of the dead is the same.

3421. This shows that it is forbidden to walk naked. One must wear one's lower garment.
Apostle of Allah, if one of us is alone, (what should he do)? He replied: Allah is more entitled than people that bashfulness should be shown to him.

(4007) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A man should not look at the private parts of another man, and a woman should not look at the private parts of another woman. A man should not lie with another man without wearing lower garment under one cover; and a woman should not lie with another woman without wearing lower garment under one cover.

(4008) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: A man should not lie with another man and a woman should not lie with another woman without covering their private parts except a child or a father. He also mentioned a third thing which I forgot.

3422. This shows that two men or women should not lie together under one cover in a naked condition with their private parts uncovered. But they can lie together under one cover while covering their private parts.

3423. A young child, male or female, is allowed to lie naked with its parents.
XXVII. KITĀB AL-LIBĀS

[BOOK OF CLOTHING]

Chapter 1502

(4009) Abū Sa'īd al-Khudrī said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) put on a new garment he mentioned it by name, turban or shirt, and would then say: O Allah, praise be to Thee! As Thou hast clothed me with it, I ask Thee for its good and the good of that for which it was made, and I seek refuge in Thee from its evil and the evil of that for which it was made.

Abū Naḍrah said: When any of the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) put on a new garment, he was told: May you wear it out and may Allah give you another in its place.3424

(4010) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Jarīrī through a different chain of narrators in a similar way.

(4011) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Jarīrī to the same effect through a different chain of narrators.

Abū Dāwūd said: 'Abd al-Wahhāb al-Thaqafī did not mention the name of Abū Sa'īd. Hammad b. Salamah said: From al-Jarīrī, from Abū al-'Ālā', from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Abū Dāwūd said: The hearing of this tradition by Ḥammad b. Salamah and Thaqafī is of the same nature.3426

(4012) Muṭṭādh b. Anas reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone eats food and then says: "Praise be to Allah Who has fed me with this food and provided me with it through no might and power on my part," he will be forgiven his former and later sins. If anyone puts on a garment and says: "Praise be to Allah Who has clothed me with this and provided me with it through no might and power on my part," he will be forgiven his former and later sins.

3424 It is commendable to utter this supplication while wearing a new garment
3425 The name of al-Jarīrī is Sa'īd b. Iyās al-Baṣrī.
3426 Both transmitted as a muṣṣal tradition (omitting the link of the Companion).
Chapter 1503

PRAYER FOR A MAN WHO PUTS ON A NEW GARMENT

(4013) Umm Khālid, daughter of Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āṣ, said: Once the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was brought some garments among which was a small cloak with a border and black stripes. He said: Whom do you think to be most deserving for it? The people kept silence. He said: Bring me Umm Khālid. Then she was carried to him and he put it on her, saying: Wear it out and make it ragged twice. Then he went on looking at red or yellow marks on it, and said: This is sanāḥ, sanāḥ, Umm Khālid. It means “beautiful” in the language of the Abyssinians.

Chapter 1504

ON WEARING SHIRT

(4014) Umm Salamah said: The clothing which the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) liked best was shirt.

(4015) Umm Salamah said: No clothing was dearer to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) than a shirt.

(4016) Aṣmā’, daughter of Yazīd, said: The sleeve of the shirt of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to the wrist.

Chapter 1505

OUTER GARMENTS WITH FULL-LENGTH SLEEVES (QABĀ’)

(4017) Al-Miswar b. Makhramah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) distributed outer garments with full-length sleeves but did not give Makhramah anything. Makhramah said: Go with us to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). So I went with him and he said: Enter and call him for me. I then called him. He came out to him and he had an outer garment with full-length sleeves over him from those garments. He said: I kept it for you. He looked at it, meaning Makhramah.

3427. This indicates that she was an infant at the time.
3428. This is a prayer meaning that she might live long.
3429 The Prophet (may peace be upon him) liked shirt best, for it covered the whole body and was most suitable to cover all the parts.
according to the addition of Ibn Mawhab. The agreed version then says: He said: Makhramah was pleased. Ibn Qutaibah said: From Ibn Abi Mulaikah, but he did not name it.

Chapter 1506

WEARING CLOTHES FOR GAINING FAME

(4018) Ibn 'Umar said—according to Sharik's version Ibn 'Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone wears a garment for gaining fame, Allah will clothe him in a similar garment on the Day of Resurrection.  
(4019) Musaddad transmitted the tradition mentioned above from Abû 'Awânah saying: Garment of disgrace.  
(4020) Ibn 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who copies any people is one of them.

Chapter 1507

WEARING CLOTHES OF WOOL AND HAIR

(4021) 'A'ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went out one morning wearing a variegated garment of black goat hair.  
'Utbah b. 'Abd al-Sulam said: I asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to clothe me. He clothed me with two coarse clothes of linen.  
(4022) Abû Burdah said: My father said to me: My son, if you had seen us while we were with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and the rain had fallen on us, you would have thought that our smell was the smell of the sheep.
Chapter 1508
WEARING CLOTHES OF SUPERIOR QUALITY

(4023) Anas b. Malik said: The King Dhū Yazan presented to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) a suit of clothes which he had purchased for thirty-three camels or thirty-three she-camels.⁴³⁷ He accepted it.

(4024) Ishaq b. 'Abd Allah b. al-Ḥārith said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) purchased a suit of clothes for twenty she-camels⁴³⁸ and some more, and he presented it to Dhū Yazan.⁴³⁹

Chapter 1509
WEARING COARSE CLOTHES

(4025) Abū Burdah said: I entered upon 'Ā'shah, and she brought a coarse lower garment that was manufactured in the Yemen and a patched garment called mulabbadah.⁴⁴⁰ She swore by Allah that the spirit of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was taken in these two clothes.⁴⁴¹

(4026) 'Abd Allah b. 'Abbās said: When the Ḥarūfīyyah⁴⁴² made a revolt, I came to 'Alī (may Allah be pleased with him). He said: Go to these people. I then put on the best suit of the Yemen.

Abū Zumail (a transmitter) said: Ibn 'Abbās was handsome and of imposing countenance. Ibn 'Abbās said: I then came to them and they said: Welcome to you, Ibn 'Abbās! what is this suit of clothes? I said: Why are you objecting to me? I saw over the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) the best suit of clothes.

Abū Dawūd said: The name of Abū Zumail is Sāmmāk b. al-Walīd al-Ḥanafi.

Footnotes:
⁴³⁷. This shows that it is allowable to wear valuable clothes if one is rich and can afford.
⁴³⁸. This was a return of the gift which Dhū Yazan had given to the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
⁴³⁹. Dhū Yazan was the King of Ḥimyar in the Yemen.
⁴⁴⁰. It was called mulabbadah either because it was patched or it was coarse.
⁴⁴¹. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had humbleness in his temperament. He put on any clothes he had on various occasions. Sometimes he wore precious clothes and sometimes coarse. He did not mind to wear a coarse cloth.
⁴⁴². A branch of the Khwārij who revolted against 'Alī and he crushed them.
Chapter 1510

WEARING CLOTHES MADE OF SILK AND WOOL (KHAZZ)\(^{3443}\)

(4027) Sa‘d said: I saw a man riding on a white mule and he had a black turban of silk and wool. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) put it on me. This is the version of ‘Uthmān, and there is the word akhbāra in his tradition.

(4028) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ghanam al-‘Ash‘arī said: Abū ‘Āmir or Abū Mālik\(^{3444}\) told me—I swear\(^{3445}\) by Allah another oath that he did not belie me that he heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: There will be among my community people who will make lawful (the use of) khazz \(^{3446}\) and silk.\(^{3447}\) Some of them will be transformed into apes and swines.

Abū Dāwūd said: Twenty Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) or more put on khazz. Anas and al-Barā’ b. ‘Āzib were among them.\(^{3448}\)

Chapter 1511

WEARING SILK

(4029) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb saw that a striped robe containing silk was being sold at the gate of the mosque. He said: Apostle of Allah, would that you purchased it and wore it on Friday and when a delegation came to you. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Only he who has no portion in the next world wears this (silk). Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came in possession of some robes made of silk and gave one of them to ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb. ‘Umar said: Apostle of Allah, you are clothing me with it, but

\(^{3443}\) The khazz in vogue in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was made of silk and wool. It was not pure silk. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed to wear khazz. But it is forbidden to wear silk by men.

\(^{3444}\) There is a doubt about the name of the Companion. But this is no defect in the soundness of the tradition.

\(^{3445}\) This is meant for emphasis to assure that he actually heard the tradition, and there was no doubt about it.

\(^{3446}\) This tradition indicates that wearing khazz is forbidden. In fact, this depends on the making of khazz. Those who think that khazz was manufactured purely from silk consider it forbidden. But those who hold that khazz was made of silk and wool allow its use. According to Abū Ḥanīfah and Ahmad, it is allowed to wear khazz if it is not meant for gaining name and fame. But it is disapproved according to Mālik.

\(^{3447}\) Wearing silk is forbidden for men by consensus of opinion, and allowed for women.

\(^{3448}\) Those who allow the use of khazz argue from the practice of these Companions.
you said about the robe of ‘Uṭārid what you said. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: I did not give it to you so that you may wear it. So ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb gave it to his brother who was a polytheist in Mecca to wear it.

(4030) The tradition mentioned above has also been narrated by ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar through a different chain of narrators. This version has: He said: A robe of silk brocade. He then sent him a jubbah of brocade and said: You may sell it and fulfil your need.

(4031) Abū ‘Uthmān al-Nahḍ! said: ‘Umar wrote to ‘Utbah b. Farqad that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade (wearing) silk except so-and-so, and so-and-so, to the extent of two, three, or four fingers.3433

(4032) ‘All said: A robe containing silk was presented to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He then sent it to me. I wore it and came to him. I saw him looking angry in his face. He then said: I did not send it to you to wear. He ordered me and I divided it among my women.

Chapter 1512

THE VIEW THAT DISAPPROVES OF WEARING SILK

(4033) ‘Alī b. Abl Ṭalīb (Allah be pleased with him) said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade us to wear a Qassī garment, a garment dyed with safflower, gold rings, and reading the Qur’ān while bowing.

(4034) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Alī b. Abl Ṭalīb from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. This version has: (He forbade) reading the Qur’ān while bowing and prostrating.

(4035) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibrāhīm b. ‘Abd Allah through a different chain of narrators. This version added: I do not say that he had forbidden you.

3449 ‘Uṭārid b Ḥājib is the name of a person who presented the robe.
3450. His name was ‘Uthmān b Ḥakīm. He was his brother from his mother’s side.
3451. This tradition indicates that wearing silk is unlawful for men and lawful for women. But it is permissible to present it to an unbeliever.
3452. An outer garment with long sleeves.
3453. This shows that the use of silk to the extent of four fingers is allowed. This may be used as a fringe of the cloth.
3454. A cloth made of flax and raw silk which came from a place in Egypt called Qass. The other reading of Qassī garment is Qissī.
3455. The red dyestuff prepared from its flower heads, known as ‘waf’ur.
(4036) Anas b. Malik said: The king of Rome presented a fur of silk brocade to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and he wore it. The scene that his hands were moving (while wearing the robe) is before my eyes. He then sent it to Ja'far who wore it and came to him. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: I did not send it to you to wear. He asked: What should I do with it? He replied: Send it to your brother Negus.

(4037) 'Imrān b. Ḥusain reported the Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I do not ride on purple, or wear a garment dyed with saffron, or wear shirt hemmed with silk. Pointing to the collar of his shirt al-Ḥasan (al-Bāṣrī) said: The perfume used by men should have an odour but no colour, and the perfume used by women should have a colour but no odour.

Sa'īd said: I think he said: They interpreted his tradition about perfume used by women as applying when she comes out. But when she is with her husband, she may use any perfume she wishes.

(4038) Abū al-Ḥusain, that is al-Ḥaitham b. Shafl said: I and a companion of mine surnamed Abū 'Āmir, a man from al-Maʿāfīr to perform prayer in Bait al-Maqdis (Jerusalem). Their preacher was a man of Azd called Abū Raiḥānah, who was a Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Abū al-Ḥusain said: My companion went to the mosque before me. I went there after him and sat beside him. He asked me: Did you hear the preaching of Abū Raiḥānah? I said: No. He said: I heard him say: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade ten things: Sharpening the ends of teeth, tattooing, plucking hair, men sleeping together without an under-garment, women sleeping together without an under-garment, men

3456. Some other traditions indicate that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) wore this fur before the prohibition of silk. The other explanation is that the fur might be hemmed with silk. Hence he wore it.

3457. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like to wear the fur as it was hemmed with silk. He did it out of piety. He asked Ja'far to send it to Negus so that he might give it to women. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) wanted him that he should give the return of the benefaction and kindness made by Negus to Ja'far.

3458 The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like red or purple colour for men. Hence he expressed her disapproval of riding on a saddle or an animal which had a purple covering.

3459. This shows that men and women should be careful in using perfume. While going out men should use a colourless and women odourless perfume.

3460. The name of a place.

3461. In those days women used to sharpen their teeth to resemble men. They wanted to demonstrate themselves as young. As this was a kind of deception, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade it.

3462. This refers to plucking hair of the face by women, by plucking hair from beard or brow by men. This might refer to plucking hair at the time of calamity.
putting silk at the bottom of their garments like Persians, or putting silk on their shoulders like Persians,\textsuperscript{3463} plundering, riding on panther skins,\textsuperscript{3464} wearing signet-rings, except in the case of one in authority.\textsuperscript{3465}

Abū Dāwūd said: The solitary point in this tradition (not supported by other traditions) is the report about the signet-ring.

(4039) 'All said: It is forbidden to use purple saddle-clothes.\textsuperscript{3466}

(4040) 'All said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade me to wear a gold ring, or a Qassī\textsuperscript{3467} garment or the use purple saddle-cloths.

(4041) 'Ā'ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) once prayed wearing a garment having marks. He then looked at its marks. When he saluted, he said: Take this garment of mine to Abū Jahm, for it turned my attention just now in my prayer, and bring a simple garment without marks.\textsuperscript{3468}


(4042) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by 'Ā'ishah through a different chain of narrators. But the former is more perfect.

\textit{Chapter 1513}

\textbf{PERMISSION FOR WEARING A GARMENT ORNAMENTED WITH SILK AND A GARMENT WITH THE WARP OF SILK}

(4043) 'Abd Allah Abū ‘Umar, client of Asmā’, daughter of Abū Bakr, said: I saw Ibn ‘Umar buying a Syrian garment in the market. When he saw that it had red warp, he returned it. I then came to Asmā’ and mentioned it to her. She said: Bring me, slave-girl, the mantile of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). She brought out a mantle of a coarse ornamented cloth, with its collar, sleeves, front, and back were hemmed with brocade.\textsuperscript{3469}

\textsuperscript{3463} Muslims have been forbidden to wear silk. But this is restricted to men.

\textsuperscript{3464} He forbade it as it was also a custom of non-Muslims.

\textsuperscript{3465} The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade wearing rings by ordinary persons as it is an unnecessary decoration. It is allowed for a man in authority for he needs to stamp with it. Some scholars have allowed common men to wear rings. But it is preferable to avoid it.

\textsuperscript{3466} This means that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to use purple saddle-cloths.

\textsuperscript{3467} See note 3454.

\textsuperscript{3468} The Prophet (may peace be upon him) might have accepted the gift of Abū Jahm out of modesty, but he returned it later on to him. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like such garments which distracted his attention in prayer.

\textsuperscript{3469} This shows that the use of silk to the extent of four fingers is allowed.
(4044) Ibn ‘Abbas said : It is only a garment wholly made of silk which the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade, but there is no harm in the ornamented border and the warp.  

Chapter 1514
WEARING A GARMENT OF SILK FOR SOME EXCUSE

(4045) Anas said : The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave licence to ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Awf and al-Zubair b. al-‘Awwām to wear silk shirts during a journey because of an itch which they had.

Chapter 1515
WEARING SILK BY WOMEN

(4046) ‘All b. Abī Talib said : The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) took silk and held it in his right hand, and took gold and held it in his left hand and said : Both of these are prohibited to the males of my community.

(4047) Anas b. Mālik said that he saw a striped garment over Umm Kulthūm, daughter of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He said : The word *ṣiyāra* means striped with silk.

(4048) Jābir said : We used to take it away (i.e. silk) from boys, and leave it for girls. Mis’ar said : I asked ‘Amr b. Dīnār about it, but he did not know it.

Chapter 1516
STRIPED CLOAKS OF THE YEMEN

(4049) Qatādah said : We asked Anas b. Mālik : Which cloth was dearer to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ? or Which cloth did the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) like best to wear ? He replied : The striped cloaks (*ḥibrāh*).

3470. This tradition shows that what is forbidden is the cloth wholly made of silk. If a garment has a border ornamented with silk, or its warp is of silk, it is not forbidden.
3471. This shows that a man can wear a garment wholly made of pure silk owing to some disease, or some other excuse.
3472. This shows that gold and silk is allowed for females and forbidden to males.
3473. This shows that putting silk on minors is not allowed. But some scholars have allowed it for children. Al-Shāfi’ī allows to put it on children on the day of ‘Īd.
3474. It seems that ‘Amr b. Dīnār had got this tradition.
3475. *Ḥibrāh*: Striped and ornamented cloaks made in the Yemen. Their colour was green. This was the best cloth in Arabia.
Chapter 1517

WHITE GARMENTS

(400) Ibn 'Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Wear your white garments,\(^{3476}\) for they are among your best garments, and shroud your dead in them. Among the best types of collyrium you use is antimony \((ithmid)\) for it clears the vision and makes the hair sprout.

Chapter 1518

WASHING THE CLOTHES, AND WEARING WORN-OUT AND DIRTY CLOTHES

(4031) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) paid a visit to us, and saw a dishevelled man whose hair was disordered. He said: Could this man not find something to make his hair lie down? He saw another man wearing dirty clothes and said: Could this man not find something to wash his garments with?\(^{3477}\)

(4052) Abū al-Aḥwāṣ quoted his father as saying: I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) wearing a poor garment and he said (to me): Have you any property? He replied: Yes. He asked: What kind is it? He said: Allah has given me camels, sheep, horses and slaves. He then said: When Allah gives you property, let the mark of Allah's favour and honour to you be seen.\(^{3478}\)

Chapter 1519

GARMENT DYED WITH A YELLOW COLOUR

(4053) Zaid b. Aslam said: Ibn 'Umar used to dye his beard with yellow

\(^{3476}\) The Prophet (may peace be upon him) liked best to wear white garments, for they are a sign of humility. They do not create self-conceit and pride in a man.

\(^{3477}\) This tradition emphasises wearing clean dress and combing hair.

\(^{3478}\) It is no humility to put on poor and shabby clothes if a man can afford to wear clean clothes and of fine quality. It is a sort of ungratefulness to Allah for His favour and honour. There should be a display of Allah's favour out of gratefulness to Him. But one should not be self-conceited and proud of one's wealth. Al-Tirmidhi transmitted a tradition which says: Allah likes the mark of His favour to be seen on His servant.
colour so much so that his clothes were filled (dyed) with yellowness. He was asked: Why do you dye with yellow colour? He replied: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) dyeing with yellow colour, and nothing was dearer to him than it. He would dye all his clothes with it, even his turban.

Chapter 1520
GREEN COLOUR

(4054) Abū Rimthah said: I went with my father to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and saw two green garments over him.3480

Chapter 1521
RED COLOUR

(4055) 'Amr b. Shu’aib on his father’s authority told that his grandfather said: We came down with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) from a turning of a valley. He turned his attention to me and I was wearing a garment dyed with a reddish yellow dye. He asked: What is this garment over you? I recognised what he disliked. I then came to my family who were burning their oven. I threw it (the garment) in it and came to him the next day. He asked: ‘Abd Allah, what have you done with the garment? I informed him about it. He said: Why did you not give it to one of your family to wear, for there is no harm in it for women.3481

(4056) Hishām b. al-Ghāz said: The word muḍarrajah mentioned in the previous tradition means a colour which is neither crimson nor pink.

(4057) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. al-Āṣ said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) saw me. The version of Abū ‘All al-Lula’ has: I think I wore a garment dyed with a reddish yellow colour. He asked: What is this? So I went and burnt it. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: What have you done with your garment? I replied: I burnt it. He said: Why did you not give it to one of your women to wear?

Abū Dāwūd said: Thawr transmitted it from Khālid and said: ‘Pink (muwā‘rad)’ while Tāwūs said: ‘Reddish yellow colour (mu‘aṣfar)’.

(4058) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. al-Āṣ said: A man wearing two red garments passed the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and gave him a greeting, but he did not

3479. Sufrah is a kind of herb like saffron, yellow in colour with profuse smell.
3480. This shows that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) liked green colour.
3481. This shows that reddish yellow colour (‘usfur) is not allowed for men. Women may dye their garments in it.
respond to his greeting.\footnote{3482}

(4059) Rāfī' b. Khālid said: We went out with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) on a journey, and we had on our saddles and camels garments consisting of red warp of wool. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Do I not see that red colour has dominated you. We then got up quickly on account of this saying of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and some of our camels ran away. We then took the garments and withdrew them.

(4060) Ḥurairah b. al-Abājj al-Sulaimī said that a woman of Banū Asad: One day I was with Zainab, the wife of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and we were dyeing her clothes with red ochre. In the meantime the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) peeped us. When he saw the red ochre, he returned. When Zainab saw this, she realised that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) disapproved of what she had done. She then took and washed her clothes and concealed all redness. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then returned and peeped, and when he did not see anything, he entered.\footnote{3483}

\begin{center}
\textbf{Chapter 1522}
\end{center}

CONCESSION IN WEARING RED CLOTHES

(4061) Al-Barā’ (b. ʿĀzib) said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had hair which reached the lobes of his ears, and I saw him wearing red robe.\footnote{3484} I did not see anything more beautiful than it.

(4062) ʿĀmir said: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) at Mina giving sermon on a mule and wearing a red\footnote{3485} garment, while ʿAll was announcing

\footnote{3482} This shows that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like reddish colour.

\footnote{3483} This tradition is weak. These narrators Iṣmāʿīl b. ʿAyyāsh and his son Muḥammad are not reliable. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed the use of red colour for women. If he went out of the house, that might be some other reason and not that he disapproved of the red colour for women.

\footnote{3484} Ibīn Qayyim is of opinion that it was not a deep reddish clothe. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) liked Yemeni garments. These were in fact red striped garments of the Yemen.

\footnote{3485} The question is disputed. Mālik and al-Shāfīʿī allow to wear red clothes. They argue from these traditions. The Ḥanafīs disapprove of wearing red clothes. They argue from those traditions which forbid wearing red clothes with ʿUṣfūr which gives red colour. The fact is that the traditions which prohibit wearing red clothes are weak. Besides, Ibīn Qayyim’s interpretation that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) wore striped garment of the Yemen is not correct. The Companion is clearly saying that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) wore a red garment. There is no question of interpreting it in a different way. These traditions of this chapter allow to wear red clothes (ʿAuw al-Maʿbūd, IV, 94).
Chapter 1523
WEARING BLACK CLOTHES

(4063) ‘A‘ishah said: I made a black cloak for the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and he put it on; but when he sweated in it and noticed the odour of the wool, he threw it away. The narrator said: I think he said: He liked good smell.

Chapter 1524
FRINGE OF CLOTHES

(4064) Jābir said: When I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he was sitting with his hands round his knees wearing the cloak the fringe of which was over his feet.

Chapter 1525
TURBANS

(4065) Jābir said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) entered Mecca in the year of the Conquest while he had a black turban over him.

(4066) ‘Amr b. Hurayth quoting his father said: I saw the Prophet (may peace be upon him) on the pulpit and he wore a black turban, and he let both the ends hang between his shoulders.

(4067) ‘All b. Rukānah quoting his father said: Rukānah wrestled with the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) threw him on the ground. Rukānah said: I heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say: The difference between us and the polytheists is that we wear turbans over caps.

(4068) ‘Abd al-Rahman b. ‘Awf said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sometimes wore a turban without a cap and a cap without a turban. The distinction between Muslims and non-Muslims in respect of wearing a turban means emphasis on wearing a turban over a cap.

3486. This shows that wearing black clothes is permissible. There is no harm in it.
3487. This tradition indicates that it is allowed to use clothes with fringe.
3488. A turban is called "crown of the Arabs". It is commendable to wear black turban as the Prophet (may peace be upon him) wore on the day when Mecca was conquered.
3489. It is commendable to wear turbans over caps. But Ibn Qayyim says that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) sometimes wore a turban without a cap and a cap without a turban. The distinction between Muslims and non-Muslims in respect of wearing a turban means emphasis on wearing a turban over a cap.
him) put a turban on me and let the ends hang in front of him and behind me.\footnote{3490}

Chapter 1526

WRAPPING ONESELF COMPLETELY IN A GARMENT
\((\text{ṣamā́}'))\footnote{3491}

(4069) Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade wearing clothes in two styles: that a man sits in a single garment with his hands round his knees and uncover his private parts towards heaven,\footnote{3492} and that he wears his garment while one of his sides is uncovered, and puts the garment on his shoulders.\footnote{3493}

(4070) Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade that a man should wrap himself completely in a garment with his hands hidden\footnote{3494} it, or sit in a single garment with his hands round his knees.\footnote{3495}

Chapter 1527

OPENING THE BUTTONS OF THE COLLAR

(4071) Mu‘āwiyyah b. Qurrah quoted his father as saying: I came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) with a company of Muzainah and we swore allegiance to him. The buttons of his shirt were open.\footnote{3496} I swore allegiance to him and I

\footnote{3490} This is a weak tradition. What is correct is that a man should hang the ends between the shoulders. Al-Nawawi says that it is permissible to wear a turban with its ends hanging or not. It is also allowed not to hang the ends of the turban.

\footnote{3491} Šamā́ I means that a man wraps himself in a garment and throws its one end on one shoulder.

\footnote{3492} The Arabs used to wear clothes in different styles. Due to lack of clothes they sometimes used only one garment. One of them was ḥāšibá’. It means that a man sits in a single garment with his hands round his knees, and thus uncover his private parts. It is allowed if private part is not uncovered.

\footnote{3493} This style is called ṣammá. It means that a man wraps himself in a single garment, uncovers one of his sides and puts the garment on the shoulder. The hands remain hidden in the garment. There is a possibility of uncovering the private parts. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade this style of wearing.

\footnote{3494} This style is known as ḥāmṣamā́.

\footnote{3495} This is known as ḥāšibá’. It is allowed if one wears the cloth cautiously and does not uncover the private parts.

\footnote{3496} It is allowed to open the buttons of the collar as the Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to do. Ibn ‘Umar and the transmitters of this tradition themselves practised it.
Chapter 1528

COVERING THE HEAD WITH A CLOTH

(4072) ḤĀ'ishah said: We were seated in our house in the noonday heat. Someone said to Abū Bakr: Here is the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) coming to us shading his head at the hour when he would not generally come. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then came; he asked for permission and he gave him permission and he entered.3498

Chapter 1529

HANGING DOWN THE LOWER GARMENT BELOW THE ANKLES

(4073) Abū Jurayy Jābir b. Salīm said: I saw a man whose opinion was accepted by the people, and whatever he said they submitted to it. I asked: Who is he? They said: This is the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). I said: On you peace be, Apostle of Allah, twice. He said: Do not say “On you peace be,” for “On you peace be” is a greeting for the dead, but say “Peace be upon you”. I asked: You are the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon you? He said: I am the Apostle of Allah whom you call when a calamity befalls you and He removes it, and when you suffer from draught and you call Him He grows food for you, and when you are in a desolate land or in a desert and your she-camel strays and you call Him, He returns it to you. I said: Give me some advice. He said: Do not abuse anyone. He said that he did not abuse a freeman, or a slave, or a camel or a sheep thenceforth. He said: Do not look down upon any good work, and when you speak to your brother, be cheerful to him by your face. This is a good work. Have your lower garment halfway down your shin; if you cannot do it, have it up to the ankles. Beware of hanging down the lower garment,3499 for it is conceit and Allah does not like conceit. And if a man abuses and

3497. This was the Seal of Prophecy between his shoulders like a button on a bride’s pavilion.
3498. This shows that it is permissible to shade one’s head in the heat or to conceal oneself.
3499. This tradition shows that hanging down the lower garment below the ankles is forbidden for men. But it is permissible for women. Some scholars are of opinion that if a man hangs down his lower garment conceitedly, it is forbidden. In case he does not do out of conceit, it is not forbidden. But this is not a sound view. It is better to avoid trailing the garment, as this practice has been forbidden by the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
shames you for a thing which he finds in you, then do not shame him for a thing which you find in him; he will bear the evil consequences for it.

(4074) Ibn 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone trails his garment arrogantly, Allah will not look at him on the Day of Resurrection. Then Abū Bakr said: One of the sides of my lower garment trails, but still I remain careful about it. He said: You are not one of those who do so conceitedly.

(4075) Abū Hurairah said: A man was praying with his lower garment hanging down. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to him: Go and perform ablution. He then went and performed ablution. He then came and he said: Go and perform ablution. Then a man said to him: Apostle of Allah, what is the matter with you that you commanded him to perform ablution and then you kept silence? He replied: He was praying while hanging down his lower garments, and Allah does not accept the prayer of a man who hangs down his lower garment.3500

(4076) Abū Dharr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: There are three to whom Allah will not speak and at whom He will not look on the Day of Resurrection, and whom He will not declare pure, and they will have a painful punishment. I asked: Who are they, Apostle of Allah, they are losers and disappointed? He repeated it three times. I asked: Who are they, Apostle of Allah, they are losers and disappointed? He replied: The one who wears a trailing robe, the one who takes account of what he gives, and the one who produces a ready sale of a commodity by false swearing.

(4077) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Dharr through a different chain of narrators, but the former is more perfect. This version has: Mannān is the one who takes account of anything he gives.

(4078) Qais b. Bishr al-Taghibīl said: My father told me and he was a companion of Abū al-Dardā’. There was in Damascus a man from the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) called Ibn al-Ḥanzallyyah. He was a recluse and rarely met the people. He remained engaged in prayer. When he was free from prayer he was occupied in glorifying Allah and exalting Him until he went to his family. Once he passed us when we were with Abū al-Dardā’. Abū al-Dardā’ said to him: Tell us a word which benefits us and does not harm you. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent a contingent and it came back. A man of them came and sat on the place where the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to sit; and he said to a man beside him: Would that you saw us when we met the enemy and so-and-so

3500. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) commanded him to perform ablution to remind the man that trailing the lower garment was a sin, and it could be redeemed by ablution. It should be noted that ablution does not become void by trailing the lower garment. He ordered to perform ablution to purify him.
attacked and pierced a lance. He said: Take it from me and I am a boy of the tribe Ghibār. How do you think about his statement? He replied: I think his reward was lost. Another man heard it and said: I do not think that there is any harm in it. They quarrelled until the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) heard it, and he said: Glory be to Allah! There is no harm if he is rewarded and praised. I saw that Abū al-Dardā’ was pleased with it and began to raise his head to him and say: Did you hear it from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)? He said: Yes. He went on repeating it to him so much so that I may say that he was going to kneel down on his knees. He said: Another day he again passed us. Abū al-Dardā’ said to him: (Tell us) a word which benefits us and does not harm you. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Khuraim al-Asadī would be a fine man were it not for the length of his hair which reaches the shoulders and the way he lets his lower garment hang down. When Khuraim heard that, he hastened, took a knife, cut his hair in line with his ears and he raised his lower garment half way up his legs. He then passed us another day. Abū al-Dardā’ said to him: (Tell us) a word which benefits us and does not harm you. He said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: You are coming to your brethren; so mend your mounts and mend your dress, until you will be like a mole among the people, and Allah does not like obscene word and deed, and to commit intentionally obscenity.

Abū Dāwūd said: Similarly, Abū Nu’aim narrated from Hishām. He said: Until you will be like a mole among the people.

Chapter 1530

PRIDE

(4079) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah Most High says: Pride is my cloak and majesty is my lower garment,

3501. If a man rears horses to fight in the path of Allah, the expenditure incurred on them is like giving charity. He will be rewarded for this expense.

3502. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said these words at the time of returning from a journey.

3503. It means that when a traveller returns home, he becomes visible to all. People come to him to ask him about the journey. He is as visible among the people as a mole on the body.
and I shall throw him who vies with me regarding one of them into Hell.\(^{3504}\)

(4080) ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who has in his heart as much pride as grain of mustard-seed will not enter Paradise.\(^{3505}\) and he who has in his heart as much faith as a grain of mustard-seed will not enter Hell.\(^{3506}\)

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Qasim all has transmitted it from al-A‘mash in a similar way.

(4081) Abū Hurairah said: A man who was beautiful came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: Apostle of Allah, I am a man who likes beauty, and I have been given some of it, as you see. And I do not like that anyone excels me (in respect of beauty). Perhaps he said: “even to the extent of thong of my sandal (shīrāk na‘lī),” or he said: “to the extent of strap of my sandal (shīrīt na‘lī)”. Is it pride? He replied: No, pride is disdaining what is true and despising people.\(^{3507}\)

**Chapter 1531**

**UP TO WHAT EXTENT ONE SHOULD WEAR THE LOWER GARMENT?**

(4082) ‘Abd al-Rahmān said: I asked Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī about wearing lower garment. He said: You have come to the man who knows it very well. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The way for a believer to wear a lower garment is to have it halfway down his legs and he is guilty of no sin if it comes halfway between that and the ankles, but what comes lower than the ankles is in Hell. On the Day of Resurrection. Allah will not look at him who trails his lower garment conceitedly.\(^{3508}\)

---

3504. This shows the gravity of the sin of pride. Allah is Most Great and He alone is entitled to pride. Man is weak and mortal. There is nothing in him of which he takes pride. Allah extremely condemns this evil quality. A Muslim should be submissive and humble to Allah and avoid pride and self-conceit.

3505. Pride is a grave sin but not unbelief. It has been established by consensus of opinion that all believers will enter Paradise after having punishment in Hell. This tradition means that a proud man will not enter Paradise directly. First, he will undergo the punishment.

3506. It means that the believers will not remain in Hell eternally. They will ultimately enter Paradise.

3507. This shows that wearing beautiful garments or sandals or liking beautiful things is not pride. Pride is an evil quality. If a man looks down upon others and thinks himself to be superior to them, he is proud. A tradition says: Allah is beautiful and loves beauty.

3508. It is a grave sin to hang down the lower garment below the ankles. One should wear it above the ankles. The ankles should be uncovered.
(4083) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Hanging down is in lower garment, shirt and turban. If anyone trails any of them conceitedly, Allah will not look at him on the Day of Resurrection.

(4084) Ibn ‘Umar said: What the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said about lower garment also applies to shirt.

(4085) ‘Ikrimah said that he saw Ibn ‘Abbas putting on lower garment, letting the hem on the top of his foot and raising it behind. He said: Why do you put on the lower garment in this way? He replied: It is how I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) do it.

Chapter 1532

WOMEN’S DRESS

(4086) Ibn ‘Abbas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) cursed women who imitate men and men who imitate women.

(4087) Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) cursed the man who dressed like a woman and the woman who dressed like a man.

(4088) Ibn Abl Mulaikah told that when someone remarked to ‘A’ishah that a woman was wearing sandals, she replied: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) cursed mannish women.

3509. Hanging down and trailing are not confined to lower garment. This also applies to shirt and turban. One should wear these garments according to the usual custom and practice which is not condemned by Islamic teachings. One should wear lower garment above the ankles. The sleeves of a shirt should be at the most up to the ends of the fingers and the end of turban should not be very long. It may be about one’s forearm’s length. The style of these clothes should not reflect pride and conceit.

3510. In the lifetime of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) people used to wear lower garments and hanged them below the ankles. But when they wore shirts, the prohibition of trailing and hanging down the sleeves also applied to them. What the Prophet (may peace be upon him) meant was to avoid the style of wearing clothes which showed pomp, show, conceit and pride.

3511. Ibn ‘Abbas followed the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in wearing the lower garment in this way. In fact, only the hem hanged down, and the part behind it was above the ankles. The ankles were uncovered.

3512. This shows that men should not wear clothes that are peculiar to women and vice versa.

3513. The reference here is to man’s footwear.

3514. This tradition indicates that a woman should not wear clothes or sandals that are peculiar to men.
Chapter 1533

ON THE MEANING OF THE QUR'ĀNIC VERSE: "THAT THEY SHOULD CAST THEIR OUTER GARMENTS OVER THEIR PERSONS"[^3515]

(4089) Ṣaffiyah, daughter of Shaibah, said that 'Ā'ishah mentioned the women of Anṣār, praised them and said good words about them. She then said: When Sūrat al-‘Nūr came down[^3516] they took the curtains, tore them and made head covers (veils) of them[^3517].

(4090) Umm Salamah said: When the verse "That they should cast their outer garments over their persons"[^3518] was revealed, the women of Anṣār came out as if they had crows over their heads by wearing outer garments.[^3519]

Chapter 1534

ON THE MEANING OF THE QUR'ĀNIC VERSE: THAT THEY SHOULD DRAW THEIR VEILS OVER THEIR BOSOMS"[^3520]

(4091) ʻĀ'ishah said: May Allah have mercy on the early immigrant women. When the verse "That they should draw their veils over their bosoms"[^3521] was revealed, they tore their thick outer garments and made veils from them.[^3522]

Ibn al-Sarh said: I saw (this tradition) in the writing of my maternal uncle from 'Aqil, from Ibn Shihāb through a different chain of narrators and to the same effect.

Chapter 1535

HOW MUCH BEAUTY CAN A WOMAN DISPLAY?

(4092) ʻĀ'ishah said: Asmā', daughter of Abū Bakr, entered upon the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) wearing thin clothes. The Apostle of Allah (may peace

[^3515]: Qur'ān, xxxiii. 59.
[^3516]: This refers to verse xxiv. 31.
[^3517]: This tradition explains verse xxxiii 59 in which women have been asked to cast outer garments over them. It shows that women should observe purdah when they come out of their houses. They should wear some kind of outer garment or a cover which conceals their decoration.
[^3518]: Qur'ān, xxxiii. 59.
[^3519]: jilbab (pl. jalābīb) means a long and loose gown worn by women to conceal their decoration. The women of Anṣār wore black cover or a kind of veil which looked like a crow. It means that after the revelation of the injunction of veil, the women came out of their homes with a cover or veil over them.
[^3522]: This tradition shows that the veils of women should be thick so that their dress and beauty do not become visible.

be upon him) turned his attention from her. He said: O Aṣmā’, when a woman reaches
the age of menstruation, it does not suit her that she displays her parts of body except
this and this, and he pointed to her face and hands.3523

Abū Dāwūd said: This is a mursal tradition (i.e. the narrator who transmitted it
from ‘Ā’ishah is missing) Khalid b. Duraik did not see ‘Ā’ishah).

Chapter 1536

A SLAVE IS ALLOWED TO SEE THE UNVEILED HEAD (I.E. HAIR)
OF HIS MISTRESS

(4093) Jābir said: Umm Salamah asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon
him) permission for getting herself cupped. He commanded Abū Tibah to cup her.3524
The transmitter said: I think he was her foster-brother or a boy not yet of age.

(4094) Anas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) brought Fātimah a
slave which he donated to her. Fātimah wore a garment which, when she covered her
head, did not reach her feet, and when she covered her feet by it, that garment did
not reach her head. When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) saw her struggle, he
said: There is no harm to you: here is only your father and slave.3525

Chapter 1537

MEANING OF THE VERSE “. . . OR MALE SERVANTS FREE OF
PHYSICAL NEEDS”3526

(4095) ‘Ā’ishah said: A mukhannath (eunuch) used to enter upon the wives of

3523. When a woman reaches the age of puberty, she must observe purdah and have a thick
veil which conceals her beauty. She may unveil her face and hands up to the wrists. In modern
times some scholars have prohibited to unveil face out of precaution.
3524. This shows that a slave is allowed to visit frequently the house in which he lives and
during the timings when others are not allowed to enter. As a slave generally remains in the house
all the time, he was allowed to cup Umm Salamah. From this Abū Dāwūd inferred that a slave is
allowed to see the bare head of his mistress. But it may be noted that the transmitter thinks that
Abū Tibah was either her relative or a minor boy. If so, the inference of Abū Dāwūd is not cor-
correct. This is a disputed point. According to some scholars, a mistress need not observe purdah from
her slave. She can appear before him. But others do not allow her to appear before him. They think
that she must observe purdah from her slave.
3525. This shows that a mistress need not observe purdah from her slave. This view is held
by ‘Ā’ishah, Sa’id b. al-Musayyab and al-Shāfi’i. But most of the scholars maintain that a mistress
should observe purdah from her slave, as she can marry him after his emancipation. A slave is a
stranger to her like others (‘Awān al-Ma’būd), IV, 107).
3526. Qur’ān, xxiv. 31.
the Prophet (may peace be upon him). They (the people) counted him among those who were free of physical needs. One day the Prophet (may peace be upon him) entered upon us when he was with one of his wives, and was describing the qualities of a woman, saying: When she comes forward, she comes forward with four (folds in her stomach), and when she goes backward, she goes backward with eight (folds in her stomach). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do I not see that this (man) knows what here lies. Then they (the wives) observed veil from him.

(4096) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Ā’ishah through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

(4097) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Ā’ishah through a different chain of narrators. This version has: He (the Prophet) exiled him and he lived in a desert (outside Medina). He would come every Friday asking for food.

(4098) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Auzā’ī through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: He was told: Apostle of Allah, in that case he will die of starvation. So he allowed him to visit (the city) twice a week so that he might ask for food and go back.

Chapter 1538

ON THE MEANING OF THE QUR’ĀNIC VERSE: “AND SAY TO THE BELIEVING WOMEN THAT THEY SHOULD LOWER THEIR GAZE”

(4099) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The verse: “And say to the believing women that they should lower their gaze” was partly abrogated by the verse: “Such elderly women as are past the prospect of marriage.”

3527. Mūhimmath was a sexually abnormal man who imitated women. They were eunuchs, and were generally singers.

3528 In verse xxiv. 31, children and male servants who were free of physical needs, i.e. eunuchs, were allowed to visit the houses in prohibited hours. Women were allowed not to observe purdah from them. The eunuch mentioned in this tradition knew the qualities of women. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited him to visit his wives.

3529,3530 Qur’ān, xxiv. 31.

3531. Qur’ān, xxiv. 60. The full verse reads: “Such elderly women as are past the prospect of marriage—there is no blame on them if they lay aside their outer garments provided they make not a wanton display of their beauty; but it is best for them to be modest; Allah best hears and best knows.”

Verse xxiv. 31 was general and included old women. But this verse provided an exception to old women to observing veil when they come out of their houses.
(4100) Umm Salamah said: I was with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) while Maimūnah was with him. Then Ibn Umm Maktūm came. This happened when we were ordered to observe veil (purdah). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Observe veil from him. We asked: Apostle of Allah! is he not blind? He can neither see us nor recognise us. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Are both of you blind? Do you not see him?  

Abū Dawūd said: This was peculiar to the wives of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Do you not see that Fāṭimah daughter of Qais passed her waiting period with Ibn Umm Maktūm. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to Fāṭimah daughter of Qais: Pass your waiting period with Ibn Umm Maktūm, for he is a blind man. You can put off your clothes with him.

(4101) 'Amr b. Shu'aib, on his father’s authority, told that his grandfather reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you marries his male-slave to his slave-woman, he should not look at her private parts.  

(4102) 'Amr b. Shu'aib, on his father’s authority, told that his grandfather reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you marries his female servant to his slave or to his employee, he should not look at her private part below the navel and above the knees.  

Abū Dawūd said: The correct name is Sawwād b. Dāwūd al-Muzanī al-Shairafi (and not Dāwūd b. Sawwād as mentioned in the chain). The narrator Wāki’ misunderstood it.

Chapter 1539

VEIL OF A WOMAN

(4103) Umm Salamah said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) came to visit her when she was veiled, and said: Use one fold, not two.  

Abū Dawūd said: “Use one fold and not two” means: Do not fold it like the turban.

3532. It is disputed whether a woman can see a man who cannot see her. The widely held view is that she must observe veil even from a blind man. The other view is that she can see her, as held by Abū Dawūd himself.

3533. A master is allowed to look at the private parts of her slave-woman. But when she is married, it is forbidden to look at her private parts.

3534. The private part of a slave-girl is below the navel up to the knees, like males. The private part of all free women is their whole body except face and hands. Abū Ḥanīfah holds that back and front side are also included in the private part of a slave-woman.

3535. Umm Salamah was wearing her veil on her head. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade her to fold it like the turban of a man. He allowed to fold it only one fold so that it may not resemble the turban.
WEARING FINE LINEN BY WOMEN

(4104) Dihyah b. Khalilah al-Kalbi said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was brought some pieces of fine Egyptian linen and he gave me one and said: Divide it into two; cut one of the pieces into a shirt and give the other to your wife for veil. Then when he turned away, he said: And order your wife to wear a garment below it and not show her figure.3536


HANGING DOWN OF LOWER GARMENT BY WOMEN

(4105) Saflyyah, daughter of Abū ‘Ubaid, said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) mentioned lower garment, Umm Salamah, wife of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), asked him: And a woman, Apostle of Allah? He replied: She may hang down a span. Umm Salamah said: Still it (foot) will be uncovered. He said: Then a forearm’s length, not exceeding it.3537

(4106) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Umm Salamah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn Ishaq and Ayyūb b. Musā transmitted it from Nāfi‘ from Saflyyah.

(4107) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave licence to others of the believers (i.e. the wives of the Prophet) to hang down their lower garment a span. Then they asked him to increase it, and he increased one span for them. They would send (the garment) to us and we would measure it one forearm’s length for them.

3536. This tradition indicates that women can wear fine clothes. But they should wear another cloth below so that their figure is not shown.

3537. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) might be speaking of wearing lower garment halfway down the legs by men. But this was for men and not for women. Umm Salamah asked the limit of hanging down the lower garment by women. First he allowed one span. But when she told him that one span will not be sufficient to cover the foot, he allowed to hang one forearm’s length, but not more than that.
Chapter 1542

SKINS OF THE DEAD ANIMALS

(4108) Ibn 'Abbās said—(Musaddad and Wahb transmitted from Maimūnah). Maimūnah said: A sheep was given in alms to a female client of ours, but it died. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) passed it and said: Why did you not tan its skin and get some good out of it? They replied: Apostle of Allah, it died a natural death. He said: It is only the eating of it that is prohibited.3539

(4109) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Zuhrl who did not mention Maimūnah. This version has: He said: Why did you not make use of it? He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect but did not mention tanning.

(4110) Ma'mar said: Al-Zuhrl used to deny tanning and say: Some good can be got out of it in any condition.3540

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Auzā'ī, Yūnus and 'Uqail did not mention tanning in the tradition of tanning; al-Zubaidi, Sa'īd b. ‘Abd al-'Azīz and Ḥafṣ b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz mentioned tanning.

(4111) Ibn 'Abbās said that he heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: When a skin is tanned, it is pure.3541

3538. 'Uthmān and Ibn Abī Khalaf narrated this tradition from Ibn 'Abbās and did not mention Maimūnah, but Musaddad and Wahb transmitted from Ibn ‘Abbās on the authority of Maimūnah.

3539. This tradition shows that the skin of a dead animal is purified after tanning. There is a difference of opinion of the scholars on this issue. First, all kinds of skins of the dead animals become pure by tanning except the skin of dog and swine. This is held by ‘Ali, Ibn Mas'ūd and al-Shāfi‘ī. Second, the skin of a dead animal is not purified by tanning. This is held by ‘Umar, Ibn ‘Umar, ‘Ā'ishah, Mālik and Ahmad according to one version. Third, the skins of those dead animals whose flesh is eaten are purified by tanning and not of all animals. This is maintained by al-Auzā'ī, Ibn al-Mubārak, Abū Thawr, and Ishaq b. Rahwāih. Fourth, the skins of all dead animals are purified by tanning except the skin of swine. This is held by Abū Ḥanīfah. Fifth, all kinds of skins of the dead animals become pure by tanning. But they become pure externally and not internally. They can be used for dry things and not for liquids. This is held by Mālik. Sixth, all kinds of skins of the dead animals are purified by tanning internally and externally. This is held by Dāwūd al-Zāhirī, and also attributed to Abū Yūsuf. Seventh, the skin of a dead animal can be used without tanning for all purposes, in dry and liquid things. This is reported to have been held by al-Zuhri. But this view has been neglected in general (‘Awn al-Ma’būd, IV, 112).

3540. This is the well-known view of al-Zuhri. He held that skins can be used whether tanned or not. He argues from those traditions in which there is no mention of tanning.

3541. This shows that the skin of a dead animal is pure when it is tanned. But it should not be used without tanning.
(4112) ‘Ā’ishah, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered that the skins of the animals which had died a natural death should be used when they are tanned.

(4113) Salamah b. al-Muhābbaq3542 said that on the expedition of Tabūk3543 the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to a household and, seeing a bucket hanging, asked for water. They said: Apostle of Allah, the animal died a natural death. He replied: Its tanning is its purification.

(4114) Al-‘Aylah, daughter of Subai’, said: I had some sheep at Uhud, and they began to die. I then entered upon Maimūnah, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and mentioned it to her. Maimūnah said to me: If you took their skins and made use of them, (that would be better for you). She asked: Is that lawful? She replied, Yes. Some people of the Quraish passed by the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) dragging a sheep of theirs as big as an ass. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to them: Would that you took its skin. They said: It died a natural death. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Water and leaves of the mimosa flava3544 purify it.

Chapter 1543
THE VIEW THAT THE SKINS OF THE DEAD ANIMALS SHOULD NOT BE MADE USE OF

(4115) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ukaim said: The letter of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was read out to us in the territory of Juhainah when I was a young boy: Do not make use of the skin or sinew of an animal which died a natural death.3545

(4116) Al-Ḥakam b. ‘Uyainah said that he went along with some people to ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ukaim, a man of Juhainah. Al-Ḥakam said: They entered and I sat at the door. Then they came out and told me that ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ukaim had informed them that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had written to Juhainah one month before his death: Do not make use of the skin or sinew of an animal which died a natural death.3546

---

3542. Some scholars read it al-Muhābbiq.
3543. In the year 9 A.H.
3544. The Arabic qarar means leaves of the mimosa flava. These were used for tanning.
3545. This tradition probably means that the skins of the dead animals should not be used without tanning.
3546 This tradition contradicts the traditions which allow the use of skin after tanning. If it means that the use of skin before tanning is prohibited, it is reconciled with them. Many other explanations of this tradition have been given by the doctors of Ḥadīth. First, this tradition is weak.
Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Naḍr b. Shumail said: The skin is called ihāb when it is not tanned, and when it is tanned, it is not called ihāb but named shann and qirbah (tanned skin or leather).

**Chapter 1544**

**SKINS OF LEOPARDS AND BEASTS OF PREY**

(4117) Mu'āwiyyah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not ride on silk stuff and panther skins.

(4118) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The angels do not accompany those fellow travellers who have panther skin.

(4119) Khālid said: Al-Miqdām b. Ma'dīkarab and a man of Banū Asad from the people of Qinnāsīn went to Mu'āwiyyah b. Abū Sufyān. Mu'āwiyyah said to al-Miqdām: Do you know that al-Ḥasan b. 'All has died? Al-Miqdām recited the Qur'ānic verse “We belong to Allah, and to Him we shall return.” A man asked him: Do you think it a calamity? He replied: Why should I not consider it a calamity while it is a fact that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to take him in his lap, saying: This belongs to me and Husain belongs to 'All? The man of Banū Asad said: (He was) a live coal which Allah has extinguished. Al-Miqdām said: Today I shall keep on making you angry and making you hear what you dislike. He then said: Mu'āwiyyah, if I speak the truth, declare me true, and if I tell a lie, for 'Abd Allah b. 'Ukāim did not hear traditions directly from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and there is a break in the chain. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Lailā did not hear from 'Abd Allah b. 'Ukāim. Secondly, there is a confusion in the chain of this tradition. Sometimes he transmits from the letter of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and at other times from those who had read the letter of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Thirdly, there is also confusion in its text. Most of the transmitters transmitted it without mentioning the time “one month before his death.” But some mentioned one month, two months, forty days, and three days. Thirdly, the traditions which allow the use of skins after tanning are strong (Mu'allim, IV. 114).

3547. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to ride on panther skins and silk stuff, for it is pomp and show. Riding on such skins creates conceit and pride in man.

3548. The name of a place in Syria.

3549. Qur'ān, ii. 156. When a Muslim hears the news about the death of someone, he is required to recite this verse to show that everyone will die.

3550. This he said to please Mu'āwiyyah. He thought that Husain was a cause of trouble for Mu'āwiyyah. He considered Husain an impediment in his way.
declare me false. He said: Do it. He said: I adjure you by Allah, did you hear the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbidding from wearing gold? He replied: Yes. He said: I adjure you by Allah, do you know that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited to wear silk? He replied: Yes. He said: I adjure you by Allah, do you know that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited to wear skins of the beasts of prey and riding on them? He said: Yes. He said: I swear by Allah, I saw all this in your house, O Mu'awiyah. Mu'awiyah said: “I know that I cannot be saved from you, O Miqdam. Khalid said: Mu'awiyah then ordered to give him what he did not order to give to his two fellows, and gave a stipend of two hundred (dirhams) to his son. Al-Miqdam then divided it among his companions and the man of Banu Asad did not give anything to anyone from the property he received. When Mu'awiyah was informed about it, he said: Al-Miqdam is a generous man; his hand is wide enough (for generosity). The man of Banu Asad withholds his things in a good manner.

(4120) Abū al-Malih b. Usāmah quoting his father said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade (the use of) the skins of beasts of prey.3551

Chapter 1545
WEARING SANDALS

(4121) Jābir said: We were with the Prophet (may peace be upon him) on a journey. He said: Make a general practice of wearing sandals, for a man keeps riding as long as he wears sandals.3552

(4122) Anas said: The sandals of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had two thongs.3553

(4123) Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade that a man should put on sandals while standing.3554

(4124) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: None of you should walk with one sandal, but should wear a pair or should

3551 It is forbidden to use the skins of the beasts of prey, even if they are tanned. These skins create pride and conceit in man. Those who make a show of their wealth use such skins.

3552 It means that by wearing sandals the movement of a man becomes easier. The sandals also protect the feet from toughness or thorns on the road. So it is here compared with riding on an animal.

3553 One thong was between the long toe and the one beside it; the other thong was between the middle toe and the one beside it.

3554. If a man wears sandals while sitting, it becomes easier and comfortable. But it is allowed to wear them while standing if it involves no hardship.
(4125) Jābir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When the thong of one of you is cut off, he should not walk with one sandal till he repairs his thong; he should not walk with one shoe, or ear with his left hand.

(4126) Ibn `Abbās said: It is part of the *sunnah* that when a man sits down, he should take off his sandals and place them at his side.

(4127) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you puts on sandals, he should put on the right one first, and when he takes them off, he should take off the left one first; so that the right one should be the first to be put on and the last to be taken off.

(4128) ‘Ā’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) liked to begin with the right side as far as possible in all his conditions: in his purification, and combing. The narrator Muslim added: “in using tooth-stick,” and he did not mention “in all his conditions”.

Abū Dāwūd said: Shu‘bāh transmitted it from Mu‘ādh, but did not mention “his tooth-stick.”

(4129) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When you put on (a garment) and when you perform ablution, you should begin with your right side.

Chapter 1546

BEDDING

(4130) Jābir b. `Abd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) mentioned bedding and said: There should be bedding for a man, bedding for his

3555 Sandals are designed to protect feet from dust and thorns. If a man wears only one sandal, he will be doing an injustice to the other foot. Besides, the purpose of wearing sandals is defeated by wearing a single sandal.

3556 A man feels unrest and inconvenience in walking with one sandal when the thong of one of the sandals is cut off. He should get it repaired and wear both the shoes.

3557 The shoe is also like a sandal. Hence one should wear a pair of shoes or put off both of them.

3558. It is commendable to eat or drink with the right hand except when there is some valid reason to eat or drink with the left hand.

3559. One should place the sandals at one’s left side, and not at the right side, or exactly before him.

3560. It is commendable to begin with the right side while wearing a garment, sandals, combing and using the tooth-stick.
wife, and a third for a guest, but a fourth for the devil.  

(4131) Jābir b. Samurah said: When I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in his house, I saw him sitting reclining on a pillow. The narrator Ibn al-Jarrāḥ added: “on his left side”.

Abū Dāwūd said: Iṣḥāq b. Manṣūr transmitted it from Isrā’īl, also mentioning the words “on his left side”.

(4132) Sā‘īd b. ‘Amr al-Qurashi quoting his father said: Ibn ‘Umar (once) saw some fellow travellers of the Yemen. They had their saddles (on camels) of leather. He said: If anyone likes to see the fellow travellers most resembling to the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), he should see them.

(4133) Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: Have you made cushions? I said: How can we afford cushions? He said: Soon you will have cushions.

(4134) ‘A’ishah said: The pillow of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) on which he slept at night (according to the version of Ibn Manfū’) was of leather stuffed with palm fibre (according to the agreed version).

(4135) ‘A’ishah said: The bedding of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) consisted of leather stuffed with palm fibre.

(4136) Umm Salamah said that her bedding was in front of the place of prayer of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Chapter 1547

HANGING CURTAINS

(4137) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to Fāṭimah and found a curtain hanging at her door; so he did not enter. Whenever he entered (the house), he would visit her first. Then ‘All came and found that Fāṭimah was grieved. He asked: What is the matter with you? She replied: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to me but did not enter (the house). ‘All then

3561. This shows that a man should not have bedding more than what is necessary for him in the house. It suggests fondness for worldly goods or a desire to exhibit his property. Such practices are blameworthy and should be avoided.

3562. This shows that saddles and beddings should be made of leather. But it is commendable and not necessary.

3563. This refers to a prediction made by the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The Companions had comfortable beddings after the expansion of conquests. This shows that the use of mattress and of cushions is permissible.

3564. These traditions indicate that it is permissible to use mattress, pillow and bedding of leather.
came to him and said: Apostle of Allah, Fāṭimah felt it heavy on her that you came to visit her but did not enter upon her. He replied: What have I to do with this world? What have I to do with prints and figures (on the curtain)? He (*All) then went to Fātimah and informed her about the saying of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). She said: Ask the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) what he orders me about it. He (the Prophet) said: Tell her that she must send it to so-and-so

(4138) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted through a different chain of narrators by Ibn Fuḍail on his father’s authority. This version has: “The curtain was embellished.”

Chapter 1548

FIGURE OF A CROSS IN THE GARMENT

(4139) 'Ā’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) never left in his house anything containing the figure of a cross without destroying it.

Chapter 1549

PICTURES

(4140) *All reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The angels do not enter a house which contains a picture, a dog, or a man who is impure by sexual defilement.

(4141) Abū Ṭalḥah al-Anṣārī said: I heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say: The angels do not enter a house which contains a dog or a picture. Zaid b. Khālid al-Juhanī said to Sa‘īd b. Yasār al-Anṣārī, the transmitter of this tradition: Go with me to ‘Ā’ishah, Mother of the Faithful, so that we ask her about it. So we went and said to her: Mother of the Faithful, Abū Ṭalḥah has transmitted to us a tradition

3565. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like embellished curtains. The persons to whom he ordered to send this curtain might be poor and needed clothing.

3566. Christians believe that the Jews crucified Jesus on the cross. They made models of it and drew its pictures on paper and garments. The cross is a sacred symbol for them. It is a part of their faith. According to the Muslims’ belief, Jesus was not crucified but lifted to heaven. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) mitigated its figures.

3567. This refers to the pictures of animate objects. The drawing of pictures of inanimate objects is allowed. The pictures of animate objects drawn on cushions and floor are trodden down by feet.

3568. The dog kept for guarding agricultural crops, sheep, and for hunting are allowed.

3569. This refers to a man who is accustomed to abandon washing after sexual defilement for long. One who does so occasionally is an exception to it.
and-so. Have you heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) mentioning that? She replied: No, but I tell you what I saw him doing. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went on an expedition and I was waiting for his return. I got a carpet which I hung as a screen on a stick over the door. When he came I received him and said: Peace be upon you, Apostle of Allah, His mercy and His blessings. Praise be to Allah Who gave you dominance and respect. Then he looked at the house and saw the carpet; and he did not respond to me at all. I found (signs of) disapproval in his face. He then came to the carpet and tore it down. He then said: Allah has not commanded us to clothe stones and clay out of the sustenance He has given us. She said: I then cut it to pieces and made two pillows out of it and stuffed them with palm fibre, and he did not disapprove of it to me.3570

(4142) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Suhail through a different chain of narrators like the previous one. This version has: I said: Mother, he has told me that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had said. He also said the words; Sa‘ld b. Yasār client of Banū al-Najjār.

(4143) Abū Ṭalḥah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The angels do not enter the house which contains a picture. Busr. (b. Sa‘ld), the transmitter of this tradition, said: Zaid (b. Khālid al-Juhāni) then fell ill and we paid him a sick visit. There was a curtain with a picture hanging at his door. I then said to ‘Ubaid Allah al-Khawlānī, the step-son of Maimūnā, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him): Did Zaid not tell us about pictures on the first day? ‘Ubaid Allah said: Did you not hear him when he said: Except a figure on a garment.3571

(4144) Jābir said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb who was in al-Baṭhā at the time of the conquest (of Mecca) to visit the Ka‘bah and obliterate all images in it. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not enter it until all the images were obliterated.

(4145) Ibn ‘Abbās said: Maimūnā, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), reported him as saying: Gabriel (peace be upon him) promised to visit me last night, but he did not visit me. Then it occurred to him that there was a pup under his bed. So he ordered and it was turned out. He then got water in his hand and sprinkled

3570. This shows that a garment bearing picture can be used in making pillows or cushions where the pictures are trodden and disgraced.

3571. The pictures of full size of animate objects are forbidden by the consensus of opinion of Muslim scholars. There is a difference of opinion about the figures on a curtain or garment. First, it is permissible absolutely, as this tradition shows. Secondly, it is forbidden absolutely. Thirdly, if the figure is in its full size, it is forbidden. But if its head has been removed, and the parts have been drawn separate from each other, the drawing of such a figure is allowed. Fourthly, if the figure is trodden and disgraced, it is allowable. In case it is drawn on a curtain, honoured and respected, such a picture is prohibited (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 122).
it on its place. When Gabriel (may peace be upon him) met him, he said: We do not enter a house which contains a dog or a picture. When the morning came, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to kill dogs. He ordered to kill the dog which guarded a small orchard, and left the dog which guarded the big orchard.3572

(4146) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Gabriel (peace be upon him) came to me and said: I came to you last night and was prevented from entering simply by the fact that there were images at the door, for there was a figured curtain with images on it in the house, and there was a dog in the house. So order that the head of the image which is in the house be cut off so that it may become like the form of a tree; order that the curtain be cut up and made into two cushions spread out on which people may tread; and order that the dog be turned out. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then did so. The dog belonged to al-Hasan or al-İhusain and was under their couch. So he ordered and it was turned out.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Nadd means a thing on which clothes are placed like a couch.

3572. A small garden of orchard can be guarded without a dog, but a big garden cannot be guarded without a dog. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to leave the dogs which guarded big orchards.
(4147) 'Abd Allah b. Mughaffal said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade combing the hair except every second day.3573

(4148) 'Abd Allah b. Buraidah said: A man from the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) travelled to Fu'ad b. 'Ubaid when he was in Egypt. He came to him and said: I have not come to you to visit you. But I and you heard a tradition from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). I hope you may have some knowledge about it. He asked: What is it? He replied: So and so. He said: Why is it I see you dishevelled while you are the ruler of this land? He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) has forbidden us to indulge much in luxury. He said: Why is it I see you unshod? He replied: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to command us to go barefoot at times.3574

(4149) Abu Umamah (Iyās b. Tha'labah) said: The Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) mentioned this word before him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Listen, listen!3575 Wearing old clothes is a part of faith, wearing old clothes is a part of faith.3576

Abū Dāwūd said: He is Abū Umamah b. Tha'labat al-Anṣārī.

3573. This tradition shows that a Muslim should not always remain engaged in his decoration, combing the hair and beauty. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) has forbidden them to indulge much in luxury. They may do so at times on alternate days.

3574. It is not a binding command to go barefoot at all times. Since a Muslim is a fighter in the path of Allah (mujahid), he should not lead a luxurious life. His life must be simple and austere. But it does not mean that he should be dirty and dishevelled. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade them to indulge much in luxury and go barefoot at times. But he also commanded them to remain neat and clean.

3575. Literally, "Don't you listen, don't you listen."

3576. This means observing austerity in clothing. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) laid emphasis on wearing simple clothes and avoiding luxury, pomp and show,
Chapter 1551

RECOMMENDATION FOR USING PERFUME

(4150) Anas b. Malik said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had *sikkah*[^3577] with which he perfumed himself.[^3578]

Chapter 1552

SETTING THE HAIR RIGHT

(4151) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who has hair should honour it.[^3579]

Chapter 1553

DYE OF WOMEN

(4152) Karlmah, daughter of Hammām, told that a woman came to ‘Ā’ishah (Allah be pleased with her) and asked her about dyeing with henna. She replied: There is no harm, but I do not like it. My beloved, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), disliked its odour.[^3580]

Abū Dāwūd said: She meant the colour of hair of the head.

(4153) ‘Ā’ishah told that when Hind, daughter of ‘Utbah, said: Prophet of Allah, accept my allegiance, he replied; I shall not accept your allegiance till you make a difference to the palms of your hands; for they look like the paws of a beast of prey.[^3581]

(4154) ‘Ā’ishah said: A woman made a sign from behind a curtain to indicate that she had a letter for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) closed his hand, saying; I do not know this is a man’s or a

[^3577]: A kind of perfume of super quality made from a black substance mixed with musk. Obviously here it refers to the container or a case of perfume.

[^3578]: This shows that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) liked perfume very much. It is commendable to use perfume by the Muslims.

[^3579]: The honour of hair is its combing and setting it right. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) disliked dishevelled hair.

[^3580]: The woman asked about the hair colour and dyeing hands with henna. Women are allowed to dye their hair with henna. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like it personally for its bad smell. But henna is not a perfume; it is a dye.

[^3581]: This shows that women should dye their hands with henna to distinguish their hands from those of men. Men are not allowed to dye their hands with henna.
woman's hand. She said: No, a woman. He said: If you were a woman, you would make a difference to your nails, meaning with henna.3582

Chapter 1554

ADDING FALSE HAIR

(4155) Ḥumaid b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān said that he heard Mu‘āwiyyah b. Abi Sufyān say during the Hajj when he was on the pulpit and took a lock of hair which was in the hand of the guard, saying: O people of Medina, where are your scholars? I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbidding such a thing as this and he said: The children of Isrā‘il perished when their women practised it.3583

(4156) ‘Abd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) cursed the woman who adds some false hair and the woman who asks for it, the woman who tattoos and the woman who asks for it.3584

(4157) ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) said: Allah has cursed the women who tattoo and the women who have themselves tattooed, the women who add false hair (according to the version of Muḥammad b. ‘Īsā) and the women who pluck hairs from their faces (according to the version of ‘Uthmān). The agreed version then goes: The women who make spaces between their teeth for beauty, changing what Allah has created. When a woman of Banū Asad called Umm Ya‘qūb, who read the Qur’ān (according to the version of ‘Uthmān) heard it, she came to him (according to the agreed version) and said: I have heard that you have cursed the women who tattoo, those who have themselves tattooed, those who add false hair (according to the version of Muḥammad), those who pluck hairs from their faces, and those who make spaces between their teeth (according to the agreed version), for changing what Allah has created (according to the version of ‘Uthmān). He said: Why should I not curse those whom the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had cursed and those who were mentioned in Allah’s Book? She said: I have read it from cover to cover and have not found it. He said: I swear by Allah, if you had read it, you would have found it. He then read: What the Apostle has brought you accept, and what he has forbidden you refrain from it.3585 She said: I find some of these things in your wife.

3582. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not touch the hands of women while accepting the oath of allegiance. He only saw the hand of the woman and asked her to dye it with henna.
3583. This shows that adding the hair of another person, whether false or genuine, is forbidden. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) cursed the women who added false hair to their hair.
3584. Tattooing is also unlawful like adding false hair. The women who tattoo and the women who have themselves tattooed have been cursed.
3585. Qur’ān, lix. 7.
He said: Enter (the house) and see. She said: I then entered (the house) and came out. He asked: What did you see? She said: I did not see (anything). He said: Had it been so, she would not have been with us.\textsuperscript{3586} This is according to the version of 'Uthmān.

(4158) Ibn 'Abbās said: The woman who supplies false hair and the one who asks for it, the woman who pulls out hair for other people and the woman who depilates herself, the woman who tattoos and the one who has it done when there is no disease to justify it have been cursed.

Abū Dawūd said: \textit{Wāṣīlah} means the woman who adds false hair to the hair of women; \textit{mustawṣīlah} means the one who asks for adding the hair to her hair; \textit{namīṣah} means a woman who plucks hair from the brow until she makes it then; \textit{mutanām-miṣah} means the woman who depilates herself; \textit{wāṣīmah} is a woman who tattoos in the face with antimony or ink; \textit{mustawṣīmah} is a woman with whom it is done.

(4159) Sa'īd b. Jubair said: There is no harm in fastening the hair with silk or woollen threads.

Abū Dawūd said: It appears that he held the view that what is prohibited is the adding of the hair of women.

Abū Dawūd said: Ahmad (b. Ḥanbal) used to say: There is no harm in tying the hair with silk or woollen threads.

\textit{Chapter 1555}

\textbf{RETURN OF PERFUME}

(4160) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone is presented some perfume, he should not return it, for it is a thing of good fragrance and light to bear.\textsuperscript{3587}

\textit{Chapter 1556}

\textbf{ON A WOMAN WHO USES PERFUME WHEN SHE GOES OUT}

(4161) Abū Mūsā reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If a woman uses perfume and passes the people so that they may get its odour, she is so-

\textsuperscript{3586} This shows that adding false hair, tattooing, making space between teeth for beauty and plucking hair from the face—all are forbidden in Islam.

\textsuperscript{3587} It is commendable to accept perfume when offered by someone. It should not be returned or rejected for it bears good fragrance and is also light for carrying.
and-so, meaning severe remarks.3588

(4162) Abū Hurairah said that a woman met him and he found the odour of perfume in her. Her clothes were fluttering in the air. He said: O maid-servant of the Almighty, are you coming from the mosque? She replied: Yes. He said: For it did you use perfume? She replied: Yes. He said: I heard my beloved Abū al-Qāsim (may peace be upon him) say: The prayer of a woman who uses perfume for this mosque is not accepted until she returns and takes a bath like that of sexual defilement3389 (perfectly).

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-‘īfār means dust.

(4163) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If a woman fumigates herself with perfume, she must not attend the night prayer with us.

Ibn Nufail said: ‘Ishā’ means night prayer.

Chapter 1557

USE OF KHALUQ3590 BY MEN

(4164) ‘Ammār-b. Yāsir said: I came to my family at night (after a journey) with my hands chapped and they perfumed me with saffron. In the morning I went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and gave him a greeting, but he did not respond to me nor did he welcome me. He said: Go away and wash this off yourself. I then went away and washed it off me. I came to him but there remained a spot of it on me. I give him a greeting, but he did not respond to me nor did he welcome me. He said: Go away and wash it off yourself. I then went away and washed it off me. I then came and gave him a greeting. He responded to me and welcomed me, saying: The angels do not attend the funeral of an unbeliever bringing good to it, nor a man who smears himself with saffron,3591 nor a man who is sexually defiled. He said: He permitted the man who is sexually defiled to perform ablution when he sleeps, eats or

3588 This tradition shows that women should not use the perfume whose odour spreads widely so that the people are attracted by it.

3589 This shows that a woman should not go to the mosque with perfume. If she goes, she must remove it.

3590. Khaluq. It is a kind of perfume composed of saffron and other ingredients. It is generally used by women. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade men to use it. Some traditions allow its use. But they seem to have been abrogated by the traditions which prohibited it.

3591. The perfume called ‘Khaluq is composed of saffron. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade men to use saffron, for it is a perfume peculiar to women.
(4165) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Ammār b. Yāsir through a different chain of narrators. This version has: ‘Ammār said: I used *khalaq*. The first version is more perfect; it mentioned “taking a bath”. Ibn Juraij said: I said to ‘Umar (a transmitter): They might be wearing *thārīm* (robe of pilgrim)? He replied: No, they were residents.3593

(4166) Al-Rabī‘ b. Anas, quoting his two grandfathers, said: We heard Abū Mūsā say: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Allah does not accept3594 the prayer of a man who has any *khalaq* (perfume composed of saffron) on his body.3595

Abū Dāwūd said: His grandfathers were Zaid and Ziyād.

(4167) Anas said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade men to use saffron.3596 Ismā‘il’s version has: “(forbade) man to use saffron”

(4168) ‘Ammār b. Yāsir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The angels do not come near three: the dead body of the unbeliever, one who smears himself with *khalaq*, and the one who is sexually defiled except that he performs ablution.

(4169) Al-Wālib b. ‘Uqba said: When the Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) conquered Mecca, the people of Mecca began to bring their boys and he would invoke a blessing on them and rub their heads. I was brought, but as I had been perfumed with *khalaq*, he did not touch me because of the *khalaq*.3598

(4170) Anas b. Mālik said: A man came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and he had the mark of yellowness (of saffron). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) rarely mentioned a thing which he disliked before a man. When he went away, he said: Would that you tell this man that he should wash this off him.

3592. A man who is sexually defiled should wash himself immediately. If he cannot do so for some valid reason, he should perform ablution.

3593. Ibn Juraij meant that the use of *khalaq* might be prohibited owing to *thārīm*. But ‘Umar refuted this presumption.

3594. Meaning that his prayer is not as perfect as ought to be because of the use of *khalaq*.

3595. This does not mean that the duty of prayer is not performed by him. It means that he performed the duty, but was not rewarded for it. Some scholars are of opinion that this is a threat for using *khalaq*. By using *khalaq* a man resembles women.

3596. This applies to their clothing and bodies, as it is a female custom. According to Abū Ḥanīfah and al-Shaf‘i, the use of saffron by men on their bodies and clothes is forbidden. According to Mālik, its use on body is forbidden but not on clothes (‘Āwn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 130).

3597. The angels here refer to the angels of mercy, not the angels of punishment or those who keep the record of man’s actions.

3598. As *khalaq* was the perfume of women, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not approve of its use by men. He did not even touch a boy who was perfumed with *khalaq*.3599
EXTENT TO WHICH THE HAIR SHOULD HANG

(4171) Al-Barāʾ said: I did not see any man with locks hanging down to shoulders in a red robe more beautiful than the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). Muḥammad b. Sulaimān added: He had hair which touched his shoulders.3599

Abū Dāwūd said: Isrāʾīl also transmitted it in a similar way from Abū Ishaq saying: "(his hair) touched his shoulders". Shuʿbah said: (His hair) reached the lobes of his ears.

(4172) Al-Barāʾ said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had hair which reached the lobes of his ears.

(4173) Anas said: The hair of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) were up to the lobes of his ears.

(4174) Anas b. Mālik said: The hair of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) were halfway down his ears.

(4175) ‘Āʾishah said: The hair of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) were above wafrah and below jummah.3600

PARTING OF THE HAIR

(4176) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The people of the Book used to let their hair hang down, and the polytheists used to part their hair. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) liked to conform with the People of the Book in matters about which he had received no command. Hence the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) let his forelock hang down but afterwards he parted it.3601

(4177) ‘Āʾishah said: When I parted the hair of the Apostle of Allah (may peace

3599 There are three names of the hair in Arabic: jummah which hang down to the shoulders and touch them; wafrah, which reach the lobe of the ear; limmah which hang down as far as ears but do not touch the shoulders. They remain hanging between the ears and shoulders. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) grew the hair of his head variably at various times: sometimes up to the lobes of his ears and sometimes up to his shoulders. It is commendable for men to grow hair up to the lobes of ears and at most hang them up to shoulders. But one should not hang them down the shoulders.

3600 For wafrah and jummah see last footnote (3599).

3601. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) imitated the People of the Book in cases where he did not receive any revelation. Hence he hung down his forelocks. Later on he made a parting from his crown on the basis of revelation or by his own ijtihād.
be upon him) I made a parting from the crown of his head and let his forelock hang between his eyes. \(^{3602}\)

**Chapter 1560**

GROWING LONG HAIR

(4178) Wā’il b. Ḥujr said: I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and I had long hair. When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) saw me, he said: Evil, evil! He said: I then returned and cut them off. I then came to him in the morning. He said (to me): I did not intend to do evil to you. This is much better. \(^{3603}\)

**Chapter 1561**

PLAITING THE HAIR BY A MAN

(4179) Umm Ḥānī said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) came to Mecca and he had four plaits of hair. \(^{3604}\)

**Chapter 1562**

SHAVING THE HEAD

(4180) ‘Abd Allah b. Ja‘far said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave the children of Ja‘far three days’ time to visit them. He then came to visit them, and said: Do not weep over my brother after this day. He said: Call to me the children of my brother. We were brought to him as if we were chicken. He said: Call a barber to me. He then ordered and our heads were shaved. \(^{3605}\)

---

3602. It is commendable to part the hair in the middle of the head.
3603. This shows that growing long hair is disapproved. One should hang them as far as the shoulders and not beyond that.
3604. This tradition indicates that a man is allowed to have plaits of hair, if necessary.
3605. After the death of Ja‘far, the mother of his children could not look after their hair. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked the barber to shave their heads. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) disliked ugliness and dishevelled hair. One should either comb the hair or shave them.
Chapter 1563
LOCK OF HAIR

(4181) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade *qaza*. *Qaza* means having part of a boy’s head shaved and leaving part unshaven.  

(4182) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade *qazu*, which means that the head of a boy is shaved and a lock is left.

(4183) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) saw a boy with part of his head shaved and part left unshaven. He forbade them to do that, saying: Shave it all or leave it all.

Chapter 1564
CONCESSION FOR KEEPING LOCK OF HAIR

(4184) Anas b. Malik said: I had a hanging lock of hair. My mother said to me: I shall not cut it, for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to stretch it out and hold it.  

(4185) Al-Ḥajjāj b. Hassān said: We entered upon Anas b. Malik. My sister al-Mughlrāh said: You were a boy in those days and you had two locks of hair. He (Anas) rubbed your head and invoked blessing on you. He said: Shave them (i.e. the locks) or clip them, for this is the fashion of the Jews.

Chapter 1565
CLIPPING THE MOUSTACHES

(4186) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The inborn characteristics of man are five. Another version says: Five things are of inborn characteristics of man: circumcision, shaving the pubes, plucking out hair

3606. This shows that shaving a part of the head and leaving a part is forbidden. It is also prohibited to leave the locks of hair after shaving a part of the head.

3607. This shows that keeping a lock of hair is permissible when the head is not shaved. It is prohibited to keep a lock if a part of the head is shaved.

3608. Anas b. Malik forbade to keep locks for its resemblance with the Jews. But the former tradition shows that he had himself a lock of hair. It may be explained by saying that keeping one lock of hair is permissible and not more.
Chapt. 1566

PLUCKING OUT GREY HAIR

(4190) 'Amr b. Shu'aib, on his father's authority, told that his grandfather report-

3609. The Arabic word is *fīrāh*. It means that a man likes these things by nature. There is no need to teach him to practise them. These five characteristics are innate in man for they are necessary for cleanliness. No cleanliness is perfect without these things:

1. **Circumcision.** It is necessary for removing the dirt and drops of urine. It also enhances pleasure in sexual intercourse. Circumcision is recommended and not obligatory.

2. **Shaving the pubes.** The pubes should be cleaned within forty days. It is a sin if a man does not shave them within this period. The hair may be shaved or cleaned by hair removing paste.

3. **Plucking out hair under the armpits.** These hair should be removed within forty days with a razor or a paste.

4. **Paring the nails.** It is a part of cleanliness. Nails collect dirt under them. Hence a Muslim should clip his nails regularly.

5. **Clipping the moustaches.** One may shave or clip the moustaches. There is a difference of opinion among scholars on shaving or clipping them. Some Companions clipped them and others shaved them.

3610. It is commendable to clip the moustaches and grow the beard to the extent of one handful. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to take something off the side and the bottom of his beard. Ibn 'Umar used to hold his beard handful and cut it beyond that during *Hajj*.

3611. A man is not to let more than forty days elapse between the times he clips the moustaches, pares the nails, plucks out hair under the armpits, and shaves the pubes. The time-limit of forty days is maximum. It means that one should clean these things and remove the hair within forty days. Some traditions indicate that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to pare nails and clip moustaches every week, pluck out the hair under the armpits after forty days and shave the pubes after twenty days. It is commendable to clean these things every week.
ed the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not pluck out grey hair. If any believer grows a grey hair in Islam, he will have light on the Day of Resurrection. (This is Sufyan’s version.) Yahya’s version says: Allah will record on his behalf a good deed for it, and will blot out a sin for it.3612

Chapter 1567

HAIR DYE

(4191) Abu Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Jews and Christians do not dye (their beards), so act differently from them.3613

(4192) Jabir b. ‘Abd Allah said: Abu Quhafah3614 was brought on the day of the conquest of Mecca with head and beard white like hyssop. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Change this with something, but avoid black.3615

(4193) Abu Dharr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The best things with which grey hair are changed are henna and katam.3616

(4194) Abu Rimthah said: I went with my father to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He had locks hanging down as far as the lobes of the ears stained with henna, and he was wearing two green garments.

(4195) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abu Rimthah through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: My father said to him (the Prophet): Show me what is on your back, for I am a physician. He (the Prophet) said: You are only a soother. Its physician is He Who has created it.3617

(4196) Abu Rimthah said: I and my father came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said to a man or to my father: Who is this? He replied: He is my

3612. This shows that a Muslim should not pluck out grey hair, for they are a sign of mercy from Allah.
3613. It is commendable to dye beard with yellow or red colour and one should avoid colouring it with black dye. Women should also avoid dyeing their hair black.
3614. Abu Bakr’s father.
3615. This shows that dyeing hair with black dye is forbidden. But its use by women is disputed.
3616. Katam. These are the leaves of a tree (mimosa flava). It grows in the Yemen. This dye applied with henna to the hair is said to preserve its original colour. Its colour is black with the touch of redness. Henna and katam are the best things used for dyeing hair.
3617. This refers to the “Seal of Prophethood” that was on the back of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
son. He said: Do not commit a crime on him. He had stained his beard with henna.

(4197) Thābit said that Anas was asked about the hair-dye of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He replied: He did not dye his hair, but Abū Bakr and ‘Umar dyed their hair.

Chapter 1568
YELLOW DYE

(4198) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to wear tanned leather sandals and dye his beard yellow with wars and saffron.

(4199) Ibn ‘Abbas said: When a man who had dyed himself with henna passed by the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he said: How fine this is! When another man who had died himself with henna and katam passed by, he said: This is better than that. Then another man who had dyed himself with yellow dye, passed by, he said: This is better than all that.

Chapter 1659
BLACK DYE

(4200) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: At the end of time there will be people who will use this black dye like the

3618. The Arabs believed that parents or their children would bear the burden of their crimes. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) told that every man would bear the burden of his actions. No one will be responsible for the actions of another man. He will be responsible for his crime and not his son. So he should avoid committing any crime.

3619. This tradition of Anas contradicts other traditions which indicate that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to dye his hair with saffron, wars and sometimes with henna. It is probable that Anas did not have the knowledge about the dye of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Besides, these traditions are sounder and stronger than this tradition of Anas. Thus there is no contradiction between this tradition and others.

3620. A kind of herb of yellow colour found in the Yemen. It is used for dyeing.

3621. To congregate this tradition with that of Anas it is said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) might not have used dye as a habit regularly. He might have used it to indicate its permissibility. Further, Anas might have seen the Prophet (may peace be upon him) with light dye and prevailing hoary hair. By this he might have understood that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not use dye.
Chapter 1570

USE OF IVORY

(4201) Thawbān, the client of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went on a journey, the last member of his family he saw was Fāṭimah, and the first he visited on his return was Fāṭimah. Once when he returned from an expedition she had hung up a hair-cloth, or a curtain, at her door, and adorned al-Hasan and al-Ḥusain with silver bracelets. So when he arrived, he did not enter. Thinking that he had been prevented from entering by what he had seen, she tore down the curtain, unfastened the bracelets from the boys and cut them off. They went weeping to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and when he had taken them from them, he said: Take this so and so's family, Thawbān. In Medina, these are my family, and I dislike that they enjoy their good things in the present life. Buy Fāṭimah a necklace of 'aṣb, Thawbān, and two ivory bracelets.

3622. This tradition indicates that it is forbidden to use black dye. Some scholars have permitted to use it during jihād (fighting in the path of Allah). Others have allowed women to use it but not allowed men. Women can dye their hands and feet, but it is prohibited for men. It can, however, be used for medical treatment. Some scholars have allowed to use black dye unconditionally. They are: Sa‘d b. Abī Waqqās, ʿUqbah b. ʿĀmir, al-Ḥasan, al-Ḥusain, al-Jarīr and others. They contend that the tradition of Ibn ʿAbbās does not prohibit the use of black dye. It only describes the condition of a people (ʿAwn al-Maḥbūd, IV, 140).

3623. It might mean the tendons of the joints of animals cut into beads, or the teeth or bones of the hippopotamus. The meaning is not clear.

3624. This shows that the use of things made of ivory is permissible.
Chapter 1571

FASHIONING A SEAL IN THE FORM OF A RING

(4202) Anas b. Malik said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) wanted to write to some Persian rulers. He was told that they would not read a letter without a seal in the form of a silver ring on which he engraved “Muḥammad the Apostle of Allah”.

(4203) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Anas through a different chain of narrators. This version as transmitted by ‘Isā b. Yūnus adds: It remained in his hand until he died, in the hand of Abū Bakr until he died, in the hand of ‘Umar until he died, and in the hand of ‘Uthmān. When he was near a well, it fell down in it. He ordered to take it out, but it could not be found.

(4204) Anas said: The signet-ring of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was of silver with an Abyssinian stone.

(4205) Anas said: The signet-ring of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was all of silver as was also its stone.

(4206) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) took a signet-ring of gold, and put the stone next the palm of his hand. He engraved on it “Muḥammad, the Apostle of Allah”. The people then took signet-rings of gold. When he saw that they had taken them (like his ring) he threw it away and said: I shall never wear it. He then fashioned a silver ring and engraved on it “Muḥammad, the Apostle of Allah”. Then Abū Bakr wore it after him, then ‘Umar wore it after Abū Bakr, and then ‘Uthmān wore it after ‘Umar till it fell down in a well called Arls.

3625. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) fashioned the signet-ring in 6 A. H. The engraving on the seal was in three lines, “Muḥammad,” being one, “Apostle,” another, and “of Allah” another. This remained with Abū Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthmān after him. During the reign of ‘Uthmān it fell down in a well, and was not found.

3626. It means that the maker of this stone was an Abyssinian or it was fashioned on the pattern of Abyssinian ring-stones. The next tradition shows that the stone of the ring of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was of silver.

3627. An orchard near the mosque of Qubā’ near Medina.
Abū Dāwūd said: The people did not disagree on ‘Uthmān till the signet-ring fell down from his hand.

(4207) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Umar through a different chain of narrators from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version adds: He engraved on it “Muḥammad, the Apostle of Allah,” and said: No one must engrave anything in the manner of this signet-ring of mine. He then transmitted the rest of the tradition.

(4208) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Umar through a different chain of narrators from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version adds: They searched for it but could not find it. ‘Uthmān then fashioned a signet-ring and engraved on it “Muḥammad, the Apostle of Allah”. He used to wear it or stamp with it.3628

Chapter 1572

ABANDONMENT OF WEARING SIGNET-RINGS

(4209) Anas b. Mālik said that he saw a silver signet-ring on the hand of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) only for a day. The people then fashioned and wore (rings). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then threw it away and the people also threw (them). Abū Dāwūd said: Ziyād b. Sa‘d, Shu‘aib and Ibn Musāfir transmitted it from al-Zuhri. ‘Alī said in their versions: “of silver”.3629

Chapter 1573

SIGNET-RING OF GOLD

(4210) Ibn Mas‘ūd said: The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) disliked ten things: Yellow colouring, meaning khalaq, dyeing grey3630 hair, trailing the

3628. The narrator is doubtful.

3629. The doctors of traditions are agreed that it is a misunderstanding on the part of al-Zuhri. The ring which the Prophet (may peace be upon him) threw was of gold and not of silver. Besides, some scholars have reconciled these traditions. They explain that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) wore the silver ring only for one day to indicate its permissibility and then he threw it away. So the people also threw the silver rings. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) wanted to keep it for himself for stamping and did not want the people to wear the rings, as they had no need of stamping. Hence Abū Dāwūd captioned this chapter alluding that it is better not to wear rings. One should not wear ring without necessity.

3630. This means dyeing with black colour. Dyeing with yellow colour is allowed.
lower garment, wearing a gold signet-ring, a woman decking herself before people who are not within the prohibited degrees, throwing\(^{3631}\) dice, using spells, except with the *Mu'awwadhaṭ*,\(^{3632}\) wearing amulets,\(^{3633}\) withdrawing the penis before the semen is discharged, in the case of a woman who is wife or not a wife,\(^{3634}\) and having intercourse with a woman who is suckling a child; but he did not declare them to be prohibited.

Abū Dāwūd said: Only the transmitters of Baṣrah have transmitted this tradition.

**Chapter 1574**

**SIGNET-RING OF IRON**

(4211) Buraidah said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and he was wearing a signet-ring of yellow copper. He said to him: How is it that I notice the odour of idols in you? So he threw it away, and came wearing an iron\(^{3635}\) signet-ring. He (the Prophet) asked: What is it that I see you wearing the adornment of the inhabitants of Hell? So he threw it away. He asked: Apostle of Allah, what material must I use? He said: Make it of silver, but do not weigh it as much as a mithqāl,\(^{3636}\)

The narrator Muhammad did not say: “‘Abd Allah b. Muslim,” and al-Ḥasan did not say: “al-Sulāmī al-Marwāzī”.\(^{3637}\)

(4212) Iyās b. al Ḥārith b. al-Mu’āqiqāb quoting his grandfather said and his grandfather from his mother’s side was Abū Dhubāb: The signet-ring of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was of iron polished with silver. Sometimes it remained in my possession. Al-Mu’āqīqāb was in charge of the signet-ring of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).\(^{3638}\)

(4213) ‘Alī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: Say: O Allah, guide me, and set me right. Remember by guidance (*ḥidāyah*) the showing of the straight path, and remember by setting right (*sādād*) the setting right of an arrow.\(^{3639}\)

3631. The game of throwing dice is forbidden.

3632. The last two sūrahs of the Qur’ān are known as *al-Mu‘awwadhātān* It means that spell is lawful if the last sūrahs of the Qur’ān are recited or some other verse of the Qur’ān.

3633. If the name of Allah or some sūrah of the Qur’ān or its verse is written in the amulet it is lawful.

3634. This is called *‘asl*. It is not permissible without the permission of one’s wife. If she permits, it is allowed. One can withdraw penis if one has intercourse with one’s slave-girl.

3635. This shows that the use of iron and copper rings is disapproved.

3636. It is better if a ring weighs less than one mithqāl of silver.

3637. The narrator Muhammad b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz did not mention the name ‘Abd Allah b. Muslim, and al-Ḥasan did not mention the surname al-Sulāmī al-Marwāzī.

3638. This shows that it is permissible to wear the iron ring if it is polished with silver.
Then pointing to the middle finger and the one next to it, he said: He forbade me to wear a signet-ring on this finger of mine or on this (‘Āṣim was doubtful). He forbade me to wear qassiyah (qasiiygarments) and mīṭarah. Abū Burdah said: We asked ‘All: What is qassiyah? He said: These are garments imported to us from Syria or Egypt. They are striped and marked like citrons. And mīṭarah was a thing made by women for their husbands.

Chapter 1575

WEARING THE SIGNET-RING ON THE RIGHT OR LEFT HAND

(4214) ‘Ali reported from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Sharīk said: Abū Salamah b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān told me that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to wear the signet-ring on his right hand.3639

(4215) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to wear the signet-ring on his left hand, and put its stone next the palm of his hand.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn Ishāq and Usāmah b. Zaid transmitted from Nāfi’: “on his right hand”.3640

(4216) Nāfi’ said that Ibn ‘Umar used to wear his signet-ring on his left hand.3641

(4217) Muḥammad b. Ishāq said: I saw al-Ṣalt b. ‘Abd Allah b. Nawfal b. ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib wearing the signet-ring on his right small finger. I asked: What is this? He replied: I saw Ibn ‘Abbās wearing his ring in this manner. He put its stone towards the upper part of his palm.3642 Ibn ‘Abbās also mentioned that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to wear his signet-ring in this manner.

Chapter 1576

WEARING LITTLE TINKLING BELLS ON LEGS

(4218) Ibn al-Zubair told that a woman client of theirs took al-Zubair’s daughter to ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb wearing bells on her legs. ‘Umar cut them off and said that he had heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: There is a devil

3639. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars on this point. According to Mālik, it is commendable to wear a ring on the left hand. He disapproved of wearing it on the right hand. The other scholars hold that it is preferable to wear signet-ring on the right hand.

3640. The number of narrators who mention “on his right hand” is more than those who mention “on his left hand.” The tradition indicating left hand has been narrated by a few people.

3641. This shows that one has the choice to wear the signet-ring on the right or left hand. There is no harm in wearing it on any hand.

3642. It is commendable to put the stone next the palm of the hand.
(4219) Bunānah, female client of ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ḥayyān al-Anṣārī, told that when she was with ‘Ā’ishah a girl wearing little tinkling bells was brought in to her. She ordered that they were not to bring her in where she was unless they cut off her little bells. She said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: The angels do not enter a house in which there is a bell.

Chapter 1577

FASTENING TEETH WITH GOLD

(4220) ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Tarafah said that his grandfather ‘Arfajah b. Aṣ’ad who had his nose cut off at the battle of al-Kīlāb3644 got a silver nose, but it developed a stench, so the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered him to get a gold nose.2645

(4221) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Arfajah b. Aṣ’ad through a different chain to the same effect. Yazīd said: I asked Abū al-Ashhab: Did ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Tarafah meet his grandfather ‘Arfajah? He replied: Yes.

(4222) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Arfajah through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

Chapter 1578

WEARING GOLD BY WOMEN

(4223) ‘Ā’ishah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) got some ornaments presented by Negus as a gift to him. They contained a gold ring with an Abyssinian stone. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) turning his attention from it took it by means of a stick or his finger, then called Umāmah, daughter of Abu’l-‘Āṣ, and daughter of his daughter Zainab, and said: Wear it, my dear daughter.3646

(4224) Abū Ḥurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone wants to put a ring of fire on one he loves, let him put a gold ring on him; if anyone wants to put a necklace of fire on one he loves, let him put a gold

3643. It is forbidden to put bells on one’s legs or on the neck of animals.
3644. This was a battle which took place ten years before the Hijrāh. In this battle Banū Tamīm were engaged. These were two battles.
3645. This shows that the use of small quantity of gold is permissible for men when it is necessary for them, like getting a nose and fastening teeth.
3646. This shows that wearing gold is permissible for women.
necklace on him, and if anyone wants to put a bracelet of fire on one he loves let him put a gold bracelet on him. Keep to silver and amuse yourselves with it.\textsuperscript{3647}

(4225) A sister of Hudhaifah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: You womenfolk, have in silver something with which you adorn yourselves. I assure you that any woman of you who adorns herself with gold which she displays will be punished for it.\textsuperscript{3648}

(4226) Asmā', daughter of Yazīd, reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Any woman who wears a gold necklace will have a similar one of fire put on her neck on the Day of Resurrection, and any woman who puts a gold earring in her ear will have a similar one of fire put in her ear on the Day of Resurrection.\textsuperscript{3649}

(4227) Muʿāwiyyah b. Abī Sufyān said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade to ride on panther skins and to wear gold except a little.\textsuperscript{3650}

Abū Dāwūd said: The narrator Abū Qilābah did not meet Muʿāwiyyah.

\textsuperscript{3647} Here "one he loves" means one's son and not wife and daughter. Many other traditions allow women to wear gold. It is forbidden to use gold and silver pots. But men are allowed to wear silver.

\textsuperscript{3648} Such traditions as forbid women to wear gold have been abrogated.

\textsuperscript{3649} This tradition has been abrogated.

\textsuperscript{3650} The use of gold in a little quantity is permissible for men in case of necessity.
XXX. KITĀB AL-FITAN\textsuperscript{3651} WA AL-MALĀHIM\textsuperscript{3652}

[ BOOK OF TRIALS AND FIERCE BATTLES ]

\textit{Chapter 1579}

\textit{FITAN AND THEIR PREDICTIONS}

(4228) Hudhaifah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) stood among us (to give us an address) and he left out nothing that would happen up to the last hour without telling of it. Some remembered it and some forgot, and these Companions of his\textsuperscript{3653} have known it. When something of it which I have forgotten happens, I remember it, just as a man remembers another's face when he is away and recognises him when he sees him.\textsuperscript{3654}

(4229) 'Abd Allah (b. Mas'ūd) reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Four (majestic) trials (\textit{fitan})\textsuperscript{3655} will take place among this community, and in their end there will be destruction.

(4230) 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar said: When we were sitting with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), he mentioned periods of trial (\textit{fitan}), mentioning many of them, and when he mentioned the one when people should keep to their

3651. \textit{Fitān} is plural of \textit{fitnah}. It has various meanings, e.g. temptation, seduction, discord, commotion, civil war, testing, trial, impiety and unbelief. At the end of time the Muslim community will be put to test by a number of calamities predicted by the Prophet (may peace be upon him). These trials will be of divergent nature. The Antichrist and other forces will try to lead the Muslims astray. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked the Muslims to keep to the right path, and may not be misled.

3652. \textit{Malāhim} is plural of \textit{malhamah}. It means fierce battles that will take place towards the end of the world. These wars will be waged between Muslims and their enemies. It is also applied to civil wars. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) has predicted about all these wars.

3653. Another version has: “these companions of mine”.

3654. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) made predictions about many events. Many Companions, and Hudhaifah in particular, remembered them. When these incidents took place, they remembered that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had predicted them.

3655. Many incidents will happen before the Day of Resurrection. Here the reference is to the most important events.

1177
houses. some asked him: Apostle of Allah, what is the trial (fitnah) of keeping to the houses? He replied: It will be flight and plunder. Then will come a testing which is pleasing. Its murkiness is due to the fact that it is raised by a man from the people of my house who will assert that he belongs to me, whereas he does not, for my friends are only the God-fearing. Then the people will unite under a man who will be like a hip-bone on a rib. Then there will be the little black trial which will leave none of this community without giving him a slap and when people say that it is finished, it will be extended. During it a man will be a believer in the morning and an infidel in the evening, so that the people will be in two camps: the camp of faith which will contain no hypocrisy, and the camp of hypocrisy which will contain no faith. When that happens, expect the Antichrist (Dajjāl) that day or the next.

(4231) Hudhaifah b. al-Yamān said: I swear by Allah, I do not know whether my companions have forgotten or have pretended to forget. I swear by Allah that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not omit a leader of a wrong belief (fitnah)—up to the end of the world—whose followers reach the number of three hundred and upwards but he mentioned to us his name, his father’s name and the name of his tribe.

(4232) Subai’ b. Khālid said: I came to Kūfah at the time when Tustar was conquered. I took some mules from it. When I entered the mosque (of Kūfah), I found there some people of moderate stature, and among them was a man whom you could recognise when you saw him that he was from the people of Hijāz. I asked: Who is he? The people frowned at me and said: Do you not recognise him? This is Hudhaifah b. al-Yamān, the Companion of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). Then Hudhaifah said: People used to ask the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) about good, and I used to ask him about evil. Then the people gazed at him with their eyes. He said: I know the reason why you dislike it. I then asked: Apostle of Allah, will there be an evil as it was before, after this good which Allah has bestowed on us? He replied: Yes. I asked: Wherein does the protection from it lie? He replied: In the sword. I asked: Apostle of Allah, what will then happen? He replied: If Allah has in the earth a caliph who flays your back and takes your property, obey him otherwise die holding on to the stump of a tree. I asked: What will

3656. This is a metaphor indicating instability.
3657. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) foretold the particulars and detailed account of those leaders who would create commotion among the community and pervert the Muslims. He had done this out of kindness to and sympathy with them.
3658. The name of a place.
3659. This shows that Muslims should obey the caliph in all circumstances, particularly in the time of commotion and disunity.
come next? He replied: Then the Antichrist (Dajjāl) will come forth accompanied by a river and fire. He who falls into his fire will certainly get his reward, and have his load taken off him, but he who falls into his river will have his load retained and his reward taken off him. I then asked: What will come next? He said: The Last Hour will come.

(4233) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Khālid b. Khālid al-Yashkūrī through a different chain of narrators. This version has: I (Hudhaifah) asked: Will any be spared after the use of the sword? He replied: There will be a remnant with specks in its eye and an illusory truce.3660 He then transmitted the rest of the tradition. Qatādah applied this to the apostasy during the Caliphate of Abū Bakr.

The word ṣaqdha (sing. qadhan) means specks, ḥudnāh means truce and ḍakhān means malice.

(4234) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted through a different chain of narrators by Naṣr b. ʿĀṣim al-Laithī who said: We came to al-Yashkūrī with a group of the people of Banū Laith. He asked: Who are these people? We replied: Banū Laith. We have come to you to ask you about the tradition of Hudhaifah. He then mentioned the tradition and said: I asked: Apostle of Allah, will there be evil after this good? He replied: There will be trial (fitnah) and evil. I asked: Apostle of Allah, will there be good after this evil? He replied: Learn the Book of Allah, Hudhaifah, and adhere to its contents. He said it three times. I asked: Apostle of Allah, will there be good after this evil? He replied: An illusory truce and a community with specks in its eye. I asked: Apostle of Allah, what do you mean by an illusory community? He replied: The hearts of the people will not return to their former condition. I asked: Apostle of Allah, will there be evil after this good? He replied: There will be wrong belief which will blind and deafen men to the truth3661 in which there will be summoners at the gates of Hell. If you, Hudhaifah, die adhering to a stump, it will be better for you than following any of them.3662

(4235) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Hudhaifah through a different chain of narrators from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This

3660. It means that people will survive with evil hearts and will remain united externally but not internally. They will be evil and disunited at their hearts. They will expose themselves as good and united apparently, but actually they will not be so. Literally, it means a truce upon malice, indicating a truce which is liable to be broken at any time.

3661. Fitnah 'amyd' šamma' literally means: "blind and deaf wrong belief".

3662. In the time of commotion, trial and perversion, one should not follow the teachings of those who call to wrong belief. It is better for a man to stick to his house or go to a lonely place and pass his time there instead of following the teaching of the perverts.
version says: He said: If you do not find a caliph in those days, then flee away until you die, even if you die holding on (to a stump of a tree). I asked: What will come next? He replied: If a man wants the mare to bring forth a foal, it will not deliver it till the Last Hour comes.3663

(4236) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If a man takes an oath of allegiance to a leader, and puts his hand on his hand and does it with sincerity of his heart, he should obey him as much as possible. If another man comes and contests him, then behead the other one.3664 The narrator ‘Abd al-Rahmān said: I asked: Have you heard this from the Apostle of Allah? He said: My ears heard it and my heart retained it. I said: Your cousin Mu‘āwiyyah orders us that we should do this and do that. He replied: Obey him in the acts of obedience to Allah, and disobey him in the acts of disobedience to Allah.3665

(4237) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Woe to the Arabs because of evil which has drawn near! He will escape who restrains his hand.3666

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn-‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Muslims will soon be besieged up to Medina, so that their most distant frontier outpost will be Salah.3667

(4238) Al-Zuhri said: Salah is near Khaibar.

(4239) Thawbān reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah, the Exalted, folded for me the earth, or he said (the narrator is doubtful): My Lord folded for me the earth, so much so that I saw its easts and wests (i.e. the extremities). The Kingdom of my community will reach as far as the earth was folded for me. The two treasures, the red and the white,3668 were bestowed on me. I prayed to my Lord that He may not destroy my community by a prevailing famine,

3663. It means that the coming of the Last Hour will be very near after the happening of these events.
3664. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to kill the other claimant to save the community from disunity and disintegration.
3665. This shows that the obedience of people to their rulers is not unconditional. Muslims have been asked to obey their rulers so far as they obey Allah and the Apostle (may peace be upon him) if they command for what contravenes the teachings of Islam, they should not obey those commands. There is sovereignty of law in Islam. People and their rulers stand on the same footing in respect of law. The rulers are meant to execute the law prescribed by Allah.
3666. This may refer to the disagreement between ‘Ali and Mu‘āwiyyah or civil war during the Caliphate of ‘Uthmān.
3667. The name of a place near Khaibar.
3668. The reference is to gold and silver.
and not give their control to an enemy who annihilates them en masse except from among themselves. My Lord said to me: Muhammad, if I make a decision, it is not withdrawn; and I shall not destroy them by a prevailing famine, and I shall not give their control to an enemy, except from among themselves, who exterminates them en masse, even if they are stormed from all sides of the earth; only a section of them will destroy another section, and a section will captivate another section. I am afraid about my community of those leaders who will lead astray. When the sword is used among my people, it will not be withdrawn from them till the Day of Resurrection, and the Last Hour will not come before the tribes of my people attach themselves to the polytheists and tribes of my people worship idols. There will be among my people thirty great liars each of them ascerting that he is (Allah’s) prophet, whereas I am the Seal of the Prophets after whom (me) there will be no prophet; and a section of my people will continue to hold to the truth—(according to Ibn ‘Isa’s version: (will continue to dominate)—the agreed version goes: “and will not be injured by those who oppose them, till Allah’s command comes”.

(4240) Abu Malik al-Ash'ari reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah has protected you from three things: that your Prophet should not invoke a curse on you and you should all perish, that those who follow what is false should not prevail over those who follow the truth, and that you should not all agree in an error.

(4241) ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ud reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The mill of Islam will go round till the year thirty-five, or thirty-six, or thirty-seven; then if they perish, they will have followed the path of those who perished before them, but if their religion is maintained, it will be maintained for seventy years. I asked: Does it mean seventy years which remain or seventy years which are gone by? He replied: It means (seventy years) that are gone by.

3669. It means that an enemy outside the Muslim community may not rule them.
3670. This may refer to religious or political leaders who mislead the people.
3671. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) has been reported to have said: My community will not agree in error. This tradition has been transmitted by al-Tirmidhi and Ibn Mājah. This shows that the whole community will not fall into error. A section which holds fast to truth will always remain among them.
3672. Two explanations have been offered for the mill of Islam: first, prevailing of truth and good conduct and practice of Muslims; secondly, dissensions, battles and perversion.
3673. This period extends to the Caliphate of ‘Uthmān, or battles of Jamal and Sīfīn.
3674. There are two predictions in this tradition. If the Muslims perish owing to their disobedience to Allah, they will be following the path of the past communities. If religion is maintained, it will be maintained for seventy years. These predictions will come true separately and not simultaneously.
Abū Dāwūd said: Those who recorded Khirāsh, the name of a narrator, are wrong. (The correct name is Hīrāsh.)

(4242) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The time will become short, knowledge will be decreased, civil strife (fītān) will appear, niggardliness will be cast into people’s heart, and ḥārij will be prevalent. He was asked: Apostle of Allah! what is it? He replied: Slaughter, slaughter

Chapter 1580
PROHIBITION OF RUNNING TO COMMOTION (FITNAH)

(4243) Abū Bakrah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There will be a period of commotion in which the one who lies will be better than the one who sits, and the one who sits is better than the one who stands, and the one who stands is better than the one who walks, and the one who walks is better than the one who runs (to it). He asked: What do you command me, Apostle of Allah? He replied: He who has camels should remain with his camels, he who has sheep should remain with his sheep, and he who has land should remain with his land. He asked: If anyone has nothing of them, what should he do? He replied: He should go to his sword, strike its edge on a stone, and then escape if he can.

(4244) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Saʿd b. Abī Waqqāṣ from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. This version says: I asked: Apostle of Allah! tell me if someone enters my house and extends his hand to kill me (what should I do?) The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) replied: Be like the two sons of Adam. The narrator Yazīd

3675. Yataqarab al-tamān. There are various explanations of this phrase: The Last Hour will approach near by; the people at the end of the time will reach each other in respect of evil and perversions; the ages of the people will be short; the days and nights will pass quickly so much so that a year will be like a month; there will be little blessing in things; the condition of people in respect of perversion and disobedience to Allah will be nearly the same (‘Awān al-Maḥbūd, IV, 160).

3676. This refers either to the civil war or universal commotion, perversion and trial towards the end of this world. If this happens, the Muslims should keep themselves aloof from it. If corruption pervades the community, they should strive in the path of Allah to eliminate it, and should preach the teachings of Islam. They should take it as their duty. If their efforts prove fruitless, and there is danger that they are themselves involved in it, then they should keep themselves aloof from it. If there is a civil war, the Muslims should try to reconcile between the contesting parties. They may stand by the one which is in the right. It is their duty to arrest the commotion or sit at their homes if their faith is in danger.
(b. Khâlid) then recited the verse: "If thou dost stretch thy hand against me to slay me." 3677

(4245) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn Mas'ûd through a different chain of narrators. Ibn Mas'ûd said: I heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say. He then mentioned a portion of the tradition narrated by Abû Bakrah. This version adds: He (the Prophet) said: All their slain will go to Hell. 3678 I (Wâbişah) asked: When will this happen, Ibn Mas'ûd? He replied: This is the period of turmoil (harj) 3679 when a man will not be safe from his associates. I asked: What do you command me (to do) if I happen to live during that period? He replied: You should restrain your tongue and hand and keep to your house. When 'Uthmân was slain, I recollected this tradition. I then rode (on a camel) and came to Damascus. There I met Khuraim b. Fâtik and mentioned this tradition to him. He swore by Allah, there is no god but He, he had heard it from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), as Ibn Mas'ûd transmitted it to me (Wâbişah).

(4246) Abû Mûsâ al-Ash'ârî reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Before the Last Hour there will be commotions like pieces of a dark night in which a man will be a believer in the morning and an infidel in the evening, or a believer in the evening and infidel in the morning. He who sits during them will be better than he who gets up and he who walks during them is better than he who runs. So break your bows, cut your bowstrings and strike your swords on stones. If people then come in to one of you, let him be like the better of Adam's two sons. 3680

(4247) 'Abd al-Rahmân b. Samurah said: I was holding the hand of Ibn 'Umar on one of the ways of Medina. He suddenly came to a hanging head. 3681 He said:


The reference is to Abel who was killed by his brother Cain. Abel did not resist and was killed oppressed. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) means that it is better to avoid fighting during such a period of time. One may prefer to be killed to fighting and kindling the fire of turmoil and general slaughter. But this does not apply in normal conditions. One should try to protect one's life and fight the enemy. This tradition refers to abnormal conditions.

3678 Those who killed and those who were killed would go to Hell, for they caused to enhance the turmoil and commotion and did not sit in their homes. They must have kept aloof and tried to put an end to this commotion.

3679. Harj, meaning turmoil, rioting and slaughter. This refers to a state of affairs which involves terror, insecurity and massacre of people. In such a state of affairs the people are led to being killed.

3680. This refers to Abel who was killed by his brother Cain as mentioned in the Qur'ânic verses v. 30-31. Abel preferred being killed to resistance. But this tradition refers to abnormal conditions. Normally, one should try to save one's life.

3681. This might be the head of Ibn al-Zubair.
Unhappy is the one who killed him. When he proceeded, he said: I do not consider him but unfortunate. I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If anyone goes to a man of my community in order to kill him, he should say in this way: the one who kills will go to Hell and the one who is killed will go to Paradise.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Thawrī has transmitted it from ‘Awn from ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Sumair or Sumairah; and Laith b. Abī Sulaim transmitted it from ‘Awn from ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Sumairah.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Ḥasan b. ‘All said to me: Abū al-Walīd transmitted this tradition to us from Abū ‘Awanah, and said: It (the name Ibn Samurah) is in my notebook Ibn Sabrah. The people also transmitted it as Samurah and Sumairah. These are wordings of Abū al-Walīd.

(4248) Abū Dharr said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: O Abū Dharr. I replied: At thy service and at thy pleasure, Apostle of Allah. He then mentioned the tradition in which he said: How will you do when there will be death of people (in Medina) and a house will reach the value of a slave (that is, a grave will be sold for a slave). I replied: Allah and His Apostle know best. Or he said: What Allah and His Apostle choose for me. He said: You must show endurance. Or he said: You may endure. He then said to me: How will you do, Abū Dharr, when you see that Ahjār al-Zait will be covered with blood? I replied: What Allah and His Apostle choose for me. He said: You must go to those who are like-minded with you. I asked: Should I not take my sword and put it on my shoulder? He replied: You would then associate yourself with the people. I then asked: What do you order me to do? He replied: You must keep to your house. I asked: (What should I do), if people enter my house and reach me? He replied: If you are afraid the gleam of the sword may dazzle you, put the end of your garment over your face in order that (the one who kills you) may bear the punishment of your sins and his.

Abū Dāwūd said: No one mentioned al-Mush‘ath in the chain of this tradition.

3682. It means that he should do in this way. Another version of this tradition says: He should offer his neck for being struck. The meaning is that, instead of resisting and fighting, he should remain peaceful, for in case he is killed, he will go to Paradise.

3683. This phrase has been explained in various ways: first, the graves will be costly owing to frequency of deaths; secondly, the houses will be cheaper than the slaves as there will be none to live in them: the cost of a house is generally more than that of a slave; thirdly, the people will die in such large numbers that there will be no people in the houses to attend the patients and sick persons except the slaves.

3684. Ahjār al-Zait is the name of a locality in Medina, or it is the name of a place near Medina. It is said to have got the name because of the black stones there which looked as if they had been smeared with oil.
Ch. 1581  ]  Restraining the Tongue During the Period of Commotion.  

except Hammād b. Zaid.

(4249) Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Before you there will be commotions like pieces of a dark night in which a man will be a believer in the morning and an infidel in the evening. He who sits during them will be better than he who gets up, and he who gets up during them is better than he who walks, and he who walks during them is better than he who runs. They (the people) said: What do you order us to do? He replied: Keep to your houses.

(4250) Al-Miqdād b. al-Aswād said: I swear by Allah, I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: The happy man is he who avoids dissensions: happy is the man who avoids dissensions; happy is the man who avoids dissensions; but how fine is the man who is afflicted and shows endurance!3685

Chapter 1581

RESTRaining THE TONGUE DURING THE PERIOD OF COMMOTION

(4251) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There will be civil strife (*fitnah*) which will render people deaf, dumb and blind regarding what is right.3686 Those who contemolate it will be drawn by it, and giving rein to the tongue during it will be like smiting with the sword.3687

(4252) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There will be civil strife which wipe out the Arabs, and their slain will go to Hell. During it the tongue will be more severe than blows of the sword.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Thawrī transmitted it from Laith, from Ṭawūs on the authority of al-A‘jam.3688

3685. It is easy to avoid dissensions, but it is not easy to be afflicted and show endurance. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) praised the one who suffers and endures.

3686. Literally, deaf, dumb and blind civil war. It means that the turmoil in the wake of commotion and civil war will be so severe that no one will listen to the truth, nor will people speak the truth. It will be difficult for them to distinguish between right and wrong.

3687. During the period of commotion and trial the Prophet (may peace be upon him) has ordered the Muslims to keep silence and to keep to their houses. Speech will enhance the turmoil and confusion among the people. It will be more dangerous than the blow of a sword. It is better for a Muslim to remain neutral. To favour one party and to oppose the other will be the cause of fanning the fire.

3688. In the text Ṭawūs transmitted it from a man called Ziyād. The other chain of this tradition mentioned the word al-A‘jam which is the title of Ziyād, instead of a man called Ziyād.
Chapter 1582

CONCESSION FOR LIVING IN THE DESERT DURING THE PERIOD OF COMMOTION AND TRIAL

(4254) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: A Muslim’s best property will soon be sheep which he will take to the tops of the mountains and the places where the rain falls, fleeing with his religion from civil strife (fītān).

Chapter 1583

PROHIBITION OF FIGHTING DURING THE PERIOD OF COMMOTION

(4255) Aḥnaf b. Qais said: I came out with the intention of (participating in) fighting. Abū Bakrah met me and said: Go back, for I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: When two Muslims face each other with their swords, the killer and the slain will go to Hell. He asked: Apostle of Allah, this is the killer (so naturally he should go to Hell), but what is the matter with the slain? He replied: He intended to kill his companion.

(4256) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted briefly by al-Hasan through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

Chapter 1584

GRAVITY OF THE SIN OF KILLING A BELIEVER

(4257) Khalid b. Dihqān said: When we were engaged in the battle of Cons-

3689. Instead of the words “from a man called Ziyād” he said: One who has white ears.

3690. During the civil war and the period of commotion it is advisable to lead a lonely life in a desert keeping away from the turmoil of the civil war. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) laid great stress on neutrality and seclusion during the period of civil strife and general chaos.

3691. This shows that Muslims should avoid taking part in fighting during civil war. The fighting referred to by al-Aḥna fwas the battle of Jamal between ‘Alī and ‘Ā’ishah.
tantinople at Dhuluqlyyah,3692 a man of the people of Palestine, who was one of their nobility and elite and whose rank was known to them, came forward. He was called Hānī b. Kalthūm b. Snarīk al-Kīnāl. He greeted ‘Abd Allah b. Zakariyā who knew his rank. Khālid said to us: ‘Abd Allah b. Abī Zakariyā told us: I heard Umm al-Dardā’ say: I heard Abū al-Dardā’ say: I heard the Apostle of Allāh (may peace be upon him) say: It is hoped that Allāh may forgive every sin, except in the case of one who dies a polytheist, or one who purposely kills a believer. Hānī b. Kalthūm al-Rabī’ then said: I heard Māhmūd b. al-Rabī’ transmitting a tradition from ‘Ubdah b. al-Ṣāmit who transmitted from the Apostle of Allāh (may peace be upon him) who said: If a man kills a believer unjustly,3693 Allāh will not accept his any action or duty, obligatory or supererogatory.3694 Khalid then said to us: Ibn Abī Zakariyā transmitted a tradition to us from Umm al-Dardā’ on the authority of Abū al-Dardā’ from the Apostle of Allāh (may peace be upon him) who said: A believer will continue to go on quickly and well so long as he does not shed unlawful blood; when he sheds unlawful blood, he becomes slow and heavy-footed.3695 A similar tradition has been transmitted by Hānī b. Kalthūm from Māhmūd b. al-Rabī’ on the authority of ‘Ubdah b. al-Ṣāmit from the Apostle of Allāh (may peace be upon him).

(4258) Khalid b. Dihqān said: I asked Yaḥyā b. Yaḥyā al-Ghassānī about the word *i’tabata bi qatlihi* spoken by him (as mentioned in the previous tradition). He said: It means those people who fight during the period of commotion (*fitnah*), and one of them kills (the other people) presuming that he is in the right, so he does not beg pardon of Allāh for that (sin).

Abū Dāwūd said: And he said: The word *fa’tabata* means “he shed blood profusely”

(4259) Zayd b. Thābit said: The verse “If a man kills a believer intentionally, his recompense is Hell to abide therein for ever”3696 was revealed six months after the verse “And those who invoke not with Allāh any other god, nor slay such life as

---

3692. The name of a city in Rome.

3693. This is the translation of *i’tabata* meaning “kills him unjustly and not for any right or retaliation”. Some copies of *Sunan Abū Dāwūd* have the word *iğtabat* meaning “and he is pleased by his killing”

3694. *Sarf wa ‘adl*. There are various meanings of this phrase. The one used above seems to be a suitable meaning here. Repentance or ransom is another meaning.

3695. Intentional homicide of a believer is a grave sin. So long as a man does not kill a believer, he proceeds quickly in doing good works and remains free from the burden of a grave sin. But when he kills a believer unjustly, he is loaded with a heavy burden of a major sin. He is deprived of Allāh’s help to do good works and reaches near destruction in the Hereafter.

3696 Qur’ān, iv. 93.
Allah has made sacred, except for just cause 3697 in Sūrat al-Furqān. 3698

(4260) Sa‘īd b. Jubair said: I asked Ibn ‘Abd as (about the verse relating to intentional homicide in Sūrat al-Nisā‘). He said: When the verse “Those who invoke not with Allah any other god, nor slay such life as Allah has made sacred, except for just cause” was revealed, the polytheists of Mecca said: We have killed the soul prohibited by Allah, invoked another god along with Allah for worship, and committed shameful deeds. So Allah revealed the verse “unless he repents, believes, and works righteous deeds, for Allah will change the evil of such persons into good.” 3700 This is meant for them. As regards the verse “If a man kills a believer intentionally, his recompense is Hell” 3701 he said: If a man knows the commands of Islam and intentionally kills a believer, his repentance will not be accepted. I then mentioned it to Mujāhid. He said: Except the one who is ashamed (of his sin). 3702

(4261) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Sa‘īd b. Jubair from Ibn ‘Abbas through a different chain of narrators. Ibn ‘Abbas said: The verse “Those who invoke not with Allah” 3703 applies to polytheists. He said: About them another verse, “Say: O my servants who have transgressed against their souls” 3704 was also revealed.

(4262) Ibn ‘Abd as said: No other verse has repealed the verse “If a man kills a believer intentionally” 3705

(4263) About the verse “If a man kills a believer intentionally” 3706 Abū Mijlaz said: This is his recompense. If Allah wishes to disregard him, He may do so. 3707

3697. Qur‘ān, v. 68.
3698. It means that verse iv. 93 in Sūrat al-Nisā‘ abrogated verse xxv. 68 in Sūrat al-Furqān. Verse iv. 93 shows that a man who intentionally kills a believer will eternally dwell in Hell. It is remarkable that a believer will not eternally dwell in Hell like unbelievers according to the generally accepted belief of the Ahl al-Sunnah. They interpret this verse by saying that a believer who intentionally kills a believer will dwell in Hell for a long time. After bearing this punishment, he will come out of Hell and enter Paradise.

3699. Qur‘ān, xxv. 68. 3700. Qur‘ān, xxv. 70. 3701. Qur‘ān, iv. 93
3702. This shows that the verse in Sūrat al-Furqān was not abrogated by the verse in Sūrat al-Nisā‘. The former verse was revealed about the polytheists of Mecca who thought that there was no room for the acceptance of their repentance even after embracing Islam. It says that if a polytheist embraces Islam and repents for all his sins, he will be forgiven by Allah and evil deeds will be changed into good works. The latter verse in Sūrat al-Nisā‘ applies to Muslims and indicates the gravity of the sin of killing a believer.

3707. The verse indicates the punishment which he deserves. It means that the sin of killing a believer is so serious that the killer should remain eternally in Hell. But if Allah wills, He may pardon him.
Chapter 1585

THERE IS AN EXPECTATION OF FORGIVENESS AFTER BEING KILLED DURING THE PERIOD OF COMMOTION (FITNAH)

(4264) Sa‘îd b. Zaid said: We were with the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He mentioned civil strife (fitnah) and expressed its gravity. We or the people said: Apostle of Allah, if this happens to us it will destroy us. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: No. It is enough for you that you would be killed.3708 Sa‘îd said: I saw that my brethren were killed.

(4265) Abû Mûsâ reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: This people of mine is one to which mercy is shown. It will have no punishment in the next world, but its punishment in this world will be trials, earthquakes and being killed.3709

3708. The Muslims thought that their faith would be destroyed if they were involved in the civil war. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) told them that the only harm to them would be their slaughter. Their faith would remain safe and they would enter Paradise.

3709. This is an excellence of this community. The past communities were wiped out from the face of the earth by violent punishment from Allah. Moreover, this community will not be punished in the next world. Slaughter, trials and earthquakes will be a sort of warning to the Muslims to reform themselves.
XXXI. KITAB AL-MAHDI
[ BOOK OF THE PROMISED DELIVERER ]

Chapter 1586

(4266) Jābir b. Samurah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The religion will continue to be established till there are twelve caliphs over you, and the whole community will agree on each of them. I then heard from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) some remarks which I could not understand. I asked my father: What is he saying? He said: All of them will belong to Quraish.3711

(4267) Jābir b. Samurah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: This religion will continue to be strong till the time of twelve caliphs. The people then uttered: Allah is most great, and uproared. He then silently spoke a word which I could not understand. So I said to my father: What did he say, father? He said: All of them will belong to Quraish.

(4268) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Jābir b. Samurah through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: When he came back to his home, the Quraish came to him and said: Then what will happen? He said: Then turmoil will prevail.3712

(4269) ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as

3710. It is an article of faith of orthodoxy (Alī al-Sunnah) that the Mahdi (Messiah or the deliverer) will come forth towards the end of this world. After his appearance, Jesus Christ will come down and both will fight against the Antichrist. The Mahdi will establish right and justice in the world and eliminate evil and corruption. He will fight against the enemies of the Muslims who would be victorious. Ibn Khaldūn has criticised the tradition about the appearance of the Mahdi and thought that they are either weak or spurious. This is not correct. Some are sound, others are weak and a few are spurious. Ibn Khaldūn is wrong in his criticism. A consensus (ijma‘) of the Muslims has been held on the appearance of the Mahdi towards the end of the time. There seems no reason to falsify all the traditions on the subject (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 170).

3711. This tradition refers to just and pious Caliphs and not any ruler of Muslims. The number of such Caliphs as predicted in this tradition may be completed by the end of this world. There may be twelve just and righteous Caliphs during the whole span of life of the community.

3712. The Arabic word is harj meaning turmoil or rioting.
saying: If only one day of this world remained, Allah would lengthen that day (according to the version of Zā‘īdah), till He raised up in it a man who belongs to me or to my family whose father’s name is the same as my father’s, who will fill the earth with equity and justice as it has been filled with oppression and tyranny (according to the version of Fīr). Sufyān’s version says: The world will not pass away before the Arabs are ruled by a man of my family whose name will be the same as mine.3713

Abū Dāwūd said: The version of ‘Umar and Abū Bakr is the same as that of Sufyān.

(4270) ‘All reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If only one day of this time (world) remained, Allah would raise up a man from my family who would fill this earth with justice as it has been filled with oppression.3714

(4271) Umm Salamah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Mahdi will be of my family, of the descendants of Fātimah.


(4272) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Mahdi will be of my stock, and will have a broad forehead and a prominent nose. He will fill the earth with equity and justice as it was filled with oppression and tyranny, and he will rule for seven years.

(4273) Umm Salamah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Disagreement will occur at the death of a caliph and a man of the people of Medina will come forth flying to Mecca. Some of the people of Mecca will come to him, bring him out against his will and swear allegiance to him between the Corner and the Maqām.3715 An expeditionary force will then be sent against him from Syria but will be swallowed up in the desert between Mecca and Medina, and when the people see that, the eminent saints3717 of Syria and the best people of Iraq will come to him and swear allegiance to him between the Corner and the Maqām. Then will arise a man of Quraish whose maternal uncles belong to Kalb and sent against them an expeditionary force which will be overcome by them, and that is the expedition of Kalb. Disappointed is the one who does not receive the booty of Kalb. He will divide the property, and will govern the people by the Sunnah of their Prophet (may peace be

3713. This reference is to the advent of the Mahdi
3714. This tradition predicts the advent of the Mahdi.
3715. Rukh The corner of the Ka’bah containing the Black Stone.
3716. Maqām. It means Maqām Ibrāhīm, a place near the Ka’bah.
3717. The word is ‘abdāl. These are pious men whose number never diminishes, as each one is replaced when he dies. ‘Abdāl is the plural of ‘budāl which literally means a substitute.
upon him) and establish Islam in the earth. He will remain seven years, then die, and the Muslims will pray over him.

Abū Dāwūd said: Some transmitted from Hishām "nine years" and some "seven years".

(4274) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Qatādah through a different chain of narrators. This version has: "nine years".3718

Abū Dāwūd said: The other narrators mentioned "nine years" from Hishām except Mu‘ādh.

(4275) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Umm Salamah from the Prophet (peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. The tradition of Mu‘ādh is more perfect.

(4276) Umm‘Salamah reported the Prophet (peace be upon him) as saying about the swallowing up of an army by the earth. I asked: How will a man who comes against his will (be swallowed up by the earth), Apostle of Allah? He replied: All will be swallowed up, but each will be raised according to his intention on the Day of Resurrection.3719

Abū Dāwūd said: Abū Ishāq told that ‘All looked at his son al-Ḥasan and said: This son of mine is a sayyid (chief) as named by the Prophet (peace be upon him), and from his loins will come forth a man who will be called by the name of your Prophet (peace be upon him) and resemble him in conduct but not in appearance. He then mentioned the story about his filling the earth with justice.3720

(4277) ‘All reported the Prophet (peace be upon him) as saying: A man called al-Ḥārith b. Ḥarrāth3721 will come forth from Mā Warā al-Nahr.3722 His army

3718. The period of the Mahdi’s reign is disputed. Some traditions indicate seven years and others nine years.

3719. This tradition has been mentioned by Muslim on the authority of ‘Ubayd Allah b. al-Qatibiyah. Umm Salamah was asked by al-Ḥārith b. Abī Rabī‘ah and ‘Abd Allah b. Sufwān about the sinking of an army in the earth. This was during the caliphate of Ibn al-Zubayr. She reported the Prophet (peace be upon him) as saying: A man will take refuge in the house. Then an expeditionary force will be sent to him. When they are in the desert, all will be swallowed up. I asked: How with the one who was brought in the army against his will? The Prophet (peace be upon him) replied as mentioned in the text of Sunan Abū Dāwūd. This shows that Divine punishment in this world will be given to all equally. Those who were innocent would be saved in the Hereafter. The man who was forced to accompany the army will not be punished in the next world. But he will suffer the same fate in this world (‘Awn al-Ma‘bud, T1, 176-77).

3720. This shows that the Mahdi will come from the stock of al-Ḥasan.

3721. Transoxania, territory consisting of Samarqand, Bukhārā and others.

3722. There are two versions of this name, al-Ḥārith al-Ḥarrāth, meaning the farmer, and al-Ḥarīth b. al-Ḥarrāth. The former is more reliable.
will be led by a man called Manṣūr who will establish or consolidate things for Muḥammad's family as Quraish consolidated them for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). Every believer must help him, or he said: respond to his sermons.\textsuperscript{372}\textsuperscript{3}

3723. Al-Ḥārith and Manṣūr will be the partisans of the Mahdi. The tradition means that every Muslim must help al-Ḥārith or Mansūr or probably both of them.
XXXII. KITĀB AL-MALĀHIM
[ BOOK OF BATTLES ]

Chapter 1587

DESCRIPTION OF HAPPENINGS IN EVERY CENTURY

(4278) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah will raise for this community at the end of every hundred years the one who will renovate its religion for it.3724

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Shuraih al-Iskandari has also transmitted this tradition, but he did not exceed Sharāhll.

Chapter 1588

BATTLES WITH THE BYZANTINES

(4279) Dhū Mikhbar said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: You will make a secure peace with the Byzantines, then you and they will fight an enemy behind you, and you will be victorious, take booty, and be safe. You will then return and alight in a meadow with mounds and one of the Christians will raise the cross and say: The cross has conquered. One of the Muslims will become angry and smash it, and the Byzantines will act treacherously and prepare for the battle.

(4280) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ḥassān b. ‘Atfyyah through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: The Muslims will then make for their weapons and will fight, and Allah will honour that body with martyrdom.3725

3724. This shows that when evil spreads widely and religion has no effect on the lives of the people and it becomes merely a formality, Allah sends in every century a man who renovates the religion, inculcates its spirit in the minds of the people and reminds them of the purpose of their life in this world. We find a number of renovators in the history of Islam. Some of them are: ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, al-Shāfi‘i, al-Ghazālī, Ibn Taimiyyah and others.

3725. This battle may take place towards the end of this world. The tradition shows that the Christians will also participate in this battle with the Muslims, but later on they will be treacherous, and the Muslims will fight against them.
Abū Dāwūd said: But al-Walīd has narrated this tradition from Dhū Mikhbar from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Abū Dāwūd said: Rawḥ, Yahyā b. Ḥamzah and Bishr b. Bakr have also transmitted it from al-Auza‘l as mentioned by ’Īsā.

Chapter 1589
SIGNS OF THE BATTLES

(4281) Mu‘ād b. Jabal reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The flourishing state of Jerusalem will be when Yathrib3726 is in ruins, the ruined state of Yathrib will be when the great war comes, the outbreak of the great war will be at the conquest of Constantinople and the conquest of Constantinople when the Dajjāl (Antichrist) comes forth.3727 He (the Prophet) struck his thigh or his shoulder with his hand and said: This is as true as you are here or as you are sitting (meaning Mu‘ād b. Jabal).

Chapter 1590
ORDER OF THE BATTLES

(4282) Mu‘ād b. Jabal reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The greatest war, the conquest of Constantinople and the coming forth of the Dajjāl (Antichrist) will take place within a period of seven months.

(4283) ‘Abd Allah b. Busr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The time between the great war and the conquest of the city (Constantinople) will be six years, and the Dajjāl (Antichrist) will come forth in the seventh.3728

Abū Dāwūd said: This is sounder than the tradition narrated by Isā (b. Yūnus).

3726. The old name of Medina.
3727. Each incidence in this tradition is a sign for the happening of the other: the flourishing state of Jerusalem is a sign for the ruin of Medina, and the ruin of Medina is a sign for the great war, and the great war is a sign for the appearance of the Antichrist. This will be the end of this world.
3728. The former tradition indicates that all these incidents will take place within a period of seven months. But this tradition shows that they will take place within seven years. According to Abū Dāwūd, this is sounder than the previous one. These things will happen near the Last Hour.
Chapter 1591

NATIONS SUMMONING ONE ANOTHER TO ATTACK MUSLIMS

(4284) Thawbân reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The people will soon summon one another to attack you as people when eating invite others to share their dish. Someone asked: Will that be because of our small numbers at that time? He replied: No, you will be numerous at that time: but you will be scum and rubbish like that carried down by a torrent, and Allah will take fear of you from the breasts of your enemy and ast enervation into your hearts. Someone asked: What is wahn (enervation). Apostle of Allah: He replied: Love of the world and dislike of death.3729

Chapter 1592

BASTION OF MUSLIMS DURING THE GREAT WARS

(4285) Abū al-Dārdā' reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The place of assembly of the Muslims at the time of the war will be in al-Ghūṭah3730 near a city called Damascus, one of the best cities in Syria.3731

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Muslims will soon be besieged up to Madīna so that their most distant frontier outpost will be Salah.3732

(4286) Al-Zuhri said: Salah is near Khaibar.

Chapter 1593

THE END OF CIVIL STRIFE AMONG MUSLIMS DURING BATTLES3733

(4287) 'Awf b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)

3729. This is a prediction of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about Muslims. They will be weak towards the end of this world, and other nations will make an onslaught on them. They will be like a dish in which the people put their hands from all sides to eat. This is exactly the present situation of the Muslims.

3730. Al-Ghūṭah is the name of a place in Syria with abundant water and trees.

3731. It means that during the great wars and general commotion the Muslims will take refuge in Syria. They will assemble there and fight the enemies.

3732. A place near Khaibar.

3733. The word jīṣah refers to civil war, commotion and dissension among the Muslims. Malāḥim means battles against the infidels. Here the caption means that civil war and dissension among the Muslims will come to an end during the great wars against the infidels. They will be united.
as saying: Allah will not gather two swords upon this community: its own sword and the sword of its enemy.3734

Chapter 1594

PROHIBITION OF AGITATING THE TURKS AND ABYSSINIANS

(4288) One of the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Let the Abyssinians alone as long as they let you alone, and let the Turks alone as long as they leave you alone.3735

Chapter 1595

FIGHTING AGAINST THE TURKS

(4289) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Last Hour will not come before the Muslims fight with the Turks, a people whose faces look as if they were shields covered with skin, and who will wear sandals of hair.3736

(4290) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Last Hour will not come before you fight with a people whose sandals are of hair, and the Last Hour will not come before you fight with a people who have small eyes, short noses, and whose faces look as if they were shields covered with skin.

(4291) Buraidah said: In the tradition telling that people with small eyes, i.e. the Turks, will fight against you, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: You will drive them off three times till you catch up with them in Arabia. On the first occasion when you drive them off those who fly will be safe, on the second occasion some will be safe and some will perish, but on the third occasion they will be extirpated, or he said words to that effect.

3734. It means that Muslims will not be put to test from within and without: civil war and enemy’s attack will not be combined. This is a prediction of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Towards the end of this world the Muslims will be attacked from all sides by the infidels. They will face them unitedly.

3735. The Muslims are not allowed to initiate fighting against these people. If they attack, they should fight them.

3736. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) described the appearance of the Turks who would fight with the Muslims. This prediction came true so many times in history when the Turks and Mangols invaded the Muslim territories in the past.
(4292) Abū Bakrah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Some of my people will alight in low-lying ground which they will call al-Baṣrah beside a river called Dijlah (the Tigris) over which there is a bridge. Its people will be numerous and it will be one of the capital cities of immigrants (or one of the capital cities of Muslims, according to the version of Ibn Yāḥyā who reported from Abū Maʿmar). At the end of time the descendants of Qaṭṭūrāʾ will come with broad faces and small eyes and alight on the bank of the river. The town’s inhabitants will then separate into three sections, one of which will follow cattle and (live in) the desert and perish, another of which will seek security for themselves and perish, but a third will put their children behind their backs and fight with the invaders, and they will be the martyrs.

(4293) Anas b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The people will establish cities, Anas, and one of them will be called al-Baṣrah or al-Buṣairah. If you should pass by it or enter it, avoid its salt-marshes, its kāll, its market, and the gate of its commanders, and keep to its environs, for the earth will swallow some people up, pelting rain will fall and earthquakes will take place in it, and there will be people who will spend the night in it and become apes and swines in the morning.

3737. Qaṭṭūrāʾ is the name of the great grandfather of the Turks. Some Arabic writers state that Qaṭṭūrāʾ was a slave-girl of Abraham from which the Turks were descended. But there is a difficulty in accepting this explanation, for the Turks were the descendants of Japheth son of Noah. He was long before Abraham. But it can be removed by saying that the slave-girl was a descendant of Japheth. Or it may be said that Qaṭṭūrāʾ was a descendant of Abraham whom one of the descendants of Japheth had married. She gave birth to the great great-grandfather of this lineage (‘Awn al-Maʿbūd, IV, 189). According to an article published in Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies, Kendura, a hand-maiden of Abraham, bore ‘Imrān who became the ancestor of the Parthians” (James Robson, Eng tr. Mishkāl, III, 1134, footnote 1).

3738. Literally, “will hold the tails or oxen and the desert”.

3739. This is a prediction from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). It is said that this prediction came true during the caliphate of an Abbasid Caliph, al-Mustaʿṣim Billāh.

3740. The name of a place in Baṣrah. The author of al-Nihāyāt says that it is pronounced as Kallā’, a river-front where ships are anchored. There is a market in Baṣrah called Sūq al-Kalā’. Ibn al-Jawzī has mentioned this tradition in the collection of his spurious traditions. In his opinion this is a fabricated tradition. But al-Suyūṭī has criticised him for his judgment. He says that Ibn al-Jawzī has mentioned a chain which is different from the one given by Abū Dāwūd. He was not aware of this chain. This is not a spurious tradition. It contains a prediction from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
(4294) Ṣāliḥ b. Dirham said: We went on pilgrimage and met a man who asked us: Is there a town near you called al-Ubullah? We said: Yes. He said: Is there any of you who will undertake to pray two or four rak‘ahs on my behalf in the mosque of al-‘Ashshār stating “they are on behalf of Abū Hurairah”? He (Abū Hurairah) said: I heard my friend Abū al-Qāsim (may peace be upon him) say: On the Day of Resurrection Allah will raise martyrs from the mosque of al-‘Ashshār who will be the only ones to rise along with the martyrs of Badr.

Abū Dāwūd said: This mosque is near the river.3742

Chapter 1597

PROHIBITION OF AGITATING THE ABYSSINIANS

(4295) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Leave the Abyssinians alone as long as they leave you alone, for it is only the Abyssinian with short legs who will seek to take out the treasure of the Ka‘bah.3743

Chapter 1598

THE SIGNS OF THE LAST HOUR

(4296) Abū Zur‘ah said: A group of people came to Marwān in Medina, and they heard him say that the first of the signs to appear would be the coming forth of the Dajjāl (Antichrist). He said: I then went to ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr and mentioned it to him. He did not say anything (reliable). I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: The first of the signs to appear will be the rising of the sun in its place of setting and the coming forth of the beast against mankind in the forenoon. Which­ever of them comes first will soon be followed by the other. ‘Abd Allah who used to read the Scriptures (Torah, Gospel) said: I think the first of them will be the rising of the sun in its place of setting.3744

3742. Al-‘Ashshār is a famous mosque near Euphrates in Basrah. The martyrs may refer to the martyrs of Karbalā’. But this is a weak tradition.

3743. This will happen probably near the end of time when Jesus will come down.

3744. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) predicted the appearance of many signs before the Last Hour. They are the smoke, the Dajjāl, the beast, the rising of the sun in its place of setting, the descent of Jesus, Gog and Magog, etc. There is a difference of opinion about the first sign whether it is the appearance of the Dajjāl (Antichrist) or the rising of the sun in its place of setting.

Al-Ra ḫāqī gives the order: Coming forth of the Dajjāl, descent of Jesus, appearance of Gog and Magog, coming forth of the beast, and rising of the sun in the place of its setting. It is said that
1200 ] Sunan Abū Dāwūd : Kitāb al-Malahim [ Book XXXII

(4297) Ḥudhaifah b. Usaid al-Anṣārī said: We were sitting in the shade of the chamber of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) discussing (something) and when we mentioned the Last Hour, our voices rose high. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The Last Hour will not come or happen until there appear ten signs before it: the rising of the sun in its place of setting, the coming forth of the beast,3745 the coming forth of Gog and Magog,3746 the Dājjāl (Antichrist),3747 (the descent of) Jesus son of Mary,3748 the smoke,3749 three subsidences,3750 one in the West, one in the East, and one in the Arabian Peninsula, at the end of which a fire will issue forth from the Yemen, from the lowest part of Aden, and drive mankind to their place of assembly.3751

(4298) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Last Hour will not come before rising of the sun in its place of setting. The infidels will embrace Islam after the second coming of Jesus. If the rising of the sun in its place of setting happens first, their embracing of Islam will be useless, as the door of returning to Islam will be closed after this sign. Therefore what 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr means is that the rising of the sun in the place of its setting will be a sign of nearness of the Last Hour.

3745. It refers to the beast mentioned in the Qur'ānic verse xxvi. 82 which says: "And when the word is fulfilled against them (the unjust), We shall produce from the earth a Beast to face them. He will speak to them, for that mankind did not believe with assurance in Our signs." Towards the end of time when the Last Hour will be reaching near, a beast will come out from the gap of the hill of al-Ṣafā’ in Mecca. This will be a symptom of approaching the Last Hour. Various qualities of this beast have been described in the commentaries on the Qur’ān.

3746. This refers to a tribe mentioned in the Qur'ānic verses xviii. 96 and xxi. 96. About Gog and Magog ‘Abdullah Yusuf ‘Alī says: "It is practically agreed that they were the wild tribes of Central Asia which have made inroads on settled kingdoms and Empires at various stages of the world’s history: ... Their incursions into Europe in large hordes caused migrations and displacements of population on an enormous scale, and eventually broke up the Roman Empire. These tribes were known vaguely to the Greeks and Romans as ‘Seythians,’ but that term does not help us very much, either ethnically or geographically" (Eng. tr. of the Qur’ān, II, 761).

3747. This refers to the Antichrist. He will come forth towards the end of time. He will have all privileges of life and will mislead the people. Jesus will fight against him and kill him.

3748. According to the orthodox belief, Jesus Christ was raised to the heaven and will come back near the end of time. The second coming of Jesus is an agreed belief of orthodox Muslims.

3749. This refers to the Qur'ānic verse xlv. 10 which reads: "Then watch thou for the day that the sky will bring forth a kind of smoke (or mist) plainly visible." It means a severe famine in Mecca in which men were so pinched with hunger that they saw mist before their eyes when they looked at the sky. Ibn Kathūr in his Ta’rīkh mentions two famines in Mecca, one in the eighth year of the Mission, say, the fourth year before the Hijrah, and another about the eighth year after the Hijrah (‘Abdullah Yusuf ‘Alī, English tr. of the Qur’ān, II, 345).

3750. These subsidences will be a sign of the approach of the Last Hour.

3751. The place of assembly refers to Syria. The fire will be the last sign of the Last Hour.
When it rises (there) and the people see it, those who are on it (the earth) will believe. This is the time of which the Qur'anic verse says: "...no good will it do to a soul to believe in them then, if it believed not before nor earned righteousness through its faith." 3752

Chapter 1599

UNCOVERING OF A TREASURE BY EUPHRATES

(4299) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Euphrates is soon to uncover a treasure of gold, but those who are present must not take any of it. 3753

(4300) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Abū Hurairah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. But this version has: "Uncover a mountain of gold".

Chapter 1600

THE COMING FORTH OF THE DAJJAL (ANTICHRIST)

(4301) Ḥudhaifah and Abū Mas'ūd got together and Ḥudhaifah said: I know best what the Dajjāl (Antichrist) will have with him. He will have with him a sea of water and a river of fire, and what you see as fire will be water and what you see as water will be fire. If any of you who lives up to that time and desires water, he should drink from what he sees as fire, for he will find it water. 3754 Abū Mas'ūd al-Badri said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say in this way.

(4302) Anas b. Mālik reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: No prophet was sent who had not warned his people about the one-eyed liar. Beware! he will be one-eyed, but your Lord, the Exalted, is not one-eyed. Between his eyes

3752. Qur'ān, vi. 158. It means that when the sun will rise in the place of its setting, the gate of repentance will be closed and after that faith will not benefit anyone if he did not believe before.

3753. A treasure of gold will be found in the Euphrates when the Last Hour approaches. But this will be a sign of Resurrection. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the Muslims not to take the treasure as they must concentrate on the things of the Hereafter.

3754. This change may be by magic, or Allah may give him this power to try the faith of the people.
will be written "infidel" (kāfir).\textsuperscript{3755}

(4303) Shu‘bah said in his version: "the letters k, f, r" (are on his forehead).

(4304) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Anas b. Mālik through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: Every Muslim will read it.\textsuperscript{3756}

(4305) ‘Imrān b. Ḥuṣain reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Let him who hears of the Dajjal (Antichrist) go far from him, for I swear by Allah that a man will come to him thinking he is a believer and follow him because of confused ideas roused in him by him.\textsuperscript{3757}

(4306) ‘Ubdah b. al-Ṣāmit reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I have told you so much about the Dajjal (Antichrist) that I am afraid you may not understand. The Antichrist is short, hen-toed, woolly-haired, one-eyed, an eye-sightless, and neither protruding nor deep-seated. If you are confused about him, know that your Lord is not one-eyed.

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Amr b. al-Aswad was appointed a judge.

(4307) Al-Nawwās b. Sim‘ān al-Kilābī said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) mentioned the Dajjal (Antichrist) saying: If he comes forth while I am among you I shall be the one who will dispute with him on your behalf, but if he comes forth when I am not among you, a man must dispute on his own behalf, and Allah will take my place in looking after every Muslim. Those of you who live up to his time should recite over him the opening verses of Surat al-Kahf,\textsuperscript{3758} for they are your protection from his trial. We asked: How long will he remain on the earth? He replied: Forty days, one like a year, one like a month, one like a week, and the rest of his days like yours. We asked: Apostle of Allah, will one day’s prayer suffice us in this day which will be like a year? He replied: No, you must make an estimate of its extent.\textsuperscript{3759} Then Jesus son of Mary will descend at the white minaret to the east of

\textsuperscript{3755} The Prophet (may peace be upon him) has described the minute details of the Dajjal so that the Muslims could know him and protect themselves from his delusion. "Between his eyes" means "on his forehead". This will be read by every Muslim as indicated by other traditions.

\textsuperscript{3756} This word kāfir (infidel) will be read by all Muslims, whether they are literate or illiterate.

\textsuperscript{3757} Things like magic and reviving the dead will delude the people. They will believe in the Dajjal and thus lose their faith.

\textsuperscript{3758} Qur’ān, xviii.

\textsuperscript{3759} Due to extreme calamities and griefs one day will look like a year. At that time prayer will be offered by making an estimate of the time in ordinary days. For example, after offering the morning prayer, one should make an estimate of the time between the morning and noon prayers, say eight hours. The morning prayer should be offered after eight hours. Similarly, other prayers should be offered by estimating the hours.
Damascus. He will then catch him up at the gate of Ludd\textsuperscript{3760} and kill him.

(4308) A similar tradition has been transmitted by Abū Umāmah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. In this version he mentioned the prayers to the same effect.

(4309) Abū al-Dardā’ reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone memorises ten verses from the beginning of Sūrat al-Kahf, he will be protected from the trial of the Dajjāl (Antichrist).

Abū Dāwūd said: In this way Hishām al-Dastawā‘I transmitted it from Qatādah, but he said: “If anyone memorises the closing verses of Sūrat al-Kahf.” Shu‘bah narrated from Qatādah the words “from the end of al-Kahf”.\textsuperscript{3761}

(4310) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is no prophet between me and him, that is, Jesus (peace be upon him). He will descend (to the earth). When you see him, recognise him: a man of medium height, reddish fair, wearing two light yellow garments, looking as if drops were falling down from his head though it will not be wet. He will fight the people for the cause of Islam. He will break the cross, kill swine, and abolish \textit{jizyah}. Allah will perish all religions except Islam. He will destroy the Antichrist and will live on the earth for forty years and then he will die. The Muslims will pray over him.

\textit{Chapter 1601}

\textbf{Al-Jassāsah, the Spy of the Dajjāl, a Beast which is to Seek for News to Take to the Dajjāl (Antichrist)}

(4311) Fāṭimah, daughter of Qais, said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) once delayed the congregational night prayer. He came out and said: The talk of Tamīm al-Dārī detained me. He transmitted it to me from a man who was in an island of the islands of the sea. All of a sudden he found a woman who was trailing her hair. He asked: Who are you? She said: I am the Jassāsah.\textsuperscript{3762} Go to that castle. So I came to it and found a man who was trailing his hair, chained in iron-collars, and leaping between the heaven and the earth. I asked: Who are you? He

\textsuperscript{3760}. The name of a city near Jerusalem.
\textsuperscript{3761}. One may memorise ten verses from the opening or from the last part of Sūrat al-Kahf. Some traditions indicate that if anyone memorises the whole Sūrat al-Kahf, he will be protected from the trial of the Dajjāl. To be on the safe side, one should memorise the whole surah.
\textsuperscript{3762}. Literally, it means a spy. In another tradition this spy is a beast. Many explanations have been given by commentators. It may be that the Dajjāl had two spies, one beast and another a woman. Or it might be a devil who changed himself in any form, sometimes in the form of a woman and sometimes in the form of a beast. This spy is to seek for news to take to the Dajjāl.
replied: I am the Dajjal (Antichrist). Has the prophet of the unlettered people come forth now? I replied: Yes. He said: Have they obeyed him or disobeyed him? I said: No. they have obeyed him. He said: That is better for them.

(3412) Fā'īmah, daughter of Qais, said: I heard the crier of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) calling: Assemble for the prayer. I then came out and prayed along with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) finished his prayer, he sat on the pulpit laughing, and he said: Everyone should remain where he had said his prayer. He then asked: Do you know why I have assembled you? They replied: Allah and His Apostle know best. He said: I have not assembled you for some pleasant purpose or because of fear, but I have assembled you because Tamīm al-Daŷrī, a Christian, who came and accepted Islam, told me something which agrees with what I was telling you about the Antichrist (Dajjal). He told me that he had sailed in a ship with thirty men of Lakhm and Judhâm and that they were storm-tossed for a month. They drew near to an island when the sun was setting. They sat in a boat nearest to them and entered the island where they were met by a very hairy beast. They said: Woe to you! What can you be? It replied: I am the Jassasah. Go to this man in the monastery, for he is anxious to get news of you. He said: When it named a man to us we were afraid of it lest it should be a she-devil. So we went off quickly and entered the monastery, where we found a man with the hugest and strongest frame we had ever seen with his hand joined to his neck. He then narrated the rest of the tradition. He asked them about the palm-trees of Baisân and the spring of Zughar and about the unlettered Prophet. He said: I am the Messiah (the Antichrist) and will be soon permitted to come forth. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: He is in the Syrian sea or the Yemen sea; no, on the contrary, it is towards the east that he is. He said it twice and pointed his hand to the east. She said: I memorised this (tradition) from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and she narrated the tradition.

(4313) Fāṣīmah, daughter of Qais, said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) offered the noon prayer and ascended the pulpit. Before this day he did not ascend it except on Friday. He then narrated this story.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn Šudrān belongs to Baṣrah. He was drowned in the sea along with Ibn Miswar, and no one could escape except him.

3763. The names of two famous Arab tribes.
3764. The name of a place in Syria near Jordan.
3765. The name of a place in Syria.
3766. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was earlier doubtful about the place of the Dajjāl. Later on he was certain that he was in the east.
Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said one day on the pulpit: When some people were sailing in the sea, their food was finished. An island appeared to them. They went out seeking for bread. They were met by the Jassāsah (the Antichrist’s spy). I said to Abū Salamah: What is the Jassāsah? He replied: A woman trailing the hair of her skin and of her head. She said: In this castle. He then narrated the rest of the tradition. He asked about the palm-trees of Baisān and the spring of Zughar. He said: He is the Messiah (Antichrist). Ibn Salamah said to me: There is something more in this tradition which I could not remember. He said: Jābir testified that it is he who is Ibn Ṣayyād. I said: He died. He said: Let him die. I said: He accepted Islam. He said: Let him accept Islam. I said: He entered Medina. He said: Let him enter Medina.

Chapter 1602

THE STORY OF IBN ṢAYYĀD

Ibn ‘Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) passed by Ibn Ṣa‘īd along with some of his Companions. ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb was among them. He was playing with boys near the fortress of Banū Maghālah. He was near the age of puberty (i.e. a boy). Before he was aware, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave him a pat on the back and said: Do you testify that I am Allah’s Apostle? Ibn Ṣayyād then looked at him and said: I testify that you are the Apostle of Gentiles. Ibn Ṣayyād then said to the Prophet (may peace be upon him): Do you testify that I am the Apostle of Allah? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: I believe in Allah and His Apostles. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then asked him: What comes to you? He replied: One who speaks the truth and one who lies come to me. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: You are confused. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to him: I have concealed something (in my hand), and he concealed the verse “the day when the sky will bring forth

3767. Another version has “seeking for news”.
3768. Ibn Ṣayyād was a man whom the Prophet (may peace be upon him) suspected to be the Dajjāl. But he was not sure about it. Later on he embraced Islam and had children, and died. It is not known whether he disappeared and will come forth towards the end of time. But it seems that some other person will appear as the Dajjāl.
3769. Another version has Ibn al-Ṣa‘īd. This man was suspected to be the Dajjāl (Antichrist) by the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and the Companions.
3770. The name of a tribe.
smoke (dukhan) clearly visible.  

Ibn Ṣayyād said: It is smoke (dukkhkh). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Away with you, you cannot get farther than your rank.  

Umar said: ‘Apostle of Allah, permit me to cut off his head. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If he is the one (the Dajjāl), you will not be given power over him, and if he is not, you will not do well in killing him.

(4316) Nāfi’ told that Ibn ‘Umar used to say: I swear by Allah that I do not doubt that Antichrist is Ibn Ṣayyād.

(4317) Muhammad b. al-Munkadir told that he saw Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah swearing by Allah that Ibn al-Ṣā‘īd was the Dajjāl (Antichrist). I expressed my surprise by saying: You swear by Allah! He said: I heard ‘Umar swearing to that in the presence of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), but the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not make any objection to it.

(4318) Jābir said: We saw the last of Ibn Ṣayyād at the battle of the Ḥarrah.

(4319) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Last Hour will not come before there come forth thirty Dajjāls (fraudulents), everyone presuming himself that he is an apostle of Allah.

(4320) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Last Hour will not come before there come forth thirty liar Dajjāls (fraudulents) lying on Allah and His Apostle.

(4321) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Ibrāhīm (al-Nakha‘ī) through a different chain of narrators. I (Ibrāhīm) said to ‘Ubaidat al-Salmān: Do you think that he is one of them, that is al-Mukhtar (al-Thaqafī)? He said: He is from the leaders.

3771. Qur’ān, xliv. 10.

3772. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) tested Ibn Ṣayyād to see whether he had any supernatural knowledge. His use of a different form of the word for smoke indicated that he was a sort of soothsayer with a defective source of information.

3773. He referred not to the Dajjāl (Antichrist) who will come forth at the time when the Last Hour will be approaching and who will be killed by Jesus. He meant that Ibn Ṣayyād was one of the many Antichrists who would appear from time to time to deceive the people. They will come forth before the appearance of the great Dajjāl. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) predicted that many Antichrists would appear from time to time in this world before the appearance of the great Dajjāl.

3774. This is the day when Yazīd b. Mu‘āwiya had full control of the people of Medina. This war was waged on the two lava plains of Medina. This report also belies the view that Ibn Ṣayyād had died.

3775. These will not be Antichrists. The Antichrist will come forth in the last when Jesus will come. These people will be fraudulents and false prophets. Such people came forth at different times in the history of Islam.
(4322) ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ūd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The first defect that permeated Banū Isrā’īl was that a man (of them) met another man and said: O so-and-so, fear Allah, and abandon what you are doing, for it is not lawful for you. He then met him the next day and that did not restrain him from eating with him, drinking with him and sitting with him. When they did so, Allah mingled their hearts with one another. He then recited the verse: “Curses were pronounced on those among the children of Isrā’īl who rejected Faith, by the tongue of David and of Jesus the son of Mary” . . . up to “wrongdoers” . He then said: By no means, I swear by Allah, you must enjoin what is good and prohibit what is evil, prevent the wrongdoer, bend him into conformity with what is right, and restrict him to what is right.

(4323) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Ibn Mas‘ūd through a different chain of narrators to the same effect. This version adds: “Or Allah will mingle your hearts together and curse you as He cursed them.”

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by al-Muḥāribī, from al-‘Alā’ b. al-Musayyab, from ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. Murrah, from Sālim al-Afīs, from Abū ‘Ubaidah, from ‘Abd Allah; and it has been transmitted by Khālid al-Ṭahhān, from al-‘Alā’, from ‘Amr b. Murrah from Abū ‘Ubaidah.

(4324) Abū Bakr, after praising Allah and exalting Him, said: You people recite this verse “You who believe, care for yourselves; he who goes astray cannot harm you when you are rightly-guided,” and put it in its improper place. Khālid’s version has: We heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say: When the people see a wrongdoer and do not prevent him, Allah will soon punish them all. ‘Amr b. Hushaim’s version has: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If acts of disobedience are done among any people and do not change them though

3776. Meaning commanding what is good and prohibiting what is evil.
3778. Every Muslim is required to enjoin what is good and forbid what is evil. It is necessary to perform this duty to purify the society from evil and to make it a model one. If the people do not obey Allah and continue to commit sins and evil, the pious men should dissociate from them, and should not sit, eat and drink with these people. This may bring them to obedience to Allah and His Prophet (may peace be upon him). But it depends on situation. Dissociation is not always necessary. Sometimes association is useful for their reform.
they are able to do so, Allah will soon punish them all.\footnote{3780}

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has also been transmitted by Abū Usūmah and a group of transmitters similar to the version narrated by Khālid. The version of Shu‘bah has: “If acts of disobedience are done among any people who are more numerous than those who do them. . . .”

(4325) Jabir (b. ‘Abd Allah) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If any man is among a people in whose midst he does acts of disobedience, and, though they are able to make him change (his acts), they do not change, Allah will smite them with punishment before they die.\footnote{3781}

(4326) Abu Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If any of you sees something objectionable, he should change it with his hand if he can change it with his hand. (The narrator Hammād broke the rest of the tradition which was completed by Ibn al-‘Alā’.) But if he cannot (do so), he should do it with his tongue, and if he cannot (do so with) his tongue he should do it in his heart, that being the weakest form of faith.\footnote{3782}

(4327) Abū Umayyat al-Sha‘bānī said: I asked Abū Thal‘abat al-Khushānī: What is your opinion about the verse “Care for yourselves”?\footnote{3783} He said: I swear by Allah, I asked the one who was well informed about it; I asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) about it. He said: No, enjoin upon one another to do what is good and forbid one another to do what is evil, but when you see niggardliness being obeyed, passion being followed, worldly interests being preferred, everyone being charmed with his opinion, care for yourself, and leave alone what people in general are doing; for ahead of you are days which will require endurance in which showing endurance will be like grasping live coals. The one who acts rightly during that period will have the reward of fifty men who act as he does. Another version

\footnote{3780. Verse v. 105 means that the acts of disobedience of other people do not harm when the pious men preach the injunctions of Islam, enjoin what is good and forbid what is evil. The phrase “When you are rightly-guided” means that they obey all the commands of Islam. Enjoining what is good and prohibiting what is evil” is also an important command. This duty must be performed by them. If they do not perform this duty, they cannot be called “rightly-guided”. People may care for themselves when enjoining good and prohibiting evil do not benefit, and people insist on committing sins and doing evil. If they neglect doing this duty, Allah will punish them all, both pious and impious.}

\footnote{3781. Enjoining good and forbidding evil is an important duty in Islam. Negligence of this duty may cause the anger of Allah and consequently His punishment in this world.}

\footnote{3782. If a man has power to change an objectionable thing, he should do it. If he cannot, he should prohibit it with his tongue. If he cannot do so, he should consider it evil and hate it in his heart. This is the weakest form of faith. A Muslim should at least hate the acts of disobedience.}

\footnote{3783. Qur’ān, v. 105.}
has: He said (The hearers asked :) Apostle of Allah, the reward of fifty of them? He replied: The reward of fifty of you.3784

(4328) 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr b. al-'As reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: How will you do when that time will come? Or he said: A time will soon come when the people are sifted and only dregs of mankind survive and their covenants and guarantees have been impaired and they have disagreed among themselves and become thus, intertwining his fingers. They asked: What do you order us to do, Apostle of Allah? He replied: Accept what you approve, abandon what you disapprove, attend to your own affairs and leave alone the affairs of the generality.3785

Abū Dāwūd said: A similar tradition has been transmitted by ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain.

(4329) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. al-'As said: When we were around the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), he mentioned the period of commotion (fiṭnah) saying: When you see the people that their covenants have been impaired, (the fulfilling of) the guarantees becomes rare, and they become thus (intertwining his fingers). I then got up and said: What should I do at that time, may Allah make me ransom for you? He replied: Keep to your house, control your tongue, accept what you approve, abandon what you disapprove, attend to your own affairs, and leave alone the affairs of the generality.

(4330) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The best fighting (jihād) in the path of Allah is (to speak) a word of justice to an oppressive ruler.3786

(4331) Al-‘Urs b. ‘Amirat al-Kindī reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When sin is done in the earth, he who sees it and disapproves of it will be taken like one who was not present, but he who is not present and approves of it will

3784. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) predicted that a time would come when evil would prevail and acts of disobedience would be done in general. During this period if a man acts rightly, he will be given the reward of the acts of fifty Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Obviously the reward of their acts will be more than that of the acts of other people.

3785. Towards the end of time when evil prevails, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) advised to mind one’s own business, keep to the house and control one’s tongue. During this period enjoining what is good and forbidding what is evil will be of no use.

3786. Jihād is meant to promote the cause of Islam. It is a great service to Islam to speak bluntly what is right, just and true before an unjust and cruel ruler. Everyone fears to speak the truth before a powerful ruler lest he should become angry. But if a man takes courage to speak the truth before him, he is performing a great jihād.
be like him who sees.\(^{3787}\)

(4332) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by 'Adl b. 'Adl from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. This version has: He who sees it and disapproves of it will be like him who was not present.

(4333) A man from among the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) reported him as saying: The people will not perish until their sins and faults become abundant, and there remains no excuse for them.\(^{3788}\)

Chapter 1604

THE COMING OF THE LAST HOUR

(4334) 'Abd Allah b. 'Umair said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) led us in the night prayer one night towards the end of his life. When he uttered the salutation, he got up and said: Have you seen this night of yours? No one of those who are on the surface of the earth will survive at the ends of one hundred years. Ibn 'Umar said: The people fell into fallacy by this statement of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) about the traditions they used to narrate concerning one hundred years.\(^{3789}\) The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: No one of those who are present today on the surface of the earth will survive, meaning when that century comes to an end.\(^{3790}\)

(4335) Abū Tha'labat al-Khushani reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah will not fail to detain this community for less than half a day.\(^{3791}\)

(4336) Sa'd b. Abī Waqqās reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: I hope my community will not fail to maintain their position in the sight of

3787. This shows that a Muslim should hate and disapprove of a sin when he sees it or hears it. He should never approve of a sin when he sees it or hears it, but should hate.

3788. The Muslims will perish on account of their sins. When their sins dominate, there will be no excuse for them for survival. In such a situation, Allah will destroy them.

3789. The people used to hear from each other that the Last Hour will come within one hundred years. By this prediction of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) they thought that they were correct in their presumption about the coming of the Last Hour within a century. But the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not mean so.

3790. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) meant that all his Companions would die within one hundred years. This prediction of his came true. He did not mean that the Last Hour would come within a century as the people presumed.

3791. The day here refers to the Day of Resurrection. According to the Qur'an (xxii. 47), this day will last for one thousand years. Its duration will be so lengthy as one counts one thousand years. During this period the Muslim community will not lose its position in the eyes of Allah.
their Lord if He delays them half a day. Sa'd was asked: How long is half a day? He said: It is five hundred years.\footnote{3792}

\footnote{3792, It means that the Last Day would not occur within five hundred years of the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He hoped that his people would keep to the faith during all that period. The five hundred years in this tradition are not definite. They refer to a long duration. There may be increase in this period and this increase does not contradict the prediction (\textit{\'Awn al-Ma'bud}, IV, 221).}
XXXIII. KITĀB AL-HUDŪD

[ BOOK OF PRESCRIPTIONS OF PUNISHMENTS ]

Chapter 1605

PUNISHMENT OF AN APOSTATE

(4337) 'Ikrimah said: 'Ali burned some people who retreated from Islam. When Ibn 'Abbâs was informed of it, he said: If it had been I, I would not have them burned, for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Do not inflict Allah's punishment on anyone, but would have had killed them on account of the statement of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Apostle said: Kill those who change their religion. When 'All was informed about it he said: How truly Ibn 'Abbâs said!

(4338) 'Abd Allah (b. Mâs'ûd) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The blood of a Muslim man who testifies that there is no god but Allah and that I am the Apostle of Allah should not be lawfully shed but only for one of three reasons: married fornicator, soul for soul, and one who deserts his religion separating himself from the community.

(4339) 'A'ishah (may Allah be pleased with her) reported the Apostle of Allah

3793 Hudūd is plural of hadd, meaning a thing which restrains or prevents. Since a punishment prevents a man from doing crimes, it is called hadd. But it applies only to those punishments that are prescribed in the Qur'an or Sunnah. They are: punishment for theft, adultery, accusation of adultery, and drinking of wine. Punishment for homicide and dacoity has also been mentioned in the Qur'an.

3794. The punishment of an apostate in Islam is death. If a man retreats from Islam, he will be required to repent. If he declines, he will be killed. According to the Hanafis, this applies only to men and not to women. Female apostates shall not be killed. But majority of the scholars are of view that both male and female apostates should be killed.

3795. If the fornicator is unmarried, he will be given a punishment of one hundred lashes. If he is married, he will be stoned to death.

3796. If a man commits murder intentionally, he will be killed.

3797. An apostate is given sufficient time to repent. If he refuses, he will be killed.

1212
(may peace be upon him) as saying: The blood of a Muslim man who testifies that there is no god but Allah and that Muḥammad is Allah's Apostle should not lawfully be shed except only for one of three reasons: a man who committed fornication after marriage, in which case he should be stoned; one who goes forth to fight with Allah and His Apostle,\(^\text{3798}\) in which case he should be killed or crucified or exiled from the land; or one who commits murder for which he is killed.

(4340) Abū Burdah said on the authority of Abū Mūsā: I went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) while two men who were Ashʿarīs were with me. One of them was on my right and the other on my left side. Both of them asked him for employment. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was silent. He asked: What do you say, Abū Mūsā, or ‘Abd Allah b. Qais (Abū Mūsā's name)? I replied: By Him Who has sent you with truth, they did not inform me of what they had in their hearts, and I did not know that they would ask for an employment. He said: I have the scene before my eyes that he had his toothstick below his lip which receded. He (the Prophet) said: We will never or will not put in charge of our work anyone who asks for it. But go, ye, Abū Mūsā, or ‘Abd Allah b. Qais. He then sent him as a Governor of the Yemen. After him he sent Muʿādh b. Jabal. When Muʿādh came to him, he said: Come down, and he put a cushion for him. He saw that a man was chained with him. He asked: What is this? He replied: He was a Jew and he accepted Islam. He then converted to his religion, an evil religion. He said: I will not sit until he is killed according to the decision of Allah and His Apostle (may peace be upon him). He said: Yes, be seated. He said: I will not sit until he is killed according to the decision of Allah and His Apostle (may peace be upon him). He said it three times. He then commanded for it and he was killed. Both of them then discussed the question of prayer and vigilance at night. One of them, probably Muʿādh, said: So far as I am concerned, I sleep and I keep vigilance; I keep vigilance and I sleep; I hope for the same reward for my sleep as for my vigilance.

(4341) Abū Mūsā said: Muʿādh came to me when I was in the Yemen. A man who was Jew embraced Islam and then retreated from Islam. When Muʿādh came, he said: I will not come down from my mount until he is killed. He was then killed. One of them said: He was asked to repent before that.

(4342) Abū Burdah said: A man who turned back from Islam was brought to Abū Mūsā. He invited him to repent for twenty days or about so. Muʿādh then came

\(^{3798}\) This refers to such things as highway robbery and revolt against the Government. According to Malik and al-Shāfiʿī, he will be crucified. The ruling authorities have a choice to inflict any of these four punishments.
and invited him (to embrace Islam) but he refused. So he was beheaded.

(4343) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Mūsā through a different chain of narrators. But there is no mention of demand of repentance.

(4344) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Qāsim through a different chain of narrators. This version has: He did not come down until he was killed, and he did not ask him for repentance.

(4345) Ibn 'Abbās said: ‘Abd Allah b. Abl Sarḥ used to write (the revelation) for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). Satan made him slip, and he joined the infidels. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) commanded to kill him on the day of Conquest (of Mecca). ‘Uthmān b. ‘Affān sought protection for him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave him protection.

(4346) Sa‘d said: On the day of the Conquest of Mecca ‘Abd Allah b. Sa‘d b. Abl Sarḥ hid himself with ‘Uthmān b. ‘Affān. He brought him and made him stand before the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and said: Accept the allegiance of ‘Abd Allah, Apostle of Allah! He raised his head and looked at him three times, refusing him each time, but accepted his allegiance after the third time. Then turning to his Companions he said: Was not there a wise man among you who would stand to him when he saw me that I had withheld my hand from accepting his allegiance and killed him? They said: We did not know what you had in your heart, Apostle of Allah! Why did you not give us a signal with your eye? He said: It is not advisable for a Prophet to have tricks that deceive with the eyes.

(4347) Jarir reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a slave runs away and reverts to polytheism, he may lawfully be killed.

Chapter 1606

PUNISHMENT OF A MAN WHO ABUSES THE PROPHET
(MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM)

(4348) Ibn ‘Abbās said: A blind man had a slave-mother who used to abuse the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and disparage him. He forbade her but she did not stop. He rebuked her but she did not give up her habit. On one night she began to slander the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and abuse him. So he took a dagger, placed it on her belly, pressed it, and killed her. A child who came between her legs was smeared with the blood that was there. When the morning came, the Prophet (may
peace be upon him) was informed about it. He assembled the people and said: I adjure by Allah the man who has done this action and I adjure him by my right to him that he should get up. Jumping over the necks of the people and trembling the man stood up. He sat before the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! I am her master; she used to abuse you and disparage you. I forbade her, but she did not stop, and I rebuked her, but she did not leave her habit. I have two sons like pearls from her, and she was my companion. Last night she began to abuse and disparage you. So I took a dagger, put it on her belly and pressed it till I killed her. Thereupon the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said, Oh, be witness, no retaliation is payable for her blood.3799

(4349) ‘Ali said: A Jewess used to abuse the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and disparage him. A man strangled her till she died. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) declared that no recompense was payable for her blood.3800

(4350) Abū Barzah said: I was with Abū Bakr. He became angry at a man and uttered hot words. I said: Do you permit me, Caliph of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), that I cut off his neck? These words of mine removed his anger; he stood and went in. He then sent for me and said: What did you say just now? I said: (I had said:) Permit me that I cut off his neck. He said: Would you do it if I ordered you? I said: Yes. He said: No, I swear by Allah, this is not allowed for any man after Muhammad (may peace be upon him).3801

Abū Dāwūd said: This is Yazīd’s version. Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal said: That is, Abū Bakr had no powers to slay a man except for three reasons which the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had mentioned: disbelief after belief, fornication after marriage, or killing a man without (murdering) any man by him. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had powers to kill.

3799. It is unanimously agreed that if a Muslim abuses or insults the Prophet (may peace be upon him) he should be killed. There is a difference of opinion about the killing of a non-Muslim. According to al-Shāfi‘ī, he should be killed. Abū Ḥanīfah is of opinion that he should not be killed. The sin of being a polytheist is far greater than it. Mālik maintains that he should be killed except that he embraces Islam (‘Awn al-Ma‘bud, IV, 226).

3800. This shows that even if a Jew or any non-Muslim abuses the Prophet (may peace be upon him) he will be killed. This is held by al-Laith, al-Shāfi‘ī, Aḥmad and Ishaq. Mālik and al-Aurā‘ī hold that abusing the Prophet (may peace be upon him) is an act of apostasy. A Muslim should be asked to repent. If he refuses to repent, he should be killed.

3801. The punishment for abusing or opposing the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was death. This was the privilege of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) alone. This could not be applied to others. If a man contempts a caliph or a Muslim ruler, he will not be killed.
Chapter 1607

FIGHTING AGAINST ALLAH AND HIS PROPHET
(MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM)3802

(4351) Anas b. Malik said: Some people of 'Ukl or 'Urainah3803 came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and found Medina unhealthy. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered them to go to the camels (of the ḥadāyah) and ordered them to drink some of their urine and milk. They went there. When they became well, they killed the herdsman of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and drove off the camels. The news about them reached the Prophet (may peace be upon him) early in the morning. So he sent people in pursuit of them, and they were brought when the day had risen high. He ordered and their hands and feet were cut off and nails were drawn into their eyes, and they were thrown out on the Ḥarrah.3804 They begged for water but were not supplied water. Abū Qilābah said: They were people who had stolen, killed, apostatised after their faith and fought against Allah and His Apostle (may peace be upon him).

(4352) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by the narrator Ayyūb through a different chain. This version has: So he (the Prophet) ordered nails to be heated and had them blinded with them, and he had their hands and feet cut off, and did not cauterise them to stop the flow of blood.3805

(4353) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Anas b. Malik through a different chain of narrators. This version says: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent some people who were experts in tracking in pursuit of them and they were brought (to him). Allah, the Exalted, then revealed the verse about it: "The punishment of those who wage war against Allah and His Apostle and strive for mischief through the land."

(4354) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Anas b. Malik through a different chain of narrators. This version has: Anas said: I saw one of them biting the earth with his mouth (teeth) on account of thirst and thus they died.

(4355) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Anas b. Malik through a

3802. This refers to such things as highway robbery.
3803. These are two tribes. Some versions have 'Ukl and others 'Urainah, and some others both. Here the transmitter is doubtful whether Anas said 'Ukl or 'Urainah.
3804. The name of a place with black stones near Medina.
3805. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) inflicted this punishment on them according to the Qur’ānic verse v. 36 for robbery and striving to cause mischief.
3806. Qur’ān, v. 36.
different chain of narrators. This version adds: He then forbade disfiguring. This version does not mention the words "from opposite sides". This tradition has been narrated by Shu'bah from Qatadah and Salām b. Miskīn from Thabit on the authority of Anas. They did not mention the words "from opposite sides". I did not find these words "their hands and feet were cut off from opposite sides" in any version except in the version of Ḥammād b. Salamah.

(4356) Ibn 'Umar said: Some people raided the camels of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), drove them off, and apostatised. They killed the herdsman of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who was a believer. He (the Prophet) sent (people) in pursuit of them and they were caught. He had their hands and feet cut off, and their eyes put out. The verse regarding fighting against Allah and His Prophet (may peace be upon him) was then revealed. These were the people about whom Anas b. Mālik informed al-Hajjāj when he asked him.

(4357) Abū al-Zinād said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) cut off (the hands and feet of) those who had stolen his camels and he had their eyes put out by fire (heated nails), Allah reprimanded him on that (action), and Allah, the Exalted, revealed: "The punishment of those who wage war against Allah and His Apostle and strive with might and main for mischief through the land is execution or crucifixion."

(4358) Muḥammad b. Sirīn said: This happened before the prescribed punishments (ḥudūd) were revealed, meaning the tradition of Anas.

(4359) Ibn 'Abbās said: The verse "The punishment of those who wage war against Allah and His Apostle, and strive with might and main for mischief through the land is execution, or crucifixion, or the cutting off of hands and feet from opposite sides or exile from the land... most merciful" was revealed about polytheists. If any of them repents before they are arrested, it does not prevent from inflicting on him the prescribed punishment which he deserves.

3807. Muḥākah means to kill an animal by cutting off its organs, its nose, ears and to disfigure it. This was also done with a slain in pre-Islamic days. This continued for some time in the early days of Islam. Later on it was repealed and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to kill a man or an animal by disfiguring.

3808. Qur'ān, v. 36.
3809. Qur'ān, v. 36-37.
3810. This is the view held by Ibn 'Abbās. According to him, if an infidel commits robbery and repents, embraces Islam and comes to the authorities before his arrest, the punishment will be inflicted on him. He will not be forgiven. In this tradition repentance means embracing Islam. But this view runs counter to the generally accepted view of scholars. It goes that if an infidel commits robbery and embraces Islam before arrest, no punishment will be inflicted on him (ʿAwa al-Maḥād, IV, 230).
INTERCESSION REGARDING PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENTS

(4360) ‘A’ishah said: The Quraysh were anxious about the Makhzuml woman who had committed theft. They said: Who will speak to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) about her? Then they said: Who will be bold enough for it but Usamah b. Zaid, the Apostle’s (may peace be upon him) friend! So Usamah spoke to him, and the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Are you interceding regarding one of the punishments prescribed by Allah? He then got up and gave an address, saying: What destroyed your predecessors was just that when a person of rank among them committed a theft, they left him alone, and when a weak one of them committed a theft, they inflicted the prescribed punishment on him. I swear by Allah that if Fatimah daughter of Muhammad should steal, I would have her hand cut off.3111

(4361) ‘A’ishah said: A Makhzuml woman used to borrow goods and deny having received them, so the Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave orders that her hand should be cut off.3112 The narrator then transmitted the rest of the tradition like that of al-Laith, saying: So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had her hand cut off.

Abu Dawud said: Ibn Wahb transmitted this tradition from Yunus on the authority of al-Zuhri, and in this version he said as al-Laith had said: A woman committed theft during the lifetime of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) on the occasion of the Conquest (of Mecca). It has been transmitted by al-Laith from Yunus on the authority of Ibn Shihab through his chain of narrators. He said in this version: A woman borrowed goods. Mas‘ud b. al-Aswad also transmitted a similar tradition from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: A velvet was stolen from the house of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

Abu Dawud said: Abu al-Zubair reported on the authority of Jabir: A woman committed theft and took refuge with Zainab daughter of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

3111. This shows that intercession regarding prescribed punishment is unlawful. It should be inflicted, whether the criminal is of a low or a high rank.

3112. The version of this tradition contradicts all other reliable versions which indicate that the woman had committed theft. The narrator of this version has expressed theft as borrowing of the goods and its denial. If a man borrows goods and denies, his hand will not be cut off according to the majority opinion of the scholars. Ahmad b. Hanbal and Ishq hold that his hand will be cut off.
Ch. 1610

Concealing Crime of Criminals

(4362) 'Ā'ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Forgive the people of good qualities their slips, but not faults to which prescribed penalties apply.\textsuperscript{3813}

Chapter 1609

FORGIVING FAULTS WHICH INVOLVE PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENTS BEFORE THEY ARE REPORTED TO THE AUTHORITIES

(4363) 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Forgive the infliction of prescribed penalties among yourselves, for any prescribed penalty of which I hear must be carried out.\textsuperscript{3814}

Chapter 1610

CONCEALING CRIME OF CRIMINALS TO WHOM PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT APPLIES

(4364) Yazīd b. Nu'aim on his father's authority said: Mā'īz came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and admitted (having committed adultery) four times in his presence, so he ordered him to be stoned to death, but said to Huzzāl: If you had covered him with your garment, it would have been better for you.\textsuperscript{3815}

(4365) Ibn al-Munkadir said: Huzzāl had ordered Mā'īz to go to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and tell him (about his having committed adultery).

3813. This shows that ordinary faults can be forgiven by a judge but not a fault or crime which involves prescribed punishment; for it is a right of Allah. This tradition is weak.

3814. This is directed to a person who is not a judge or an official having power of inflicting prescribed punishment. It means that people should not report such a case to the authorities. They should forgive the criminal before reporting it to the judge. A judge has no powers to forgive a crime which involves prescribed punishment.

3815. It was Huzzāl who asked Mā'īz to go to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and tell him that he had committed adultery. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) advised him that, instead of asking Mā'īz to come to him and acknowledge his fault, it would have been better that he concealed his crime and did not tell anyone. Since prescribed punishments are serious, it is better for the people not to report to the authorities.
Chapter 1611

ON A MAN TO WHOM PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT APPLIES COMES AND ACCEPTS THE CRIME

(4366) 'Alqamah b. Wā'ili said on the authority of his father: A woman went out in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) for prayer and a man attacked her and got his desire of her. She shouted and he went off, and when a man came by, she said: That (man) did such and such to me. And when a company of the Emigrants came by, she said: That man did such and such to me. They went and seized the man about whom they thought that he had intercourse with her and brought him to her. She said: Yes, this is he. Then they brought him to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). When he (the Prophet) was about to award the sentence the man who had assaulted her stood up and said: Apostle of Allah, I am the nun who has done it with her. He (the Prophet) said to her: Go away, for Allah has forgiven you. But he told the man some good words (Abū Dāwūd said: meaning the man who was seized), and of the man who had had intercourse with her, he said: Stone him to death. He also said: He has repented to such an extent that if the people of Medina had repented similarly, it would have been accepted from them.\textsuperscript{3816}

Abū Dāwūd said: Asbāt b. Naṣr has also transmitted it from Simāk.

Chapter 1612

SUGGESTIONS TO A CRIMINAL TO WHOM THE PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT APPLIES

(4367) Abū Umayyat al-Makhzūmī said: A thief who had accepted (having committed theft) was brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), but no goods were found with him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to him: I do not think you have stolen. He said: Yes, I have. He repeated it twice or thrice. So he gave orders. His hand was cut off and he was then brought to him. He said: Ask Allah's pardon and turn to Him in repentance. He said: I ask Allah's pardon and turn to Him in repentance. He (the Prophet) then said: O Allah, accept his

\textsuperscript{3816}. If a man acknowledges his crime four times in the case of fornication he will be punished. As Mu'ādh b. Jabal himself confirmed his crime, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) inflicted punishment on the man. If the fornicator is single and unmarried, he will be flogged; if he is married, he will be stoned to death. The same applies to a woman.
Chapter 1613

ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF A CRIMINAL WHO DOES NOT NAME HIS CRIME DEFINITELY

Aba `Ummah said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! I have committed a crime which involves prescribed punishment. So inflict it on me. He said: Have you not performed ablution when you came? He said: Yes. He said: Have you not prayed with us when we prayed? He said: Yes. He then said: Go off, for Allah, the Exalted, forgave you.

Chapter 1614

INVESTIGATION BY BEATING A CRIMINAL

Azhar b. `Abd Allah al-Harari said: Some goods of the people of Killa were stolen. They accused some men of the weavers (of theft). They came to Nu'man b. Bashir, the Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He confined them for some days and then set them free. They came to al-Nu'man and said: You have set them free without beating and investigation. Al-Nu'man said: What do you want? You want that I should beat them. If your goods are found with them, then it is all right; otherwise, I shall take (retaliation) from your back as I have taken from their backs. They asked: Is this your decision? He said: This is the decision of Allah.

3817. This shows that a judge should make suggestions to a criminal who confesses his crime. He might have misunderstood the crime, or not committed it. By these suggestions the judge should try to avoid inflicting punishment on him. Besides, it also shows that a sin of a criminal is not forgiven by punishment. Even after punishment, he should beg pardon of Allah.

3818. This tradition has been explained variably. It is not possible that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) would forgive a prescribed punishment. The man might have misunderstood the crime. That might be a minor sin which the man had taken as subject to prescribed punishment. Secondly, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) avoided inflicting punishment, for the man did not mention his crime clearly. When he concealed the crime, he did not insist on disclosing it. Thirdly, that was not even a major sin, for only minor sins are forgiven by performing ablution and saying prayer.

3819. The name of a place.
and His Apostle (may peace be upon him). 3820

Abū Dāwūd said: By this statement he frightened them; that is, beating is not necessary except after acknowledgment.

Chapter 1615

FOR HOW MUCH PROPERTY A THIEF'S HAND SHOULD BE CUT OFF?

(4370) 'Ā'ishah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to cut off a thief's hand for a quarter of a dinār and upwards. 3821

(4371) 'Ā'ishah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A thief's hand should be cut off for a quarter of a dinār and upwards.

Ahmād b. Ṣāliḥ said: The amputation (of a thief's hand) is for a quarter of a dinār and upwards.

(4372) Ibn 'Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had a thief's hand cut off for a shield worth three dirhams. 3822

(4373) 'Abd Allah b. Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had a man's hand cut off who had stolen from the place reserved for women a shield whose price was three dirhams.

(4374) Ibn 'Abbās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had a man's hand cut off for (stealing) a shield whose price was a dinār or ten

3820. This shows that beating and molesting an accused is not permissible during investigation. Islam does not allow to force an accused to acknowledge his crime by beating him.

3821. The Qurʾān prescribes that a thief's hand should be cut off. But it does not describe for how much property it should be cut off. According to al-Ḥasan, Zāhirī and Khawārij, no limit has been prescribed. It can be amputated for stealing the property of any value, more or less. There is a difference of opinion among scholars about the value of property for which a thief's hand is cut off. There are ten points of view on this issue. According to al-Shāfi`ī, the value of property is a quarter of a dinār or which amounts to its price; it may be three dirhams, more or less. But it is not cut off for less than a quarter of a dinār. This is also held by 'Ā'ishah, 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz, al-Ausāf, al-Laith, Ābu Thawr, Iṣḥāq and others. Mālik, Ahmād and Iṣḥāq maintain that the value is a quarter of a dinār or three dirhams or which amounts to its price. According to Ābu Ḥanīfah, the standard for amputation of a thief's hand is ten dirhams, or a property equivalent in value ('Awār al-Maʿbūd, IV, 235-36).

3822. The standard of cutting off a thief's hand was a quarter of a dinār which was equivalent to three dirhams in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). But it may be noted that if a quarter of a dinār is not equivalent to three dirhams, a thief's hand will not be cut off only for three dirhams. The value of a quarter of a dinār will be taken into consideration.

3823. Suffāh: space reserved for women in the mosque.
Abū Dāwūd said: Muḥammad b. Salamah and Sa’dān b. Yaḥyā have transmitted it from Ibn Ishāq through his chain of narrators.

(4375) Muḥammad b. Yaḥyā b. Ḥibbān said: A slave stole a plant of a palm-tree from the orchard of a man and implanted it in the orchard of his master. The owner of the plant went out in search of the plant and he found it. He solicited help against the slave from Marwān b. al-Ḥakam who was the Governor of Medina at that time. Marwān confined the slave and intended to cut off his hand. The slave's master went to Rāfī' b. Khadlij and asked him about it. He told him that he had heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: The hand is not to be cut off for taking fruit or the pith of the palm-tree. The man then said: Marwān has siezed my slave and wants to cut off his hand. I wish that you may go with me to him and tell him that which you have heard from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). So Rāfī' b. Khadlij went with him and came to Marwān b. al-Ḥakam. Rāfī' said to him: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: The hand is not to be cut off for taking fruit or the pith of the palm-tree. So Marwān gave orders to release the slave and then he was released.

Abū Dāwūd said: Kathar means pith of the palm-tree.

(4376) This tradition has also been transmitted by Muḥammad b. Yaḥyā b. Ḥibbān through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: Marwān gave him some lashes and let him go.

(4377) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, said his grandfather, ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. al-‘Ās, told that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked about fruit which was hung up and said: If a needy person takes some with his mouth and does not take a supply away in his garment, there is nothing on him, but he who carries any of it is to be fined twice the value and punished, and he who steals any of it after it has been put in the place where dates are dried to have his

3824. This tradition is a basis for the viewpoint held by Abū Ḥanīfah. According to Ḥanafī jurists, the price of a shield for which a thief’s hand was cut off was ten dirhams and not three. They contend that the traditions of ‘Ā’ishah and Ibn ‘Umar have confusion. The opponents reply that one of the narrators of the tradition regarding ten dirhams is Ibn Ishāq who is objectionable. He is not reliable. The traditions of ‘Ā’ishah and Ibn ‘Umar are sound.

3825. There is a difference of opinion among scholars about amputating the hand for stealing fruits and plants. Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that the hand is not to be cut off for stealing fresh fruits whether guarded or not. On the analogy of fruits he says that the hand will not be amputated for stealing flesh, milk and drinks. According to Mālik and al-Shāfi‘ī, the hand will be cut off for stealing plants, fruits, flesh, drinks, and milk when they are guarded. If they are not guarded, the hand will not be cut off (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 238).
hand cut off if their value reaches the value of a shield. If he steals a thing less in value than it, he is to be fined twice the value and punished.  

Abū Dāwūd said: Jārin means the place where dates are dried.

Chapter 1616

THE HAND IS NOT TO BE CUT OFF FOR SNATCHING AND TREACHERY

(4378) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Cutting of the hand is not to be inflicted on one who plunders, but he who plunders conspicuously does not belong to us.

He also said through this chain: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Cutting of the hand is not to be inflicted on one who is treacherous.  

(4379) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Jābir through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: Cutting of the hand is not to be inflicted on one who snatches something.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn Juraij did not hear these two traditions from Abū al-Zubair. I have been informed by Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal saying: Ibn Juraij heard them from Yāṣīn al-Zayyāt.  

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Mughrah b. Muslim has transmitted it from Abū al-Zubair from Jābir from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Chapter 1617

ON A MAN WHO STEALS FROM A FORTIFIED PLACE

(4380) Ṣafwān b. Umayyah said: I was sleeping in the mosque on a cloak of

3826. If a needy person takes some dates hung up in the tree with his mouth to satisfy his hunger, he is not to be blamed. He is allowed to do so. But he is not allowed to take away any of it. If he takes away before plucking the fruits and drying them, he is to be fined and punished. But if he takes away from the place where dates are dried, and their value reaches the price of a shield, his hand will be cut off. It may be noted that the place where dates are dried is a guarded place.

3827. This shows that the hand of a plunderer and a treacherous person will not be cut. This is held by all the jurists. But Īṣāq b. Rāhwaḥ and Aḥmad maintain that if a man borrows something and then refuses to return it or denies, his hand will be amputated.

3828. This tradition indicates that the hand of a snatcher will not be cut off.

3829. Yāṣīn al-Zayyāt was a weak transmitter. But al-Tirmidhī and Ibn Ḥibbān have established that Ibn Juraij had heard these traditions from Abū al-Zubair. Therefore this tradition is not weak.
mine whose price was thirty dirhams. A man came and pinched it away from me. The
man was seized and brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He
ordered that his hand should be cut off. I came to him and said: Do you cut off only
for thirty dirhams? I sell it to him and make the payment of its price a loan? He
said: Why did you not do so before bringing him to me?3830

Abū Dāwūd said: Zā‘idah has also transmitted it from Simāk from Ju‘aid b.
Hujair. He said: Šafwān slept. Muḥāhid and Tāwūs said: While he was sleeping a
thief came and stole the cloak from beneath his head. The version of Abū Salamah b.
‘Abd al-Raḥmān has: He snatched it away from beneath his head and he awoke. He
cried and he (the thief) was siezed. Al-Zuhri narrated from Šafwān b. ‘Abd Allah.
His version has: He slept in the mosque and used his cloak as a pillow. A thief came
and took his cloak. The thief was siezed and brought to the Prophet (may peace be
upon him).

Chapter 1618

CUTTING OF THE HAND IN CASE ONE DENIES THE LOAN

(4381) Ibn ‘Umar said: A Makhzūmī woman used to borrow goods and deny
having received them, so the Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave orders and her
hand was cut off.3831

Abū Dāwūd said: Juwairīyyah has transmitted it from Nāfī‘ from Ibn ‘Umar or
from Šafyūyah daughter of Abū ‘Ubaid. This version adds: The Prophet (may peace
be upon him) got up and gave an address saying: Is there any woman who repents
to Allah, the Exalted, and to His Apostle? He said it three times. That (woman) was
present there but she did not get up and speak. Ibn Ghunj transmitted it from Nāfī‘
from Šafyūyah daughter of Abū ‘Ubaid. This version has: He witnessed to her.

3830. This shows that if a criminal is produced before a judge, and his crime is established,
he cannot condone the prescribed punishment. Moreover, the hand of a thief is cut off only when
he steals a thing from a place which is guarded and fortified. If he steals from a public place, his
hand will not be cut.

3831. There are different versions of this tradition. Some versions have “had committed
theft”, and others have “used to borrow goods and deny having received them”. Al-Bukhārī does
not mention the words about borrowing goods. The narrators of “theft” are more than those who
narrated “used to borrow goods”. On the basis of this tradition, Aḥmad and Iḥṣāq b. Rāḥwah
hold that the hand of a man who borrows goods and denies having received them shall be cut off.
According to the generality of scholars, the hand of such a criminal will not be cut off. They con­tend
that denying a loan is not a theft. Loan is a deposit and there is no such punishment on deny­ing a deposit (‘Aww al-Ma‘ḥūd, IV, 241-42).
(4382) ‘A’ishah said: A woman borrowed jewellery through some known persons and she herself was unknown. She then sold them. She was seized and brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He gave orders that her hand should be cut off. It is this woman about whom Usâmah interceded and of her the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said whatever he said.

(4383) ‘A’ishah said: A Makhzûml woman used to borrow goods and deny having received them. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave orders that her hand should be cut off. He (the narrator) then narrated the tradition similar to the one transmitted by Qutaibah from al-Laith from Ibn Shihâb. This version adds: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had her hand cut off.

Chapter 1619

ON A LUNATIC WHO COMMITS THEFT OR A CRIME TO WHICH THE PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT APPLIES

(4384) ‘A’ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There are three (persons) whose actions are not recorded: a sleeper till he awakes, an idiot till he is restored to reason, and a boy till he reaches puberty.3832

(4385) Ibn ‘Abbas said: A lunatic woman who had committed adultery was brought to ‘Umar. He consulted the people and ordered that she should be stoned. ‘All b. AbI Ṭâlib passed by and said: What is the matter with this (woman)? They said: This is a lunatic woman belonging to the family of so and so family. She has committed adultery. ‘Umar has given orders that she should be stoned. He said: Go back with her. He then came to him and said: Commander of the Faithful, do you not know that there are three whose actions are not recorded: a lunatic till he is restored to reason, a sleeper till he awakes, and a boy till he reaches puberty? He said: Yes. He then asked: What is the matter then that this woman is being stoned? He said: There is nothing. He then said: Let her go. He (‘Umar) let her go and began to utter: Allah is most great.

(4386) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by al-A‘mash through a different chain of narrators. He also said: “... till he reaches puberty, and a lunatic till he is restored to consciousness.” ‘Umar then began to utter: Allah is most great.

3832. These three categories of persons are not legally responsible for their actions. If they commit a crime, they will not be punished. If they make an agreement or enter into a contract, that will not be valid. The contract of marriage, or a sale transaction, divorce and emancipation of a slave will not be effective from these persons.
(4387) Ibn ‘Abbás said: A lunatic woman passed by ‘All b. Abi Ṭālib. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect as ‘Uthmān mentioned. This version has: Do you not remember that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) has said: There are three whose actions are not recorded: a lunatic whose mind is deranged till he is restored to consciousness, a sleeper till he awakes, and a boy till he reaches puberty?

(4388) Abū Zubyān said: A woman who had committed fornication was brought to ‘Umar. He gave orders that she should be stoned. ‘All (Allah be pleased with him) passed (by that way). He seized her and let her go. ‘Umar was informed about it. He said: Ask ‘All to come to me. ‘All came to him and said: Commander of the Faithful, you know that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: There are three (persons) whose actions are not recorded: a boy till he reaches puberty, a sleeper till he awakes, a lunatic till he is restored to reason. This is an idiot woman belonging to the family of so and so. Someone might have done this action with her when she suffered the fit of lunacy. ‘Umar said: I do not know. ‘All said: I do not know.3833

(4389) ‘All reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: There are three (persons) whose actions are not recorded: a sleeper till he awakes, a boy till he reaches puberty, and a lunatic till he comes to reason.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn Juraij has transmitted it from al-Qāsim b. Yazīd on the authority of ‘All from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version adds: “and an old man who is feeble-minded”.3834

**Chapter 1620**

**ON A BOY WHO COMMITS A CRIME TO WHICH THE PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT APPLIES**

(4390) ‘Atīyyah al-Quraishī said: I was among the captives of Banū Quraish. They (the Companions) examined us, and those who had begun to grow hair (pubes) were killed, and those who had not were not killed. I was among those who had not grown hair.3835

(4391) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘Abd al-Malik b. ‘Umar through a different chain of narrators. This version has: They un-

3833. As her case was doubtful, the prescribed punishment could not be inflicted on her.
3834. A feeble-minded old man is also like a boy or a lunatic.
3835. The growing of hair on the private part was a sign of puberty. The minor children were not to be killed. The prescribed punishment does not apply to children.
covered my private parts, and when they found that the hair had not begun to grow, they put me among the captives.

(4392) Ibn 'Umar said: He was presented before the Prophet (may peace be upon him) on the day of Uḥud when he was fourteen years old, but he did not allow him (to participate in the battle). He was again presented before him on the day of Khandaq when he was fifteen years old, then he allowed him.

(4393) Nāfi' said: When I mentioned this tradition to 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz, he said: This prescribed punishment is between the minor and the major.  

Chapter 1621

ON A MAN WHO COMMITS THEFT DURING A WARLIKE EXPEDITION—SHOULD HIS HAND BE CUT OFF?

(4394) Junādah b. Abī Umayyah said: We were with Busr b. Arjāt on the sea (on an expedition). A thief called Miṣdar who had stolen a bukhīl she-camel was brought. He said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Hands are not to be cut off during a warlike expedition. Had it not been so, I would have cut it off.  

Chapter 1622

ON CUTTING THE HAND OF A MAN WHO STEALS THE SHROUD OF A DEAD BODY FROM THE GRAVE

(4395) Abū Dharr said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: O Abū Dharr: I replied: At your service and at your pleasure, Apostle of Allah! He said: How will you do when death smites people, and a house, meaning a grave, will cost as much as a slave.  

3836. Fifteen years is the age of puberty. The prescribed punishment applies to adults and not to minors.

3837. According to al-Auzā’ī, the hand of a thief shall not be cut off during a journey. But the majority of scholars hold that in this tradition the journey means the one made for a warlike expedition. If someone steals during a battle, his hand will not be cut. But during an ordinary journey, his hand will be cut. The other explanation is that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) might have meant theft of the booty. If a man steals from the booty, his hand will not be cut.

3838. Here death refers to severe pestilence. It means the people will die in large numbers and the graves will be costly as much as the cost of a slave.
or he said: What Allah and His Apostle choose for me. He said: Show endurance, or he said: You may show endurance.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ḥammād b. Abī Sulaimān said: The hand of one who rifles a grave should be cut off because he had entered the deceased’s house.3839

Chapter 1623

ON A THIEF WHO COMMITS THEFT REPEATEDLY

(4396) Jābir b. ‘A bd Allah said: A thief was brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: Kill him. The people said: He has committed theft, Apostle of Allah! Then he said: Cut off his hand. So his (right) hand was cut off. He was brought a second time and he said: Kill him. The people said: He has committed theft, Apostle of Allah! Then he said: Cut off. So his (left) foot was cut off. He was brought a third time and he said: Kill him. The people said: He has committed theft, Apostle of Allah! So he said: Cut off his hand. (So his [left] hand was cut off.) He was brought a fourth time and he said: Kill him. The people said: He has committed theft, Apostle of Allah! So he said: Cut off his hand. So his (right) foot was cut off. He was brought a fifth time and he said: Kill him. So we took him away and killed him. We then dragged him and cast him into a well and threw stones over him.3840

Chapter 1624

HANGING THE HAND OF A THIEF ON HIS NECK

(4397) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Muhārīrz said: We asked Fadālah b. ‘Ubad about hanging the (amputated) hand on the neck of a thief whether it was a sunnan. He

3839. There is a difference of opinion among scholars about cutting off the hand of a man who steals the shroud of a dead body from the grave. According to Ibn ‘Abbās, Sufyān al-Thawrī, al-Auzā’ī, al-Zuhārī, Abū Ḥanīfah and Muhammad b. al-Ḥasan, his hand shall not be cut off. Abū Yūsuf and the rest of the jurists maintain that his hand shall be cut off. This is also held by Ḫum, Ibn Mas‘ūd, ‘Ā’ishah, Abū Thawr, al-Ḥasan, al-Shābī, al-Nakha’ī, Qatādah Ḥammād and ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 247).

3840. The killing of this thief might be due to his apostasy or sedition or some other crime. A thief is never killed for theft. Besides, this tradition has been abrogated by another tradition which says: A Muslim may not be killed but for three reasons: a life for a life, a married man who commits fornication, and one who turns aside from one’s religion and abandons the community. It has been transmitted by al-Bukhārī and Muslim. Moreover, this tradition mentioned in the text is weak. The narrator Mus‘āb b. Thābit is not reliable (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 248).
said: A thief was brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and his hand was cut off. Thereafter he commanded for it, and it was hung on his neck.\(^{3841}\)

Chapter 1625
SALE OF A SLAVE WHEN HE COMMITS THEFT

(4398) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a slave steals, sell him, even though it be for half an ḥiqiyah.\(^{3842}\)

Chapter 1626
STONING OF A FORNICATOR

(4399) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Qur’ānic verse goes: “If any of your women are guilty of lewdness, take the evidence of four (reliable) witnesses from amongst you against them, and, if they testify, confine them to houses until death do chain them or Allah ordains for them some (other) way.”\(^{3843}\) Allah then mentioned man after woman and combined them in another verse: “If two men among you are guilty of lewdness, punish them both. If they repent and amend, leave them alone.\(^{3844}\) This command was abrogated by the verse relating to flogging: “The woman and the man guilty of adultery or fornication—flog each of them with one hundred stripes.”\(^{3843}\)

(4400) Mujāhid said: “Appointing a way” in this verse (iv. 15) means prescribed punishment.

Sufyān said: “Punish them” refers to unmarried, and “confine them to houses

\(^{3841}\). This shows that after cutting of the hand, it should be hung on the neck of the thief. But this tradition is weak.

\(^{3842}\). Nashš. This is half an ḥiqiyah, or twenty dirhams. It means that the slave who steals should be sold for a lower price, whatever it may be. According to the generality of scholars, the hand of a slave shall be cut off, whether he is run away or not. This tradition is weak. The narrator ‘Umar b. Abī Salamah is not reliable.

\(^{3843}\). Qur’ān, iv. 15.

\(^{3844}\). Qur’ān, iv. 16.

\(^{3845}\). Qur’ān, xxiv. 2. In the beginning the fornicator, male or female, was confined to a house. But when verse xxiv. 2 about flogging a fornicator was revealed, this punishment was repealed. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) is reported as saying: Receive my teaching, receive my teaching. Allah has appointed a way for those women. When the parties are unmarried they shall receive a hundred lashes and be banished for a year when they commit fornication. But when they have been married, they shall receive one hundred lashes and be stoned to death. This shows that an unmarried fornicator will be flogged and a married will be stoned to death.
refers to the women who are married.

(4401) 'Ubādah b. al-Šāmit reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Receive my teaching, receive my teaching. Allah has appointed a way for those women.3846 If the parties have been married, they shall receive a hundred lashes and be stoned to death.3847 If the parties are unmarried, they shall receive a hundred lashes and be banished for a year.3848

(4402) A similar tradition has been transmitted by al-Ḥasan through a chain of Yaḥyā and to the same effect. This version adds: They shall receive one hundred lashes and be stoned to death.

(4403) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by 'Ubādah b. al-Šāmit through a different chain of narrators. This version has: The people said to Sa'd b. 'Ubādah; Abū Thabit, the prescribed punishments have been revealed; if you find a man with your wife, what will you do? He said: I shall strike them with sword so much so that they become silent (i.e. die). Should I go and gather four witnesses? Until that (time) the need would be fulfilled. So they went away and gathered with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! did you not see Abū Thabit, he said so-and-so? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The sword is a sufficient witness. He then said: No, no, a furious and a jealous man may follow this course.3849

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by Wāki' from al-Fadl b. Dilham from al-Ḥasan, from Qālīṣah b. Ḥuraith, from Salamah b. al-Muḥabbāq, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). And this is the chain of the tradition narrated by Ibn al-Muḥabbāq to the effect that a man had sexual intercourse with a slavegirl of his wife.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Fadl b. Dilham was not the memoriser of traditions. He was a butcher in Wāṣiṭ.

(4404) 'Abd Allah b. 'Abbās said: 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb gave an address saying:

3846. Qur'ān, iv. 15.

3847. It is disputed whether a married fornicator shall be flogged and stoned to death. A group of scholars maintain that both punishments should be inflicted on him They are: 'Abbās al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, Ishaq b. Rāhwaḥ, Dāwūd, and Aḥī al-Ẓāhir, and also some Shāfī' scholars. But scholars in general maintain that he should be only stoned to death.

3848. Banishment for one year along with flogging is also disputed. Al-Shāfī' and generality of scholars hold that banishment along with flogging is necessary for both men and women. According to al-Ḥasan, banishment is not necessary. Mālik and al-Azā'i hold that banishment does not apply to women. According to Abū Ḥanīfah, banishment is not necessary. But the authorities may do so if it is advisable.

3849. This shows that one should make an inquiry about the crime. A wrathful or an enthusiastic man may kill the criminal in a fit of frenzy on the least suspicion.
Allah sent Muhammad (may peace be upon him) with truth and sent down the Book to him, and the verse of stoning was included in what He sent down to him. We read it and memorised it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had people stoned to death and we have done it also since his death. I am afraid the people might say with the passage of time: We do not find the verse of stoning in the Book of Allah, and thus they stray by abandoning a duty which Allah had revealed. Stoning is a duty laid down (by Allah) for married men and women who commit fornication when proof is established, or if there is pregnancy, or a confession. I swear by Allah, had it not been so that people might say: ‘Umar made an addition to Allah’s Book, I would have written it (there).  

Chapter 1627

STONING OF MĀ‘IZ B. MĀLIK

(4405) Yazld b. Nu‘aim b. Huzzāl, on his father’s authority said: Mā‘iz b. Mālik was an orphan under the protection of my father. He had sexual intercourse with a slavegirl belonging to a clan. My father said to him. Go to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and inform him what you have done, for he may perhaps ask Allah for forgiveness for him. His purpose in that was simply a hope that it might be a way of escape for him. So he went to him and said: Apostle of Allah! I have committed fornication, so inflict on me the punishment ordained by Allah. He (the Prophet) turned away from him, so he came back and said: Apostle of Allah! I have committed fornication, so inflict on me the punishment ordained by Allah. He (again) turned away from him, so he came back and said: Apostle of Allah! I have committed fornication, so inflict on me the punishment ordained by Allah. When he uttered it four times, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: You have said it four times. With whom did you commit it? He replied: With so and so. He asked: Did you lie with her? He replied: Yes. He asked: Had your skin been in contact with hers? He replied. Yes. He asked: Did you have intercourse with her? He said: Yes. So he (the Prophet) gave orders that he should be stoned to death. He was then taken out to the Ḥarrah, 3851 and, while he was being stoned he felt the effect of the stones and could not bear it, and fled. But ‘Abd Allah b. Unais encountered him when those, who had been stoning him could not catch upon him, threw the bone of a camel’s foreleg at him, which hit him and killed him. They then went to the

3850. The stoning verse was earlier in the Qur’ān, but its reading was abrogated, and it no longer exists there. The commandment of stoning which it contained still survives.
3851. A place with black stones near Medina.
Prophet (may peace be upon him) and reported it to him. He said: Why did you not leave him. Perhaps he might have repented and been forgiven by Allah.\textsuperscript{3852}

\textit{(4406)} Muḥammad b. Iṣḥāq said: I mentioned the story of Mā'īz b. Mālik to Āsim b. ‘Umar b. Qaṭādah. He said to me: Ḥasan b. Muḥammad b. ‘All b. Abī Ṭālib said to me: Some men of the tribe of Aslam whom I do not blame and whom you like have transmitted to me the saying of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): Why did you not leave him alone? He said: But I did not understand this tradition. So I went to Jābir b. ‘Ābd Allāh and said (to him): Some men of the tribe of Aslam narrate that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said when they mentioned to him the anxiety of Mā'īz when the stones hurt him: “Why did you not leave him alone? But I do not know this tradition. He said: My cousin, I know this tradition more than the people. I was one of those who had stoned the man. When we came out with him, stoned him and he felt the effect of the stones, he cried: O people! return me to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). My people killed me and deceived me; they told me that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would not kill me. We did not keep away from him till we killed him. When we returned to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) we informed him about it. He said: Why did you not leave him alone and bring him to me? and he said this so that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) might ascertain it from him. But he did not say this to abandon the prescribed punishment. He said: I then understood the intent of the tradition.\textsuperscript{3853}

\textit{(4407)} Ibn ‘Abbās said: Mā'īz b. Mālik came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said that he had committed fornication and he (the Prophet) turned away from him. He repeated it many times, but he (the Prophet) turned away from him. He asked his people: Is he mad? They replied: There is no defect in him. He asked: Have you done it with her? He replied: Yes. So he ordered that he should be stoned to death. He was taken out and stoned to death, and he (the Prophet) did not pray over him.\textsuperscript{3854}

\textsuperscript{3852.} As Mā'īz was married and confirmed his crime, he was stoned to death according to the Divine Commandment.

\textsuperscript{3853.} Ābū Ḥanīfah, al-Shāfi‘i and Aḥmād maintain that if the criminal runs away while he is being punished, he should be left alone. If he plainly withdraws from his confession, he will not be punished. But if he does not withdraw, he will be punished. According to Malik, he will not be left if he runs away. According to another statement of Malik, if he is seized immediately he will be punished, but not later on.

\textsuperscript{3854.} The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not pray over Mā'īz on the day when he was stoned. But next day he assembled the people and prayed over him in congregation (‘Awn al-Ma‘īd, IV, 256).
(4408) Jābir b. Samurah said: I saw Mā'iz b. Mālik when he was brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He was a small and muscular man. He did not wear the loose outer garment. He made confession about him four times that he had committed fornication. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Perhaps you kissed her. He said that this most discarded man has committed fornication. He said: So he had him stoned to death and gave an address, saying: Beware, whenever we go out on an expedition in the path of Allah, one of them (i.e. the people) lags behind with a bleating sound like that of a he-goat, and gives modicum of his milk (i.e. sperm) to one of the women. If Allah gives control over any of them, I shall deter him from them (i.e. women) by punishing him severely.

(4409) Simāk said: I heard this tradition from Jābir b. Samurah. But the first version is more perfect. This version has: He repeated it twice, Simāk said: I narrated it to Sa'īd b. Jubair. He said: He repeated it four times.

(4410) Shu‘bah said: I asked Simāk about the meaning of kuthbah. He said: A small quantity of milk.

(4411) Ibn ‘Abbas said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) asked Mā'iz b. Mālik: Is what I have heard about you true? He said: What have you heard about me? He said: I have heard that you have had intercourse with a girl belonging to the family of so and so. He said: Yes. He then testified four times. He (the Prophet) then gave order regarding him and he was stoned to death.

(4412) Ibn ‘Abbas said: Mā'iz b. Mālik came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and admitted fornication twice. But he drove him away. He then came and admitted fornication twice. He (the Prophet) said: You have testified to yourself four times. Take him away and stone him to death.

(4413) Ibn ‘Abbas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to Mā'iz b. Mālik: Perhaps you kissed, or squeezed, or looked. He said: No. He then said: Did you have intercourse with her? He said: Yes. On that (reply) he (the Prophet) gave orders that he should be stoned to death. The narrator Mūsā did not mention “on the authority of Ibn ‘Abbas”. This is Wahb’s version.

(4414) Abū Hurairah said: A man of the tribe of Aslam came to the Prophet

3855 There is a difference of opinion among scholars about confession. According to Abū Hānīfah, one should make confession four times in four different meetings. Ahmad and Ishāq hold that making confession four times in a meeting is sufficient. Mālik and al-Shafī‘i maintain that making confession once is valid.

3856 The Prophet (may peace be upon him) expressed fornication during the course of battle figuratively. He has compared the man with a he-goat and the women with one she-goats to show the contempt of this crime. Further, he expressed his desire to inflict severe punishment if he has control over such a criminal.
(may peace be upon him) and testified four times against himself that he had had illicit intercourse with a woman, while all the time the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was turning away from him. Then when he confessed a fifth time, he turned round and asked: Did you have intercourse with her? He replied: Yes. He asked: Have you done it so that your sexual organ penetrated hers? He replied: Yes. He asked: Have you done it like a collyrium stick when enclosed in its case and a rope in well? He replied: Yes. He asked: Do you know what fornication is? He replied: Yes, I have done with her unlawfully what a man may lawfully do with his wife. He then asked: What do you want by what you have said? He said: I want you to purify me. So he gave command regarding him and he was stoned to death. Then the Prophet (may peace be upon him) heard one of his Companions saying to another: Look at this man whose fault was concealed by Allah but who would not leave the matter alone, so that he was stoned like a dog. He said nothing to them but walked on for a time till he came to the corpse of an ass with its legs in the air. He asked: Where are so and so? They said: Here we are, Apostle of Allah! He said: Go down and eat some of this ass's corpse. They replied: Apostle of Allah! who can eat any of this? He said: The dishonour you have just shown to your brother is more serious than eating some of it. By Him in Whose hand my soul is, he is now among the rivers of Paradise plunging into them.

(4415) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Abū Hurairah through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: The narrator Ḥasan b. 'All said: The transmitters have differed in the wordings (of this tradition) reported to me. Some said: He (Mā'iz) was tied to a tree, and others said: He was made to stand.

(4416) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah said: A man of the tribe of Aslam came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and made confession of fornication. He (the Prophet) turned away from him. When he testified against him four times, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Are you mad? He said: No. He asked: Are you married? He replied: Yes. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then commanded regarding him and he was stoned in the place of prayer. Then when the stones hurt him, he fled, but was overtaken and stoned to death. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then spoke well of him and did not pray over him.\(^{3857}\)

\(^{3857}\) It means that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not pray on the day when he was stoned. He prayed over him next day. According to Mālik, the Muslim ruler should not pray over the man who is stoned to death on account of fornication, for he had committed a grave sin. But other people should pray over him. This is also held by Aḥmad. Al-Shāfī‘I and the rest of the jurists hold that the Muslim ruler and other Muslims may pray over him. Al-Qāḍī 'Iyād says that there is no difference of opinion amongst scholars on praying over the persons killed by inflicting prescribed punishment. Some hold that people of merit and eminence should not pray over them (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 257).
(4417) Abū Sa‘id said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) commanded to stone Mā‘īz b. Mālik, we took him out to Baqi’. I swear by Allah, we did not tie him, nor did we dig a pit\textsuperscript{3858} for him. But he was standing before us. The narrator Abū Kāmil said: So we threw at him bones, clods of mud and pieces of earthenware. He ran away and we ran after him till he came to a side of the Ḥarrah. He stood there before us and we threw at him big stones of the Ḥarrah until he died. He (the Prophet) did not ask forgiveness for him, nor did he speak ill of him.

(4418) Abū Naḍrah said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He then mentioned a similar tradition but not completely. This version has: People began to speak ill of him but he (the Prophet) forbade them. Then they began to ask forgiveness for him, but he forbade them saying. He is a man who had committed a sin. Allah will call him to account Himself.

(4419) Buraidah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) smelt the breath of Mā‘īz.\textsuperscript{3859}

(4420) Buraidah said: We, the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), used to talk mutually: Would that al-Ghāmilīyyah\textsuperscript{3860} and Mā‘īz b. Mālik had withdrawn after their confession; or he said: Had they not withdrawn after their confession, he would not have pursued them (for punishment). He had them stoned after the fourth (confession).\textsuperscript{3861}

(4421) Al-Lajlāj said that he was working in the market. A woman passed bearing a child. The people rushed towards her, and I also rushed along with them. I then went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) while he was asking: Who is the father of this (child) who is with you? She kept silence. A young man by her side said: I am his father, Apostle of Allah! He then turned towards her and asked: Who is the father of this child with you? The young man said: I am his father, Apostle of Allah! The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then looked at some of those who were around him and asked them about him. They said: We do not

3858. There is a difference of opinion among scholars about digging a pit for a man or a woman who is to be stoned. According to Abū Ḥanīfah, Mālik and Aḥmad, no pit shall be dug for any of them. Some Mālikī scholars hold that if the crime is established by evidence, a pit will be dug, and not if established by confession. According to the traditionists, a pit shall not be dug for a man. There are three opinions about the woman: recommended, neither recommended nor disapproved but left to the choice of the authorities, and approved if fornication is established by evidence and not if established by confession (‘Awn al Ma‘būd, IV, 257).

3859. He wanted to check whether he had taken wine.

3860. The name of a woman who also confessed fornication and was stoned to death.

3861. When they made confession four times, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered that they should be stoned.
know but good (about him). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to him: Are you married? He said: Yes. So he commanded regarding him and he was stoned to death. He (the narrator) said: We took him out and dug a pit for him and put him there. We then threw stones at him until he died. A man then came asking about the man who was stoned. We brought him to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: This man has come asking about the wicked. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: He is more agreeable than the fragrance of musk in the eyes of Allah. The man was his father. We then helped him in washing, shrouding and burying him. (The narrator said:) I do not know whether he said or did not say: "in praying over him."

This is the tradition of 'Abdah, and it is more perfect.

(4422) A part of this tradition has also been transmitted by al-Lajlaj from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators.

(4423) Šahl b. Sa'd said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and confessed before him that he had committed fornication with a woman whom he named. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent for the woman and asked her about it. But she denied that she had committed fornication. So he inflicted the prescribed punishment of flogging on him, and let her go.

(4424) Jabir said: A man committed fornication with a woman. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered regarding him and the prescribed punishment of flogging was inflicted on him. He was then informed that he was married. So he commanded regarding him and he was stoned to death.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by Muḥammad b. Bakr al-Barsānī from Ibn Juraij as a statement of Jabir, and Abū ʿĀṣim has transmitted it from Ibn Juraij similar to that of Ibn Wahib. He did not mention the Prophet (may peace be upon him). But he said: A man committed fornication, but did not know that he was married; so he was flogged. It was then known that he was married, so he was stoned to death.

(4425) Jabir said: A man committed fornication with a woman. It was not known that he was married. So he was flogged. It was then known that he was married, so he was stoned to death.

Chapter 1628

ON A WOMAN OF THE TRIBE OF JUHAINAH WHOM THE PROPHET (MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM) ORDERED TO BE STONED FOR COMMITTING FORNICATION

(4426) 'Imrān b. Ḥuṣain said: A woman belonging to the tribe of Juhainah-
(according to the version of Abān) came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said that she had committed fornication and that she was pregnant. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) called her guardian. Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to him: Do good to her, and when she bears a child, bring her (to me). When she delivered the child, he brought her (to him). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave orders regarding her, and her clothes were tied on her. He then commanded regarding her and she was stoned to death, and commanded the people (to pray) and they prayed over her. Thereupon ‘Umar said: Are you praying over her, Apostle of Allah, while she has committed fornication? He said: By Whom in Whose hand my soul is, she has repented to such an extent that if it were divided among the seventy people of Medina, it would have been enough for them all. And what do you find a thing better than the fact that she gave her life? Abān did not say in his version. Then her clothes were tied on her.

(4427) Al-Auzā’ī said: The word shukkat means tied, meaning her clothes were tied on her.

(4428) Buraidah said: A woman of Ghāmid came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: I have committed fornication. He said: Go back. She returned, and on the next day she came to him again, and said: Perhaps you want to send me back as you did to Mā‘iz b. Mālik. I swear by Allah, I am pregnant. He said to her: Go back. She then returned and came to him the next day. He said to her: Go back until you give birth to the child. She then returned. When she gave birth to the child, she brought the child to him, and said: Here it is! I have given birth to it. He said: Go back, and suckle him until you wean him. When she had weaned him, she brought him (the boy) to him with something in his hand which he was eating. The boy was then given to a certain man of the Muslims and he (the Prophet) commanded regarding her. So a pit was dug for her, and he gave orders about her and she was stoned to death. Khālid was one of those who were throwing stones at her. He threw a stone at her. When a drop of blood fell on his cheek, he abused her. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to him: Gently, Khālid. By Him in Whose hand my soul is, she has repented to such an extent that if one who wrongfully takes an extra tax were to repent to a like extent, he would be forgiven. Then giving command.

3862. Her clothes were tied so that her private part might not be uncovered. It is unanimously agreed that a woman is stoned to death in the sitting condition while a man in the standing condition.

3861. Ṣāḥib maks: maks was a tax taken from the sellers in the market in pre-Islamic times; it also means something taken by a tax-collector over and above that is due. The sin of such a tax-collector was grave. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) compared his sin with the sin of a fornicator.
regarding her, prayed over her and she was buried.

(4429) Zakariyā Abī ‘Imrān said: I heard an old man who transmitted from Abū Bakrah on his father’s authority that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had a woman stoned and a pit was dug up to her breasts.

Abū Dāwūd said: A man made me understand it from ‘Uthmān (b. Abī Shaibah).

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Ghassānī said: Juhainah, Ghāmid and Bāriq are the same.

Abū Dāwūd said: A similar tradition has been transmitted by Zakariyā b. Sallām through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: He (the Prophet) then threw a pebble like a gram at her. He then said: Throw at her and avoid her face. When she died, he took her out and prayed over her. About repentance he said similar to the tradition of Buraidah.

(4430) Abā Hurairah and Zaid b. Khālid al-Juḥānī said: Two men brought a dispute before the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). One of them said: Pronounce judgment between us in accordance with Allah’s Book, Apostle of Allah! The other who had more understanding said: Yes, Apostle of Allah! pronounce judgment between us in accordance with Allah’s Book, and allow me to speak. He (the Prophet) said: Speak. He then said: My son who was a hired servant with this (man) committed fornication with his wife, and when I was told that my son must be stoned to death, I ransomed him with a hundred sheep and a slavegirl of mine; but when I asked the learned, they told me that my son should receive a hundred lashes and be banished for a year, and that stoning to death applied only to the man’s wife. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) replied: By Him in Whose hand my soul is, I shall certainly pronounce judgment between you in accordance with Allah’s Book. Your sheep and your slavegirl must be returned to you, and your son shall receive a hundred lashes and be banished for a year. And he commanded Unais al-Aslamī to go to that man’s wife, and if she confessed, he should stone her to death. She confessed and he stoned her.

Chapter 1629

STONEING A JEW AND A JEWESS FOR COMMITTING FORNICATION

(4431) Ibn ‘Umar said: Some Jews came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and mentioned to him that a man and a woman of their number had com-
mitted fornication. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) asked them: What do you find in the Torah about stoning? They replied: We disgrace them and they should be flogged. ‘Abd Allah b. Salām said: You lie; it contains (instructions for) stoning. So they brought the Torah and spread it out, and one of them put his hand over the verse of stoning and read what preceded it and what followed it. ‘Abd Allah b. Salām said to him: Lift your hand. When he did so, the verse of stoning was seen to be in it. They then said: He has spoken the truth, Muḥammad, the verse of stoning is in it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then gave command regarding them, and they were stoned to death.3865 ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: I saw the man leaning on the woman protecting her from the stones.

(4432) Al-Barā’ b. ‘Āzib said: The people passed by the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) with a Jew whose face was blackened with charcoal and he was being taken around. He adjured them by Allah and asked: What is the prescribed punishment for a fornicator in your Divine Book? He (the narrator) said: They referred him to a man of them. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) adjured him and asked: What is the prescribed punishment for a fornicator in your Divine Book? He replied: Stoning. But fornication spread among our people of rank, so we disliked that a person of rank should be left alone and the punishment be inflicted on one who is lower in rank than him. So we suspended it for us. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then commanded regarding him and he was stoned to death. He then said: O Allah! I am the first to give life to a command of Thy Book which they had killed.

(4433) Al-Barā’ b. ‘Āzib said: The people passed by the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) with a Jew who was blackened with charcoal and being flogged. He called them and said: Do you find so the prescribed punishment for a fornicator? They said: Yes. He then called on a learned man of them and asked him: I adjure you by Allah Who revealed the Torah to Moses, do you find so the prescribed punishment for a fornicator in your Divine Book? He said: By Allah, no. If you had not adjured me by this, I would not have informed you. We find stoning as the prescribed punishment for a fornicator in our Divine Book. But it (fornication) became frequent in our people of rank: so when we seized a person of rank, we left him alone.

3865. This shows that even non-Muslims will be stoned to death if they commit fornication and they are married. This is held by al-Shāfi‘i and Ahmad. Islam is not a condition for being a muḥṣin. The Mālikis and most of the Ḥanafis stipulate Islam for being a muḥṣin. Hence non-Muslims will not be stoned to death if they commit fornication. They contend that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) inflicted this punishment in accordance with the commandment of the Torah, and not with under Islamic injunctions. But this contention has been refuted by their opponents (‘Awm al-Ma‘bud, IV, 263).
and when we seized a weak person, we inflicted the prescribed punishment on him. So we said: Come on, let us agree on a thing which may enforce equally on a person of higher and lower rank. So we agreed on blackening the face of a criminal with charcoal, and flogging him, and we abandoned stoning. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: O Allah, I am the first to give life to Thine command which they had killed. So he commanded regarding him (the Jew) and he was stoned to death. Allah Most High then sent down: “O Apostle, let not those grieve thee, who race each other into unbelief . . .” up to “They say: If you are given this, take it, but if not, beware! . . .” up to “And if any do fail to judge by (the light of) what Allah hath revealed, they are (no better than) unbelievers,” about Jews, up to “And if any do fail to judge by (the light of) what Allah hath revealed, they are (no better than) wrong-doers” about Jews; and revealed the verses up to “And if any do fail to judge by (the light of) what Allah hath revealed, they are (no better than) those who rebel.” About this he said: This whole verse was revealed about the infidels.

(4434) Ibn ‘Umar said: A group of Jews came and called on the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to Quff. So he visited them in their school. They said; Abū al-Qāsim, a man of us has committed fornication with a woman; so pronounce judgment upon them. They placed a cushion for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who sat on it and said: Bring the Torah. It was then brought. He then withdrew the cushion from beneath him and placed the Torah on it saying: I believed in thee and in Him Who revealed thee. He then said: Bring me one who is learned among you. Then a young man was brought. The transmitter then mentioned the rest of the tradition of stoning similar to the one transmitted by Mālik from Nāfi’.

(4435) Abū Hurairah said (this is Ma’mar’s version which is more perfect): A man and a woman of the Jews committed fornication. Some of them said to others: Let us go to this Prophet, for he has been sent with an easy law. If he gives a judgment lighter than stoning, we shall accept it, and argue from it with Allah saying: A judgment of a Prophet from your Prophets. So they came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) who was sitting in the mosque among his Companions. They said: Abū al-Qāsim, what do you think about a man and a woman who committed fornication? He did not speak to them a word till went to their school. He stood at the gate and

3866. Qurʾān, v. 44.
3867. Qurʾān, v. 47.
3868. Qurʾān, v. 48.
3869. Qurʾān, v. 50.
3870. Though these verses were revealed about the Jews and infidels, but the Commandment applies to all.
3871. The name of a valley in Medina.
3872. His name was ‘Abd Allah b. Sūriyā.
said: I adjure you by Allah Who revealed the Torah to Moses, what (punishment) do you find in the Torah for a person who commits fornication if he is married? They said: He shall be blackened with charcoal, taken round among the people on a donkey, and flogged. A young man of them kept silence. When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) emphatically adjured him, he said: By Allah, since you have adjured us, (we inform you that) we find stoning in the Torah (as punishment for fornication). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: So when did you take Allah's command as easy? He said: A relative of a certain king of our kings had committed fornication, but he suspended stoning from them. Then a man of a family of common men committed fornication, and he intended to have him stoned. But his people intervened and said: Our man shall not be stoned until you bring your man and stone him. So they made a compromise on this punishment between them. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: So I decide in accordance with what the Torah says. He then commanded regarding them and they were stoned to death.

Al-Zuhri said: We have been informed that this verse was revealed about them: "It was We Who revealed the Law (to Moses): therein was guidance and light. By its standard have been judged the Jews, by the Prophet who bowed (as in Islam) to Allah's will." (4436) Abū Hurairah said: A man and a woman of the Jews who were married committed fornication at the time when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to Medina. Stoning was a prescribed punishment for them in accordance with the Torah. But they abandoned it and followed tajbiyyah, meaning, the man was beaten a hundred times with a rope painted with tar and was seated on a donkey with his face towards the tail of the donkey. Their rabbis then assembled and sent some people to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). They said to them: Ask him about the prescribed punishment for a fornicator. The transmitter then mentioned the rest of the tradition. This version adds: They were not the followers of his religion, and he (the Prophet) was to pronounce judgment between them. So he was given a choice in this verse: "If they do come to thee, either judge between them, or decline to interfere." 3875

3873. *Tajbiyyah* means to make the man and woman who committed fornication ride on a donkey with their backs together and to taken them round among the people.

3874. Qur'ān, v. 47.

3875. Qur'ān, v. 45. This shows that the Muslim authorities should judge between non-Muslims in accordance with their own scriptures. But it is disputed whether they should judge in accordance with the Qur'ān or they have any choice. Ibn 'Abbās, 'Atā', Mujāhid, 'Ikrimah, al-Zuhri, and 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz hold that the Muslim authorities should judge between non-Muslims in accordance with the Qur'ān. They think that verse v. 45 has been abrogated by verse v. 51. There is no choice now. This is a more correct view.
(4437) Jabir b. ‘Abd Allah said: The Jews brought a man and a woman of them who had committed fornication. He said: Bring me two learned men of yours. So they brought the two sons of Şūriyā. He adjured them and said: How do you think about the matter of these two persons in the Torah? They said: We find in the Torah that if four persons bear witness to the effect that they have seen his sexual organ in her female organ (penetrated) like a collyrium stick when enclosed in its case, they will be stoned to death. He asked: What is there which prevents you from stoning them? They replied: Our rule has gone, so we disapproved of killing. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then called four witnesses. They brought four witnesses who testified that they had seen his sexual organ (penetrated) in her female organ like a collyrium stick when enclosed in its case. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then gave orders for stoning them.

(4438) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Ibrāhīm and al-Sha’bī from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. But this version does not mention the words: He called the witnesses who testified.

(4439) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by al-Sha’bī through a different chain of narrators.

(4440) Jabir b. ‘Abd Allah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) had a man and a woman of the Jews who had committed fornication stoned to death.

---

Chapter 1630

ON A MAN WHO COMMITS FORNICATION WITH HIS FEMALE RELATIVE WITHIN PROHIBITED DEGREES

(4441) Al-Barā’ b. ‘Āzib said: While I was wandering in search of my camels which had strayed, a caravan or some horsemen carrying a standard came forward. The bedouins began to go round me for my position with the Prophet (may peace be upon him). They came to a domed structure, took out a man from it, and struck his neck. I asked about him. They told me that he had married his father’s wife.

(4442) Al-Barā’ b. ‘Āzib said: I met my uncle who was carrying a standard. I asked him: Where are you going? He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) has sent me to a man who has married his father’s wife. He has ordered

3876. This shows that four witnesses are necessary for inflicting punishment for fornication. The Qur’ān has prescribed four witnesses as the Torah prescribed before it.

3877. The man married his father’s wife according to the custom of pre-Islamic Arabia and he considered it lawful. Hence he became an apostate. So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to kill him (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV. 267).
me to cut off his head and take his property.  

Chapter 1631

ON A MAN WHO COMMITS FORNICATION WITH HIS WIFE’S SLAVEGIRL

(4443) Ḥābl b. Ṣālim said: A man called ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ḥunainī had intercourse with his wife’s slavegirl. The matter was brought to Nu‘mān b. Bashīr who was the Governor of Kūfah. He said: I shall decide between you in accordance with the decision of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). If she made her lawful for you, I shall flog you one hundred lashes. If she did not make her lawful for you, I shall stone you to death. So they found that she had made her lawful for him. He, therefore, flogged him one hundred lashes. Qatādah said: I wrote to Ḥābl b. Ṣālim; so he wrote this (tradition) to me.  

(4444) Al-Nu‘mān b. Bashīr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying about a man who had (unlawful) intercourse with his wife’s slavegirl: If she made her lawful for him, he will be flogged one hundred lashes; if she did not make her lawful for him, I shall stone him.  

(4445) Salamah b. al-Muḥabbāq said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) made a decision about a man who had intercourse with his wife’s slavegirl as follows. If he forced her, she is free, and he shall give her mistress a slavegirl similar to her; if she asked him to have intercourse voluntarily, she will belong to him, and he shall give her mistress a slavegirl similar to her.  

3878. Marrying one’s father’s wife is forbidden in Islam. If a Muslim is aware of this prohibition, but considers it lawful opposing the Qur’ānic teaching, he becomes an apostate. It is said that in this incident the man who married his father’s wife opposed this prohibition of Islam, and intentionally considered it lawful for him. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to kill him for apostasy. Otherwise, ordinarily, if a man marries his father’s wife but thinks it a sin and believes in the prohibition of this marriage, he will be a sinner, not an apostate. Or the Prophet (may peace be upon him) punished him for fornication. These are two explanations of this tradition.  

3879. This question is disputed among scholars. Al-Tirmidhī says that ʿAlī, Ibn ʿUmar and many other Companions hold that a man who commits fornication with his wife’s slavegirl shall be stoned to death. Ibn Masʿūd holds that he should not be given any prescribed punishment. The judge may give any punishment to him. Ahmad and Ishaq hold that he will be flogged if allowed by his wife and stoned if not allowed. Al-Khattābī says that this tradition is weak for it has no continuous chain. It is not generally followed (ʿAwn al-Maʿbūd, IV, 268).  

3880. This tradition might have been followed and practised before the revelation of prescribed punishments. Now it has been abrogated. It is not practised by anyone (ʿAwn al-Maʿbūd, IV, 269).
Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by Yūnus b. ‘Ubaid, ‘Amr b. Dinar, Manṣūr b. Zādān and Salām from al-Ḥasan to the same effect. But Yūnus and Manṣūr did not mention Qablṣah.

(4446) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Salamah b. al-Muḥabbaq from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version has: If she asked her to have intercourse with her voluntarily, then she and a similar slavegirl would be given to her mistress from his property.

Chapter 1632

ON A MAN WHO DOES AS LOT’S PEOPLE DID

(4447) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If you find anyone doing as Lot’s people did, kill the one who does it, and the one to whom it is done.

Abū Dāwūd said: A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Sulaimān b. Bilāl from ‘Amr b. Abl ‘Umar. And ‘Abbād b. Manṣūr transmitted it from ‘Ikrimah on the authority of Ibn ‘Abbās who transmitted it from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). It has also been transmitted by Ibn Juraij from Ibrāhīm from Dāwūd b. al-Ḥussain from ‘Ikrimah on the authority of Ibn ‘Abbās who transmitted it from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).3881

(4448) Ibn ‘Abbās said: If a man who is not married is seized committing sodomy, he will be stoned to death.

Abū Dāwūd said: The tradition of ‘Āsim proves the tradition of ‘Āmir b. Abī ‘Amr as weak.3882

3881. There is difference of opinion among scholars on the punishment of a man who commits sodomy. According to al-Shāfi‘ī and Abū Yūsuf and Muhammad, the punishment of a man who commits sodomy is the same as inflicted on a man who commits fornication, i.e. stoning in case he is married, and flogging in case he is single. As for the man with whom it is done, a hundred lashes will be administered to him and banished for a year. It applies equally to man and woman, and married and single. Mālik and Ahmad maintain that a man who commits sodomy will be stoned to death, whether he is married or unmarried. According to another statement of al-Shāfi‘ī, both the one who does it and the one with whom it is done will be killed. They will be killed by demolition of a wall on them or they will be thrown from a high place. Abū Hanīfah holds that he may be given any punishment (tazir) but not prescribed punishment (ḥadd) (‘Awn al-Ma‘bud, IV, 269-70).

3882. The tradition of ‘Āsim has been mentioned in the next chapter. It says that there is no prescribed punishment for the one who commits sexual intercourse with an animal. These wordings also occur at the end of the next chapter. It is more appropriate to write these words at the end of the next chapter than here. There seems some mistake in recording these words in this chapter.
Chapter 1633

ON THE PUNISHMENT OF A MAN WHO HAS SEXUAL INTERCOURSE WITH AN ANIMAL

(4449) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone has sexual intercourse with an animal, kill him and kill it along with him.3883 I (‘Ikrimah) said: I asked him (Ibn ‘Abbās): What offence can be attributed to the animal? He replied: I think he (the Prophet) disapproved of its flesh being eaten when such a thing had been done to it.

Abū Dāwūd said: This is not a strong tradition.

(4450) ‘Āṣim reported from Abū Razīn on the authority of Ibn ‘Abbās saying: There is no prescribed punishment for one who has sexual intercourse with an animal.

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Āṯār also said so. Al Ḥasan said: I think he should be flogged, but the number should not reach the one of the prescribed punishment. Al-Ḥasan said: He is like a fornicator.

Abū Dāwūd said: The tradition of ‘Āṣim proves the tradition of ‘Amr b. Abī ‘Amr as weak.3884

Chapter 1634

ON A MAN WHO CONFESSES COMMITTING FORNICATION WITH A WOMAN WHO DOES NOT CONFESSION

(4451) Sahl b. Sa‘d said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and made acknowledgment before him that he had committed fornication with a woman whom he named. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent someone to the woman and he asked her about it. She denied that she had committed fornication. So he gave him the prescribed punishment of lashes and left her.3885

3883. There is no punishment prescribed for a man who has sexual intercourse with an animal. He can be given any punishment. This is held by the majority of scholars, like Mālik, al-Thawrī, Abū Ḥanīfah, al-Shāfi‘ī, Aḥmad and others.

3884. The tradition of ‘Amr b. Abī ‘Amr shows that a man who has sexual intercourse should be killed. But the tradition of ‘Āṣim tells that there is no punishment prescribed for this crime. Abū Dāwūd thinks that the latter is stronger than the former.

3885. This shows that if a man acknowledges committing fornication, he will be punished. If a man or a woman does not admit, and there is no evidence against them, they will not be punished.
Chapter 1635

ON A MAN WHO DOES WITH A WOMAN EVERYTHING EXCEPT SEXUAL INTERCOURSE (I.E. KISSING AND EMBRACING) AND THEN REPENTS BEFORE HE IS SIEZED BY AUTHORITIES

(4453) 'Abd Allah (b. Mas'ūd) said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: I contacted directly a woman at the farthest part of the city (i.e. Medina), and I did with her everything except sexual intercourse. So here I am; inflict any punishment you wish. Thereupon 'Umar said: Allah has concealed your fault; it would have been better if you also had concealed it yourself. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) sent a man after him and called him. (When he came) he recited the verse: "And establish regular prayers at the two ends of the day and at the approaches of the night . . . " 3887 up to the end of the verse. A man from the people got up and asked: Is it peculiar to him, Apostle of Allah, or for the people in general? He replied: It is for all the people. 3888

Chapter 1636

ON A SLAVEGIRL WHO COMMITS FORNICATION, BUT SHE IS NOT MARRIED

(4454) Abū Hurairah and Zaid b. Khālid al-Juhaini said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked about a slave-woman who commits fornication, 3886. According to the Qur'ānic verse xxiv. 4, if a man accuses falsely another man or woman of committing fornication, and his lie is proved, he will be given the punishment of eighty lashes. 3887. Qur'ān, xi. 114. 3888. The rest of the verse goes: "For those things that are good remove those that are evil: be that the word of remembrance to those who remember (their Lord)" (xi. 114). It means that when a man does good works like prayer, fasting, giving alms, etc., his evil deeds are also forgiven by Allah. But only minor sins are forgiven. One should repent for one's grave sins along with prayer and other acts of worship. The sin of the man was removed by his good works.
and she is not married: If she commits fornication, flog her; if she commits fornication again flog her; if she commits fornication, sell her even if only for a rope of hair (dafir).

Ibn Shiháb said: I do not know whether he (the Prophet) said it a third or a fourth time.

(4455) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When the slave-woman of any of you commits fornication, he should inflict the prescribed punishment on her, but not hurl reproaches at her. This is to be done up to three times. If she does it a fourth time, he should flog her, and sell her even if only for a rope of hair.

(4456) This tradition has been transmitted by Abū Hurairah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version has: He said each time: He should give her the appropriate beating according to Allah's Book, but not hurl reproaches at her. He said a fourth time: If she does it again, he should give her the appropriate beating according to Allah's Book, and then should sell her even if only for a rope of hair.

Chapter 1637

INFLECTING PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT ON A PERSON WHO IS SICK

(4457) Abū Umāmah b. Sahl Ḥunaif said that some Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) told that a man of them suffered from some illness so much so that he pined away and there remained only skin on bones (i.e. only a skeleton). A slavegirl of someone entered upon him, and he was cheered up at her and had unlawful intercourse with her. When his people came to him to pay a sick visit, he told them about it. He said: Ask the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) about the legal verdict for me, for I have had unlawful intercourse with a slavegirl who visited me. So they mentioned it to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) saying: We never saw any of the people (so weak) from illness as he is. If we bring him to you, his bones will disintegrate. He is but skin on bone. So the Apostle of

3889. According to the Qur'anic verse iv. 25, the punishment of flogging given to a slave-woman is half the one given to a free woman. If she is unmarried and commits fornication, she will receive fifty lashes. Further, according to Mālik, al-Shafi'i, Ahmad, Companions and Successors in general, the master of a slave-woman will inflict the punishment on her. But Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that the punishment will be given to her by order of the Muslim ruler. (‘Awn al-Ma‘bud, IV, 274).

3890. Qur'an, iv. 25. She will be given only fifty lashes if she is unmarried.
Allah (may peace be upon him) commanded to take one hundred twigs and strike him once. 3891

(4458) 'All said: A slavegirl belonging to the house of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) committed fornication. He (the Prophet) said: Rush up, 'All, and inflict the prescribed punishment on her. I then hurried up, and saw that blood was flowing from her, and did not stop. So I came to him and he said: Have you finished inflicting (punishment on her)? I said: I went to her while her blood was flowing. He said: Leave her alone till her bleeding stops; then inflict the prescribed punishment on her. And inflict the prescribed punishment on those whom your right hands possess (i.e., slaves).

Abū Dāwūd said: A similar tradition has been transmitted by Abū al-Ahwāṣ from ‘Abd al-‘A’lā, and also by Shu‘bah from ‘Abd al-‘A’lā. This version has: He said: Do not give her beating until she gives birth to a child. But the former (version) is sounder.

Chapter 1638

ON A PERSON WHO LAUNCHES A CHARGE OF FORNICATION AGAINST ANOTHER PERSON

(4459) 'Ā'ishah said: When my vindication came down, 3893 the Prophet (may peace be upon him) mounted the pulpit and mentioned that, and recited the Qurʾān. Then when he came down from the pulpit he ordered regarding the two men and the woman, 3894 and they were given the prescribed punishment. 3895

(4460) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Muḥammad b. Ishaq through a different chain of narrators. But he did not mention 'Ā'ishah. This

3891. The man being ill could not tolerate the punishment of one hundred lashes. So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to beat him with a stalk of the recent of a palm-tree having a hundred twigs and to strike him only once.

3892. This shows that the slavegirl recently gave birth to a child and she was in her child-bed. Hence the blood was flowing. Therefore, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) postponed the punishment.

The latter version indicates that she was pregnant. According to Abū Dāwūd, this is not a sound version.

3893. Qurʾān, xxiv. 11.

3894. The men are said to have been Ḥassān b. Thābit and Miṣṭah b. Uthāthah, and the woman Ḥammah daughter of Jaḥsh.

3895. Charging a man or a woman with the crime of fornication is called qadhf and the punishment for it is known as hadd qadhf. If the person who slanders cannot produce four witnesses against the accused, he will be given eighty stripes according to the Qurʾānic verse, xxiv. 4.
version has: He (the Prophet) commanded regarding the two men and the woman who spoke obscenity were Hassan b. Thabit and Misfah b. Uthathah. Al-Nufaill said: It is said that the woman was Hammah daughter of Jaḥsh.

Chapter 1639

PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT FOR DRINKING WINE

(4461) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not prescribe any punishment for drinking wine. Ibn ‘Abbās said: A man who had drunk wine and become intoxicated was found staggering on the road, so he was taken to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). When he was opposite al-‘Abbās’s house, he escaped, and going in to al-‘Abbās, he grasped hold of him. When that was mentioned to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he laughed and said: Did he do that? and he gave no command regarding him.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition of al-Ḥasan b. ʿAlī has been transmitted only by the people of Medina.

(4462) Abū Hurairah said: When a man who had drunk wine was brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), he said: Beat him. Abū Hurairah said: Some struck him with their hands, some with their sandals, and some with their garments. When he turned his face, some people said: Allah put you to shame! The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Do not say like that and help the devil to get power over him.

4463) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn al-Hādī through a different chain of narrators to the same effect. He said after the word “beating”: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said to his Companions: Reproach him, and they faced him and said: You have not respected Allah, you have not feared Allah and you have not shown shame before the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). Then they released him. At the end he said: But say: O Allah, forgive him, O Allah, show mercy to him. Some have also added similar words.

(4464) Anas b. Mālik said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave a beating

3896. Earlier in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) a man who drank wine was beaten with hands, garments and sandals. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave punishment of lashes from forty to eighty in number. Hence, al-Shāfi‘ī and Ahmad hold that the punishment for drinking wine is forty lashes. During the Caliphate of ʿUmar it was decided with the agreement of Companions that he should be given the punishment of eighty lashes. On this basis Abū Ḥanīfah and Mālik maintain that the punishment for drinking is eighty lashes.

3897. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not inflict punishment on him as the evidence of drinking against him could not be established.
Prescribed Punishment for Drinking Wine

with palm-branches and sandals for drinking wine and Abū Bakr gave forty lashes. When 'Umar came to power, he called upon people and said to them: The people are living now near watering places, and, according to Musaddad's version, "near villages and watering places," so what do you say about the punishment for (drinking) wine? 'Abd al-Raḥmān b. 'Awf said: We think that you should prescribe the lightest punishment. So he fixed eighty lashes for it.3899

Abū Dāwūd said: It has also been transmitted by Ibn Abī 'Arūbah from Qatādah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the effect that he gave a beating forty times with palm branches and sandals. And Shu'bah narrated it from Qatādah on the authority of Anas from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version has: He gave a beating with two palm-branches about forty times.3900

(4465) Ḥuḍayn b. al-Mundhir al-Ruqāshī, who is Abū Sāsān, said: I was present with 'Uthmān b. 'Affān when al-Walīd b. 'Uqbah was brought to him. Ḥumrān and another man bore witness against him (for drinking wine). One of them testified that he had seen him drinking wine, and the other testified that he had seen him vomiting it. 'Uthmān said: He could not vomit it, unless he did not drink it. He said to 'Ālī: Inflict the prescribed punishment on him. 'Ālī said to al-Ḥasan: Inflict the prescribed punishment on him. Al-Ḥasan said: He who has enjoyed its pleasure should also bear its burden.3901 So 'Ālī said to 'Abd Allāh b. Ja'fār: Inflict the prescribed punishment on him. He took a lash and struck him with it while 'Ālī was counting.

3898. It means that people used to lead a luxurious life and the drinking of wine became frequent among them. Hence he prescribed eighty lashes. The minimum punishment during the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was forty lashes and maximum eighty.

3899. The Qur'ān mentions three prescribed punishments, namely, amputation of hand for theft, one hundred lashes for fornication, and eighty lashes for slandering, i.e. accusing someone of fornication. The lightest of them is eighty lashes. So 'Umar adopted it. According to al-Shāhī Aḥmad, Ishāq and Abī al-Zāhir the punishment for drinking is forty lashes. This is also held by Abū Bakr, 'Umar, 'Uthmān, 'Ālī, al-Ḥasan b. 'Ālī and 'Abd Allāh b. Ja'fār, and the traditionists. But al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, al-Sha'bī, Abū Ḥanīfah, Mālik, Abū Yūsuf, Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan and Aḥmad, according to a report, maintain that the punishment for drinking is eighty lashes. This is also held by Khālid b. al-Walīd and Muḥāwiyyah. The dispute over forty and eighty lashes is about a Muslim. But no such punishment is to be inflicted on a non-Muslim ('Awān al-Ma'būd, IV, 178).

3900. This shows that the number of beating for drinking wine during the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was eighty.

3901. This is an Arabic maxim used in the sense that one who gets benefit of a thing should bear its responsibility. Literally, it means "He who is benefited from its cold (caliphate) should also bear its heat." Here the pronoun "it" refers to caliphate. By it al-Ḥasan meant that since 'Uthmān was enjoying the benefit of the Caliphate, he should also take the responsibility of its duties. To inflict the prescribed punishment is crucial. One may commit a mistake in it. Hence he wanted that the Caliph himself should inflict it.
When he reached (struck) forty (lashes), he said: It is sufficient. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave forty lashes. I think he also said: “and Abū Bakr gave forty lashes, and ‘Uthmān eighty. This is all sunnah (standard practice). And this is dearer to me.”

(4466) ‘All (Allah be pleased with him) said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and Abū Bakr gave forty lashes for drinking wine and ‘Umar made it eighty. And all this is sunnah, the model and standard practice.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-‘Aṣmā‘ī explaining the maxim, “He who enjoys its cold should bear its heat,” said: He who enjoys the easy of it should also take the responsibility of the hard of it.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ḥudain b. al-Mundhir Abū Sāsān was the leader of his tribe.

Chapter 1640

ON A MAN WHO DRINKS WINE REPEATEDLY

(4467) Mu‘āwiyah b. Abī Sufyān reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If they (the people) drink wine, flog them, again if they drink it, flog them. Again if they drink it, kill them.

(4468) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Umar.

3902. This is a broad view on disputed questions. Since the number of lashes for drinking is disputed, and the practice has varied in the past, ‘All called all this practice, whether forty or eighty, sunnah, i.e. the model and standard practice. One had choice between forty and eighty lashes. But All preferred forty because the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and Abū Bakr were reported to have given this number.

3903. This tradition which suggests the killing of a drunkard after a third time has been abrogated. Al-Tirmidhī said in his Kitāb al-‘Ilal: The people are agreed on the abandonment of the punishment, that is, it has been repealed. Some scholars hold that it means severe beating. Ib Hībīn says that if the drunkard denies the prohibition of drinking and regards it as lawful, he should be killed. Al-S̄uyūṭī has discussed this question at length and refuted the arguments of those who take this tradition as abrogated. In his opinion the man who drinks wine a fourth time should be killed. He admits that some of the Companions were not killed even after repeated drinking. To this he replies that this tradition enunciates a general rule. It cannot be repealed by certain specific traditions relating to particular situations. The Companions were the forerunners of Islam. They sacrificed their life and property for the cause of Islam. Some of them were given good tidings of salvation in the Hereafter, i.e. they would enter Paradise. Hence their slips and omissions could be justifiably neglected. This tradition cannot apply to all drunkards. Moreover, the tradition which says that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not kill a man who had drunk a fourth time has a disconnected chain. Further, al-Bukhārī says that the tradition of Abū Ṣāliḥ from Mu‘āwiyah is sounder than his tradition from Abū Hurairah (‘Awn al-Maḥbūd, IV, 280).
through a different chain of narrators to the same effect. This version has: I think he said for the fifth time: If he drinks it, kill him.

Abū Dāwūd said: And similarly the word “a fifth time” occurs in the tradition of Abū Ghuṭaif.

(4469) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If he is intoxicated, flog him; again if he is intoxicated, flog him; again if he is intoxicated, flog him; if he does it again a fourth time, kill him.

Abū Dāwūd said: And there is a similar tradition of ‘Umar b. Abī Salamah, from his father, on the authority of Abū Hurairah, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him): If he drinks wine, flog him; if he does it so again, a fourth time, kill him.

Abū Dāwūd said: And there is a similar tradition of Suhail from Abū Ṣāliḥ on the authority of Abū Hurairah, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him): If they drink a fourth time, kill them. And there is a similar tradition of Ibn Abī Nu‘m on the authority of Ibn ‘Umar from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). There is also a similar tradition of ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr from the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and from Sharīd from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). And in the tradition of al-Jadīl from Mu‘āwiyah, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: If he does so again a third or fourth time, kill him.

(4470) Qabīlah b. Dhuwaib reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone drinks wine, flog him; if he repeats it, flog him, and if, he repeats it, flog him. If he does it again a third or a fourth time, kill him. A man who had drunk wine was brought (to him) and he gave him lashes. He was again brought to him, and he flogged him. He was again brought to him and he flogged him. The punishment of killing (for drinking) was repealed,3904 and a concession was allowed.

Sufyān said: Al-Zuhrī transmitted this tradition when Manṣūr b. al-Mu‘tamīr and Mukhawwal b. Rāshid were present with him. He said to them: Take this tradition as a present to the people of Iraq.


3904. This tradition clearly shows that the punishment for killing a habitual drunkard has been abrogated. Any number of time he drinks, he shall not be killed. But some scholars have criticised Qabīlah b. Dhuwaib, the transmitter of this tradition. It is said that he was born in the year of the Conquest of Mecca or in the beginning of immigration to Medina. He did not hear traditions directly from the Prophet (may peace be upon him), but heard them from his Companions. He is considered not as a Companion but as a successor.
(4471) ‘Ali said: I shall not pay blood-money or (he said): I am not going to pay blood-money for him on whom I inflicted the prescribed punishment except for the one who drank wine, for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not prescribe anything definite. It is a thing which we have decided (by agreement) ourselves. 3905

(4472) Abd al-Rahmān b. Azhar said: I can still picture myself looking at the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who was among the camps of the Companions seeking the camp of Khalid b. al-Walīd, when a man who had drunk wine was brought before him. He asked the people: Beat him. 3906 Some struck him with sandals, some with sticks and some with fresh branches of the palm-tree (mitakhah). Ibn Wahb said: This (mitakhah) means green palm fronds. Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) took some dust from the ground and threw it on his face.

(4473) Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Azhar said: A man who had drunk wine was brought before the Prophet (may peace be upon him) when he was in Hunain. He threw some dust on his face. He then ordered his Companions and they beat him with their sandals and whatever they had in their hands. He then said to them: Leave him, and they left him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then died, and Abū Bakr gave forty lashes for drinking wine, and then Umar in the beginning of his

3905. A tradition of ‘Ali has also been mentioned before. It says that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had prescribed forty lashes for drinking wine. Both these traditions transmitted by ‘Ali are contradictory. Many explanations have been given by commentators. First, in this tradition what ‘Ali denies is the addition to forty lashes. He means that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not prescribe anything above forty lashes. The punishment of eighty lashes was prescribed by consensus of opinion of the Companions. Second, when positive and negative traditions contradict, preference will be given to the positive ones. It means that the tradition about prescribing forty lashes is preferable. Thirdly, the tradition of prescription of forty lashes has been attributed to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), while the tradition which denies the prescription is merely ‘Ali’s statement. Hence tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) will be followed.

As regards payment of blood-money for a man who dies after infliction of prescribed punishment, it is agreed that no compensation shall be paid for any prescribed punishment except for drinking. Al-Shāfi‘i holds that if the criminal is beaten with lashes, compensation will be paid. If he is beaten with something else, there is no compensation for his death. According to another view, if a man dies as a result of the infliction of the prescribed punishment, no blood-money will be paid. If he dies on account of ordinary punishment decided by the judge himself (ta‘ṣīr), compensation will be paid. If he is flogged with eighty stripes, and dies, half of the blood-money will be paid (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 283).

3906. This incidence might have taken place in the early days of Islam when the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had not prescribed punishment for drinking wine. He might have prescribed forty lashes for drinking wine later on.
Caliphate inflicted forty stripes and at the end of his Caliphat, he inflicted eighty stripes. ‘Uthmān (after him) inflicted both punishments, eighty and forty stripes, and finally Mu‘āwiyyah established eighty stripes.3907

(4474) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Azhar said: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) on the morning of the Conquest of Mecca when I was a young boy. He was walking among the people seeking the camp of Khalid b. al-Walid. A man who had drunk wine was brought (before him) and he ordered them (to beat him). So they beat him with what they had in their hands. Some struck him with flogs, some with sticks and some with sandals. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) threw some dust on his face. When a man who had drunk wine was brought before Abū Bakr, he asked them (i.e. the people) about the number of beatings which they gave him. They numbered it forty. So Abū Bakr gave him forty lashes. When ‘Umar came to power, Khalid b. al-Walid wrote to him: The people have become addicted to drinking wine and they look down upon the prescribed punishment and its penalty. He said: They are with you, ask them. The immigrants who embraced Islam in the beginning were with him. He asked them and they agreed on the fact that (a drunkard) should be given eighty lashes. ‘Abd Allāh said: When a man drinks wine, he makes up lies. I, therefore, think that he should prescribe it like the prescribed punishment of making up lies.3908

‘Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Uqail b. Khalid included in the chain of this tradition: Abd Allah b. Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Azhar from his father’ between al-Zuhri and Ibn al-Azhar.3909

Chapter 1641

INFLECTING PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT IN THE MOSQUE

(4475) Ḥakīm b. Ḥizām said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade to take retaliation in the mosque, to recite verses in it and to inflict the prescribed punishments in it.3910

3907. Al-Mundhirī says that the chain of these traditions is broken.
3908. By this he means the prescribed punishment of slandering (qadāf) which is eighty lashes.
3909. Thus the chain of this tradition becomes continuous.
3910. Mosques are meant for worship and remembrance of Allah, not for inflicting punishment. If punishments are inflicted in the mosques, there is the possibility of their pollution with blood and other impurities.
Chapter 1642

FLOGGING

(4476) Abū Burdah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: No more than ten lashes are to be given, except in the case of one of the punishments prescribed by Allah, the Exalted.3912

(4477) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Burdah al-Anṣārī through a different chain of narrators. This version has: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say. . . He then mentioned the tradition to the same effect.

Chapter 1643

ON STRIKING THE FACE WHILE INFlicting PRESCRIBED PUNISHMENT

(4478) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you inflicts a beating, he should avoid striking the face.3913

3911. Taʾṣīr. This may be any type of punishment, flogging or some other, which is less than what is prescribed in the Qurʾān or the Sunnah for certain offences.

3912. Ḥadd punishments are those which have been prescribed for theft, fornication, drinking, robbery, slandering, murder, retaliation for life and injuries and apostasy. It is disputed whether retaliation and killing for apostasy fall within Ḥudūd. There is a difference of opinion among scholars on the number of flogs of taʾṣīr, a punishment not prescribed in the Qurʾān and the Sunnah. Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal follows this tradition literally, Mālik al-Shāfiʿī, Abū Yūsuf and Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan maintain that the number of flogs in the case of taʾṣīr may exceed ten. It is again disputed. Al-Shāfiʿī holds that the number of flogs in the case of taʾṣīr should not be equal to the minimum ḥadd punishment. Besides, there are two viewpoints about the question whether the ḥadd punishment of a free man will be taken into consideration or that of a slave. Some scholars are of opinion that the matter should be left to the discretion of the authorities. They may give any number of lashes. A group of scholars hold that the practice of Companions contradicts this tradition. This shows that this tradition might have been repealed. To this it is replied that in such cases the principle of abrogation does not apply. Al-Baḥaqī says that the practice of the Companions about the number of flogs and beating in the case of taʾṣīr has been varying. Therefore, it is better to follow this tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) transmitted by Abū Burdah (ʿAwn al-Maʿbūd, IV, 186).

3913. As the face is the most vulnerable part of the body, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) has forbidden to strike it. One feels the effect of beating on the face more than on other parts. Private parts may also be avoided.
XXXIV. KITAB AL-DIYAT

[BOOK OF TYPES OF BLOOD-WIT]

Chapter 1644

LIFE FOR LIFE

(4479) Ibn ‘Abbās said: Quraizah and Naḍīr (were two Jewish tribes). Al-Naḍīr were nobler than Quraizah. When a man of Quraizah killed a man of al-Naḍīr, he would be killed. But if a man of al-Naḍīr killed a man of Quraizah, a hundred wasq 3914 of dates would be paid as blood-wit. When Prophet hood was bestowed upon the Prophet (may peace be upon him), a man of al-Naḍīr killed a man of Quraizah. They said: Give him to us, we shall kill him. They replied: We have the Prophet (may peace be upon him) between us and you. So they came to him. Thereupon the following verse was revealed: “If thou judge, judge in equity between them.” 3915 “In equity” means (killing) life for life. The following verse was then revealed: “Do they seek after a judgment of (the days of) ignorance?” 3917

Abū Dāwūd said: Quraizah and al-Naḍīr were the descendants of Hārūn the Prophet (peace be upon him).

Chapter 1645

ONE SHOULD NOT BE PUNISHED FOR WRONG DONE BY ONE’S BROTHER OR FATHER

(4480) Abū Rīmithah said: I went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) with my father. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then asked my father: Is this your son? He replied: Yes, by the Lord of the Ka‘bah. He again said: Is it true?

3914. A wasq measures sixty ša‘ās. and one ša‘ measures one rotl.
3917. When the dispute was brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) Banū al-Naḍīr wanted him to recognise their superiority over Quraizah. But he rejected this demand and decided equally between them. On this occasion this verse was revealed. This shows that there is no distinction in taking retaliation for murder.

1257
He said: 'I bear witness to it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then smiled for my resemblance with my father, and for the fact that my father took an oath upon me. He then said: He will not bring evil on you, nor will you bring evil on him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) recited the verse: "No bearer of burdens can bear the burden of another." 3918

Chapter 1646

IF AUTHORITIES ASK RELATIVES OF A SLAIN TO FORGO THEIR RIGHT, WHAT SHOULD THEY DO?

(4481) Abū Shuraih al-Khuẓā‘I reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If a relative of anyone is killed, or if he suffers khabl, which means a wound, he may choose one of the three things: he may retaliate, or forgive, or receive compensation. 3919 But if he wishes a fourth (i.e. something more), hold his hands. After this whoever exceeds the limits shall be in grave penalty. 3920

(4482) Anas b. Mālik said: I never saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) that some dispute which involved retaliation was brought to him but he commanded regarding it for remission. 3921

(4483) Abū Hurairah said: A man was killed in the lifetime of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The matter was brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He entrusted him to the legal guardian of the slain. The slayer said: Apostle of Allah, I swear by Allah, I did not intend to kill him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to the legal guardian: Now if he is true and you kill him, you will enter Hell-fire. So he let him go. His hands were tied with a strap. He came out pulling his strap. Hence he was called Dhu al-Nis‘ah (possessor of strap).

(4484) Wā’il b. Ḥujr said: I was with the Prophet (may peace be upon him) when

3918. Qur’ān, vi 164. This tradition indicates that if a man does wrong, he will himself bear its consequences. No other man will be punished for him.

3919. Literally, "if a man has the suffering of being killed or his organ being cut off or wounded". This tradition is addressed to the people or heirs of a man who has been killed, and to a man who has been severely injured. His people, in case a man is murdered, and he himself, in case he is injured, has a choice of one of the three things: to kill the murderer, to forgo the right, or to accept blood-wit. But the man or his heirs are not allowed to demand anything else.

3920. This refers to the Qur'ānic verse ii. 178. It means that after this choice given by the Prophet (may peace be upon him) he should adopt any of these three things and should not transgress the limits.

3921. This shows that it is better if a Muslim forgives the offence of another Muslim. But if a man repeats the offence and insists on its commission, he may be punished.
a man who was a slayer and had a strap round his neck was brought to him. He then called the legal guardian of the slain and asked him: Do you forgive? He said: No. He asked: Will you accept the blood-wit? He said: No. He asked: Will you kill him? He said: Yes. He said: Take him. When turned his back, he said: Do you forgive? He said: No. He said: Will you accept the blood-wit? He said: No. He asked: Will you kill him? He said: Yes. He said: Take him. After repeating all this a fourth time, he said: If you forgive him, he will bear the burden of his own sin and the sin of the slain. He then forgave. He (the narrator) said: I saw him pulling the strap.

(4485) The tradition mentioned above has also been mentioned by 'Alqamah b. Wā'il through a different chain of narrators and to the same effect.

(4486) Wā'il (b. Ḥujr) said: A man brought an Abyssinian to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: This man has killed my nephew. He asked: How did you kill him? He replied: I struck his head with an axe but I did not intend to kill him. He asked: Have you some money so that you pay his blood-wit? He said: No. He said: What is your opinion if I send you so that you ask the people (for money) and thus collect your blood-wit? He said: No. He asked: Will your masters give you his blood-wit (to pay his relatives)? He said: No. He said to the man. Take him. So he brought him out to kill him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If he kills him, he will be like him. This (statement) reached the man where he was listening to his statement. He said: He is here; order regarding him as you like. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Leave him alone. And he once said: He will bear the burden of the sin of the slain and that of his own and thus he will become one of the companions of Hell. So he let him go.

(4487) Abū Umāmah b. Sahl said: We were with 'Uthmān when he was besieged in the house. There was an entrance to the house. He who entered it heard the speech of those who were in the Bilāt. 'Uthmān then entered it. He came out to us while his colour was pale. He said: They are threatening to kill me just now. We said; Allah will be sufficient for you against them, Commander of the Faithful! He asked; Why are they killing me? I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: It is not lawful to kill a man who is a Muslim except for one of the three reasons:

3922. There was no proof of the fact that he had killed him intentionally. That might be an accidental death. As there was the likelihood of accident in the murder, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said that if he killed him, he would also be a murderer of an innocent man. Since retaliation is not the punishment of accidental homicide, he asked him to pay the blood-wit.

3923. It means that he will suffer the punishment of his sin and the punishment of killing his fellow being. Here the Prophet (may peace be upon him) attributed the sin to his fellow, for his killing was the reason for his sin.

3924. The name of a well-known place in Medina.
Unbelief after accepting Islam, fornication after marriage, or wrongfully killing someone, for which he may be killed. I swear by Allah, I have not committed fornication before or after the coming of Islam, or never did I like that there may be another religion for me instead of my religion since Allah gave guidance to me, or killed anyone. So for that reason do you want to kill me?

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Uthman and ‘Abū Bakr (Allah be pleased with them) abandoned drinking wine in pre-Islamic times.

(4488) Ziyād b. Sa‘d b. Dumairah al-Sulamī said on the authority of his father (Sa‘d) and his grandfather (Dumairah) (according to Mūsā’s version) who were present in the battle of Hunain with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): After the advent of Islam, Muhallam b. Jathāmat al-Laithi killed a man of Ashja’. That was the first blood-wit decided by the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) (for payment). ‘Uyainah spoke about the killing of al-Ashja’ī, for he belonged to Ghaṭafān, and al-Aqrāb b. Ḥābis spoke on behalf of Muhallam, for he belonged to Khunduf. The voices rose high, and the dispute and noise augmented. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Do you not accept blood-wit, ‘Uyainah? ‘Uyainah then said: No, I swear by Allah, until I cause his women to suffer the same fighting and grief as he caused my women to suffer. Again the voices rose high, and dispute and noise augmented. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Do you not accept the blood-wit ‘Uyainah? ‘Uyainah gave the same reply as before, and a man of Banū Laith called Mukaitil got up. He had a weapon and a skin shield in his hand. He said: I do not find in the beginning of Islam any illustration for what he has done except the one that “some sheep came on, and those in the front were shot; hence those in the rear ran away”. (The other example is that) “make a law today and change it tomorrow.” The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said:

3925. It means that he wanted to take retaliation on him, and wanted his women to weep as his women had wept.

3926. It means that this is the beginning of Islam. If you kill him as a retaliation for him his relatives who are unbelievers will hate Islam. It can be illustrated by sheep. If the sheep in the front row are shot dead, the sheep in the rear will run away. Some have given another explanation. According to this explanation, this illustration meant exhortation to take retaliation on the slayer. It means that if the Prophet (may peace be upon him) does not take retaliation and leave the slayer alone, the Arabs would not like this practice and thus hate Islam. They would presume that there is no retaliation in Islam, and they are already interested in taking retaliation by their custom.

3927. This is another illustration. There are various explanations of this example. If you accept blood-wit today, you will not do it permanently. Sometimes you have to take retaliation. This law will thus be changed. Hence it is better to kill him. Secondly, if you abandon taking retaliation today and accept blood-wit, and then you take retaliation, this will become a practice in the future. Thirdly, make a law today and change it tomorrow. Follow the practice you have introduced in
Chapter 1647

IF THE LEGAL HEIR OF A MAN WHO HAS BEEN KILLED INTENTIONALLY AGREES TO ACCEPT BLOOD-WIT, THE SLAYER WILL BE ASKED TO PAY HIM

(4489) Abû Shuraih al-Kabî reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Then you, Khuzâ'ah, have killed this man of Hudhayl, but I will pay his blood-wit. After these words of mine if a man of anyone is killed, his people will have a choice to accept blood-wit or to kill him.3928

(4490) Abû Hurairah said: When Mecca was conquered, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) got up and said: If a relative of anyone is killed, he will have the choice between the two: he (the slayer) will either pay the blood-wit or he will be killed. A man of the Yemen called Abû Shâh stood up and said: Write for me, Apostle of Allah. The narrator al-'Abbas (b. al-Walid) said: Write for me, (you people). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Write (you people), respect of retaliation. Then if you want to change it, you may change this practice, and accept blood-wit. Fourthly, if you do not take retaliation today in your life, your practice may not be followed after you. Fifthly, if you do not do this; the murderer may say like this: Make a law today and change it tomorrow. Thus your practice will be changed (‘Awn al-Ma'bud, IV, 291-92).

3928. This shows that the choice between retaliation and blood-wit has been given to the heirs of the slayer. If a group of people kill a man, the heirs have the option to take retaliation on any of them and accept blood-money from anyone they wish. This is held by al-Shâfi‘î, Ahmad and Ishâq.
for Abū Shāh. These are the wordings of the tradition of Ahmād.

Abū Dāwūd said: Write (you people), for me, that is, the address of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

(4491) 'Āmr b. Shu'aib on his father's authority said that his grandfather reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A believer will not be killed for an infidel. If anyone kills a man deliberately, he is to be handed over to the relatives of the one who has been killed. If they wish, they may kill him, but if they wish, they may accept blood-wit.

Chapter 1648
KILLING THE SLAYER AFTER ACCEPTING BLOOD-WIT FROM HIM

(4492) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: I will not forgive anyone who kills after accepting blood-wit.

Chapter 1649
IF A MAN GIVES ANYONE POISON TO DRINK OR EAT, WILL RETALIATION BE TAKEN ON HIM OR NOT?

(4493) Anas b. Mālik said: A Jewess brought a poisoned sheep to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and he ate of it. She was then brought to the

3929. This shows that traditions were recorded even in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). It is not correct to say that the people only memorised them.

3930. The majority of jurists hold that a believer will not be killed for an infidel. Only Mālik holds that in the case of highway robbery a believer will be killed. The Ḥanafīs oppose the view held by the generality of scholars. According to them, if a believer kills an infidel, he will be killed. They do not maintain any distinction between the believer and the unbeliever in respect of retaliation. But, according to them, if an unbeliever comes from dār al-ḥarb (enemy territory) to dār al-islām (Muslim territory) after obtaining security from the Muslim ruler, and he kills a Muslim, he will not be killed. Al-Shāfi‘ī and al-Nakha‘ī hold that if a Muslim kills a Jew or a Christian, he will be killed, but not if he kills a Magian ('Awān al-Ma‘būd, IV, 293).

3931. It shows that there is always choice to the heirs of the slain to kill the slayer or accept the blood-wit.

3932. It is not permissible to kill the slayer after accepting blood-wit. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) meant that he would not leave the man who kills the slayer after accepting blood-wit. He expressed his determination to take retaliation on such a man. The unbelievers in pre-Islamic Arabia used to kill the slayer even after accepting blood-wit. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) threatened such a person not to forgive. He intended to eliminate the practice of pre-Islamic times.
Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who asked her about it. She said: I intended to kill you. He said: Allah will not give you control over it; or he said: over me. They (the Companions) said: Should we not kill her? He said: No.\(^{3933}\) He (Anas) said: I always found it in the uvula of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) \(^{3934}\)

(4494) Abū Hurairah said: A Jewess presented a poisoned sheep to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), but the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not interfere with her.

Abū Dāwūd said: The Jewess who poisoned the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was sister of Marḥab.

(4495) Ibn Shihāb said: Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah used to say that a Jewess from the inhabitants of Khaibar poisoned a roasted sheep and presented it to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) took its arm and ate of it. A group of his Companions also ate with him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: Raise your hands (from eating). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then sent someone to the Jewess and he called her. He said to her: Have you poisoned this sheep? The Jewess replied: Who has informed you? He said: This arm which I have in my hand has informed me. She said: Yes. He said: What did you intend by it? She said: I thought if you were a prophet, it would not harm you; if you were not a prophet, we would rid ourselves from him (i.e. the Prophet). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then forgave her, and did not punish her.\(^{3935}\) But some of his Companions who ate of it died. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) got himself cupped on his shoulder on account of that which he had eaten of the sheep. Abū Hind cupped him with the horn and knife. He was a client of Banū Bayāḍah from the Āmūr.

(4496) Abū Salamah said: A Jewess presented a roasted sheep to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) at Khaibar. He then mentioned the rest of the tradi-

---

\(^{3933}\) The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not want to take his revenge on anyone. Hence he forbade them to kill her.

\(^{3934}\) It means that he found its effects on the uvula of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and he died of the effect of this poison.

\(^{3935}\) Some other traditions indicate that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to kill her. This seems to be a contradiction between these traditions. This contradiction has been removed by the explanation that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in the beginning did not order to kill her. But when Bishr b. al-Barā’ died of the poison of the sheep which he had eaten, he gave her to the heirs of Bishr for taking retaliation. They killed her as a retaliation. But the Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not kill her on account of poisoning him. Further, this tradition of Jābir has a disconnected chain. It is said that al-Zuhrl did not meet Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah. (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 295).
tion like that of Jābir. He said: Then Bshir b. al-Barā’ b. Ma‘rūr al-Anṣārī died. He sent someone to call on the Jewess, and said to her (when she came): What motivated you to do the work you have done? He then mentioned the rest of the tradition similar to the one mentioned by Jābir. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then ordered regarding her and she was killed.  

But he (Abū Salamah) did not mention the matter of cupping.

(4497) Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would accept a present, but would not accept alms (ṣadaqah).

(4498) Muhammad b. ‘Amr said on the authority of Abū Salamah, and he did not mention the name of Abū Hurairah: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to accept presents but not the alms (ṣadaqah). This version adds: So a Jewess presented him at Khaibar a roasted sheep which she had poisoned. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered regarding her and she was killed. He then said about the pain of which he died: I continued to feel pain from the morsel which I had eaten at Khaibar. This is the time when it has cut off my aorta.

(4449) Ibn Ka‘b b. Malik said on the authority of his father: Umm Mubashshir said to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) during the sickness of which he died: What do you think about your illness, Apostle of Allah? I do not think about the illness of my son except the poisoned sheep of which he had eaten with you at Khaibar. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: And I do not think about my illness except that. This is the time when it cut off my aorta.

Abū Dāwūd said: Sometimes ‘Abd al-Razzāq transmitted this tradition, omitting the link of the Companion, from Ma‘mar, from al-Zuhrī, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and sometimes he transmitted it from al-Zuhrī from ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ka‘b b. Malik. ‘Abd al-Rahmān sometimes transmitted the tradition in a mursal form (omitting the link of the Companion), and they recorded it, and sometimes he transmitted it in a mursal form (with a perfect chain) and they recorded it. And all this is correct with us. ‘Abd al-Razzāq said: When Ibn al-Mubārak came to Ma‘mar, he transmitted the traditions in a musnad form (with

3936. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not order to kill her in the first instance. When Bshir b. al Barā’ died of this poison, he ordered to kill her in retaliation of the slain.
Ch. 1650 | If A Man Kills His Slave Or Cuts Off One Of His Limbs . . .  

(4500) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Abd Allāh b. Ka‘b b. Mālik said on the authority of his mother that Umm Mubashshir said (Abū Sa‘īd b. al-ʿArābī said : So he said it on the authority of his mother ; what is correct is : on the authority of his father, instead of his mother) : I entered upon the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He then mentioned the tradition of Makhlad b. Khālid in a way similar to the tradition of Jābir. The narrator said : Then Bishr b. al-Barā’ b. Ma‘rūr died. So he (the Prophet) sent for the Jewess and said : What did motivate you for the work you have done? He (the narrator) then mentioned the rest of the tradition like the tradition of Jābir. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered regarding her and she was killed. He (the narrator in this version) did not mention cupping.

Chapter 1650

IF A MAN KILLS HIS SLAVE OR CUTS OFF ONE OF HIS LIMBS, RETALIATION WILL BE TAKEN ON HIM

(4501) Samurah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) saying : If anyone kills his slave, we shall kill him, and if anyone cuts off the nose of his slave, we shall cut off his nose.3937

(4502) Qatādah said through the same chain of narrators as mentioned before, i.e. Samurah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone castrates his slave, we shall castrate him. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition like that of Shu‘bah and Ḥammād.

Abū Dāwūd said : Abū Dāwūd al-Ṭayālisī transmitted it from Ḥishām like the tradition of Mu‘ādh.

(4503) Qatādah transmitted the tradition mentioned above through a chain of narrators like that of Shu‘bah. This version adds : Then al-Ḥasan forgot this

3937. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars about killing a free man for a slave. Ibrāhīm al-Nakha‘ī holds that if a man kills a slave, he will be killed for him. Al-Ḥasan and ‘Atā’ b. Abī Rabīḥ hold that there is no retaliation between a free man and a slave. This is also maintained by Ḥāmid and Ḥishāq. Some scholars hold that if a man kills his own slave, he will not be killed for him, but if he kills the slave of another man, he will be killed. This is the opinion held by Sufyān al-Thawrī. Some think that the tradition has been abrogated by the Qur’ānic verse which says that a free man will be killed for a free man, and a slave for a slave. Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that if a man kills his own slave, he will not be killed; but if he kills the slave of another man, he will be killed. Mālik and al-Shāfi‘ī maintain that a free man will not be killed for a slave, whether he belongs to him or to another (‘Awn al-Mu‘īd, IV. 297).
and he used to say: A free man is not to be killed for a slave.

(4504) ‘Amr b. Shu’aib, on his father’s authority, said that his grandfather told that a man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) crying for help. He said: His slavegirl, Apostle of Allah! He said: Woe to you, what happened with you? He said that it was an evil one. He saw the slavegirl of his master; he became jealous of him, and cut off his penis. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Bring the man to me. The man was called, but people could not get control over him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: Go away, you are free. He asked: Apostle of Allah! upon whom does my help lie? He replied: On every believer, or he said: On every Muslim.

Abū Dāwūd said: The name of the man who was emancipated was Rawḥ b. Dīnār.

Abū Dāwūd said: The man who cut off the penis was Zīnbi’.

Abū Dāwūd said: This Zīnbi’ Abū Rawḥ was master of the slave.

Chapter 1651
TAKING OATHS BY THE PEOPLE OF A LOCALITY REGARDING A MURDER THEREIN

(4505) Sahl b. Abī Ḥathmah and Rāfī’ b. Khadij said: Muḥayyasaḥ b. Mas‘ūd and ‘Abd Allah b. Sahl came to Khaibar and parted (from each other) among palm trees. ‘Abd Allah b. Sahl was killed. The Jews were blamed (for the murder). ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Sahl and Ḥuwayyaṣah and Muḥayyasaḥ, the sons of his uncle (Mas‘ūd) came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). ‘Abd al-Raḥmān, who was the youngest, spoke about his brother, but the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to him: (Respect) the elder, (respect) the elder, or he said: Let the eldest begin. They then spoke about their friend and the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Fifty of you should take oaths regarding a man from them (the Jews) and he should be entrusted (to him) with his rope (in his neck).3939 They said: It is a matter which we did not see. How can we take oaths? He said: The Jews exonerate themselves by the oaths of fifty of them. They said: Apostle of Allah! they are a people who are infidels. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) paid them the

3938. This tradition was transmitted by Samuran. It says: If anyone kills his slave, we shall kill him. It is said that this tradition has been repealed. Al-Ḥasan might not have forgotten the tradition, but he might have interpreted it differently.

3939. Birummathi. It means the rope tied on the neck of the slayer. He is entrusted to the heirs of the slain man with this rope.
bloodwit himself. Sahl said: Once I entered the resting place of their camels, and a she-camel struck me with her leg. Hammād said this or (something) similar to it.

Abū Dāwūd said: Another version transmitted by Yahyā b. Sa'id has: Would you swear fifty oaths and make your claim regarding your friend or your slain man? Bishr, the transmitter, did mention blood. ‘Abdah transmitted it from Yahyā as transmitted by Hammād. Ibn ‘Uyainah has also transmitted it from Yahyā, and began with his words: The Jews will exonerate themselves by fifty oaths which they will swear. He did not mention the claim.

Abū Dāwūd said: This is a misunderstanding on the part of Ibn ‘Uyainah.

(4506) Sahl b. Abī Ḥathmah and some senior men of the tribe told that ‘Abd Allah b. Abī Sahl and Muhāyyaṣah came to Khaibar on account of the calamity (i.e. famine) that befell them. Muhāyyaṣah came and told that ‘Abd Allah b. Sahl had been killed and thrown in a well or a stream. He then came to the Jews and said: I swear by Allah, you have killed him. They said: We swear by Allah, we have not killed him. He then proceeded and came to his tribe and mentioned this to them. Then he, his brother Huwayyasah, who was older than him, and ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Sahl came forward (to the Prophet). Muhāyyaṣah began to speak. It was he who was at Khaibar. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to him: Let the eldest speak, let the eldest speak, meaning age. So Huwayyasah spoke, and after him Muhāyyaṣah spoke. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: They should either pay the bloodwit for your friend or they should be prepared for war. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) wrote to them about it. They wrote (in reply): We swear by Allah, we have not killed him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said to Huwayyasah, Muhāyyaṣah and ‘Abd al-Rahmān: Will you take an oath and thus have the claim to the blood of your friend? They said: No. He (the Prophet) said: The Jews will then take an oath. They said:

3940. Qadāmah. It is a process of determining the slayer when a corpse is found in a locality. The heirs of the slain will be asked to take an oath fifty times about the man whom they suspect to be the slayer. If the heirs do not take oaths, fifty inhabitants of the locality will be asked to take an oath to the effect that they have not slain the man. Those who do not take an oath will pay the bloodwit. This is held by al-Shafi‘i and Ahmad. According to Abū Ḥanīfah, oaths will always be administered to the inhabitants of the locality. But no retaliation will be taken in the case of administering the oath, even if the murder be intentional. The inhabitants of the locality shall pay bloodwit. Mālik, Ahmad and Ishaq maintain that retaliation will be taken in the case of intentional murder. It is also disputed as to whom the oaths will be administered. Mālik, al-Shafi‘i and generality of scholars maintain that the heirs of the slain will take an oath. It is on the basis of their oaths that the decision will be made. Abū Ḥanīfah holds that fifty persons of the locality will take an oath to the effect that they neither killed the man, nor did they know the slayer. When they take the oath to this effect, they shall pay blood-money ('Awn al-Ma‘bud, IV, 299).
They are not Muslims. Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) himself paid the blood wit. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then sent on one hundred she-camels and they were entered in their house. Sahl said: A red she-camel of them gave me a kick.

(4507) 'Amr b. Shu'ain said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) killed\textsuperscript{3941} a man of Banu Na'dr b. Malik at Hararat al-Righā\textsuperscript{3942} at the bank of Layyat al-Bahrah.\textsuperscript{3943} The transmitter Mahmūd (b. Khalīd) also mentioned the words along with the words “at Bahrah” “the slayer and the slain were from among them”. Mahmūd alone transmitted in this tradition the words “at the bank of Layyah”.\textsuperscript{3944}

\textbf{Chapter 1652}

\textbf{ABANDONMENT OF RETALIATION IN THE CASE OF QASĀMAH (TAKING OATHS)}

(4508) Bashīr b. Yasār told that a man of the Ḥāshīm b. Abī Ḥathmah told him that some people of his tribe went to Khaibar and separated there. They found one of them slain. They said to those with whom they had found him: You have killed our friend. They replied: We did not kill him, nor do we know the slayer. We (the people of the slain) then went to the Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him). He said to them: Bring a proof against the one who has slain him. They replied: We have no proof. He said: Then they will take an oath for you. They said: We do not accept the oaths of the Jews. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not like that no responsibility should be fixed for his blood. So he himself paid his

\textsuperscript{3941} Meaning that he ordered to kill him in retaliation.
\textsuperscript{3942} The name of a place in the valley of Layyah in Ta'īf. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) built a mosque there. Har rah means town and Righā is the name of a place.
\textsuperscript{3943} The name of a valley of Banu Thaqif, or the name of a mountain in Ta'īf.
\textsuperscript{3944} This is a munqafi' tradition, i.e., a link is missing in its chain, and the chain is also not authenticated. This tradition has been transmitted by Abū Dāwūd in his marisil by Mahmūd b. Khalīd, Khaṭṭār b. 'Ubayd and Muḥammad b. al-Ṣabāḥ, from al-Walīḍ, from al-Ausāf on the authority of 'Amr b. Shu'aib. There is no mention of the name of the companion 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ. The transmitter Mahmūd b. Khalīd mentions the words “the slayer and the slain were from them,” and not the other two transmitters. This tradition shows that retaliation should be taken on a man, who is proved to be a slayer by taking oaths (qasāmah). This is held by Malik in the case of intentional murder. But this tradition is not authentic. Hence the rest of the scholars hold that only bloodwit shall be paid in the case of qasāmah and retaliation shall not be taken (‘Awm al-Maḥbud, 1v, 301).
Ch. 1653 Retaliation Shall be Taken on the Slayer with A Stone

bloodwit\(^{3945}\) consisting of one hundred camels of *sadaqah* (i.e. camels sent to the Prophet as *zakāt*).

\((4509)\) Rāfi‘ b. Khādīj said: A man of the *Anṣār* was killed at Khāibar and his relatives went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and mentioned that to him. He asked: Have you two witnesses who can testify to the murderer of your friend? They replied: Apostle of Allah! there was not a single Muslim present, but only Jews who sometimes have the audacity to do even greater crimes than this. He said: Then choose fifty of them and demand that they take an oath; but they refused and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) paid the bloodwit himself.

\((4510)\) ‘Ābd al-Rahmān b. Bujāid said: I swear by Allah, Sahl had a misunderstanding about this tradition. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) wrote to the Jews: A slain man has been found amongst you, so pay his bloodwit. They wrote (to him): Swearing by Allah fifty oaths, we neither killed him nor do we know his slayer. He said: Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) himself paid his bloodwit which consisted of one hundred she-camels.

\((4511)\) Abū Salamah b. ‘Ābd al-Rahmān and Sulaimān b. Yasār said on the authority of some men of the *Anṣār*: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to the Jews and started with them: Fifty of you should take the oaths. But they refused (to take the oaths). He then said to the *Anṣār*: Prove your claim. They said: Do we take the oaths without seeing, Apostle of Allah? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then imposed the bloodwit on the Jews because he (the slain) was found among them.\(^{3946}\)

*Chapter 1653*

RETAIATION SHALL BE TAKEN ON THE SLAYER WITH A STONE OR IN THE SAME MANNER AS HE KILLED

\((4512)\) Anas said: A girl was found with her head crushed between two stones. She was asked: Who has done this to you? Is it so and so? Is it so and so, until a Jew was named, and she gave a sign with her head. The Jew was caught and he admit-

\(^{3945}\) This shows that in the case of *gasāmah* (taking oaths) bloodwit will be paid, and no retaliation will be taken.

\(^{3946}\) This tradition shows that the Jews paid the bloodwit, but the other traditions before it indicate that the Prophet himself (may peace be upon him) paid the bloodwit. Some scholars are of opinion that this is a weak tradition. The traditions which indicate that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) paid the bloodwit have been transmitted by al-Bukhārī and Muslim and are more authentic than this.
So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave command that his head should be crushed with stones.  

(4513) Anas said: A Jew killed a girl of the Ansār for her ornaments. He then threw her in a well, and crushed her head with stones. He was then arrested and brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He ordered regarding him that he should be stoned to death. He was then stoned till he died.

Abū Dāwūd said: It has been transmitted by Ibn Juraij from Ayyūb in a similar way.

(4514) Anas said: A girl was wearing silver ornaments. A Jew crushed her head with a stone. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) entered upon her when she had some breath. He said to her: Who has killed you? Has so and so killed you? She replied: No, making a sign with her head. He again asked: Who has killed you? Has so and so killed you? She replied: No, making a sign with her head. He again asked: Has so and so killed you? She said: Yes, making a sign with her head. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) commanded regarding him, and he was killed between two stones.

Chapter 1654

SHOULD A MUSLIM BE KILLED FOR AN INFIDEL?

(4515) Qais b. ‘Abbād said: I and Āshtar went to Ali and said to him: Did the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) give you any instruction about anything for which he did not give any instruction to the people in general? He said: No, except what is contained in this document of mine. Musaddad said: He then took out a document. Āḥmad said: A document from the sheath of his sword. It contained: The lives of all Muslims are equal; they are one band against others; the lowest of them can guarantee their protection. Beware, a Muslim must not be killed

3947. This shows that retaliation should be taken in the same manner as one was killed. If he was killed with the sword, the slayer should be killed with the sword; if with a stone or stick, he should be killed in the same way. This view is held by al-Shāfi‘ī, Malik, Āḥmad and by scholars in general. Abū Ḥanīfah maintains that the slayer should be killed with the sword or with a sharp weapon with which people are generally killed.

3948. It means that if the lowliest Muslim, e.g. a slave, a woman or a labourer of a lower rank, guarantees the protection of an infidel, his covenant of security will be binding on all Muslims. The Muslim state will provide security to him. His covenant or guarantee will be respected by all Muslims.
for an infidel, nor must one who has been given a covenant be killed while his covenant holds. If anyone introduces an innovation, he will be responsible for it. If anyone introduces an innovation or gives shelter to a man who introduces an innovation (in religion), he is cursed by Allah, by His angels, and by all the people.

Musaddad said: Ibn Abi ‘Urubah’s version has: He took out a document.

(4516) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, said that his grandfather reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying, mentioning the tradition similar to the one transmitted by ‘Ali. This version adds: The most distant of them gives protection as from all, those who are strong among them send back (spoil) to those who are weak among them, and their expeditions sending it back to those who are at home.

Chapter 1655

IF A MAN FINDS SOMEONE WITH HIS WIFE, SHOULD HE KILL HIM?

(4517) Abū Hurairah told that Sa‘d b. ‘Ubādah said: Apostle of Allah! if a man finds a man with his wife, should he kill him? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: No. Sa‘d: Why not, by Him Who has honoured you with truth? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Listen to what your chief is saying. The narrator ‘Abd al-Wahhāb said: (Listen) to what Sa‘d is saying.

(4518) Abū Hurairah told that Sa‘d b. ‘Ubādah said to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): What do you think if I find with my wife a man; should I give him some time until I bring four witnesses?* He said: Yes.

3949. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars about the killing of Muslim for a non-Muslim. Al-Sha‘bī, al Nakha‘ī and Abu Ḥanīfah maintain that a Muslim shall be killed for a non-Muslim who is protected. According to the rest of scholars who constitute a majority, a Muslim shall not be killed for an infidel, whether he is protected or not (‘Awn al-Mu’bud, IV, 304).

3950. It means that no matter how far one may live from the land of infidels, one may give guarantee of protection to any infidel, and that guarantee will be respected by all Muslims.

3951. Here strong and weak refer to those warriors whose mounts are strong or weak. It means that there is no distinction among the warriors in the distribution of spoils among them if their mounts are strong or weak. The spoils earned by the strong will be shared by the weak.

3952. It means that when a detachment is sent ahead into the infidel country those who remain behind them are entitled to their portion of any spoils they take.

3953. Muslim in his Sahīḥ adds in his version: He has sense of honour, but I have more sense of honour than him, and Allah has more sense of honour than me. This shows that one should not kill a man who is found with one’s wife unless one has four witnesses.

3954. Scholars have difference of opinion about a man who kills a man on the presumption that he found him committing fornication with his wife. The generality of scholars hold that his
Chapter 1656

IF SOMEONE IS INJURED ACCIDENTALLY BY THE COLLECTOR OF ZAKĀT, WHAT SHOULD BE DONE?

(4519) ‘Ā’ishah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) sent Abū Jahm b. Ḥudhaifah as a collector of zakāt. A man quarrelled with him about his sadaqah (i.e. zakāt), and Abū Jahm struck him and wounded his head. They (his people) came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Retaliation, Apostle of Allah! The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: You may have so much and so much. But they did not agree. He again said: You may have so much and so much. But they did not agree. He again said: You may have so much and so much. So they agreed. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: I am going to address the people in the afternoon and tell him about your consent. They said: Yes. Addressing (the people), the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: These people of Laith came to me asking for retaliation. I presented them so much and so much and they agreed. Do you agree? They said: No. The Immigrants (Muhājirun) intended (to take retaliation) on them. But the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) commanded to refrain from them and they refrained. He then called them and increased (the amount), and asked: Do you agree? They replied: Yes. He said: I am going to address the people and tell them about your consent. They said: Yes. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) addressed and said: Do you agree? They said: Yes.3955

Chapter 1657

TAKING RETALIATION WITHOUT A WEAPON OF IRON

(4520) Anas said: A girl was found with her head crushed between two stones. She was asked: Who did it with you? Was it so and so? Was it so and so? Until the Jew was named. Thereupon she gave a sign with her head. The Jew was arrested and he admitted. So the Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave command that his head statement will not be accepted, and retaliation will be taken on him except that he produces four witnesses, or the heirs of the slain acknowledge. The witnesses should be four pious men and not women, and they should bear witness that they have seen him with their own eyes committing fornication. Besides, they should also be married (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 305).

3955. This shows that in case of conciliation any amount can be paid to the heirs of the effected person. This can be more than the bloodwit prescribed for an injury. But it is reported about Abū Bakr and ‘Umar that they had taken retaliation on the collectors of sahāt in such cases. Al-Shāfi‘i, Ahmad and Iṣḥāq hold that retaliation should be taken.
Chapter 1658

RETAIlATION FOR STRIKING AND GIVING RETALIATION BY A RULER ON HIMSELF

(4521) Abū Sa'īd al-Khudrī said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was distributing something, a man came towards him and bent down on him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) struck him with a bough and his face was wounded. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to him: Come and take retaliation. He said: No, I have forgiven, Apostle of Allah! 3957

(4522) Abū Firās said: 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb (Allah be pleased with him) addressed us and said: I did not send my collectors (of zakāt) so that they strike your bodies and that they take your property. If that is done with someone and he appeals to me, I shall take retaliation on him. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ said: If any man (i.e. governor) inflicts disciplinary punishment on his subjects, would you take retaliation on him too? He said: Yes, by Him in Whose hand my soul is, I shall take retaliation on him. I saw that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had given retaliation on himself.

Chapter 1659

FORGIVING RETALIATION BY WOMEN

(4523) 'Ā'ishah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The disputants should refrain from taking retaliation. The one who is nearer should forgive first and then the one who is next to him, even if (the one who forgives) were a woman. 3958

3956. This shows that retaliation should be taken in the same manner as the effected person was injured or killed. All the scholars except Abū Ḥanīfah maintain that retaliation should be taken in the same manner as one was injured or killed. But Abū Ḥanīfah holds that retaliation should be taken with a sword. This he holds on the basis of a tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

3957. This shows that even if a ruler of Muslims injures a man, he can take retaliation on him. Although no Muslim could dare take retaliation from the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he asked the man to take retaliation on him. In fact, he set an example for the Muslims, so that rulers may not oppress the people.

3958. It means that if a man is killed, and his heirs are both men and women, and one of them forgives, even if she were a woman, the right of taking retaliation is dropped, and only bloodwit
Abū Dāwūd said: I have been informed that forgiving by women in the case of murder is permissible if a woman were one of the heirs (of the slain). I have been told on the authority of Abū ‘Ubaid about the meaning of the word *yanḥajarūn*, that is, they should refrain from retaliation.

Chapter 1660

ON A PERSON WHO IS KILLED AMONG HIS PEOPLE AND HIS SLAYER IS NOT KNOWN

(4524) ِTāwūs in his version said: If anyone is killed. Ibn ‘Ubaid in his version said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If anyone is killed in error (blindly) when people are throwing stones, or by beating with whips, or striking with a stick, it is accidental and the compensation for accidental death is due. But if anyone is killed deliberately, retaliation is due. Ibn ‘Ubaid said in his version: Retaliation of the man is due. The agreed version then goes: If anyone comes in (between the two will be binding. It is disputed whether women can forgive retaliation or not. The majority of scholars hold that women are allowed to forgive retaliation like men Al-Auzā’ī and Ibn Shubrumah maintain that women are not allowed to forgive. Al-Ḥasan and Ibrāhīm al-Nakha’ī are of opinion that both husband and wife are not allowed to forgive.

In this tradition the "disputants" refers to those Muslims who fight among themselves. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) advised them to forgive one another and refrain from taking retaliation. If they take retaliation, the dispute will continue and more blood may be shed. The other explanation is that if the heirs of the slain demand retaliation and the heirs of the slayer do not allow to give retaliation and both parties begin to fight, the heirs of the slain should forgive them so that the dispute may come to an end (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 306).

3959. These are instances of a case in which the actual person who killed him is not known or where there was no intention to kill. If a man is killed with anything other than a weapon such as a stone or a stick, this is a quasi-murder according to Abū Ḥanīfah and accidental murder according to the rest of jurists. In this case when people are throwing stones on each other, a man is killed and no one knows the actual person who killed him. Now, who will pay the bloodwit? The question is disputed. Mālik b. Anas holds that it falls on those who came to fight. Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal is of view that the other party will pay the bloodwit, and if they name a man definitely, it will be the case of *qasāmah* (taking oaths). Ibn Abī Lailā and Abū Yūsuf maintain that his bloodwit falls on the people of both parties who fought among themselves. Al-Auzā’ī is of opinion that both parties will pay the bloodwit except that a man who is neutral names a person who killed him. If it is proved that actually it was he who had killed him, retaliation will be taken on him. Al-Shāhī holds that if they claim that a certain person or party killed him, it becomes the case of *qasāmah* (taking oaths), otherwise there will be no bloodwit and retaliation. Abū Ḥanīfah is of opinion that bloodwit will be due from the tribe among which the corpse of the slain was found, provided the heirs of the slain do not name another person (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 307).
The Amount of Bloodwit

Chapter 1661

THE AMOUNT OF BLOODWIT

(4526) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, said that his grandfather told that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that if anyone is killed accidentally, his bloodwit should be one hundred camels: thirty she-camels which had entered their second year, thirty she-camels which had entered their third year, thirty she-camels which had entered their fourth year, and ten male camels which had entered their third year.3960

(4527) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, said that his grandfather told that the value of the bloodwit in the time of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was eight hundred dinars or eight thousand dirhams, and the bloodwit for the People of the Book was half that for Muslims. He said: This applied till ‘Umar (Allah be pleased with him) became caliph and he made a speech in which he said: Beware! Camels have become dear. So ‘Umar fixed the value for those who possessed gold at one thousand dinars, for those who possessed silver at twelve thousand (dirhams), for those who possessed cattle at two hundred cows, for those who possessed sheep at two thousand sheep, and for those who possessed suits3961 of clothing at two hundred suits. He said: He left the bloodwit for dhimmis (protected people) as it was, not raising it in proportion to the increase he made in the bloodwit.3962

(4528) ‘Ata‘ b. Abi Rabah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that bloodwit for those who possessed camels should be one hundred camels, and for those who possessed cattle two hundred cows, and for those who

3960. Camels are the standard for the value of bloodwit. The price of the camels can be given as bloodwit
3961. A suit consists of a lower garment and an upper garment.
3962. It means that ‘Umar left the bloodwit of dhimmis as it was in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The bloodwit of a Muslim in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was eight hundred dinars, and ‘Umar raised it to twelve hundred dinars. But ‘Umar left the bloodwit of dhimmis at four hundred dinars, i.e. half of the bloodwit that was fixed by the Prophet (may peace be upon him) for a Muslim.
possessed sheep one thousand sheep, and for those who possessed suits of clothing two hundred suits, and for those who possessed wheat something which the narrator Muḥammad (b. Iṣḥāq) did not remember.

Abū Dāwūd said: I read out to Saʿīd b. Yaʿqūb al-Ṭāliqānī who said: Abū Tumailah transmitted to us, saying: Muḥammad b. Iṣḥāq transmitted to us, saying: 'Aṭā' reported Jābir b. ʿAbd Allah as saying: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) fixed; and he mentioned the tradition like that of Mūsā; he said: And those who possess corn food should pay something which I do not remember.

(4529) ʿAbd Allah b. Masʿūd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The bloodwit for accidental killing should be twenty she-camels which had entered their fourth year, twenty she-camels which had entered their fifth year, twenty she-camels which had entered their second year, twenty she-camels which had entered their third year, and twenty male camels which had entered their second year.3963 It does not go beyond Ibn Māsʿūd.3964

(4530) Ibn ʿAbdās said: A man of Banū ʿAdī was killed. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) fixed his bloodwit at the rate of twelve thousand (dirhams).

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn ʿUyainah transmitted it from ʿAmr, from ʿIkrimah, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and he did not mention Ibn ʿAbdās.

Chapter 1662

BLOODWIT FOR ACCIDENTAL KILLING, THAT IS, QUASI-INTENTIONAL KILLING

(4531) ʿAbd Allah b. ʿAmr said (Musaddad's version has): The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) addressed on the day of Conquest at Mecca, and said: Allah is Most Great, three times. He then said: There is no god but Allah alone: He fulfilled His promise, helped His servant, and defeated alone the companies. (The narrator said:) I have remembered from Musaddad up to this. Then the agreed version has: Beware! all the merits mentioned in pre-Islamic times, and the claim

3963. This tradition is followed by Abū Ḥanīfah for the bloodwit of accidental killing. Al-Laitī, Mālik and al-Shāfiʿī hold that bloodwit for accidental killing should be twenty she-camels which had entered their second year, twenty she-camels which had entered their third year, twenty male camels which had entered their third year, twenty she-camels which had entered their fourth year, and twenty she-camels which had entered their fifth year ('Awn al-Maʿbūd, IV. 308).

3964. Al-Tirmidhī said: We do not know this tradition attributed to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) except through this tradition only. Besides, the narrator Khashaf b. Mālik is obscure. Hence al-Shāfiʿī followed the other tradition and ignored this tradition.
laid for blood or property are under my feet, except supply of water to the pilgrims and the custody of the Ka'bah. He then said: The bloodwit for unintentional murder which resembles intentional, such as is done with a whip and a stick, is one hundred camels, forty of which are pregnant.\textsuperscript{3965} Musaddad's version is more perfect.

\textit{(4532)} The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Khālid through the same chain of narrators to the same effect.

\textit{(4533)} The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn 'Umar from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the same effect. This version has: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) addressed on the day of Conquest, or he said: On the conquest of Mecca on the ladder of the House or of the Ka'bah.

Abū Dāwūd said: In a similar way Ibn 'Uyainah also transmitted it from 'All b. Zaid, from al-Qāsim b. Rabī‘ah, from Ibn 'Umar, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him); and Ayyūb al-Sukhtiyānī transmitted it from al-Qāsim b. Rabī‘ah from 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr like the tradition of Khālid. Ḥammād b. Salamah also transmitted it from 'All b. Zaid, from Ya‘qūb al-Sadūsī, on the authority of 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The statements of Zaid and of Abū Mūsā are similar to the tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and to the tradition of 'Umar (Allah be pleased with him).

\textit{(4534)} Mujāhid said: 'Umar gave judgment that bloodwit for quasi-intentional murder should be thirty she-camels in their fourth year, thirty she-camels in their fifth year, and forty pregnant she-camels in their sixth year up to the ninth.\textsuperscript{3966}

\textit{(4535)} 'Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) said: The bloodwit for unintentional murder

\textsuperscript{3965} This tradition shows that there is a kind of unintentional murder which resembles intentional. Some scholars are of view that there are only intentional and accidental murders. There is no kind of murder between the two. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars about bloodwit for quasi-intentional murder. 'Atā‘, al-Shāfi‘ī and Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan hold the same view as mentioned in this tradition. According to Abū Ḥanīfah, Abū Yūsuf, Aḥmad and Ishaq, bloodwit for quasi-intentional killing should be one hundred camels to be divided into four sets of different ages. They are: twenty-five she-camels which had entered their second year, twenty-five she-camels which had entered their third year, twenty-five she-camels which had entered their fourth year and twenty-five she-camels which had entered their fifth year.

There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars on the definition of quasi-intentional murder. According to Mālik, there is intentional or unintentional murder. If a man kills another man intentionally whether with a stick, stone or with a weapon, it is intentional. Abū Ḥanīfah holds that if a man kills another man intentionally with a weapon made for this purpose, it is intentional murder. If he kills intentionally with a stone, stick etc., it is quasi-intentional, liable for bloodwit and not for retaliation (\textit{Atā‘ al-Ma‘būd}, IV, 310)

\textsuperscript{3966} This tradition is followed by al-Shāfi‘ī. Abū Ḥanīfah follows the tradition of Ibn Mas‘ūd which indicates that the bloodwit should be divided into four sets of camels of different ages.
which resembles intentional is twenty-five she-camels which had entered their fourth year, twenty-five she-camels which had entered their fifth year, twenty-five she-camels which had entered their third year, and twenty-five camels which had entered their second year.  

(4536) 'All said: The bloodwit for unintentional murder is in four parts: twenty-five she-camels in their fourth year, twenty-five she-camels in their fifth year, twenty-five she-camels in their third year, and twenty-five she-camels in their second year.

(4537) 'Uthmān b. 'Affān and Zaid b. Thābit said: The bloodwit for what resembled intentional murder should be forty pregnant she-camels in their fifth year, thirty she-camels in their fourth year, and thirty she-camels in their third year. The bloodwit for unintentional murder is thirty she-camels in their fourth year, thirty she-camels in their third year, and twenty she-camels in their second year.

(4538) Zaid b. Thābit said about the bloodwit for quasi-intentional murder. . . . He then mentioned a similar tradition as mentioned above.

Chapter 1663

AGES OF CAMELS

(4539) Abū Dāwūd said: Abū Dāwūd and others have said: When a she-camel enters her fourth year, the female is called ḥiqqah, and the male is called ḥiqq, for it deserves that it should be loaded and ridden. When a camel enters its fifth year, the male is called jadha' and the female is called jadha'ah. When it enters its sixth year, and sheds its front teeth, it is called thanī (male) and thanīyyah (female). When it enters its seventh year, it is called rabā' and rabā'tyyah. When it enters its eighth year and sheds its teeth, it is known as sadīs and sadīs. When it enters its ninth year and cuts its canine teeth, it is called bazīl. When it enters its tenth year, it is called mukhālif. Then there is no name for it, but it is called bazīl ām and bazīl āmain, and mukhālif ‘ām and mukhālif ‘āmain, up to any year it increases. Naḍ d. Shumail said: Bint makhūd is a she-camel of one year, and bint labūn is a she-camel of two years, ḥiqqah is a she-camel of three years, jadha'ah is a she-camel of four years, thanī is a camel of five years, rabā' is a camel of six years, sadīs is a camel of seven years, and bazīl is a camel of eight years.

Abū Dāwūd said: Abū Ḥatim and al-Āṣma'ī said: Al-Jadhu'ah is a time when no tooth is growing. Abū Ḥatim said: Some of them said: When it sheds its teeth between front and canine teeth, it is called rabā' and when it sheds its front teeth, it is called thanī. Abū ʿUbaid said: When it becomes pregnant, it is called khalīfah, and it remains khalīfah for ten months; when it reaches ten months, it is called ušharā’. Abū
Hatim said: When it shed its front teeth, it is called thani and when it sheds its teeth between front and canine teeth it is called rabā'.

Chapter 1664
BLOODWIT FOR LIMBS

(4540) Abū Mūsā reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The fingers are equal: ten camels for each finger.3968

(4541) Abū Mūsā al-Ash'arl reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The fingers are equal. I asked: Ten camels for each? He replied: Yes.

Abū Dāwūd said: Muḥammad b. Ja'far transmitted it from Shu'bah, from Ghālib, saying: I heard Masrūq b. Aws; and Ismā'īl transmitted it, saying: Ghālib al-Tammār transmitted it to me through the chain of Abū al-Walīd; and Ḥanẓlah b. Abī Ṣafīyyah transmitted it from Ghālib through the chain of Ismā'īl.

(4542) Ibn ‘Abdās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: This and that are equal, that is, the thumb and the little finger.

(4543) Ibn ‘Abdās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The fingers are equal and the teeth are equal. The front tooth and the molar tooth are equal, this and that are equal.3969

Abū Dāwūd said: Naḍr b. Shumail transmitted it from Shu'bah to the same effect as mentioned by ‘Abd al-Ṣamad.

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Dāriml narrated it to me from al-Nadr.

(4544) Ibn ‘Abdās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The teeth are equal, and the fingers are equal.

(4545) Ibn ‘Abdās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) treated the fingers and toes as equal.

(4546) ‘Amr b. Shu'aib, on his father's authority, told that his grandfather said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said in his address while he was leaning against the Ka'bah: (The bloodwit) for each finger is ten camels.

(4547) ‘Amr b. Shu'aib, on his father's authority, told that his grandfather said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: For each tooth are ten camels.

Abū Dāwūd said: I found in my notebook from Shaibān and I did not hear from him; Abū Bakr, a reliable friend of ours, said: Shaibān—Muḥammad b. Rāshid—

3968. Here it refers a both to fingers and toes. The bloodwit for each finger or tooth is ten camels.

3969. It has been suggested that "this and that" refers only to the little finger and the thumb, but it may here refer to the front tooth and the molar tooth mentioned immediately before it,
Sulaimān b. Mūsā—‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, said that his grandfather said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would fix the bloodwit for accidental killing at the rate of four hundred dinārs or their equivalent in silver for townspeople, and he would fix it according to the price of camels. So when they were dear, he increased the amount to be paid, and when cheap prices prevailed he reduced the amount to be paid. In the time of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) they reached between four hundred and eight hundred dinārs, their equivalent in silver being eight thousand dirhams. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that those who possessed cattle should pay two hundred cows, and those who possessed sheep two thousand sheep. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The blood-wit is to be treated as something to be inherited by the heirs of the one who was killed, and what remains should be divided among the agnates. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that for complete cutting off a nose there is full bloodwit, one hundred camels must be paid; and if tip of the nose is cut off, half the bloodwit, i.e. fifty camels must be paid, or their equivalent in gold or in silver, or a hundred cows, or a thousand sheep; for the hand when it is cut off half, the bloodwit must be paid; for one foot half the bloodwit must be paid; for a wound in the head a third of the bloodwit, i.e. thirty-three camels and a third of the bloodwit, or their equivalent in gold or silver, or cows, or sheep; for a head thrust which reaches the body, the same bloodwit must be paid; ten camels must be paid for every finger of the fingers, and five camels for every tooth. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that the bloodwit for a woman should be divided among her relatives on her father’s side who do not inherit anything from her except the residence of her heirs. If she is killed, her bloodwit should be distributed among her heirs, and they will have the right of taking retaliation on the slayer. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: There is nothing for the slayer; and if he (slain) has no heir, his heir will be the one who is nearest to him among the people, but the slayer should not inherit anything. Muḥammad said: All this has been transmitted to me by Sulaimān b. Mūsā on the authority of ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, who, on his father’s authority said that his grandfather told from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Abū Dāwūd said: Muḥammad b. Rāshid, an inhabitant of Damascus, fled from Basrah escaping murder.

(4548) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib said, on his authority, that his grandfather reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Bloodwit for what resembles intentional murder is to be made as severe as that for intentional murder, but the culprit is not to be killed. Khalid gave us some additional information on the authority of Ibn
Rāshid: That (unintentional murder which resembles intentional murder) means that Satan jumps among the people and then the blood is shed blindly without any malice and weapon.3970

(4549) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Bloodwit for every wound which lays bare a bone is five camels.

(4550) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, told that his grandfather said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that a third of the bloodwit should be paid for an eye fixed in its place.3971

Chapter 1665

BLOODWIT FOR AN UNBORN CHILD

(4551) Al-Mughīrah b. Shu‘bah said: A man of Hudhail had two wives. One of them struck her fellow-wife with a tent-pole and killed her and her unborn child. They brought the dispute to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). One of the two men said: How can we pay bloodwit for the one who did not make a noise, nor ate, nor drank, nor raised his voice? He (the Prophet) asked: Is it a rhymed prose like that of a bedouin? He gave judgment that a male or female slave of the best quality should be paid in compensation, and he fixed it to be paid by the woman’s relatives on her father’s side.3972

(4552) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Mansūr through a different chain of narrators and to the same effect. This version adds: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) fixed the bloodwit for the slain woman to be paid by the relatives of the woman who had slain her, on the father’s side.3972

3970 It means that Satan comes in among the people and exhorts them to kill each other. They fight against each other in such a way that the actual killer is not clearly known, but there is no intention to kill. This is a blind killing.

3971 It means that if by the injury the sight of an eye is lost and the eye is not removed from its place, a third of the bloodwit shall be paid. But if the eye is removed along with the loss of eyesight, full bloodwit will be paid. This is held by Ishāq. But scholars in general hold that a fair compensation to be fixed by one’s own judgment is to be paid. This is known as ḥukūmat ‘adl (fair judgment). The way of determining this compensation is that the affected person will be taken as a slave and its price will be considered. Then the price of the wounded slave will be considered, and this price will be the compensation for the loss of eyesight.

3972 This tradition does not mention that the woman was pregnant and the foetus was also killed. There is also no mention of giving bloodwit of the woman. It only mentions that the compensation for the foetus was paid. The other traditions indicate that compensation for the foetus and for the woman was paid. The compensation for the foetus is a female or male slave.
Abū Dāwūd said: In a similar way it has been transmitted by al-Ḥakam from Mujāhid from al-Muḡfrah.

(4553) Al-Miswar b. Makhramah said: 'Umar consulted the people about the compensation for abortion of a woman. Al-Muḡfrah b. Shu'bah said: I was present with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) when he gave judgment that a male or a female slave should be paid in compensation for it. He said: Bring another man with you who should testify you. So he brought Muḥammad b. Maslamah to him. Hārūn added: He then testified him.

Imlāṣ means a man striking the belly of his wife.3973

Abū Dāwūd said: I have been informed that Abū 'Ubaid said: It (abortion) is called imlāṣ because the woman causes it to slip before the time of delivery. Similarly, anything which slips from the hand or from some other thing is called malasa (slipped).

(4554) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by 'Umar through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ḥammād b. Zaid and Ḥammād b. Salamah transmitted it from Hishām b. 'Arūbah on his father's authority who said that 'Umar said....

(4555) Ibn 'Abbās said: 'Umar asked about the decision of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about that (i.e. abortion). Ḥaml b. Mālik b. al-Nābighah got up and said: I was between two women. One of them struck another with a rolling-pin killing both her and what was in her womb. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that the bloodwit for the unborn child should be a male or a female slave of the best quality and that she should be killed.3974

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Naḍr b. Sbūmāil said: Misfaḥ means a rolling-pin.

Abū Dāwūd said: Abū 'Ubaid said: Misfaḥ means a pole from the tent-poles.

(4556) Ṭawūs said: 'Umar stood on the pulpit. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect as mentioned before. He did not mention "that she should be killed". This version adds: "a male or a female slave". 'Umar then said: Allah is Most Great. Had I not heard it, we would have decided about it something else.

(4557) About the story of Ḥaml b. Mālik, Ibn 'Abbās said: She aborted a child who had grown hair and was dead, and the woman also died. He (the Prophet) gave judgment that the bloodwit was to be paid by the woman's relatives on the father's side. Her uncle said: Apostle of Allah! she has aborted a child who had grown hair.

3973. Imlāṣ means abortion of a woman by some injury or shock.
3974. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) ordered to kill the woman who had killed another woman with a rolling-pin in retaliation for the woman who had been slain. It also shows that killing with a stick or stone intentionally is also an intentional murder.
The father of the woman who had slain said: He is a liar: I swear by Allah, he did not raise his voice, or drink or eat. No compensation is to be paid for an offence like this. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Is it a rhymed prose of pre-Islamic Arabia and its soothsaying? Pay a male or female slave of the best quality in compensation for the child.

Ibn ‘Abbās said: The name of one of them was Mulaikah, and the name of the other was Umm Ghutāif.

(4558) Jábir b. ‘Abd Allah said: One of the two women of Hudhail killed the other. Each of them had husband and sons. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) fixed the bloodwit for the slain woman to be paid by the woman’s relatives on the father’s side. He declared her husband and the child innocent. The relatives of the woman who killed said: We shall inherit from her. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: No, her sons and her husband should inherit from her.

(4559) Abū Hurairah said: Two women of Hudhail fought together and one of them threw a stone at the other and killed her. They brought their dispute to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who gave judgment that a male or a female slave of the best quality should be given as compensation for her unborn child, and he fixed it to be paid by the woman’s relatives on the father’s side. He made her sons and those who were with them her heirs. Hámal b. Mūlik b. al-Nābighah al-Hudhali said: Apostle of Allah! how should I be fined for one who has not drunk, or eaten, or spoken, or raised his voice?—adding that compensation is not to be paid for such (an offence). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: This may simply belongs to the soothsayers on account of his rhymed prose which he has used.

(4560) Abū Hurairah said about this story: Then the woman, against whom he decided that a male or a female slave should be paid by her, died. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then gave judgment that her sons will inherit from her, and that the bloodwit should be paid by her relatives on the father’s side.

(4561) Buraidah said: A woman threw a stone at another woman and she aborted. The dispute was brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He gave judgment that five hundred sheep should be paid for her (unborn) child, and forbade throwing stones.

Abū Dāwūd said: The version of this tradition goes in this way, i.e. five hundred sheep. What is correct is one hundred sheep.

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Abbās transmitted this tradition in this way, but it is a misunderstanding.

3975. This refers to the woman who was killed, and not the woman who killed.
Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment that a male or a female slave, or a horse or a mule should be paid for a miscarriage.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ḥammād b. Salamah and Khālid b. ‘Abd Allah transmitted this tradition from Muhammad b. ‘Amr, but they did not mention "or a horse or a mule."

Al-Sha‘bī said: The price of a male or a female slave is five hundred dirhams.

Abū Dāwūd said: Rabī‘ah said: The price of a male or a female slave is fifty dinārs.

Chapter 1666

BLOODWIT FOR A MUKĀTAB, A SLAVE WHO HAS MADE AN AGREEMENT TO PURCHASE HIS FREEDOM

Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave judgment about the slave who had made an agreement to purchase his freedom (mukātab) and he had been killed that bloodwit is paid for him at the rate paid for a free man so far as he has paid the purchase money, and at the rate paid for a slave as the remainder is concerned.

Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a mukātab (a slave who has made an agreement to purchase his freedom) gets blood-money or an inheritance, he can inherit in accordance with the extent to which he has been emancipated.

The words "horse and mule" may be an addition to this tradition by some transmitter to show that in the absence of a slave a horse or a mule can be paid or their price. Al-Baihaqī is of opinion that the words "horse and mule" are not guarded and the tradition is weak and mursal (the link of the Companion being missing) (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 319).

None of the scholars, except Ibrāhīm al-Nakha‘ī follows this tradition. According to them, it might have been abrogated. Al-Khaṭṭābī said: The scholars in general are agreed that a mukātab is a slave so long as he has not paid the full amount of the purchase money to the master. If even one single dirham remains to be paid, he is a slave.

If this tradition is genuine and has not been repealed and does not conflict with other authentic traditions on this subject, one should follow it. But it has been criticised (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 319).

It means that if there is some blood-money or inheritance for a mukātab, he will get it in accordance with the extent to which he has been emancipated. For example, if he pays half of the purchase money and his father who was a freeman dies, and he leaves his only son, he will get...
Chapter 1668

A MAN WHO FIGHTS AGAINST ANOTHER MAN

Abū Dāwūd said: Wuhāib transmitted it from Ayyūb, from ‘Ikrimah, on the authority of ‘Ālī, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him): and Ḥammād b. Zaid and Iṣmā‘īl have transmitted it in a mursal form (i.e. the link of the Companion being missing) from Ayyūb, from ‘Ikrimah, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Iṣmā‘īl b. ‘Ulayyah has treated it as a statement of ‘Ikrimah.

Chapter 1667

BLOODWIT FOR A DHIMMI, A PROTECTED MAN, IN A MUSLIM COUNTRY

(4566) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, told that his grandfather reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The bloodwit for a man who makes a covenant is half of the bloodwit for a free man.

Abū Dāwūd said: It has been transmitted by Uṣūmah b. Zaid al-Laithī and ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥārith on the authority of ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib in a similar manner.3979

Chapter 1668

ON A MAN WHO FIGHTS AGAINST ANOTHER MAN WHO DEFENDS HIMSELF FROM HIM

(4567) Śafwān b. Ya‘lā, on his father’s authority, said: A servant of mine fought with a man and bit his hand and he drew away his hand. (One of) his front teeth fell half of his inheritance. Or if someone commits an offence to a mukāblah, while he had paid a part of his purchase money, the criminal will pay the bloodwit to his heirs at the rate paid for a free man so far as he had paid the purchase money, and at the rate paid for a slave so far as the remainder is concerned. If a slave makes an agreement to purchase his freedom for one thousand dirhams and pays five hundred dirhams to the master, and then he is killed, his heirs will get five hundred dirhams, half of the bloodwit of a free man, and his master will get five hundred dirhams, half of the price of the slave in case his price is one thousand dirhams (‘Awān al-Ma‘būd, IV, 319).

3979. There is a difference of opinion amongst scholars about the bloodwit for a dhimmi (protected infidel). According to one view, the bloodwit for him will be half of a free man. This is held by Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, ‘Urwāh b. al-Zubair, Mālik, Ibn Shubrumah, and Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal. Aḥmad says that this is in case the murder is accidental. If it is intentional, it will be increased by twelve thousand. Another view goes that the bloodwit for a protected man will be equal to that of a Muslim. This is held by Abū Ḥanīfah, Sufyān al-Thawrī, al-Sha‘bī, al-Nakha‘ī, Mujāhid, ‘Umar and Ibn Mas‘ūd. A third view is that his bloodwit is one-third of the bloodwit for a Muslim. It is held by al-Shāfi‘ī, Ishāq b. Rāhwaib, Ibn al-Mussayyab, al-Ḥasan and ‘Ikrimah. ‘Umar and ‘Uṯmān are also reported to have held this view (‘Awān al-Ma‘būd, IV, 320).
out. So he came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) who imposed no retaliation for his tooth, saying: Do you intend that he leaves his hand in your mouth so that you crunch it like a male camel? He said: Ibn Abī Mulaikah told me on the authority of his grandfather that Abū Bakr (Allah be pleased with him) imposed no retaliation on him for it, saying: May his tooth go away!3980

(4568) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ya‘lā b. Umayyah through a different chain of narrators. This version has: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to the man who bit him: If you wish that you give him control over your hand and he bites it, and then you drive it away from his mouth, (you may do it). He imposed no retaliation for his teeth.

Chapter 1669

ON A MAN WHO PRACTISES MEDICINE WITHOUT HAVING ITS KNOWLEDGE AND DOES HARM TO THE PATIENT

(4569) ‘Amr b. Shu‘aib, on his father’s authority, said that his grandfather reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Anyone who practises medicine when he is not known as a practitioner will be held responsible.3981 Naṣr said: Ibn Juraij transmitted it to me.

Abū Dāwūd said: This has been transmitted by al-Walid alone. We do not know whether it is sound or not.

(4570) ‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz said: Some people of the deputation which came to my father reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Any physician who practises medicine when he was not known as a practitioner before that and he harms (the patients) he will be held responsible.

‘Abd al-‘Azīz said: Here physician does not refer to a man by qualification. It means opening a vein, incision and cauterisation.3982

3980. This shows that if a man injures another man to defend himself there is no retaliation. This is the majority opinion. Mālik holds that the man who injures in his defence shall pay compensation.

3981. He will have to pay bloodwit if the patient dies.

3982. This is the opinion of the transmitter of this tradition. He means that by the physician mentioned in this tradition is not meant a qualified person. It merely refers to a man who opens a vein, incises a boil or cauterises
Chapter 1670

BLOODWIT FOR UNINTENTIONAL MURDER WHICH RESEMBLES INTENTIONAL

(4571) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Musaddad’s version has: He addressed on the day of Conquest. The agreed version then goes: Beware! Every object of pride of pre-Islamic times, whether it is blood-vengeance or property, mentioned or claimed, has been put under my feet except supply of water to the pilgrims and custody of the House (the Ka‘bah). He then said: Beware! The bloodwit for unintentional murder, such as is done with a whip and stick, is one hundred camels, forty of which are pregnant. 3983

(4572) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Khālid with a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

Chapter 1671

ON THE OFFENCE OF A SLAVE WHO BELONGS TO THE POOR PEOPLE

(4573) ‘Imrān b. Ḥuṣain said: A servant of some poor people cut off the ear of the servant of some rich people. His people came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! we are poor people. So he imposed no compensation on them. 3084

Chapter 1672

ON A MAN WHO IS KILLED BLINDLY WHEN THE PEOPLE ARE FIGHTING WITH EACH OTHER

(4574) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone is killed blindly or, when people are throwing stones, by a stone or a...
whip, his bloodwit is the bloodwit for an accidental murder.\textsuperscript{3985} But if anyone is killed intentionally, retaliation is due. If anyone tries to prevent it, the curse of Allah, of angels, and of all the people will rest on him.

\textit{Chapter 1673}

\textbf{ON AN ANIMAL WHICH KICKS WITH ITS LEG}

\textsuperscript{4575} Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: No recompense is to be demanded if one is kicked by an animal.\textsuperscript{3986}

Abu Dawud said: An animal kicks someone with its leg while one is riding on it.

\textit{Chapter 1674}

\textbf{NO RETALIATION IS PAYABLE FOR A WOUND CAUSED BY A DUMB ANIMAL, FOR A MINE AND FOR A WELL}

\textsuperscript{4576} Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: No retaliation is payable for a wound caused by a dumb animal,\textsuperscript{3987} for a mine,\textsuperscript{3988} and for a well.\textsuperscript{3989} On the treasure found buried in the land there is a fifth.\textsuperscript{3990}

\textsuperscript{3985} In a fighting when people are beating each other with sticks or whips or they are throwing stones and someone is killed, his bloodwit will be the bloodwit for an accidental murder. The reason is that the slayer is not known.

\textsuperscript{3986} It means that if an animal is not under the control of anyone and it kicks a person, no compensation will be demanded. But if there is a rider on it, or a driver with it, he will be responsible. In case the animal is out of control and it kicks some person, the driver will not be responsible.

\textsuperscript{3987} If an animal is free having no driver with it, and causes harm to agricultural crop or to some man, no compensation is payable for it. But if it has a driver, he will be responsible.

\textsuperscript{3988} If a man digs a mine in his land, and someone falls into it, the owner will not be responsible.

\textsuperscript{3989} If a man digs a well in his land and someone falls into it, the owner of the land will not be responsible.

\textsuperscript{3990} \textit{Rikāz} means the property of old found buried in someone’s land. There is one-fifth on this treasure payable to the Government. This is held by scholars in general, particularly by scholars of the Hijāz. According to Abū Ḥanīfah and scholars of ‘Iraq, \textit{rikāz} means mine. But this is not correct because the Prophet (may peace be upon him) differentiated between the two.
Ch. 1676  
Retaliation for A Tooth

Abū Dāwūd said: A dumb animal means an animal which is free and has no tether, and there is no one (as a watchman) with it. It causes harm by day and not by night.

Chapter 1675

THE SPREADING OF THE FIRE

(4577) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: No recompense may be demanded if the fire spreads.3991

Chapter 1676

RETAILIATION FOR A TOOTH

(4578) Anas b. Mālik said: Al-Rubayyi’, sister of Anas b. al-Nadr, broke (one of) the front teeth of a woman. They came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He made a decision in accordance with the Book of Allah that retaliation should be taken. Anas b. al-Nadr said: I swear by Him Who has sent you with truth, her front tooth will not be broken today. He replied: Anas! Allah’s decree is retaliation. But the people were agreeable to accepting a fine, so the Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Among Allah’s servants there are those who, if they adjured Allah, He (Allah) would consent to it 3992.

Abū Dāwūd said: I heard Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal say: He was asked: How retaliation of a tooth is taken? He said: It is broken with a file.

3991. It means that if a man kindles fire on his land and it spreads out and burns the property of some person, no compensation is payable for it.

3992. The retaliation of the tooth was due. But Anas adjured Allah, and the people consented to accept fine.
XXV KITĀB AL-SUNNAH

[ BOOK OF MODEL BEHAVIOUR (OF THE PROPHET) ]

Chapter 1677

EXPLANATION OF THE SUNNAH

(4579) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Jews were split up into seventy-one or seventy-two sects; and the Christians were split up into seventy-one or seventy-two sects; and my community will be split up into seventy-three sects.

(4580) Abū 'Amir al-Hawdhānī said: Mu‘āwiyyah b. Abī Sufyān stood among us and said: Beware! The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) stood among us and said: Beware! The People of the Book before were split up into seventy-two sects, and this community will be split up into seventy-three: seventy-two of them

3993. Literally, sunnah means the trodden path. In the parlance of Hadith, it means the model behaviour of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) Technically, the saying, doing, or tacit approval of the Prophet is called sunnah. Hadith and Sunnah are identical. In the early period there was a difference between the two. Hadith meant a vehicle or a narration which contained the Sunnah, and the Sunnah meant a law, a principle, and a practice A hadith sometimes contained many sunnahs.

3994. The transmitter is doubtful.

3995. The transmitter is doubtful.

3996. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not mean the disagreement of jurists in legal questions. He meant those people who opposed the followers of truth in respect of Unity of Allah, determination of good and bad, conditions of prophecy, and Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Towards the end of the generation of the Companions there arose theological differences which resulted in the rise of theological sects in Islam. They are, for example, Jahmiyyah, Mu'tazilah, Qadariyyah and others. They were seventy-two in number. Those who were in the right were called Ahl al-Sunnah wa al-Jamā'ah. This was the orthodox group of Islam. Abū Dāwūd has mentioned this tradition in this chapter to show that the sects which deviated from the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) will go to Hell and the sect which follows his Sunnah will be saved.
will go to Hell and one of them will go to Paradise, and it is the majority group.\(^{3997}\)

Ibn Yaḥyā and ‘Amr added in their version: “There will appear among my community people who will be dominated by desires like rabies which penetrates its patient.” ‘Amr’s version has: “penetrates its patient. There remains no vein and no joint but it penetrates it.”\(^{3998}\)

**Chapter 1678**

**PROHIBITION OF CONTROVERSY AND OF FOLLOWING THE ALLEGORICAL VERSES IN THE QUR’ĀN**

(4581) ‘A’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) recited this verse: “He it is Who has sent down to thee the Book: in it are verses basic or fundamental . . .” up to “men of understanding.”\(^{299}\) She said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: When you see those people who follow that which is allegorical in the Qur’ān, those are the people whom Allah has named (in the Qur’ān). So avoid them.\(^{4000}\)

3997. Those who follow the teachings of the Qur’ān, the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and adhere to the practice of the Companions and of the Successors and follow the middle path avoiding extremism in faith constitute the majority group.

3998. These desires refer to innovations in religion. If the people deviate from the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and follow the innovations, they are in the wrong. They stray from the right path. These innovations penetrate these people.

3999. Qur’ān, iii. 7.

4000. The verses of the Qur’ān have been divided into mukham (decisive or fundamental) and mutashābih (allegorical). There is a great difference of opinion on the meaning of these terms. The author of ‘Awn al-Ma’bud has recorded a number of explanations.

**Mukhamāt** are those verses that are open, clear, plain and decisive about their meanings. People with average understanding have no doubt about them. These verses relate to the cardinal doctrines or the articles of faith, i.e. Unity of Allah, practice of faith and general laws about practical life.

**Mutashābihāt** are those verses that have been couched in allegorical language susceptible to different interpretations, having meanings other than the literal one, like “The hand of Allah is over their hands” (xlvi. 2).

The Qur’ān has established the basic principles of faith and its practice in clear cut words or mukhamāt verses. Higher thoughts are concluded in allegorical verses or mutashābihāt. as there are people of various levels of understanding.

‘Abdullah Yusuf Ali says about these terms: “This passage gives us an important clue to the interpretation of the Qur’ān. Broadly speaking, it may be divided into two portions, not given separately, but intermingled, *viz.*, (1) the nucleus or foundation of the Book, literally ‘the mother
KEEPPING AWAY FROM HERETICS AND HATING THEM

(4582) Abū Dharr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The best of the actions is to love for the sake of Allah and to hate for the sake of Allah.

(4583) ‘Abd Allah b. Ka‘b b. Mālik who used to lead his father’s sons when he became blind, said: I heard Ka‘b b. Mālik say: The transmitter Ibn al-Sarh then narrated the story of his remaining behind from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in the battle of Tabūk. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade the Muslims to speak to any of us three. When (in this state) abundant time passed on me, I ascended the wall of the garden of Abū Qatādah who was my cousin. I saluted him, but, I swear by Allah, he did not return salute to me. He then narrated the story of the revelation of the Qur’ānic verses relating to his repentance.

THE ABANDONMENT OF SALUTING THE HERETICS

(4584) ‘Ammār b. Yāsir said: I came to my family when my hands had cracks. They dyed me with saffron. I then went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and saluted him, but he did not return me salutation. He said: Go and wash it away from of the Book; and (2) the part which is figurative, metaphorical or allegorical. It is very fascinating to take up the latter, and exercise our ingenuity about its inner meaning: but it refers to such profound spiritual matters that human language is inadequate to it, and though people of wisdom may get some light from it, no one should be dogmatic, as the final meaning is known to Allah alone. The Commentators usually understand the verses ‘of established meaning’ (muhkam) to refer to the categorical orders of the Shari‘at (or the Law), which are plain to everyone’s understanding. But perhaps the meaning is wider: the ‘mother of the Book’ must include the very foundation on which all Law rests, the essence of Allah’s Message, as distinguished from the various illustrative parables, allegories, and ordinances” (Abdullah Yusuf Ali, The Holy Qur’ān. I, 123. note 347)

4001. This shows that one should love a man who is obedient to Allah and follows the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and keep away from the one who deviates from the Sunnah.

4002 Since Ka‘b b. Mālik had committed a sin by remaining behind from jihād, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the Muslims to speak to him. His cousin did not respond to him on account of the prohibition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
Adherence to the Sunnah

Chapter 1682

PROHIBITION OF CONTROVERSY ABOUT THE QUR’AN

(4586) Abu Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Controverting about the Qur’an is disbelief.4005

Chapter 1682

ADHERENCE TO THE SUNNAH

(4587) Al-Miqdâm b. Ma’dikarib reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Beware! I have been given the Qur’an and something like it; yet the time is coming when a man replete on his couch will say: Keep to the Qur’an; what you find in it to be permissible treat as permissible, and what you find in it to be prohibited treat as prohibited. Beware! The domestic ass, beasts of prey with fangs, a find belonging to a confederate, unless its owner does not want it, are not permissible to you.4006 If anyone comes to some people, they must entertain him, but if they do not, he has a right to mulct them to an amount equivalent to his entertain-

4003. Since it is not permissible to use saffron with perfume for men, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) disliked this act of ‘Ammâr and did not respond to him. From this Abû Dâwûd has inferred that one should not return salutation to the heretics, because they deviate from the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

4004. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) kept away from her out of anger, because she disobeyed him, and called Saffiyah, his wife, a Jewess. This shows that one should not cooperate with those who depart from the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

4005. Controversy may be about the Qur’an itself, such as createdness of the Qur’an, or it may be about its contents, like allegorical verses in the Qur’an. The Muslims have been advised to avoid any controversy about the Qur’an as the Schoolmen quarrelled with each other about the meaning of the Qur’anic verses.

4006. This shows the Prophet (may peace be upon him) also has permitted many things and prohibited many things. Therefore, the Muslims should follow both the Qur’an and the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
(4588) Abū Rāfiʿ reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Let me not find one of you reclining on his couch when he hears something regarding me which I have commanded or forbidden and saying: We do not know. What we found in Allah’s Book we have followed.4007

(4589) `Ā’ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone introduces into this affair of ours anything which does not belong to it, it is rejected.4008 Ibn ʿĪsā said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: If anyone practises any action in a way other than our practice, it is rejected.

(4590) ʿAbd al-Rahmān b. ʿAmr al-Sulamī and Ḥujr b. Ḥujr said: We came to ʿIrbaḍ b. Sāriyah who was among those about whom the following verse was revealed:

Nor (is there blame) on those who come to thee to be provided with mounts, and when thou saidst: “I can find no mounts for you.” We saluted him and said: We have come to see you, to pay a sick visit to you and to benefit from you. Al-ʿIrbaḍ said: One day the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) led us in prayer, then faced us and gave us a lengthy exhortation at which the eyes shed tears and the hearts were afraid. A man said: Apostle of Allah! it seems as if it were a farewell exhortation, then what injunction do you give us? He then said: I enjoin you to fear Allah, and to hear and obey even if it be an Abyssinian slave, for those of you who live after me will see great disagreement. You must then follow my sunnah and that of the rightly-guided Caliphs. Hold to it and stick fast to it. Avoid novelties, for every novelty is an innovation, and every innovation is an error.4011

(4591) ʿAbd Allah b. Masʿūd reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Beware! The extremists perished, saying it three times.4012

4007 There might be compulsory entertainment in the early days of Islam. But later on this commandment was repealed.

4008. This is a sort of the prediction of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) that among his community there will be people who will follow only the Qurʾān and reject his traditions.

4009. Anything or its basis practised in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) or during the Orthodox Caliphate is a sunnah or part of the sunnah. The reason is that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) approved of this practice or the Companions had practised it in the light of the sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Now anything introduced by the Muslims after this period must have its basis during this period or approved of by the Prophet (may peace be upon him) or agreed upon by the Companions.

4010. Qurʾān, ix. 92.

4011. This shows that the Muslims should follow the Qurʾān and the sunnah and avoid innovations in religion.

4012. Islam teaches moderation. One should not go to extremes in one’s belief and practice.
ADHERENCE TO THE SUNNAH

(4592) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone summons others to follow right guidance, his reward will be equivalent to that of the people who follow him, without their rewards being diminished in any respect on that account; and if anyone summons others to follow error the sin of which he is guilty will be equivalent to that of the people who follow him without their sins being diminished in any respect on that account.

(4593) ‘Āmir b. Sa'īd on his father's authority reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Muslim who offends most against the Muslims is he who enquires about something which has not been forbidden to men, and it is declared forbidden because of his enquiry.

(4594) Yazīd b. ‘Umarah, who was one of the companions of Mu‘ādh b. Jabal, said: Whenever he (Mu‘ādh b. Jabal) sat in a meeting for preaching, he would say: Allah is a just arbiter; those who doubt would perish. One day Mu‘ādh b. Jabal said: In the time after you there would be trials in which riches would be abundant. During these trials the Qur’ān would be easy so much so that every believer, hypocrite, man, woman, young, grown-up, slave and free man will learn it. Then a man might say: What happened with the people that they do not follow me while I read the Qur’ān? They are not going to follow me until I introduce a novelty for them other than it. So avoid that which is innovated (in religion), for whichever is innovated is an error. I warn you of the deviation of a scholar from right guidance, for sometimes Satan utters a word of error through the tongue of a scholar; and sometimes a hypocrite may speak a word of truth. I said to Mu‘ādh b. Jabal: I am at a loss to understand — may Allah have mercy on you — that a learned man sometimes may speak a word of error and a hypocrite may speak a word of truth. He replied: Yes, avoid the speech of a learned man on certain well-known things about which it is said: What are these? That may not distract you from him (the learned), for it is possible that he may withdraw (from these well-known things), and you get the truth when you hear it, for truth

4013. This shows that the man who summons others to follow good or evil will also share the reward or sin of those who follow him. Therefore, one should summon people to follow good and ask them to refrain from evil.

4014. This refers to the time of revelation. People used to ask the Prophet (may peace be upon him) questions and the revelation came down about them. Therefore, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked the Muslims not to ask questions frequently so that there might not be hardship in Islamic teachings.
Abû Dâwûd said: In this tradition Ma‘mar on the authority of al-Zuhri said: The words “Wa’lâ yun’iyyannaka” instead of “Wa’lâ yuthniyannaka,” with the same meaning: “it may not distract you” Šâlih b. Kaisân on the authority of al-Zuhri said in this tradition the words “al-mushtabibù” (doubtful things) instead of the word “al-mushtaharat” (well-known things). He also said the word “la yuthniyannaka” as ‘Uqail mentioned. Ibn Išāq, on the authority of al-Zuhri, said: Yes, if you are doubtful about the speech of a scholar until you say: What did he mean by this word?

(4595) Sufyân said (according to one chain), and Abû al-Šalt said (according to another chain): A man wrote to ʿUmar b. ʿAbd al-ʿAzîz asking him about Divine decree. He wrote to him: To begin with, I enjoin upon you to fear Allah, to be moderate in (obeying) His Command, to follow the Sunnah (practice) of His Prophet (may peace be upon him) and to abandon the novelties which the innovators introduced after his Sunnah had been established and they were saved from its trouble (i.e. novelty or innovation); so stick to the Sunnah, for it is for you, if Allah chooses, a protection; then you should know that any innovation which the people introduced was refuted long before it on the basis of some authority or there was some lesson in it, for the Sunnah was introduced by the people who were conscious of the error, slip, foolishness, and extremism in case it (the Sunnah) was opposed. So accept for yourself what the people (in the past) had accepted for themselves, for they had complete knowledge of whatever they were informed, and by their penetrating insight they forbade (to do prohibited acts); they had more strength (than us) to disclose the matters (of religion), and they were far better (than us) by virtue of their merits. If right guidance is what you are following, then you outstripped them to it. And if you say whatever the novelty occurred after them was introduced by those who followed the way other than theirs and disliked them. It is they who actually outstripped, and talked about it sufficiently, and gave a satisfactory explanation for it. Below them there is no place for exhaustiveness, and above them there is no place for elaborating things. Some people shortened the matter more than they had done, and thus they turned away (from them), and some people raised the matter more than they had done, and thus they exaggerated. They were on right guidance between that. You have written (to me) asking about confessions of Divine decree, you have indeed approached a person who is well informed of it, with the will of Allah. I know that whatever novelty people have brought in, and

4015. This shows that if there is something doubtful in the speech of a scholar, one should verify it from the Qur‘ân and the Sunnah. Both these sources are a criterion of truth. A man who seeks truth will feel himself what is true and what is false. Truth has its own light.
whatever innovation people have introduced are not more manifest and more established than confession of Divine decree. The ignorant people (i.e. the Arabs before-Islam) in pre-Islamic times have mentioned it; they talked about it in their speeches and in their poetry. They would console themselves for what they lost, and Islam then strengthened it (i.e. belief in Divine decree). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not mention it in one or two traditions, but the Muslims heard it from him, and they talked of it from him, and they talked of it during his lifetime and after his death. They did so out of belief and submission to their Lord and thinking themselves weak. There is nothing which is not surrounded by His knowledge, and not counted by His register and not destined by His decree. Despite that, it has been strongly mentioned in His Book: from it they have derived it, and from it, they have learnt it. If you say: Why did Allah reveal the verse so and so and why did He say so and so? they also read in it what you read, and they knew its interpretation of which you are ignorant. After that they said: All this is by writing and decreeing. Distress has been written down, and what has been destined will occur; what Allah wills will surely happen, and what He does not will will not happen. We have no power to harm or benefit ourselves. Then after that they showed interest (in good works) and were afraid (of bad deeds).

(4596) Nāfī said: Ibn ‘Umar had a friend from the people of Syria who used to correspond with him. ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar wrote to him: I have been informed that you have talked something about Divine decree. You should write it to me, for I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Among my community there will be people who will falsify Divine decree.

(4597) Khalid al-Hadhāhā said: I said to al-Ḥasan: Abū Sa‘īd, tell me about Adam. Was he created for the heaven or the earth? He said: No, for the earth. I said: What do you think, if he refrained from the sin and did not eat from the tree? He said: It was unavoidable for him. I said: Tell me about the following verse of the Qur’ān: “Can lead (any) into temptation concerning Allah, except such as are (themselves) going to blazing fire.” He said: The devils do not lead anyone astray by their temptation except the one whom Allah destined to go to Hell.

(4598) Khalid al-Hadhāhā, asked al-Ḥasan about the Quranic verse: “And for this did He create them.” He said: He created these for this and those for

4016. The point underlined by ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz is that early Muslims had belief in Divine decree, and took this belief from the Qur’ān and the Sunnah. Therefore, belief in Divine decree is an article of faith.
4017. Qur’ān, xxxvii. 162-163
4018. Qur’ān, xi. 119.
that.\(^{4019}\)

(4599) Khālid al-Ḥadhdhā’ asked al-Ḥasan about the Qur’ānic verse: ‘‘Can lead (any) into temptation concerning Allah, except such as are (themselves) going to the blazing fire.’’\(^{4023}\) He said: Except the one whom Allah destined that he should go to Hell.

(4600) Ḥumaid said: Al-Ḥasan used to say that his fall from the heaven on the earth is dearer to him than uttering: The matter is in my hand.

(4601) Ḥumaid said: Al-Ḥasan came to us. The jurists of Mecca told me that I should speak to him that some day he should hold a meeting for them and preach to them. He said: Yes. So they gathered and he addressed them. I did not see anyone an orator greater than him. A man said: Abū Sa‘īd, who created Satan? He replied: Glory be to Allah! Is there any creator other than Allah? Allah created Satan, and He created good and created evil. The man said: May Allah ruin them! How do they lie to this old man.

(4602) Ḥumaid al-Ṭawil asked al-Ḥasan about the verse: ‘‘Even so do We let it creep into the hearts of the sinners.’’\(^{4021}\) He said: Polytheism.

(4603) Explaining the Qur’ānic verse; ‘‘And between them and their desires is placed a barrier,’’\(^{4022}\) al-Ḥasan said: Between them and their faith.\(^{4023}\)

(4604) Ibn ‘Awq said: I was a prisoner in Syria. A man called me from behind. I turned towards him and suddenly found that it was Rājā’ b. Ḥaiwah. He said: Abū ‘Awn, what is this that the people are telling about al-Ḥasan? I said: They are much lying to al-Ḥasan.

(4605) Hammād said: I heard Ayyūb say: Two kinds of people have lied to al-Ḥasan: people who believed in free will and they intended that they publicise their belief by it; and people who had enmity with and hostility (for al-Ḥasan), saying: Did he not say so and so? Did he not say so and so?

(4606) Yaḥyā b. Kathīr al-‘Anbarī said: Qurrah b. Khālid used to tell us: O young people! do not think that al-Ḥasan denied predestination, for his opinion (i.e.

\(^{4019}\) This refers to predestination: some people will go to Paradise and others to Hell. They will do good or evil deeds according to the decree

\(^{4020}\) Qur‘ān, xxxvii. 162-163.

\(^{4021}\) Qur‘ān, xv. 12.

\(^{4022}\) Qur‘ān, xxxiv. 54.

\(^{4023}\) It means that unbelievers would desire on the Day of Judgment that they might believe in Allah that day, But Divine decree would be a barrier between this desire and them, for they did not believe in Allah in this world. Had it been destined for them to believe, they would have believed.
Chapter 1684

ORDER OF THE COMPANIONS IN RESPECT OF MERIT

(4610) Ibn 'Umar said: We used to say in the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him): We do not compare anyone with Abū Bakr. 'Umar came next and then 'Uthmān. We then would leave (rest of) the Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) without treating any as superior to others.4026

(4611) Ibn 'Umar said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was alive, we used to say: The most excellent member of the community of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) after himself is Abū Bakr, then 'Umar, then 'Uthmān.

(4612) Muḥammad b. al-Ḥanafiyah4027 said: I said to my father: Which of the people after the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) is best? He replied: Abū Bakr. I then asked: Who comes next? He said: 'Umar. I was then afraid of asking him who came next, and he might mention 'Uthmān, so I said: You came next, O my father? He said: I am only a man among the Muslims.

(4613) Muḥammad al-Firyābl said: I heard Suḥyān say: If anyone thinks that 'All (Allah be pleased with him) was more deserving for the Caliphate than both of them, he imputed error to Abū Bakr, 'Umar, the Muhājirūn (Immigrants), and the

4024. Al-Ḥasan al-Ḥasrī made certain remarks about Divine decree. The people by mistake understood that al-Ḥasan did not believe in predestination. In fact, al-Ḥasan did not mean by those remarks what the people interpreted. Ibn 'Awn says that if he had believed that al-Ḥasan rejected the doctrine of predestination, he would have written a book and called people to witness that he did not mean so. He made those remarks not to reject this doctrine, but the people thought so about him. He says that he (al-Ḥasan) thought that his remarks would not be misinterpreted and would not be transmitted to others.

4025. It means that he will never reject the doctrine of Divine decree.

4026. Probably it refers to those Companions who were not included in the family of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). 'Ali after 'Uthman is superior to all.

4027. He was son of 'Ali b. Abī Ṭālib.
Ansîr (Helpers)—Allah be pleased with all of them. I think that with this (belief) none of his action will rise to the heaven.\textsuperscript{402}

\(\text{4614} \) Sufyân al-Thawrî said: The Caliphs are five: Abū Bakr, ‘Umar, ‘Uthmân, ‘All and ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-'Azîz.\textsuperscript{402}

\textit{Chapter 1685}

\textbf{THE CALIPHS}

\(\text{4615} \) Ibn ‘Abbâs said: Abū Hurairah said that a man came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: I saw (in my dream) a piece of cloud from which butter oil and honey were dropping. I saw that the people were spreading their hands. Some of them took much and some a little. I also saw a rope hanging from the heaven to the earth. I saw, Apostle of Allah, that you caught hold of it and ascended by it. Then another man caught hold of it and ascended by it. Then another man caught hold of it and ascended by it. Then another man caught hold of it, but it broke, and then it was joined and he ascended by it. Abū Bakr said: My parents may be sacrificed for you, if you allow, I shall interpret it. He said: Interpret it. He said: The piece of cloud is the cloud of Islam; the butter oil and honey that were dropping from it are the Qur’ân, which contains softness and sweetness. Those who got much or little of it are those who learn much or little of the Qur’ân. The rope hanging from the heaven to the earth is the truth which you are following. You catch hold of it and then Allah will raise you to Him. Then another man will catch hold of it after you and ascend by it. Then another man will catch hold of it and ascend by it. Then another man will catch hold of it and it will break. But it will be joined and he will ascend by it. Tell me, Apostle of Allah, whether I am right or wrong. He said: You are partly right and partly wrong. He said: I adjure you by Allah, you should tell me where I am wrong. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do not take an oath.\textsuperscript{403}

\textsuperscript{4028} Abû Bakr and ‘Umar were elected Caliphs with the consent of the Companions and with their votes. If any person believes that their election was wrong, it implies that he is falsifying the decision and agreement of all the Companions who had elected them. Therefore, one should avoid this belief.

\textsuperscript{4029} All these five Caliphs are called Rightly-Guided (Râshîdûn), for they ruled in accordance with the teachings of Islam. They maintained justice in their decisions and avoided oppression.

\textsuperscript{4030} This tradition refers to the first three Caliphs, Abû Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthmân. The breaking of the rope means the assassination of ‘Uthmân and rise of schism and disagreement among Muslims. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not tell Abû Bakr where he was wrong in his interpretation, because he wanted to keep the matter of Caliphate secret.
The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Abbas through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: He refused to tell him (his mistake).

Abū Bakrāh said: One day the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Which of you had a dream? A man said: It is I. I saw as though a scale descended from the sky. You and Abu Bakr were weighed and you were heavier; Abū Bakr and ‘Umar were weighed and Abū Bakr was heavier; ‘Umar and ‘Uthmān were weighed and ‘Umar was heavier; then the scale was taken up. We saw signs of dislike on the face of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

Abū Bakrāh said: One day the Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked: Which of you had a dream? He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect, but he did not mention the word “dislike”. Instead, he said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was grieved about that. He then said: There will be a caliphate on the model of prophecy, then Allah will give the Kingdom to whom He wills.

Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Last night a good man had a vision in which Abū Bakr seemed to be joined to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), ‘Umar to Abū Bakr, and ‘Uthmān to ‘Umar. Jābir said: When we got up and left the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), we said: The good man is the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and that their being joined together means that they are the rulers over this matter with which Allah has sent His Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Abū Dāwūd said: It has been transmitted by Yūnus and Shu‘aib, but they did not mention ‘Amr b. Abān.

Samurah b. Jundub told that a man said: Apostle of Allah! I saw (in a dream) that a bucket was hung from the sky. Abū Bakr came, caught hold of both ends of its wooden handle, and drank a little of it. Next came ‘Umar who caught hold of both ends of its wooden handle and drank of it to his fill. Next came ‘Uthmān who caught hold of both ends of its handle and drank of it to his fill. Next came ‘Alī. He caught hold of both ends of its handle, but it became upset and some (water) from it was sprinkled on him.

Makhūl said: The Romans will enter Syria and will stay there for forty

---

4031. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was grieved at the taking up of the scale. It referred to disagreement and disunity among Muslims after ‘Umar.

4032. This refers to the civil wars and tension among Muslims during the caliphate of ‘Alī. The disorder and disagreement disturbed his government and he could not do much work for Muslims as was expected from him.
days, and no place will be saved from them but Damascus and 'Umân.\(^{4033}\)

(4622) Abû al-A'yas 'Abd al-Rahmân b. Salmân said: A king of the foreigners will come and prevail over all the cities except Damascus.

(4623) Mâkhûl reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The place of the assembly of Muslims at the time of war will be in a land called al-Ghûtah.\(^{4034}\)

(4624) 'Awf said: I heard al-Hâjîjâj addressing the people say: The similitude of 'Uthmân with Allah is like the similitude of Jesus son of Mary. He then recited the following verses and explained it: "Behold! Allah said: O Jesus! I will take thee and raise thee to Myself and clear thee (of the falsehood) of those who blaspheme."\(^{4035}\) He was making a sign with his hand to us and to the people of Syria.\(^{4036}\)

(4625) Al-Râbl' b. Khâlid al-Dabbâl said: I heard al-Hâjîjâj say in his address: Is the messenger of one of you sent for some need is more respectable with him or his successor among his people?\(^{4037}\) I thought in my mind: I make a vow for Allah that I shall never pray behind you. If I find people who fight against you, I shall fight against you along with them. Ishâq added in his version: He fought in the battle of al-Jâmîjâm\(^{4038}\) until he was killed.

(4626) 'Aṣîm said: I heard al-Hâjîjâj say on the pulpit: Fear Allah as much as possible; there is no exception in it. Hear and obey the Commander of the Faithful 'Abd al-Malik; there is no exception in it.\(^{4039}\) I swear by Allah, if I order people to

\(^{4033}\) The name of a town in the Yemen. This is a prediction for the spread of dissension.

\(^{4034}\) The name of a place near Damascus in Syria.

\(^{4035}\) Qur'ân, iii. 55.

\(^{4036}\) 'Uthmân was like Jesus Those who disgraced him were disgraced in this world like the opponents of Jesus. By pointing to the people of Syria he meant that they would follow him and respect him.

\(^{4037}\) Al-Hâjîjâj was a tyrannical ruler. He was an agent of the Umayyads. Here he has exaggerated in praising Banû Umayyah. By this statement probably he means that the Prophets are messengers of Allah, while the Caliphs are His successors. And it is already known that a successor is more respectable than a Messenger. Thus he has preferred Umayyads to the Prophets. This is a sycophancy in 'which the courtiers were engaged at the courts of Muslim monarchs. Prophets are far superior to Caliphs, and God forbid, Caliphs can never be preferred to Prophets.

\(^{4038}\) Jamâjim is the plural of jumjumâh meaning skull. Dair al-Jamâjim is the name of a place in 'Irâq where 'Abd al-Rahmân b. al-Ash'âth fought against al-Hâjîjâj. A large number of Muslims were killed there. It is said that wooden bowels were manufactured at this place.

\(^{4039}\) During the Caliphate of Banû Ummayyah the pious men would 'take the oath of allegiance to their caliphs on condition that they would obey them if they ruled in accordance with the teachings of Islam, and if they did not obey Allah and His Prophet (may peace be upon him), they would not obey them, Al-Hâjîjâj meant that the people should take the oath of allegiance unconditionally. They should obey 'Abd al-Malik whatever he ordered them.
come but from a certain gate of the mosque, and they come out from another gate, their blood and their properties will be lawful for me.\textsuperscript{401} I swear by Allah, if I seize the tribe of Rabî‘ah for the tribe of Mu‘āḍar, it is lawful for me from Allah.\textsuperscript{404} Who will apologise to me for the slave of Hudhail (i.e. ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ūd) who thinks that his reading of the Qur‘ān is from Allah. I swear by Allah, it is a rhymed prose of the bedouins. Allah did not reveal it to his Prophet (may peace be upon him).\textsuperscript{402} Who will apologise to me for these clients (non-Arabs). One of them thinks that he will throw a stone and when it falls (on the ground) he says: Something new has happened.\textsuperscript{404} I swear by Allah, I shall leave them (ruined and perished) like the day that passed away.

He said: I mentioned it to al-A‘mash. He said: I swear by Allah, I heard it from him.

(4627) Al-A‘mash said: These clients (i.e. non-Arabs) are to be struck and cut off. I swear by Allah, if I strike a stick with a stick, I would annihilate them like the day that passed away. \textit{Al-hamrā‘} means clients or non-Arabs.

(4628) Sulaimān al-A‘mash said: I prayed the Friday prayer with al-Ḥajjāj and he addressed. He then transmitted the tradition of Abū Bakr b. ‘Ayyāsh. He said in it: Hear and obey the caliph of Allah and His select ‘Abd al-Malik b. Marwān. He then transmitted the rest of the tradition, and said: If I seized Rabî‘ah for Mu‘āḍar. But he did not mention the story of the clients (i.e. non-Arabs).

(4629) Saffnah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Caliphate of Prophecy will last thirty years; then Allah will give the Kingdom or His Kingdom to anyone He wills.

\textsuperscript{4040.} Al-Ḥajjāj was a tyrannical ruler. He had no right to say that if any Muslim did not obey his order, his life and property would be lawful for him. The life or property of a Muslim is lawful if any of the three conditions is found: intentional murder, i.e. life for life, apostasy and fornication by a married person.

\textsuperscript{4041.} Al-Ḥajjāj was wrong. Islam does not allow to do injustice to anyone.

\textsuperscript{4042.} Al-Ḥajjāj was incorrect that the copy of the Qur‘ān of Ibn Mas‘ūd was not genuine. ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ūd heard and learnt the Qur‘ān directly from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He did not accept the version of the Qur‘ān prepared by ʿUthmān. Hence al-Ḥajjāj was against him. According to a tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), the Qur‘ān was revealed in seven dialects. Hence the reading of the Qur‘ān by Ibn Mas‘ūd was genuine. It was the same Qur‘ān revealed to the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

\textsuperscript{4043.} Al-Ḥajjāj hated the clients \textit{(mawādī or non-Arabs)}. He thought that all kinds of mischiefs and dissensions were committed by them. According to him, the non-Arabs tried to create new problems for the Umayyad regime. They always sought to introduce new things and waited for their results. Hence al-Ḥajjāj was a great enemy to them.
Sa’Id told that Safinah said to him: Calculate Abū Bakr’s caliphate as two years, ‘Umar’s as ten, ‘Uthmān’s as twelve and ‘Alī’s so and so. Sa’Id said: I said to Safinah: They conceive that ‘Alī was not a caliph. He replied: The buttocks of Marwān told a lie.

(4630) Safinah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Caliphate of Prophecy will last thirty years; then Allah will give the Kingdom to whom He wishes; or His Kingdom to whom He wishes.

(4631) ‘Abd Allah b. Žalīm al-Māzīnī said: I heard Sa’Id b. Zaid b. ‘Amr b. Nufail say: When so and so came to Kūfah, and made so and so stand to address the people, Sa’Id b. Zaid caught hold of my hand and said: Are you seeing this tyrant? I bear witness to the nine persons that they will go to Paradise. If I testify to the tenth too, I shall not be sinful. I asked: Who are the nine? He said: The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) said when he was on Ḥira’: Be still, Ḥira’, for only a Prophet, or an ever-truthful, or a martyr is on you. I asked: Who are those nine? He said: The Apostle of Allah, Abū Bakr, ‘Umar ‘Uthmān, ‘Alī, Ṭalḥah, al-Zubair, Sa’d b. Abī Waqqās and ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Awf. I asked: Who is the tenth? He paused a moment and said: It is I.

Abū Dawūd said: This tradition has been transmitted by al-Ashja’ī, from Sufyān, from Manṣūr, from Hilāl b. Yasāf, from Ibn Ḥayyān on the authority of ‘Abd Allah b. Žalīm through his different chain of narrators in a similar manner.

(4632) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Akhnas said that when he was in the mosque, a man mentioned ‘Alī (Allah be pleased with him). So Sa’Id b. Zaid got up and said: I bear witness to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) that I heard him say: Ten persons will go to Paradise: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) will go to Paradise, Abū Bakr will go to Paradise, ‘Umar will go to Paradise, ‘Uthmān will go to Paradise, ‘Alī will go to Paradise, Ṭalḥah will go to Paradise: al-Zubair b.

4044. This was Mu‘āwiyyah. Abū Dawūd did not like to mention his name as he was a Companion.
4445. This was al-Mughīrah b. Shu‘bah. Abū Dawūd cancelled his name.
4046. Probably al-Mughīrah b. Shu‘bah was speaking ill of ‘Alī, the fourth Caliph. Hence Sa’Id defended ‘Alī.
4047. Al-Siddiq was the title of Abū Bakr.
4048. This refers to ‘Umar who died a martyr.
4049. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) predicted that these ten persons will go to Paradise. These are known as al-‘Ashrāf al-Mubashshirāh (the ten persons who were promised Paradise).
4050. This was al-Mughīrah b. Shu‘bah. He wanted to invoke the people of Kūfah against ‘Alī.
al-'Awwām will go to Paradise, Sa’ād b. Mālik will go to Paradise, and ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Awf will go to Paradise. If I wish, I can mention the tenth. The people asked: Who is he? So he kept silence. They again asked: Who is he? He replied: He is Sa’īd b. Zaid.

(4633) Rabāh b. al-Ḥārith said: I was sitting with someone in the mosque of Kūfah while the people of Kūfah were with him. Then Sa’īd b. Zaid b. ‘Amr b. Nufail came and he welcomed him, saluted him, and seated him near his foot on the throne. Then a man of the inhabitants of Kūfah, called Qais b. ‘Alqamah, came. He received him and began to abuse. Sa’īd asked: Whom is this man abusing? He replied: He is abusing ‘Alī. He said: Don’t I see that the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) are being abused, but you neither stop nor change? I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say—and I need not say for him anything which he did not say, and then he would ask me tomorrow when I see him—Abū Bakr will go to Paradise and ‘Umar will go to Paradise. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect. He then said: The company of a man of them whose face has been covered with dust with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) is better than the actions of one of you for the whole life even if he is granted the age of Noah.

(4634) Anas b. Mālik said: The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) ascended Uḥud, and Abū Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthmān followed him. It began to shake with them. The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) struck it with his foot and said: Be still, for only a Prophet, an ever-truthful and two martyrs are on you.

(4635) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Gabriel came and taking me by the hand showed the gate of Paradise by which my people will enter. Abū Bakr then said: Apostle of Allah! I wish I had been with you so that I might have looked at it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: You, Abū Bakr, will be the first of my people to enter Paradise.

(4636) Jābir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: No one of those who took the oath of allegiance under the tree will go to Hell.

4051. This refers to Sa’ād b. Abī Waqqāṣ. Mālik was the of name of Abū Waqqāṣ.
4052. This was al-Mughīrah b. Shu‘bah.
4053. It means that a Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), however interior in rank he may be, is far better than other pious Muslims who followed them and who were not Companions.
4054. This refers to Abū Bakr and ‘Umar.
4055. This oath of allegiance was taken by the Muslims at Ḥudaibiyah under a tree. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) went to Mecca to perform ‘Umrah but he was detained by the Meccans at Ḥudaibiyah. ‘Uthmān was deputed to the Meccans to have a talk with them. There
Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying—according to the version of Mūsā: Perhaps Allah, and Ibn Sūnān's version has: Allah looked at the participants of the battle of Badr (with mercy) and said: Do whatever you wish; I have forgiven you.

Al-Miswar b. Makhramah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) went out during the time of the treaty of al-Hu'aybiyyah. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition. He said: 'Urwah b. Mas'ūd then came to him and began to speak to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Whenever he talked to him, he caught his beard; and al-Mughfrah b. Shu'bah was standing near the head of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) with a sword with him and a helmet on him. He then struck his hand with the handle of the sword, saying: Keep away your hand from his beard. 'Urwah then raised his head and said: Who is this? The people said: Al-Mughfrah b. Shu'bah.

Al-Aqra', the mu'adhdhin (announcer) of 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb said: 'Umar sent me to a bishop and I called him. 'Umar said to him: Do you find me in the Book? He said: Yes. He asked: How do you find me? He said: I find you (like a) castle. Then he raised a flog on him, saying: What do you mean by the castle? He replied: An iron castle and severely trustworthy.4056 He asked: "How do you find the one who will come after me?" He said: I find him a pious caliph, except that he will prefer his relatives.4057 'Umar said: May Allah have mercy on 'Uthmān: He said it three times. He then asked: How do you find the one who will come after him? He replied: I find him rust of iron. 'Umar then put his hand on his head, and said: O filthy! O filthy! He said: Commander of the Faithful! he is a pious caliph, but when he is made caliph, the sword will be unsheathed and blood will be shed.4058

Abū Dāwūd said: Al-dafr means filth or evil smell.

Chapter 1686

EXCELLENCE OF THE COMPANIONS OF THE PROPHET (MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM)

'Imrān b. Ḥuṣain reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The best of my people is the generation in which I have been sent, then was a rumour that he had been killed. Therefore, the Muslims took an oath of allegiance. This has been mentioned in the Qur'ān, xlviii. 18.

4056. He meant that 'Umar was strong like a castle and most trustworthy.
4057. He meant 'Uthmān.
4058. It means that there will be disorder and dissensions during the caliphate of 'All.
their immediate followers, then their immediate followers.\footnote{4059} Allah knows best whether he mentioned the third or not. After them there will be people who will give testimony without being asked, who will make vows which they do not fulfil, who will be treacherous and not to be trusted, among whom fatness\footnote{4060} will appear.

\textit{Chapter 1687}

\textbf{PROHIBITION OF ABUSING THE COMPANIONS OF THE APOSTLE OF ALLAH (MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM)}

(4641) Abū Sa‘īd (al-Khudrī) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not revile my Companions; by Him in Whose hand my soul is, if one of you contributed the amount of gold equivalent to Uhud, it would not amount to as much as the mudd of one of them, or half of it.\footnote{4061}

(4642) ‘Amr b. Abl Qurrah said: Ḥudhaifah was in al-Madā’in. He used to mention things which the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to some people from among his Companions in anger. The people who heard from Ḥudhaifah would go to Salmān and tell him what Ḥudhaifah said. Salmān would say: Ḥudhaifah knows best what he says. Then they would come to Salmān and tell him: We mentioned Salmān what you said, but he neither testified you nor falsified you. So Ḥudhaifah came to Salmān who was in his vegetable farm, and said: Salmān, what prevents you from testifying me of what I heard from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)? Salmān said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sometimes would be angry, and said in anger something to some of his Companions; he would be sometimes pleased and said in pleasure something to some of his Companions. Would you not stop until you create love of some people in the hearts of some people, and hatred of some people in the hearts of some people, and until you generate disagreement and dissension? You know that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) addressed, saying: If I abused any person of my people, or cursed him in my anger, I am one of the children of Adam: I become angry as they become angry. He (Allah) has sent me as a mercy for all worlds. (O Allah!) make them (abuse or curse) blessing for them on the Day of Judgment! I swear by Allah,

\footnote{4059} The period of three generations from the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) lasts up to 120 A.H.
\footnote{4060} It means fine living by corrupt means which leads to neglect of religion.
\footnote{4061} This indicates the superiority of the Companions to other Muslims.
you should stop (mentioning these traditions), otherwise I shall write to 'Umar.\textsuperscript{4062}

\textbf{Chapter 1688}

\textbf{PROOF OF ABŪ BAKR'S CALIPHATE}

(4643) 'Abd Allah b. Zam'ah said: When the illness of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) became serious while I was with him among a group of people, Bilāl called him for prayer. He said: Ask someone to lead the people in prayer. So 'Abd Allah b. Zam'ah went out and found that 'Umar was present among the people and Abū Bakr was not there. I said: 'Umar, get up and lead the people in prayer. So he came forward and uttered "Allah is Most Great". When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) heard his voice, as 'Umar had a loud voice, he said: Where is Abū Bakr? Allah does not allow that, and the Muslims too; Allah does not allow that, and the Muslims too. So he sent for Abū Bakr. He came after 'Umar had led the people in that prayer. He then led the people in prayer.\textsuperscript{4063}

(4644) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by 'Abd Allah b. Zam'ah through a different chain. He said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) heard 'Umar's voice, Ibn Zam'ah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) came out until he took out his head of his apartment. He then said: No, no, no; the son of Abū Quḥāfah\textsuperscript{4064} should lead the people in prayer. He said it angrily.

\textbf{Chapter 1689}

\textbf{INSTRUCTIONS REGARDING REFRAINING FROM SPEECH DURING THE PERIOD OF TURMOIL}

(4645) Abū Bakrah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to al-Hasan b. 'All: This son of mine is a Sayyid (chief), and I hope Allah may reconcile two parties of my community by means of him. Hāmmād's version has: And perhaps

\textsuperscript{4062} Salmān advised Ḥudhāfah not to mention to people everything he had heard from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Sometimes he (the Prophet) said many things in anger which he did not mean.

\textsuperscript{4063} This shows that in the presence of Abū Bakr, 'Umar or any other Muslim could not lead the people in prayer. When he deserved leadership in prayer, he deserved leadership in politics too.

\textsuperscript{4064} He meant Abū Bakr.
Allah may reconcile two large parties of Muslims by means of him.4065

(4646) Hudhaifah said: There is no one who will be overtaken by trial regarding whom I do not fear except Muḥammad b. Maslamah, for I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Trial will not harm you.4066

(4647) Tha‘labah b. Dūbai‘ah said: We entered upon Hudhaifah. He said: I know a man whom the trials will not harm. We came out and found that a tent was pitched. We entered and found in it Muḥammad b. Maslamah. We asked him about it. He said: I do not intend that any place of your towns should occupy me until that which is prevailing is removed.4067

(4648) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Dūbai‘ah b. Ḥusain al-Tha‘labī through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

(4649) Qais b. ‘Abbād said: I said to ‘All (Allah be pleased with him): Tell me about this march of yours. Is this an order that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had given you; or is this your opinion that you have? He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) did not give me any order; but this is an opinion that I have.4068

(4650) Abū Sa‘īd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: In the event of the dissension among Muslims an emerging sect will emerge; one of the two parties that is nearer to the truth will kill it.4069

Chapter 1690
MAKING A DISTINCTION BETWEEN THE PROPHETS

(4651) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not distinguish between the Prophets.4070

4065. After the death of ‘All a large number of Muslims took the oath of allegiance to al-Ḥasan. Mu‘āwiyyah came from Syria. The armies of both met at a place near Kūfah. Mu‘āwiyyah wanted conciliation. Al-Ḥasan, therefore, withdrew himself from the Caliphate and concluded a treaty with him on certain conditions. Thus the Muslims were saved from bloodshed.

4066. He is a well-known Companion. He participated in the battle of Badr. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) might have prayed for him for protection from trial.

4067. It means the trials, commotion and civil strife that took place in the early centuries.

4068. This refers either to the battle of Jamal in 6 A.H. against al-Zubair or to the battle of Ṣiffin in 7 A.H. against Mu‘āwiyyah.

4069. It refers to the Khawārij, and to the party of ‘All.

4070. All the Prophets are equal in respect of prophethood. Therefore, one should not give preference one to the other. If one admires any Prophet, one should not do so in a way as to disgrace the other Prophets.
(4652) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is not fitting for a servant to say that I (the Prophet) is better than Jonah son of Mattā. 4071

(4653) ‘Abd Allah b. Ja’far reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is not fitting for a Prophet to say: I am better than Jonah son of Mattā.

(4654) ‘Abū Hurairah said: A man from among the Jews said: By Him Who chose Moses above the universe. So a Muslim raised his hand and slapped the Jew on his face. The Jew went to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and informed him. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do not make me superior to Moses, for mankind (on the Day of Resurrection) will swoon and I will be the first to recover, and shall see Moses seizing the side of the Throne; and I shall not know whether he was among those who swooned and had recovered before me, or he was among those of whom Allah had made an exception.

Abū Dāwūd said: The tradition of Ibn Yahyā is more perfect.

(4655) Anās said: A man said to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): O best of all creatures! The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: That was Abraham (peace be upon him). 4072

(4656) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I shall be pre-eminent among the descendants of Adam, the first from whom the earth will be cleft open4073 the first intercessor, and the first whose intercession will be accepted.

(4657) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I do not know whether Tubba‘ 4074 was accursed or not, and ‘Uzair (Azra was a prophet or not. 4075

(4658) Abū Hurairah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: I am the nearest of kin among the people to (Jesus) son of Mary.

4071. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade the Muslims to exaggerate in his praise as to despise the other Prophets. A Prophet may be superior to another in rank, but not in prophethood.

4072. When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prefers other Prophets to himself, that is out of humiliation.

4073. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) will be the first to come out of his grave on the Day of Resurrection.

4074. The Himyarite King of the Yemen. Cf. Qur’an, xlv. 37.

4075. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said this before revelation came down to him.
Prophets are brothers, sons of one father by co-wives. There is no Prophet between me and him.

Chapter 1691

REFUTATION OF THE MURJI’AH

(4659) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Faith has over seventy branches, the most excellent of which is the declaration that there is no god but Allah, and the humblest of which is the removal of a bone from the road. And modesty is a branch of faith.

(4660) Ibn ‘Abbás said: When the deputation of ‘Abd al-Qais came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), he commanded them to believe in Allah. He asked: Do you know what faith in Allah is? They replied: Allah and His Apostle know best. He said: It includes the testimony that there is no god but Allah, and that Muḥammad is Allah’s Apostle, the observance of the prayer, the payment of zakāt, the fasts of Ramaḍān, and your giving a fifth of the booty.

(4661) Jābir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Between a servant and unbelief there is the abandonment of prayer.

4076. ‘Allāt means sons of a father who has several wives. This saying has been explained as meaning that all Prophets have the same religion. This may be taken figuratively as their father, but they differ in their law and other regulations, being figuratively called their mothers. All the Prophets are united in respect of faith, but differ in their law.

4077. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) predicted the second coming of Jesus. Further, he will follow his religion and preach it among the people.

4078. Murji’ah were a sect in the early centuries of Islam. They believed that good works are not necessary for faith. If a man believes in Islam but does not do good work, he will get salvation. The Ahl al-Hadith hold that good works are necessary for faith; a group of them maintain that good works are part of faith. But the Murji’ah asserted that “where there is faith sin does not harm, as where there is unbelief obedience is of no use”. The word īrjā means “postponing”, “putting after”, and “giving hope”. The Murji’ah put works (a’ma’il) after faith and intention. Further, by postponing they also meant postponing the decision about the grave sinner until Resurrection and putting ‘Alī down from the first place to the fourth.

4079. This tradition refutes the belief of the Murji’ah. It shows that good works are included in, or at least necessary for, faith.

4080. This also shows that good works are part of faith.

4081. It means that abandoning prayer is a major sin. It is as serious a sin as unbelief. Some scholars hold that negligence of prayer is unbelief.
Chapter 1692

PROOF OF INCREASE AND DECREASE OF FAITH

(4662) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I did not see more defective in respect of reason and religion than the wise of you (women). A woman asked: What is the defect of reason and religion? He replied: The defect of reason is the testimony of two women for one man, and the defect of faith is that one of you does not fast during Ramaḍān (when one is menstruating), and keep away from prayer for some days.4082

(4663) Ibn ‘Abbās said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) turned towards the Ka‘bah (in prayer), the people asked: Apostle of Allah! what will happen with those who died while they prayed with their faces towards Jerusalem? Allah, the Exalted, then revealed: “And never would Allah make your faith of no effect.”4083

(3664) Abū Umāmah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone loves for Allah’s sake, hates for Allah’s sake, gives for Allah’s sake and withholds for Allah’s sake, he will have perfect faith.4084

(4665) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The most perfect believer in respect of faith is he who is best of them in manners.4085

(4666) Sa‘d b. Abi Waqqās said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave some people and did not give anything to a man of them. Sa‘d said: Apostle of Allah! you gave so and so, so and so, but did not give anything to so and so while he is a believer. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Or he is a Muslim. Sa‘d repeated it thrice and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Or he is a Muslim.4086 The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then said: I give some people and leave him

4082. This shows that women are defective in faith. From this Abū Dāwūd argues that faith increases and diminishes.

4083. Qur‘ān, ii. 143 As the Qur‘ān calls their prayer faith, it can be inferred that actions are part of faith.

4084. This shows that a man can make his faith perfect by good actions. It is the proof of increase and decrease of faith.

4085. Good manners increase one’s faith.

4086. A man who claims to be a Muslim can be legally called a Muslim for his obvious declaration and confession. But it is not certain about him that he is actually a believer. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said that obviously he was a Muslim and not a believer (Mū‘min).
who is dearer to me than them. I do not give him anything fearing lest he should fall into Hell on his face.\footnote{4087}

(4667) Explaining the verse, "Say: You have no faith, but you only say: We have submitted our wills to Allah," al-Zuhru said: We think that Islam is a word, and faith is an action.\footnote{4088}

(4668) Sa'd said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) distributed (spoils) among the people I said to him: Give so and so for he is a believer. He said: Or he is a Muslim. I give a man something while another man is dearer to me than him, fearing that he may fall into Hell on his face.\footnote{4089}

(4669) Ibn 'Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not turn unbelievers after me; one of you may strike the neck of the other.\footnote{4090}

(4670) Ibn 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If any believing man calls another believing man an unbeliever, if he is actually an infidel, it is all right; if not, he will become an infidel.

(4671) 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Four characteristics constitute anyone who possesses them a sheer hypocrite, and anyone who possesses one of them possesses a characteristic of hypocrisy till he abandons it: when he talks he lies, when he makes a promise he violates it, when he makes a covenant he acts treacherously, and when he quarrels, he deviates from the Truth.\footnote{4091}

(4672) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one commits fornication, one is not a believer; when one steals, one is not a believer; when one drinks, one is not a believer; and repentance is placed before him.\footnote{4092}

\footnote{4087. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) might have given something to non Muslims for their encouragement so that they might believe in or do no harm to Islam. Sa'd did not understand this expediency.}
\footnote{4088. Qur'an, xlix 14.}
\footnote{4089. From this Qur'anic verse al-Zuhru inferred that Islam is a confession. When a man utters the credo of Islam and confesses the teachings of Islam, he becomes a Muslim. When he performs good works along with his faith, he becomes a believer. According to al Zuhru, actions are a part of faith.}
\footnote{4090. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) referred to the emergence of theological sects after him. These sects created schism in the community and the Muslims were divided among many groups. This shows that sin causes defect in faith.}
\footnote{4091. A Muslim should avoid these characteristics. These are signs of hypocrisy.}
\footnote{4092. This shows that grave sins cause defect in faith. A sinner is not a perfect believer. Repentance is there. One should repent.}
(4673) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a man commits fornication, faith departs from him and there is something like a canvas roof over his head; and when he quits that action, faith returns to him.\footnote{The Prophet (may peace be upon him) mentioned this illustration to bring home how faith departs from a believer when he commits a grave sin. So long as a man remains engaged in a sin, faith remains separate from him. He seems to underline the fact that good actions are part of faith. Faith becomes weak by committing sins.}

Chapter 1693

BELIEF IN DIVINE DECREE

(4674) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Qadarīyyah are the Magians of this community. If they are ill, do not pay a sick visit to them, and if they die, do not attend their funerals.\footnote{Qadarīyyah were a sect in the early period of Islam. They believed in the free will of man. They hold that man is the creator of his actions himself and not Allah. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) called them similar to the Magians for their belief in the duality of Allah: creator of good, and creator of evil, or light and darkness. The Qadarīyyah also believed in the duality of the creator of actions: good to Allah and evil to man. The Ash‘arīs, on the contrary, believe that Allah creates good and bad actions and man acquires them.}

(4675) Hudaifah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Every people have Magians, and the Magians of this community are those who declare that there is no destination by Allah. If any one of them dies, do not attend his funeral, and if any one of them is ill, do not pay a sick visit to him. They are the partisans of the Antichrist (Dājjāl), and Allah will surely join them with the Antichrist.

(4676) Abū Mūsā al-Ash‘arī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah created Adam from a handful which he took from the whole of the earth; so the children of Adam are in accordance with the earth: some red, some white, some black, some a mixture, also smooth and rough, bad and good.\footnote{This tradition indicates that everything is destined by Allah. Man is responsible for his actions because he acquires them.}

(4677) ‘All said: We attended a funeral at Baql’ al-Gharqad which was also attended by the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came and sat down. He had a stick (in his hand) by which he began to scratch up the ground. He then raised his head and said: The place which every one of you and every soul of you will occupy in Hell or in Paradise has been
Belief in Divine Decree

recorded, and destined wicked or blessed. A man from among the people asked: Prophet of Allah! should we not then trust simply in what has been recorded for us and abandon (doing good) deeds? Those who are among the number of the blessed will be inclined to blessing, and those of us who are among the number of the wicked will be inclined to wickedness. He replied: Go on doing good actions, for everyone is helped to do that for which he was created. Those who are among the number of the blessed will be helped to do actions of blessing, and those who are among the wicked will be helped to do wicked deeds. The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) then recited: “So he who gives (in charity) and fears (Allah), and in all sincerity testifies to the best, We will indeed make smooth for him the path to bliss. But he who is a greedy miser and thinks himself self-sufficient, and gives the lie to the best, We will indeed make smooth for him the path of misery.”

(4678) Ya’ây b. Ya’mur said: The first to speak on Divine decree in al-Bagrah was Ma’bad al Juhanl. I and Huma‘id b. ‘Abd al-Rahmân al-Himyarl proceeded to perform Hajj or ‘Umrah. We said: Would that we meet any of the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) so that we could ask him about what they say with regard to Divine decree. So Allah helped us to meet ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar who was entering the mosque. So I and my companion surrounded him, and I thought that my companion would entrust me the task of speaking to him. Then I said: Abû ‘Abd al-Rahmân, there appeared on our side some people who recite the Qur’ân and are engaged in the hair-splitting of knowledge. They conceive that there is no Divine decree and everything happens freely without predestination. He said: When you meet those people, tell them that I am free from them and they are free from me. By Him by Whom swears ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar, if one of them has gold equivalent to Ubyud and he spends it, Allah will not accept it from him until he believes in Divine decree. He then said: ‘Umar b. al-Khattâb transmitted to me a tradition, saying: One day when we were with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) a man with very white clothing and very black hair came up to us. No mark of travel was visible on him, and we did not recognise him. Sitting down beside the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), leaning his knees against his and placing his hands on his thighs, he said: Tell me, Muhammadi, about Islam. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Islam means that you should testify that there is no god but Allah, and that Muhammadi is Allah’s Apostle, that you should observe

4096. Qur’an, xcii. 5-10. This tradition shows that the Muslims should go on doing good deeds and should not depend simply on predestination. Action is necessary for man. Predestination does not prevent man from doing good deeds. According to Divine decree, every man, good or evil, will be let to do good or bad works and these will be made easy for him.
prayer, pay zakāt, fast during Ramaḍān, and perform Ḥajj to the House (i.e. Ka‘bah), if you have the means to go. He said: You have spoken the truth. We were surprised at his questioning him and then declaring that he spoke the truth. He said: Now tell me about faith. He replied: It means that you should believe in Allah, His angels, His Books, His Apostles and the Last Day, and that you should believe in the decreeing both of good and of evil. He said: You have spoken the truth. He said: Now tell me about doing good (iḥsān). He replied: It means that you should worship Allah as though you are seeing Him; if you are not seeing Him, He is seeing you. He said: Now tell me about the Hour. He replied: The one who is asked about it is no better informed than the one who is asking. He said: Then tell me about its signs. He replied: That a maidservant should beget her mistress, and that you should see barefooted, naked, poor men and shepherds exalting themselves in buildings. (‘Umar) said: He then went away, and I waited for three days, then he said: Do you know who the questioner was, ‘Umar? I replied: Allah and His Apostle know best. He said: He was Gabriel who came to you to teach you your religion.

(4679) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Yāḥyā b. Ya‘mur and Ḥumaid b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān through a different chain of narrators. This version has: We met ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar. We told him about Divine decree and what they said about it. He then mentioned something similar to it. He added: A man of Muzainah or Juhaínah asked: What is the good in doing anything, Apostle of Allah? Should we think that a thing has passed and gone or a thing has happened now (without predestination)? He replied: About a thing that has passed and gone (i.e. predestined). A man or some people asked: Then, why action? He replied: Those who are among the number of those who go to Paradise will be helped to do the deeds of the people who will go to Paradise, and those who are among the number of those who go to Hell will be helped to do the deeds of those who will go to Hell.

(4680) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn Ya‘mur, with additions and omissions, through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: He asked: What is Islam? He replied: It means saying prayer, payment of zakāt, performing Ḥajj, fasting during Ramaḍān, and taking a bath on account of sexual difilement.

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Alqamah was a Murji‘ī.”

4097. It means that Islam will spread widely and slaves will be in a great number. The children of the female slaves will be abundant, and they will be the masters of their mother, for their mother is the slave of their father, or it means that daughters will disobey their mothers and rule them like a mistress (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 360).
Abū Dharr and Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to sit among his Companions. A stranger would come, but did not recognise him (the Prophet) until he asked (about him). So we asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to make a place where he might take his seat so that when a stranger came, he might recognise him. So we built a terrace of soil on which he would take his seat, and we would sit beside him. He then mentioned something similar to this tradition saying: A man came, and he described his appearance. He saluted from the side of the assembly, saying: Peace be upon you, Muḥammad. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then responded to him.

Ibn al-Dailamī said: I went to Ubayy b. Ka‘b and said to him: I am confused about Divine decree, so tell me something by means of which Allah may remove the confusion from my mind. He replied: Were Allah to punish everyone in the heavens and in the earth, He would do so without being unjust to them, and were He to show mercy to them His mercy would be much better than their actions merited. Were you to spend in support of Allah’s cause an amount of gold equivalent to Uhud, Allah would not accept it from you till you believed in Divine decree and knew that what has come to you could not miss you and that what has missed you could not come to you. Were you to die believing anything else you would enter Hell. He said: I then went to ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ūd and he said something to the same effect. I next went to Ḥudaifah b. al-Yamān and he said something to the same effect. I next went to Zaid b. Thābit who told me something from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the same effect.4091

Ubadah b. al-Sāmīt said to his son: Sonny! you will not get the taste of the reality of faith until you know that what has come to you could not miss you, and that what has missed you could not come to you. I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: The first thing Allah created was pen. He said to it: Write. It asked: What should I write, my Lord? He said: Write what was decreed about everything till the Last Hour comes. Sonny! I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: He who dies on something other than this does not belong to me.

Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Adam and Moses held a disputation. Moses said: Adam, you are our father. You deprived us and caused us to come out from Paradise. Adam said: You are Moses. Allah chose you for His speech and wrote the Torah for you with His hand. Do you blame me for doing a deed which Allah had decreed that I should do forty

4091. This shows that belief in Divine decree is an article of faith.
years before He created me? So Adam got the better of Moses in argument. 4099

Ahmad b. Shalih said from ‘Amr from Tawus who heard Abu Hurairah.

(4685) Umar b. al-Khattab reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Moses said: My Lord, show us Adam who caused us and himself to come out from Paradise. So Allah showed him Adam. He asked: Are you our father, Adam? Adam said to him: Yes. He said: Are you the one into whom Allah breathed of His spirit, taught you all the names, and commanded angels (to prostrate) and they prostrated to you? He replied: Yes. He asked: Then what moved you to cause us and yourself to come out from Paradise? Adam asked him: And who are you? He said: I am Moses. He said: You are the Prophet of Banu Israil to whom Allah spoke from behind a screen, appointing no messenger between you and Him. He said: Yes. He asked: Did you not find that that was decreed in the Book (records) of Allah before I was created? He replied: Yes. He asked: Then why do you blame me about a thing for which Divine decree had already passed before me? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: So Adam got the better of Moses in argument (peace be upon them).

(4686) Muslim b. Yasar al-Juhani said: When Umar b. al-Khattab was asked about the verse “When your Lord took their offspring from the backs of the children of Adam” 4100—al-Qa‘nabi recited the verse—he said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say when he was questioned about it: Allah created Adam, then passed His right hand over his back, and brought forth from it his offspring, saying: I have created these for Paradise and they will do the deeds of those who go to Paradise. He then passed His hand over his back and brought forth from it his offspring, saying: I have created these for Hell, and they will do the deeds of those who go to Hell. A man asked: What is the good of doing anything, Apostle of Allah? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: When Allah creates a servant for Paradise, He employs him in doing the deeds of those who will go to Paradise, so that his final action before death is one of the deeds of those who go to Paradise, for which He will bring him into Paradise. But when He creates a servant for Hell, He employs him in doing the deeds of those who will go to Hell, so that his final action before death is one of the deeds of those who go to Hell, for which He will bring him into Hell.

(4687) Nu‘aim b. Rablah said: I was with Umar b. al-Khattab when he transmitted this tradition. The tradition of Malik is more perfect.

4099. Adam won the argument because he referred to Divine decree which Moses neglected. The things decreed by Allah were bound to happen.
4100. Qur’an, vii. 172.
(4688) Ubayy b. Ka‘b said: The boy whom al-Khidr had killed was created an infidel. Had he lived, he would have moved his parents to rebellion and unbelief.  

(4689) Ubayy b. Ka‘b said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) explaining the verse “As for the youth his parents were people of Faith,” he was created infidel the day when he was created.

(4690) Ibn ‘Abbās said: Ubayy b. Ka‘b told me that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Al-Khidr saw a youth playing with boys. He took him by his head and uprooted it. Moses then said: Hast thou slain an innocent person who had slain none?  

(4691) ‘Abd-Allah b. Mas‘ūd said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who spoke the truth and whose word was belief told us the following: The constituents of one of you are collected for forty days in his mother’s womb, then they become a piece of congealed blood for a similar period, then they become a lump of flesh for a similar period. Then Allah sends to him an angel with four words who records his provision, the period of his life, his deeds, and whether he will be miserable or blessed; thereafter he breathes the spirit into him. One of you will do the deeds of those who go to Paradise so that there will be only a cubit between him and it or will be within a cubit, then what is decreed will overcome him so that he will do the deeds of those who go to Hell and will enter it; and one of you will do the deeds of those who go to Hell, so that there will be only a cubit between him and it or will be within a cubit, then what is decreed will overcome him, so that he will do the deeds of those who go to Paradise and will enter it.

(4692) ‘Imrān b. Hujain said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked: Is it known who are those who will go to Paradise and those who will go to Hell? He said: Yes. He asked: Then what is the good of doing anything by those who act? He replied: Everyone is helped to do for which he has been created.

(4693) ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not sit with those who believe in free will and do not address them before they address you.

4101. This refers to the story of Moses and Khidr in Sūrat al-Kahf. Khidr killed a youth about whom he knew that he would lead his parents astray. He was infidel by Divine decree. Moses criticised him for this act of Khidr. He then explained the reason for his killing the youth.
4102. Qur’ān, xviii. 80.
4103. Qur’ān, xviii. 74.
4104. This shows that a believer should continue doing good works throughout his life.
Chapter 1694

THE OFFSPRING OF POLYTHEISTS

(4694) Ibn ‘Abbās reported that when the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was questioned about the offspring of polytheists, he said: Allah knows best about what they were doing. 106

(4695) ʿĀʾishah said: I said: Apostle of Allah! what happens to the offspring of believers? He replied: They are joined to their parents. I asked: Apostle of Allah! although they have done nothing? He replied: Allah knows best what they were doing. I asked: What happens to the offspring of polytheists, Apostle of Allah? He replied: They are joined to their parents. I asked: Although they have done nothing? He replied: Allah knows best what they were doing. 107

(4696) ʿĀʾishah, mother of the believers, said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was invited to the funeral of a boy who belonged to the ʿĀnāʾīr, and I said: Apostle of Allah! this one is blessed, for he has done no evil, nor has he known it. He replied: It may be otherwise, ʿĀʾishah, for Allah created Paradise and created those who will go to it, and he created it for them when they were still in their father’s loins; and he created Hell and created those who will go to it, and created it for them when they were still in their father’s loins. 108

(4697) ʿAbū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Every child is born on Islam, 109 but his parents make him a Jew and a Christian, just as a beast is born whole. Do you find some among them (born) maimed? The people asked: Apostle of Allah! what do you think about the one who died while he was young? He replied: Allah knows best what he was going to do.

4105. There are three viewpoints about the offspring of polytheists after their death: first, they will go to Hell following their parents; second, some scholars are silent about them; third, they will go to Paradise. The third view is said to be the correct one.

4106. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not say anything about their fate. He assigned it to the knowledge of Allah. It is a fact, no one knows except Allah what they were going to do in their life.

4107. This shows that generally the offspring will be treated along with parents. If they were believers, their offspring would be considered believers, and vice versa.

4108. This shows that people will go to Paradise and Hell in accordance with what was decreed for them. But it does not mean that they should do no good work. Their duty is to go on doing good works, and to leave the result to Allah.

4109. Fitrah has been explained variantly. The majority opinion is that here it means Islam. Hence the translation is Islam and not nature. The literal meaning of the word fitrah is nature.
Aba Diwad said: Milik was asked: The heretics argue from this tradition against us. Milik said: Argue against them from its last part which goes. The people asked: What do you think about the one who died while he was young? He replied: Allah knows best what he was going to do.

(4698) Explaining the tradition “Every child is born on Islam,” Hammād b. Salamah said: In our opinion it means that covenant which Allah had taken in the loins of their fathers when He said: “Am I not your Lord? They said: Yes.” 3110

(4699) ‘Āmir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The woman who buries alive her new-born girl and the girl who is buried alive both will go to Hell. 4111

This tradition has also been transmitted by Ibn Mas‘ūd from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the same effect through a different chain of narrators.

(4700) Anas said: A man asked: Where is my father, Apostle of Allah? He replied: Your father is in Hell. When he turned his back, he said: My father and your father are in Hell. 4112

(4701) Anas b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The devil flows in a man like his blood. 4113

(4702) ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not sit with those who believe in free will and do not address them before they address you.

4110. Qur‘ān, vii 172. It means that before creating this world all the creatures made a covenant with Allah. Thus every child is born on Islam. It is his parents and the society which lead him astray.

4111. Burying new-born girls alive was a custom in pre-Islamic days. The woman who buries will go to Hell for her sin or being an unbeliever. The girl buried alive will go to Hell following her parents. It is said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said these words about a particular woman who buried her new-born girl alive. Hence it is not a general principle that the girl buried alive will also go to Hell (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 366).

4112. The parents of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) died before coming down of the revelation to him. Hence they could not get the period of revelation and call to Islam. However, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) told the man for his satisfaction to bring home to him that only belief and actions of every individual will be useful for him and not for others. When the father of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) is in Hell, how can a man save his father if he is an unbeliever.

Some scholars like al-Suyūṭī and others have attempted to prove that the parents of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) were resurrected and they became Muslims. But such traditions are weak and not reliable (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 367).

4113. This refers to the evil promptings of Satan.
Chapter 1695

THE JAHMIYYAH

(4703) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: People will continue to ask one another (questions) till this is pronounced: Allah created all things, but who created Allah? Whoever comes across anything of that, he should say: I believe in Allah.

(4704) Abū Hurairah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: He then mentioned a tradition like it. This version adds: When they pronounced that, say: “Say Allah is one. Allah is He to Whom men repair. He has not begotten and He has not been begotten, and no one is equal to Him.” Then one should spit three times on his left side and seek refuge in Allah from Satan.

(4705) Al-'Abbās b. ‘Abd al-Mu'tattalib said: I was sitting in al-Batāh with a company among whom the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was sitting, when a cloud passed above them. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) looked at it and said: What do you call this? They said: Sa'āb. He said: And muzn? They said: And muzn. He said: And 'anān? They said: And 'anān. Abū Dāwūd said: I am not quite confident about the word 'anān. He asked: Do you know the distance between heaven and earth? They replied: We do not know. He then said: The distance between them is seventy-one, seventy-two, or seventy-three years. The heaven which is above it is at a similar distance (going on till he counted seven heavens). Above the seventh heaven there is a sea the distance between whose surface and bottom is like that between one heaven and the next. Above that there are eight mountain goats the distance between whose hoofs and haunches is like the distance...

4114. Jahmiyyah were a sect attributed to Jahm b. Safwān who was executed in 128 A.H. They believed in the negation of the attributes of Allah and createdness of the Qur'ān. They also denied the punishment in the grave.

According to W.M. Watt, “Jahmite was a purely vituperative term and that there never was any body of men who in fact were followers of Jahm or who professed to be such. The term presumably meant something like 'renegade' or 'quisling.' . . . To al-Baghdādi and ash-Ashāharrastāf Jahmiyyah are of interest chiefly as an example of extreme determinism. . . . In short, the thesaiographers, taking over a popular vituperative term, appear to have created the sect of Jahmiyyah to facilitate their classifications.” (W.M. Watt, The Formative Period of Islamic Thought [Edinburgh, 1973], pp. 147-48).

4115. The version of al-Bukhārī and Muslim has: I believe in Allah and His Apostle. It means that one should neglect such false ideas and renew one's faith.

4116 Qur'ān, cxii. 1.

4117. A stony valley at Mecca.
between one heaven and the next. Then Allah, the Blessed and the Exalted, is above that.\footnote{4118}

\footnote{4118} The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Simāk through a different chain of narrators to the same effect.

\footnote{4107} The tradition mentioned above has again been transmitted by Simāk through a different chain of narrators and to the same effect as this lengthy tradition.

\footnote{4108} Muhammad b. Jubair b. Muṭ'im said from his father on the authority of his grandfather: An A'rabl (a nomadic Arab) came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: People are suffering distress, the children are hungry, the crops are withered, and the animals are perishing, so ask Allah to grant us rain, for we seek you as our intercessor with Allah, and Allah as our intercessor with you. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Woe to you: Do you know what you are saying? Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) declared Allah's glory and he continued declaring His glory till the effect of that was apparent in the faces of his Companions. He then said: Woe to you: Allah is not to be sought as intercessor with anyone. Allah's state is greater than that. Woe to you! Do you know how great Allah is? His throne is above the heavens thus (indicating with his fingers like a dome over him), and it groans on account of Him as a saddle does because of the rider.

Ibn Bashshār said in his version: Allah is above the throne, and the throne is above the heavens. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition. Ḥāfiz b. ‘Umar b. Sulaymān b. ‘Umar b. Sa‘d and Ibn Bashshār transmitted it from Ya‘qūb b. ‘Utbah and Jubair b. Muhammad b. Jubair from his father on the authority of his grandfather.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition with the chain of Ahmad b. Sa‘īd is sound. It has been approved by a body (of traditionists), which includes Yahyā b. Ma‘īn and ‘All b. al-Mādīnī, and a group has transmitted it from Ibn Isḥāq, as Ahmad also said. And so far as I have been informed ‘Abd al-A‘lā, Ibn al-Muthannā and Ibn Bashshār had heard from the same copy (of the collection of traditions).

\footnote{4109} Jabir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: I have been permitted to tell about one of Allah's angels who bears the throne that the distance between the lobe of his ear and his shoulder is a journey of seven hundred years.\footnote{4119}

\footnote{4119} These traditions indicate that there is a throne on which Allah has taken His seat. The modality of these things is not intelligible to the people. As the Jahmīyyah denied the existence of the throne of Allah, their belief has been refuted by these traditions.
Abū Yūnus Sulaim b. Jubair, client of Abū Hurairah, said: I heard Abū Hurairah recite this verse: “Allah doth command you to render back your trusts to those to whom they are due”... up to “For Allah is He Who heareth and seeth all things.” He said: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) putting his thumb on his ear and finger on his eye.

Abū Hurairah said: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) reciting this verse and putting his fingers. Ibn Yūnus said that al-Muqrī said: “Allah hears and sees” means that Allah has the power of hearing and seeing.

Chapter 1696
THE VISION OF ALLAH

Jarir b. 'Abd Allah said: When we were sitting with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) he looked at the moon on the night when it was full, that is, fourteenth, and said: You will see your Lord as you see this (moon) and have no doubts about seeing Him. If, therefore, you can keep from being prevented from prayer before the sun rises and before it sets, do so. He then recited: “Celebrate the praise of your Lord before the rising of the sun and before its setting.”

Abū Hurairah said: The people asked: Apostle of Allah! shall we see our Lord, the Exalted, on the Day of Resurrection? He replied: Do you feel any trouble in seeing the sun at noon when it is not in the cloud? They said: No. He asked: Do you feel any trouble in seeing the moon on the night when it is full and not in the cloud? They replied: No. He said: By Him in Whose hand my soul is, you will not feel any trouble in seeing Him except as much as you feel in seeing any of them.

Abū Razīn al-'Uqailī said: I asked: Apostle of Allah! will each one of us see his Lord? Ibn Mu‘ādh’s version has: “being alone with Him, on the Day of Resurrection? And what sign is there in His creation?” He replied: Abū Razīn! does each one of you not see the moon? Ibn Mu‘ādh’s version has: “on the night when it is full, being alone with it?” Then the agreed version goes: I said: Yes. He said: Allah is more great. Ibn Mu‘ādh’s version has: It is only a part of Allah’s creation,

4120. Qur‘ān, iv. 58.
4121. The Jahmīyyah did not believe in Divine attributes. This tradition refuted their view. Allah does not have the organ of hearing and seeing, i.e. ears and eyes, but their power.
4122. The Akl al-Sunnah believe that the people will see Allah in the Hereafter. But the Mu’tazilah, Khawārij and some Murji’ah reject this belief. But these traditions clearly support the belief of the Akl al-Sunnah about the vision of Allah on the Day of Judgment.
4123. Qur‘ān, xx. 130.
but Allah is more glorious and greater.

Chapter 1697

REFUTATION OF THE JAHMÍYYAH

(4714) ʿAbd Allah b. ʿUmar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah will fold the heavens on the Day of Resurrection, then seizing them in His right hand He will say: I am the King. Where are the mighty men? Where are the proud men? He will then fold the earths and take them in His other hand (according to the version of Ibn al-ʿAlfi'), and then say: I am the King. Where are the mighty men? Where are the proud men?24

(4715) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Our Lord gets down every night to the heaven of this world when a third of the night remains and says: (Is there anyone) who prays to Me so that I may accept his prayer? (Is there anyone) who asks of Me so that I may give him? (Is there anyone) who asks for My forgiveness so that I may forgive him?

Chapter 1698

THE QUR'ĀN, THE WORD OF ALLAH

(4716) Jābir b. ʿAbd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) presented himself to the people at ʿArafāt, saying: Is there any man who takes me to his people? The Quraisy have prevented me from preaching the word of my Lord.4125

(4717) ʿĀʾishah said: I thought in my mind that my affair was far inferior to the speaking of Allah about me with a command that will be recited.4126

(4718) ʿĀmir b. Shahr said: I was with the Negus when his son recited a verse of the Gospel. So I laughed. Thereupon he said: Do you laugh at the word of Allah, the Exalted?

(4719) Ibn ʿAbbās said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to seek refuge in Allah for al-Ḥasan and al-Ḥusain, saying: I seek refuge for both of you in the perfect words of Allah from every devil and every poisonous thing and from the evil eye which influences. He would then say: Your father sought refuge in Allah by

4124. This tradition refutes the view of the Jahmiyyah that there are no Divine attributes.
4125. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said these words when he was at Mecca and the Muslims were weak. This tradition shows that the Qur'ān is the word of Allah.
4126. This refers to the verses of Sūrat al-Nūr that were revealed about her innocence.
them for Ismā‘īl and Iṣḥāq.

Abū Dāwūd said: This is a proof of the fact that the Qur‘ān is not created.4127

(4720) ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When Allah, the Exalted, speaks to send revelation the inhabitants of the heaven hear the clinging of a bell from the other heaven like pulling a chain on the mountain of al-Ṣafā’, and then swoon. They continue to remain in this condition until Gabriel comes to them. When Gabriel comes to them, they recover and say: What did your Lord say, Gabriel? He would say: Truth, so they would say: Truth, truth.

Chapter 1699
INTERCESSION

(4721) Anas b. Mālik reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: My intercession will be for those of my people who have committed major sins.4128

(4722) ‘Imrān b. Ḥuṣayn reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: People will come forth from Hell by Muhammad’s intercession, will enter Paradise and be named Jahannamis.4129

(4723) Jābir said: I heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say: Those who go to Paradise will eat in it and drink.4130

Chapter 1700
THE RESURRECTION AND THE BLOWING OF THE TRUMPET4131

(4724) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as

4127. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) called the Qur‘ān the perfect words of Allah. A perfect word cannot be a created thing

4128. Major sins are like theft, adultery, drinking, gambling, etc. Those Muslims who are sure to go to Hell on account of their major sins will be saved by the intercession of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). There is a unanimous consensus of the Ahl al-Sunnah on the intercession of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) on the Day of Resurrection. But the Khawārij and a group of the Mu’tazilah deny intercession of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). They believe that a Muslim who commits major sins will remain in Hell for ever.

4129. They will not be named so far their disgrace but to recall that they have been saved from Hell by the grace of Allah, and they will be pleased by remembering this act of kindness.

4130. This is indirectly connected with intercession, for those who are saved from Hell will go to Paradise and enjoy there.

4131. Al-Ṣūr. Cf. Qur‘ān, vi. 73; xviii. 90; etc.
saying: The trumpet (ṣur) which will be blown.  

(4725) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Every son of Adam will be devoured by the earth with the exception of the tail-bone from which he was created and from which he will be reconstituted.

Chapter 1701
THE CREATION OF PARADISE AND HELL

(4726) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When Allah created Paradise, He said to Gabriel: Go and look at it. He went and looked at it, then came and said: O my Lord! by Thy might, no one who hears of it will fail to enter it. He then surrounded it with disagreeable things, and said: Go and look at it, Gabriel. He went and looked at it, then came and said: O my Lord! by Thy might, I am afraid that no one will enter it. When Allah created Hell, He said: Go and look at it, Gabriel. He went and looked at it, then came and said: O my Lord! by Thy might and power, I am afraid that no one will remain who does not enter it. 

Chapter 1702
THE POND

(4727) Ibn 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Before you there will be a pond the distance between whose sides is like that between Jarbah and Adhruh. 

(4728) Zaid b Arqam said: We were with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be

4132. It will be a second blowing to assemble the people who were resurrected by the first blowing.

4133. This tradition shows that a Muslim should exercise control over his desires which may lead him astray and then to Hell. Similarly, one has to tolerate disagreeable things for going to Paradise.

4134. It refers to Ḥanūf al-Kautar mentioned in the Qur'an, cviii.

4135. The names of two villages in Syria three days' journey apart. According to Yaqūt, Adhruh was in the neighbourhood of al-Balqā and Ammān and the distance between Adhrūh and Jarbah was a mile or less (Mu'jam, I, 174; II, 46). The actual length is not meant here, but it shows only an approximate distance.
upon him). He said when we arrived at a halting place: You are not a hundred thousandth part of those who will come down to me at the pond. I (the narrator Abū Ḥamzah) asked: What was your number that day? He replied: Seven or eight hundred.\footnote{4136}

(4729) Anas b. Mālik said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) dozed for a short while and raised his head smiling. He either said to them (people) or they said to him: Apostle of Allah! why do you laugh? He said: A surah has been revealed to me just now, and then he recited: “In the name of Allah, Most Gracious. Most Merciful. To thee We have granted the fount (of abundance)” up to the end.\footnote{4137} When he recited, he asked: Do you know what al-Kauthar is? They replied: Allah and His Apostle know best. He said: It is a river which my Lord, the Exalted, has promised me (to grant) in Paradise; there is abundance of good and upon it there is a pond which my people will approach on the Day of Resurrection. There are vessels as numerous as stars (in the sky).

(4730) Anas b. Mālik said: When the Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) was lifted to the heavens (for travelling) in Paradise, or as he said, a river whose banks were of transparent or hollowed \footnote{4138} pearls was presented to him. The angel who was with him struck it with his hand and took out musk. Muḥammad (may peace be upon him) then asked the angel who was with him: What is this? He replied: It is al-Kauthar which Allah has given you.

(4731) ‘Abd al-Salām b. Abī Ḥāzim Abū Talūt said: I saw Abū Barzah who came to visit ‘Ubaid Allah b. Ziyād.\footnote{4139} Then a man named Muslim who was there in the company mentioned it to me. When ‘Ubaid Allah saw him, he said: This Muḥammad of yours is a dwarf and fat. The old man (i.e. Abū Barzah) understood it. So he said: I did not think that I would remain among the people who would ashamed me of the company of Muḥammad (may peace be upon him). Thereupon ‘Ubaid Allah said: The company of Muḥammad (may peace be upon him) is a pride for you, not a disgrace. He added: I called for you to ask about the pond. Did you hear the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) mentioning anything about it? Abū Barzah said: Yes, not once, twice, thrice, four times or five times.\footnote{4140} If anyone

\footnote{4136} He meant to show the approximate number of the believers who will come down to the pool for drinking water from it on the Day of Resurrection.

\footnote{4137} Qur. ân, cviii. 1-3.

\footnote{4138} The transmitter is doubtful.

\footnote{4139} He was governor of Kūfah during the caliphate of Yazīd I. He fought against al-Ḥusain b. ‘All.

\footnote{4140} It means that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) mentioned about the pond, i.e. al-Kauthar, many times to his Companions.
belies it, may Allah not supply him water from it. He then went away angrily.

**Chapter 1703**

**QUESTIONING AND PUNISHMENT IN THE GRAVE**

(4732) Al-Bara' b. 'Azib reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a Muslim is questioned in the grave he testifies that there is no god but Allah and that Muhammad is Allah's Apostle. That is verified by Allah's words: "Allah establishes those who believe with the word that stands firm."[4141]

(4733) Anas b. Mâlik said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) entered the garden of palm trees of Banû al-Najjar. He heard a voice and was terrified. He asked: Who are the people buried in these graves? The people replied: Apostle of Allah! these are some people who had died in pre-Islamic times. He said: Seek refuge in Allah from the punishment of the fire, and the trial of the Antichrist. They asked: Why is it that, Apostle of Allah? He said: When a man is placed in his grave, an angel comes to him and says to him: Whom did you worship? Allah then guides him and he says: I worshipped Allah. He is then asked: What was your opinion of this man? He replies: He is Allah's servant and His Apostle. He will not then be asked about anything else. He will then be taken to his abode in Hell and will be told: This was your abode in Hell, but Allah protected you and had mercy on you and substituted for you an abode in Paradise for it. He will say: Leave me so that I may go and give glad tidings to my family. He will be told: Dwell. When an infidel is placed in his grave, an angel comes to him, reprimands him and asks him: Whom did you worship? He replies: I do not know. He will be told: You neither knew nor did you follow (the believers). He is then asked: What was your opinion of this man? He replies: I held the opinion that the other people held. He will then give him a blow between his ears with an iron hammer and will utter a shout which will be heard by all the creatures (near him) with the exception of men and jinn.[4143]

(4734) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by 'Abd al-Wahhab through a different chain of narrators in a similar manner. This version has:

4141. Qur'an, xiv. 27.
4142. The angel either mentions the name of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) or shows his picture.
4143. The angels who come to ask questions in the grave are called Muskar and Nakir. The reply to their questions in the grave depends on one's faith and actions. If a man is a believer, and did good works in this world, it will be easy for him to answer their questions. If he is an infidel, impious, or corrupt, he will not be able to answer their questions easily.
When a man is placed in his grave and his friends leave him, he hears the beat of his sandals. Then two angels come and speak to him. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition nearly similar to the previous one. It goes: As for the infidel and hypocrite they say to them. This version adds the word “hypocrite”. And he said: Those who are near him will hear (his shout) with the exception of men and jinn.

(4735) Al-Bara’ b. ‘Azib said: We went out with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) accompanying the bier of a man of the Ansār. When we reached his grave, it was not yet dug. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sat down and we also sat down around him as if birds were over our heads. He had in his hand a stick by which he was scratching the ground. He then raised his head and said: Seek refuge in Allah from the punishment in the grave. He said it twice or thrice. The version of Jarir adds here: He hears the beat of their sandals when they go back, and at that moment he is asked: O so and so! who is your Lord, what is your religion, and who is your Prophet? Hannâd’s version has: Two angels will come to him, make him sit up, and ask him: Who is your Lord? He will reply: My Lord is Allah. They will ask him: What is your religion? He will reply: My religion is Islam. They will ask him: What is your opinion about the man who was sent on a mission among you? He will reply: He is the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). They will ask: Who made you aware of this? He will reply: I read Allah’s Book, believed in it, and considered it true, which is verified by Allah’s words: “Allah establishes those who believe with the word that stands firm in this world and the next.” 4144 The agreed version goes: Then a crier will call from the heaven: My servant has spoken the truth, so spread a bed for him from Paradise, clothe him from Paradise, and open a door for him into Paradise. So some of its air and perfume will come to him, and a space will be made for him as far as the eye can see. He also mentioned the death of the infidel, saying: His spirit will be restored to his body, two angels will come to him, make him sit up and ask him: Who is your Lord? He will reply: Alas, alas! I do not know. They will ask him: What is your religion? He will reply: Alas, alas! I do not know. They will ask: Who is this man who was sent on a mission among you? He will reply: Alas, alas! I do not know. Then a crier will call from the heaven: He has lied, so spread a bed for him from Hell, clothe him from Hell, and open for him a door into Hell. Then some of its heat and pestilential wind will come to him, and his grave will become restricted, so his ribs will be pressed together. Jarir’s version adds: One who is blind and dumb will then be placed in charge of him, having a sledge hammer such that if a mountain were struck with it, it would become dust. He will give him a blow.

4144. Qur’an, xiv. 27.
with it which will be heard by everything between the east and the west except by men and jinn, and he will become dust. Then his spirit will be restored to him.

(4736) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Barā’ī (b. ‘Āzib) from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators in a similar way.

Chapter 1704
THE SCALE

(4737) ‘Ā’ishah said that she thought of Hell and wept. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) asked her: What makes you weep? She replied: I thought of Hell and wept. Will you remember your family on the Day of Resurrection? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: There are three places where no one will remember anyone: at the scale until one knows whether his weight is light or heavy; at (the examination of) the book when one is commanded: Take and read Allah's record, until he knows whether his book will be put into his right hand, or into his left hand, or behind his back;4145 and at the Path when it is placed across jahannam.4146

Chapter 1705
THE ANTICHRIST (DAJJĀL)

(4738) Abū ‘Ubaydah b. al-Jarrāḥ said: I heard the Prophet (may peace be upon him) say: There has been no Prophet after Noah who has not warned his people about the Antichrist (Dajjāl), and I warn you of him. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) described him to us, saying: Perhaps some who have seen me and heard my words will live till his time.4147 The people asked: Apostle of Allah! what will be the

4146. It is an article of faith that the actions of every man will be weighed in a scale (mizāda) on the Day of Resurrection. It is mentioned in the Qur’ānic verse xxi. 47. If his record is heavy, he will be saved, and if light, he will be punished.
4147. It means that some of his Companions will see the Dajjāl. He might be referring to Tamīm al-Dārī who had seen the Dajjāl, and mentioned about him to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Or he might have referred to al-Khīṭr who will live till the Day of Resurrection, and will see the Dajjāl. Or it means that the Dajjāl will come out either during the generation of the Companions or after his lifetime. This is according to the version which has “Who have seen me or heard my words”
condition of our hearts on that day? Like what we are today? He replied: Or better. 4148

(4739) Ibn ‘Umar reported: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) stood among the people and praised Allah in a way which is worthy of Him, and mentioned the Antichrist (Dajjal), saying: I warn you of him, and there has been no Prophet who has not warned his people about him, and Noah also warned his people about him. But I tell you about him a word which no Prophet had told his people: you should know that he will be blind in one eye, and Allah is not blind in one eye.

Chapter 1706

ON THE KILLING OF THE KHAWĀRIJ 4149

(4740) Abū Dharr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who separates from the community within a span takes off the noose of Islam from his neck. 4150

(4741) Abū Dharr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: How will you deal with the ru’ers (imāms) who appropriate to themselves this booty? I said: I swear by Him Who sent you with the Truth that at that time I shall put my sword on my shoulder and smite with it till I meet you, or I join you. He said: Shall I not guide you to something better than that? You must show endurance till you meet me. 4151

(4742) Umm Salamah, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), is reported to have said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: You will have commanders some of whom you will approve and some of whom you will disapprove. He who expresses disapproval with his tongue (Abū Dāwūd said: This is Hishām’s version) is guiltless; and he who feels disapproval in his heart, is safe, but he who

4148. The condition of hearts will be better, for the faith will be stronger.

4149. Khawārij were a sect that emerged in Islam during the Caliphate of ‘Ali. They revolted against ‘Ali. They held that ‘Ali was an unbeliever for accepting the arbitration. They also believed that every grave sinner was an unbeliever and excluded from the community.

4150. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) in this tradition emphasises the integration and unity of the community. If any man disintegrates the community by revolting against the imām (the ruler), he loses his faith and is thus excluded from the community. This refers to the Khawārij who revolted against ‘Ali.

4151. This shows that the Muslims should obey their rulers and tolerate their injustice so long as they are believers and offer prayer. But they should not obey their command which is against the teachings of Islam. This is in the interest of the unity of the community.
is pleased and follows them. He was asked: Shall we not kill them, Apostle of Allah? Abū Dāwūd's version has: Shall we not fight with them? He replied: No, so long as they pray.

(4743) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Umm Salamah through a different chain of narrators to the same effect. This version has: He who disapproves is guiltless, and he who disapproves is safe. Qatādah said: It means one who feels its disapproval in his heart, and one who expresses disapproval in his heart.

(4744) 'Arfajah told that he heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Various corruptions will arise in my community, so strike with sword the one who tries to cause separation in the matter of Muslims when they are united, whoever he be.4153

Chapter 1707

FIGHTING AGAINST THE KHAWĀRIJ

(4745) 'Ubaydah (al-Salmān) said: 'All mentioned about the people of al Nahrawān,4154 saying: Among them there will be a man with a defective hand or with a small hand. If you were not to overjoy, I would inform you of what Allah has promised (the reward for) those who will kill them at the tongue of Muḥammad (may peace be upon him). I asked: Have you heard this from him? He replied: Yes, by the Lord of the Ka'bah.

(4746) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: 'All sent same gold-mixed dust to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He divided it among the four: al-Aqrā'ī b. Ḥābis al-Ḥanzālī and then al-Mujāshī‘ī, ‘Uyainah b. Badr al-Fazārī, Zaid al-Khair al-Ṭā‘lī, next to one of Banū Nabhān, and ‘Alqamah b. ‘Uthmān al-‘Āmīrī (in general), next to one of Banū Kulaib. The Quraish and the Anṣār became angry and said: He is giving to the chiefs of the people of Najd and leaving us. He said: I am giving them for reconcilia-

4152 The predicate has been omitted. It means that he will be one of them. He will also share their fate.

4153. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not tolerate disunity and schism among Muslims. Therefore, he ordered that, instead of causing separation and disagreement in the community, it is better to kill the person who causes disunity.

4154. Al-Nahrawān, name of three villages, upper, middle and lower, between Wāsīṭ and Baghdad. Here a battle took place between 'All and the Khawārij. Hence the Khawārij are known as Ahl al-Nahrawān.
tion of their hearts. Then a man with deep-seated eyes, high cheek-bones, a projecting brow, a thick beard and a shaven head came forward and said: For Allah, Muhammad! He said: Who will obey Allah if I disobey Him? Allah entrusts me with power over the inhabitants of the earth, but you do not. A man asked to be allowed to kill him—and I think he was Khalid b. al-Walid—but he prevented him. Then when the man turned away, he said: From this one's stock there will be people who recite the Qur'an, but it will not pass down their throats. They will sever from Islam as an arrow goes through the animal shot at. They will kill the followers of Islam and leave the worshippers of idols alone; but if I live up to their time I shall certainly kill them as 'Ad were killed.

(4747) Abū Sa'īd b. al-Khudr and Anas b. Malik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Soon there will appear disagreement and dissension in my people; there will be people who will be good in speech and bad in work. They recite the Qur'an, but it does not pass their collar-bones. They will swerve from the religion as an animal goes through the animal shot at. They will not return to it till the arrow comes back to its notch. They are worst of the people and animals. Happy is the one who kills them and they kill him. They call to the Book of Allah, but they have nothing to do with it. He who fights against them will be nearer to Allah than them (the rest of the people). The people asked: What is their sign? He replied: They shave the head.

(4748) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Anas through a different chain of narrators in a similar manner. This version adds: Their sign is shaving the head and eliminating the hair. If you see them, kill them.

Abū Dāwūd said: Tasmi'd means uprooting the hair.

(4749) 'All said: When I mention a tradition to you from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), it is dearer to me that I fall from the heaven than I lie on

4155. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) divided the gold among some tribes who were newly converted. This he did to encourage them so that they might remain firm on Islam. The Qur'an also allows to give the income of sakāl to non-Muslims or newly-converted Muslims for their encouragement, verse ix. 60.

4156. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) in this tradition made a prediction about the emergence of the sect of the Khawārij. The qualities which the Prophet (may peace be upon him) described in this tradition were found in the Khawārij.

4157. It means that they will abandon Islam so quickly that no trace of it will be left in them. This is just like an arrow which goes through an animal without traces of excrement or blood, as another version of this tradition has.

4158. As it is impossible that an arrow returns to its notch, similarly the Khawārij will not return to Islam.
him. But when I talk to you about matters between me and you, then war is a deception. I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Towards the end of the time there will be people who are young in age and feeble in mind; they will speak the best words of the people, but they will swerve from Islam as an arrow goes through the animal aimed at, and their faith will not pass their throats. Wherever you meet them kill them, for their killing will bring a reward for him who kills them on the Day of Resurrection.

(4750) Salamah b. Kuhail said: Zaid b. Wahb al-Juhani told that he was in the army which proceeded to (fight with) the Khawārij in the company of ‘Ali. ‘Ali then said: O people! I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: There will appear from among my community people who recite the Qur’an, and your recitation has no comparison with their recitation, and your prayer has no comparison with their prayer, and your fasts have no comparison with their fasts. They will recite the Qur’an thinking that it is beneficial for them, while it is harmful for them. Their prayer will not pass their collar-bones. They will swerve from Islam as an arrow goes through the animal shot at. If the army that is approaching them knows what (reward) has been decided for them at the tongue of their Prophet (may peace be upon him), they would leave (other good) activities. The sign of that is that among them there will be a man who has an upper arm, but not hand; on his upper arm there will be something like the nipple of a female breast, having white hair thereon. Will you go to Mu‘awiyyah and the people of Syria, and leave them behind among your children and property? I swear by Allah, I hope these are the same people, for they shed the blood unlawfully, and attacked the cattle of the people. So go on in the name of Allah. Salamah b. Kuhail said: Zaid b. Wahb then informed me of all the halting places one by one, (saying): Until we passed a bridge. When we fought with each other, ‘Abd Allah b. Wahb al-Rāsibl, who was the leader

4159. The reference here is to the Khawārij. It means that they will misinterpret the Qur’an, hence they will not be benefited by it.
4160. Their prayer will have no effect on their hearts.
4161. The other version of this tradition has: la‘l-takalīd meaning; they would depend on this action alone and leave other good works.
4162. It means that it is prior to fight the Khawārij because they are more dangerous for them.
4163. ‘Ali was certain that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) meant the Khawārij by his prediction in the tradition.
4164. It means that he told him about the places where fighting took place. Muslim has in his version maari‘as only once and not twice. This might mean that he told him about a certain place.
of the Khawārij, said to them: Throw away the lances and pull out the swords from their sheaths, for I am afraid they will adjure you as they had adjured on the day of Ḥarūrā\textsuperscript{4165}. So they threw away their lances and pulled out their swords, and the people pierced them with their lances. They were killed (lying one on the other). On that day only two persons of the partisans (of ‘Ali) were afflicted. ‘Ali said: Search for the man with the crippled hand. But they could not find it. Then ‘Ali got up himself and went to the people who had been killed and were lying on one another. He said: Take them out. They found him just near the ground. So he shouted: Allah is Most Great! He said: Allah spoke the truth, and His Apostle has conveyed. ‘Ubaydat al-Salmān stood up to him, saying: Commander of the Faithful! have you heard it from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)? He said: Yes, by Him, there is no god but He. He put him to swear thrice and he swore.\footnote{4166}

\[4751\] ‘Ali said: Search for the man with crippled hand. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition. This version has: They took him out from beneath the slain in the dust. Abū al-Waḍl said: As if I am looking at an Abyssinian with a shirt on him. He had one of his hands like the nipple of the female breast, having hair on it like the hair on the tail of the jerboa.

\[4752\] Abū Maryam said: This man with the crippled hand was on that day with us in the mosque. We would sit with him by day and by night, and he was a poor man. I saw him attending the meals of ‘Ali (Allah be pleased with him) which he took with the people, and I clothed him with a cloak of mine.

Abū Maryam said: The man with the crippled hand was called Nāfi‘ Dhū al-Thadyah (Nāfi‘, man of nipple). He had in his hand something like a female breast with a nipple at its ends like the nipple of the female breast. It had some hair on it like the whiskers of the cat.

Abū Dāwūd said: He was known among the people by the name of Ḥarqūs.

\textit{Chapter 1708}

FIGHTING WITH THE THIEVES

\[4753\] ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If the property of anyone is designed to be taken away without any right and

4165. Ḥarūrā\textsuperscript{4165} is the name of the place where the Khawārij were earlier assembled. ‘Ali sent ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Abbās to have talks with them some of them submitted to him and others not, and they moved to Nahrawān.

4166. This he did to confirm the statement of ‘Ali, so that the people might be fully convinced of the prediction of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) that had come true.
he fights and is killed, he is a martyr.\textsuperscript{4167}

(4754) Sa‘īd b. Zaid reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who is killed while protecting his property is a martyr, and he who is killed while defending his family, or his blood, or his religion is a martyr.

\textsuperscript{4167} The man who is killed while protecting his property will be a martyr because he wards off the oppression of an oppressor. He is killed as an oppressed. Therefore he will be a martyr. But his rank will be lower than a martyr who is killed in jihād.
XXXVI. KITAB AL-ADAB
[BOOK OF GENERAL BEHAVIOUR]

Chapter 1709

TOLERANCE AND THE CHARACTER OF THE PROPHET
(MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM)

(4755) Anas said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was one of the best of men in character. One day he sent me to do something, and I said: I swear by Allah that I will not go. But in my heart I felt that I should go to do what the Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) had commanded me; so I went out and came upon some boys who were playing in the street. All of a sudden the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who had come up behind caught me by the back of the neck, and when I looked at him he was laughing. He said: Go where I ordered you, little Anas. I replied: Yes, I am going, Apostle of Allah! Anas said: I swear by Allah, I served him for seven or nine years, and he never said to me about a thing which I had done: Why did you do such and such? nor about a thing which I left: Why did you not do such and such?

(47:6) Anas said: I served the Prophet (may peace be upon him) at Medina for ten years. I was a boy. Every work that I did was not according to the desire of my master, but he never said to me: Fie, nor did he say to me: Why did you do this? or Why did you not do this?

(4757) Abü Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to sit with us in meetings and talk to us. When he got up we also used to get up and see him entering the house of any of his wives. One day he talked to us and we stood up as he stood up and we saw that an A'rābl (a nomadic Arab) caught upon him and gave his cloak a violent tug making his neck red. Abü Hurairah said: The cloak was

---

4168. The transmitter is doubtful. Muslim has in his version nine years. This is correct. Some versions have ten years. That means nine years and some months. The months have been omitted in the version of nine years.

4169. This shows how much tolerance and sublime character the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had.
coarse. He turned to him and the A'rab said to him: Load these two camels of mine, for you do not give me from your property or from your father's property. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to him: No, I ask Allah's forgiveness; no, I ask Allah's forgiveness; no, I ask Allah's forgiveness. I will not give you the camel-load until you give me retaliation, for your tug by which you pulled me. Each time the A'rab said to him: I swear by Allah, I will not give it to you. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition. He (the Prophet) then called a man and said to him: Load these two camels of him: one camel with barley and on the other with dates. He then turned to us and said: Go on with the blessing of Allah.

**Chapter 1710**

**DIGNIFIED BEARING**

(4758) 'Abd Allah b. 'Abbās reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Good way, dignified good bearing and moderation are the twenty-fifth part of Prophecy.4170

**Chapter 1711**

**ON A MAN WHO SUPPRESSSES HIS ANGER**

(4759) Sahl b. Mu'ādh reported on the authority of his father that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If anyone suppresses anger when he is in a position to give vent to it, Allah, the Exalted, will call him on the Day of Resurrection over the heads of all creatures, and ask him to choose any of the bright and large-eyed maidens he wishes.4171

Abū Dāwūd said: The name of the transmitter Abū Marhūn is 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Maimūn.

(4760) Suwaid b. Wahb quoted a son of a Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) who said his father reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He then mentioned a similar tradition described above. This version has: Allah will fill his heart with security and faith. He did not mention the words "Allah

4170. It means that these qualities were endowed by Allah on the Prophets. It is an exhortation to adopt these qualities that are characteristics of Prophecy.

4171. This tradition indicates the merit of restraining one's anger when one has complete power to express it. Self-control at the time of anger brings much reward to the man in the next world.
will call him". This version further adds: He who gives up wearing beautiful garments when he is able to do so (out of humility, as Bishr's version has) will be clothed by Allah with the robe of honour, and he who marries for Allah's sake will be crowned by Allah with the crown of Kingdom.

(4761) 'Abd Allah (b. Mas'ūd) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Whom do you consider a wrestler among you? The people replied: (The man) whom the men cannot defeat in wrestling. He said: No, it is he who controls himself when he is angry.

Chapter 1712

WHAT SHOULD BE SAID AT THE TIME OF ANGER?

(4762) Mu‘ādh b. Jabal said: Two men reviled each other in the presence of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and one of them became excessively angry so much so that I thought that his nose will break up on account of excess of anger. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: I know a phrase which, if he repeated, he could get rid of this angry feeling. They asked: What is it, Apostle of Allah? He replied: He should say: I seek refuge in Thee from the accursed devil. Mu‘ādh then began to ask him to do so, but he refused and persisted in quarrelling, and began to enhance his anger.4172

(4763) Sulaimān b. Šurad said: Two men reviled each other in the presence of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Then the eyes of one of them became red and his jugular veins swelled. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: I know a phrase by repeating which the man could get rid of the angry feelings: I seek refuge in Allah from the accursed devil. The man said: Do you see insanity in me.

(4764) Abū Dharr said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to us: When one of you becomes angry while standing, he should sit down. If the anger leaves him, well and good; otherwise he should lie down.4173

(4765) Bakr said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) sent Mu‘ādh for some of his work. He then transmitted the rest of the tradition mentioned above.

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition is sounder of the two traditions.

(4766) Abū Wā’il al-Qāṣṣ said: We entered upon ‘Urwah b. Muḥammad b. al-

4172. This tradition shows that when one becomes angry, one should seek refuge in Allah from the devil. One's anger will go away.

4173. This shows that if a man becomes angry, he should change his position. By this he will get rid of the anger.
Sa'dî. A man spoke to him and made him angry. So he stood and performed ablution; he then returned and performed ablution, and said: My father told me on the authority of my grandfather ‘Abîyyah who reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Anger comes from the devil, the devil was created of fire, and fire is extinguished only with water; so when one of you becomes angry, he should perform ablution.

Chapter 1713

FORGIVENESS

(4767) 'Ā'ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was never given his choice between two things without taking the easier (or lesser) of them provided it involved no sin, for if it did, no one kept farther away from it than he. And the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) never took revenge on his own behalf for anything unless something Allah had forbidden has been transgressed, in which event he took revenge for it for Allah's sake.4174

(4768) 'Ā'ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) never struck a servant or a woman.

(4769) Explaining the Qur'anic verse “Hold to forgiveness,”4175 'Abd Allah b. al-Zubair said: The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) was commanded to hold to forgiveness from the conduct of the people.

Chapter 1714

GOOD LIVING WITH THE PEOPLE

(4770) 'Ā'ishah said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was informed of anything of a certain man, he would not say: What is the matter with so and so that he says? But he would say: What is the matter with the people that they say such and such?4176

(4771) Anas said: A man who had the mark of yellowness on him came to the

4174. This shows that one should forgive others and should not take revenge as much as possible.
4176. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not want that a man is ashamed of his evil deed. Hence he did not mention his name. He would instead talk in general and point out how people should behave.
Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) rarely mentioned anything of a man which he disliked before him. When he went out, he said: Would that you asked him to wash it from him.

Abū Dāwūd said: Salam is not ‘Alawl (from the descendants of ‘All). He used to foretell events by stars. He bore witness before ‘Adī b. Arṭāt to the visibility of moon, but he did not accept his witness.

(4772) Abū Salamah and Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The believer is simple and generous, but the profligate is deceitful and ignoble.

(4373) ‘Ā’ishah said: A man asked permission to see the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and he said: He is a bad son of the tribe, or: He is a bad member of the tribe. He then said: Give him permission. Then when he entered, he spoke to him leniently. ‘Ā’ishah asked: Apostle of Allah! you spoke to him leniently while you said about him what you said! He replied: The one who will have the worst position in Allah’s estimation on the Day of Resurrection will be the one whom people left alone for fear of his ribaldry.4177

(4774) ‘Ā’ishah said: A man asked permission to see the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: He is a bad member of the tribe. When he entered, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) treated in a frank and friendly way and spoke to him. When he departed, I said: Apostle of Allah! when he asked permission, you said: He is a bad member of the tribe, but when he entered, you treated him in a frank and friendly way. The Apostle of Allah replied: ‘Ā’ishah! Allah does not like the one who is unseemly and lewd in his language.

(4775) The tradition mentioned above has been transmitted by ‘Ā’ishah through a different chain of narrators. This version has: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: ‘Ā’ishah! there are some bad people who are respected for fear of their tongues.4178

(4776) Anas said: I never saw that when any man brought his mouth to the ear of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and he withdrew his head until the man himself withdrew his head, and I never saw that when any man took him by his hand and he withdrew his hand, until the man himself withdrew his hand.

4177. The suggestion is that people should behave gently to each other, and avoid slandering, reviling and abusing.

4178. It means that some people use lewd and abusive language. So people respect them for fear of their abusive language. In fact, they respect them only to prevent themselves from the harm of their tongue.
Chapter 1715

MODESTY

(4777) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) passed by a man of the Ansār when he was giving his brother a warning against modesty. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Leave him alone, for modesty is a part of faith.4179

(4778) Abū Qatādah said: We were sitting with Ḥimrān b. Ḥuṣain and Bushair b. Ka‘b was also there. Ḥimrān b. Ḥuṣain reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Modesty is good altogether, or he said: Modesty is altogether good.4180 Bushair b. Ka‘b said: We find in some books that there is a modesty which produces peace and dignified bearing, and there is a modesty which produces weakness. Ḥimrān b. Ḥuṣain repeated the same words. So Ḥimrān became angry so much so that his eyes became red, and he said: Don’t you see that I am transmitting a tradition from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and you are mentioning something from your books? He (Qatādah) said: We said: Abū Nujaid, 4181 it is sufficient.4182

(4779) Abū Mas‘ūd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: One of the things people have learnt from the words of the earliest prophecy is: If you have no shame, do what you like.

Chapter 1716

GOOD CHARACTER

(4780) ‘Ā’ishah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: By his good character a believer will attain the degree of one who prays during the night and fasts during the day.4183

4179. The man was asking him to lessen modesty, and that he should not be afraid to push himself forward. But this warning was not liked by the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He told him that modesty was not an evil quality, but it was a part of faith.

4180. The narrator is doubtful.

4181. Surname of Ḥimrān b. Ḥuṣain.

4182. Modesty sometimes produces weakness from attaining a virtue, but that is a bad quality. Here the Prophet (may peace be upon him) means the modesty which prevents man from doing evil deeds. Such a kind of modesty is altogether good. Ḥimrān became angry at Bushair because he was opposing the tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). It is not tolerable to oppose the tradition of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

4183. This tradition indicates the significance of good character in Islam.
(4781) Abū al-Dardāʾ reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is nothing heavier than good character put in the scale of a believer on the Day of Resurrection.

Abū al-Walīd said: I heard ‘Aṭāʾ al-Khaṭṭārī say: Abū Dāwūd said: His name is ‘Aṭāʾ b. Ya’qūb. He is the maternal uncle of Ibrāhīm b. Nāfi’. He is called Kaḥṭānī or Kūkhārānī.

(4782) Abū Umāmah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I guarantee a house in the surroundings of Paradise for a man who avoids quarrelling even if he were in the right, a house in the middle of Paradise for a man who avoids lying even if he were joking, and a house in the upper part of Paradise for a man who made his character good.

(4783) Ḥārīthah b. Wahb reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Neither the Jaʿārī nor the Jaʿāžī will enter Paradise. He said that the Jaʿāzī is the one who is coarse and uncivil.

Chapter 1717
DISAPPROVAL OF BOASTING IN THE MATTERS

(4784) Anas said: The she-camel of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) called al-‘Aḏbāʾ had not been outstripped by another, but an Aʿrābī (a nomadic Arab) came on a young riding camel of his and it outstripped it. That distressed the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), but he said: It is Allah’s right that nothing should become exalted in the world but He lowers it. 4185

(4785) Narrating this story Anas reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is Allah’s right that nothing should become exalted in the world but He lowers it.

Chapter 1718
DISAPPROVAL OF PRAISING MUTUALLY

(4786) Hammām said: A man came and praised ‘Uthmān in his face, Al-Miqdād b. al-Aswād took dust and threw it on his face, saying: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: When you see those who are given to praising people, throw

4184. Jaʿārī is the one who is coarse, proud and self-conceited.
4185. Since the Companions became proud of the speed of the she-camel, Allah did not like this pride and boasting. Hence she was outstripped by another camel.
Ch. 1719  
Gentleness

(4787) Abū Bakrah said that when a man praised another man in his face in the presence of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he said: You have beheaded your friend (saying it three times). He then said: One who cannot help expressing praise of his Companion, should say: I consider him such and such (as he intends to say), but I do not declare him pure with Allah.

(4788) Muṭarrif said quoting his father (‘Abd Allah b. al-Shikhkhīr): I went with a deputation of Banū ‘Amir to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and we said: You are our lord (sayyid). To this he replied: The lord is Allah, the Blessed and Exalted. Then we said: And the one of us most endowed with excellence and superiority. To this he replied: Say what you have to say, or part of what you have to say, and do not let the devil make you his agents.4187

Chapter 1719
GENTLENESS

(4789) ‘Abd Allah b. Mughaffal reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah is gentle, likes gentleness, and gives for gentleness what He does not give for harshness.4188

(4790) Al-Miqdām b. Shuraib, quoting his father, said: I asked ‘Ā’ishah about living in the desert. She said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to go to the desert to these rivulets. Once he intended to go to the desert and he sent to me a she-camel from the camel of qadaqah which had not been used for riding so far. He said to me: ‘Ā’ishah! show gentleness, for if gentleness is found in anything, it beautifies it, and when it is taken out from anything it damages it.

Ibn al-Ṣabbāḥ said in his version: Muṭarraramah means a mount which has not been used for riding.

(4791) Jarīr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who is deprived of gentleness is deprived of good.

4186. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) disapproved of the praise which is meant for earning worldly benefits or to please a man by mentioning those qualities which are not found in him. He also disapproved of the praise of a man in his face. However, if a man praises another man in his face for exhorting others, it is permissible.

4187. Meaning that you should not say things which are not allowable. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) meant to say that the people should not exaggerate in his praise so that it may exceed the limit.

4188 In this tradition the Prophet (may peace be upon him) has taught Muslims how to behave with other Muslims. They should show gentleness in their behaviour and avoid harshness.
(4792) Sa‘d reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is hesitation in everything except in the actions of the next world.

Chapter 1720

THANKING FOR AN ACT OF KINDNESS

(4793) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who does not thank Allah does not thank people.4189

(4794) Anas said: The Immigrants (Muhājirūn) said: Apostle of Allah! the Helpers (Anfār) got the entire reward. He said: No, so long as you pray to Allah for them and praise them.4190

(4795) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If someone is given something, he should give a return for it provided he can afford; if he cannot afford, he should praise him. He who praises him for it, thanks him, and he who conceals it is ungrateful to him.

Abū Dāwūd said: It has been transmitted by Yahyā b. Ayyūb, from ‘Umarah b. Ghaziyyah, from Sharaḥbīl on the authority of Jābir.

Abū Dāwūd said: In the chain of this tradition ‘Umarah b. Ghaziyyah said: A man from my tribe said. The man referred to by him is in Sharaḥbīl. It is likely that they disliked him and, therefore, they did not name him.

(4796) Jābir reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If someone is donated something, and he mentions it, he thanks for it, and if he conceals it, he is ungrateful for it.

Chapter 1721

SITTING IN THE ROADS

(4797) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Avoid sitting in the roads. The people said: Apostle of Allah! we must have meeting places in which to converse. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If you insist on meeting, give the road its due. They asked: What is

4189. This shows that it is necessary to thank people so that one may thank Allah too.

4190. When Muslims immigrated to Medina, the Muslims of Medina, called the Anfār, helped for their resettlement there. The immigrants felt that they obtained all the reward for helping them. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) told them that they too would be rewarded if they prayed for them and be thankful to them.
the due of roads, Apostle of Allah? He replied: Lowering the eyes, removing anything offensive, returning salutations, commanding what is reputable and forbidding what is disreputable.\textsuperscript{4191}

(4798) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying on the same occasion: And guiding the people on their way.

(4799) 'Umar b. a-Khaṭṭāb quoted the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying on the same occasion: Help the oppressed (sorrowful) and guide those who have lost their way.

(4800) Anas said: A woman came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah, I have some need with you. He said to her: Mother of so and so, sit in the corner of any street you wish and I shall sit with you. So she sat and the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) also sat with her till she fulfilled her need.

The narrator Ibn 'Isā did not mention “till she fulfilled her need.” And Kathîr said: from Ḥumaid on the authority of Anas.

(4801) Anas reported this tradition to the same effect through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: A woman who had something (feebleness) in her mind.\textsuperscript{4192}

\textbf{Chapter 1722}

**SPACIOUSNESS IN MEETINGS**

(4802) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khadrî said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The best places to sit are those which provide most room.\textsuperscript{4193}


\textsuperscript{4191} This tradition indicates that Muslims should avoid sitting in the roads except when it is necessary to do so. While sitting in the road one should give its due as mentioned in this tradition.

\textsuperscript{4192} Meaning that the woman was feeble-minded. Her mental condition was not sound.

\textsuperscript{4193} The Prophet (may peace be upon him) taught etiquette of sitting in meetings. Meetings should be held in spacious places so that people are not harmed by narrow places.
Chapter 1723

SITTING PARTLY IN SHADE AND PARTLY IN SUN

(4803) Abū Hurairah reported Abū al-Qāsim\(^{4194}\) (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you is in the sun (shams)—Makhlad’s version has “fal”—and the shadow withdraws from him so that he is partly in sun and partly in shade, he should get up.\(^{4195}\)

(4804) Qais quoted his father as saying that he (his father) came when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was addressing. He stood in the sun. He ordered him (to shift) and he shifted to the shade.

Chapter 1724

SITTING IN A CIRCLE

(4805) Jābir b. Samurah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) entered the mosque, and saw them (his Companions) in separate groups. He said: How is it that I see you in separate groups?\(^{4196}\)

(4806) Al-A‘mash said: It seems he liked collective gathering.

(4807) Jābir b. Samurah said: When we came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), each one would sit down where there was room.

Chapter 1725

SITTING IN THE MIDDLE OF A CIRCLE

(4808) Hūdhaifah said that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) cursed the one who sat in the middle of a circle.\(^{4197}\)

4194. Surname of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

4195. Another version gives the reason for this prohibition: “for that is how the devil sits” It is also medically harmful for health to move from a cold place to a hot place vice versa.

4196. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like that people should sit in small groups here and there. He liked that they should sit together in one circle.

4197. The suggestion is that a man should not force his way when people are seated, or should not keep people from seeing others. One should be seated with others and not in the middle.
Chapter 1726

ON A MAN WHO GETS UP FROM HIS PLACE FOR ANOTHER

(4809) Sa‘īd b. Abl al-Ḥasan said: When Abū Bakrah came to us to give some evidence, a man got up from his place, but he refused to sit in it saying: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade this, and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade anyone to wipe his hand on the garment of anyone whose clothing he had not himself provided.4199

(4810) Ibn ‘Umar said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), another man got up from his place for him, and when he went to sit in it, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade him.4200

Abū Dāwūd said: The name of Abū al-Khūṣayb is Ziyād b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān.

Chapter 1727

THE MAN WITH WHOM ONE SHOULD KEEP COMPANY

(4811) Anas reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: A believer who recites the Qur‘ān is like a citron whose fragrance is sweet and whose taste is sweet, a believer who does not recite the Qur‘ān is like a date which has no fragrance but has sweet taste, a profligate who recites the Qur‘ān is like basil whose fragrance is sweet but whose taste is bitter, and the profligate who does not recite the Qur‘ān is like the colocynth which has a bitter taste and has no fragrance. A good companion is like a man who has musk; if nothing of it goes to you, its fragrance will (certainly) go to you; and a bad companion is like a man who has bellows; if its (black) root does not go to you, its smoke will (certainly) go to you.4201

4198. It means that one should not sit in the place if a man gets up for some work. However, if a man gives his own place agreeably to another man, he may sit in it. It is permissible.

4199. The suggestion is that a man should not use the garments of another man without his permission. If he himself provides it for use, or gives permission, it is then permissible to use it.

4200. This tradition indicates that if a man gets up in a meeting from his place, others should not occupy his place. A tradition reported by Abū Hurairah goes: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: If anyone gets up from where he has been sitting and comes back, he has most right to it (Muslim transmitted it). Another tradition says: A man must not make another get up from his place and then occupy it himself, but you should spread out and make room (Bukhārī and Muslim).

4201. This tradition indicates that one should make a good man his companion.
(4812) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Mūsā from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators up to “and its taste bitter”. Ibn Mu‘ādh added: Anas said: We used talk to one another that a good companion is like. . . . He then transmitted the rest of the tradition.

(4813) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Anas b. Mālik from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators in a similar way.

(4814) Abū Sa‘īd reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Associate only with a believer, and let only a God-fearing man eat your meals.

(4815) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A man follows the religion of his friend; so each one should consider whom he makes his friend.\textsuperscript{4202}

(4816) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The spirits are in marshalled hosts; those who know one another will be friendly, and those who do not, will keep a part.\textsuperscript{4203}

\textit{Chapter 1728}

\textbf{DISAPPROVAL OF DISPUTING}

(4817) Abū Mūsā reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Gladden people and do not scare them; make things easy and do not make them difficult.\textsuperscript{4204}

(4818) Al-Sa‘īb said: I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The people began to praise me and make a mention of me. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: I know you, that is, he knew him. I said: My father and mother be sacrificed for you! you were my partner and how good a partner; you neither dis-

\textsuperscript{4202} According to some scholars, this tradition is weak. Some think it is a \textit{muraṣal} tradition, and this opinion is preferable.

\textsuperscript{4203} This refers to the creation of man before his coming to this world. Those who had like nature and temperament became familiar with each other in this world, and those who were not like-minded remained separate.

\textsuperscript{4204} The Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave these instructions to those Companions whom he sent on a mission for preaching Islam, or to those whom he appointed governors of a province. By this he meant that, while preaching, one should avoid frightening the people of the punishment in the next world. One should rather tell the people about the mercy of Allah, His blessings, His reward in Paradise for doing good deeds. Similarly, one should present Islamic injunctions to them in an easy manner so that they may practise them.
Chapter 1729

THE MANNER OF SPEECH

(4819) Yūsuf b. ʿAbd Allah b. Ṣalām quoted his father as saying: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sat talking (to the people), he would often raise his eyes to the sky.4206

(4820) Jābir b. ʿAbd Allah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) spoke in a distinct and leisurely manner.4207

(4821) ʿĀʾishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) spoke in a distinct manner so that anyone who listened to him could understand it.

(4822) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Every important matter which is not begun by an expression of praise to Allah is maimed.4208

Abū Dāwūd said: It has also been transmitted by Yūnus, ʿAqīl, Shuʿaib, Saʿīd b. ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz from al-Zuhrī from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in *mursal* form (the link of the Companion is missing).

Chapter 1730

ADDRESS

(4823) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Every sermon which does not contain a *tashakkud*4209 is like a hand cut off.4210

4205. This shows how fairly the Prophet (may peace be upon him) dealt with the people on his traditions.
4206. By doing so he might be waiting for the revelation.
4207. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to speak slowly and spaced out his words so that the people could follow him and remember his words.
4208. This shows that all important works should be begun in the name of Allah or with the raise of Allah. It means that the work not commenced with the praise of Allah is devoid of lessing.
4209. *Tashakkud* means to say: “I testify that there is no god but Allah, and Muḥammad is Allah’s Prophet.”
4210. This tradition indicates that Muslims should first recite *tashakkud* in their sermons and beeches.
Chapter 1731

TREATMENT OF PEOPLE ACCORDING TO THEIR RANKS

(4824) Maimūn b. Abī Shābīb said: A beggar passed by 'Ā'ishah and gave him a piece of bread. Another man who wore clothes and had good appearance passed by her, and she made her seated and he ate (with her). When she was asked about that, she replied: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Treat the people according to their ranks.4211

Abū Dāwūd said: The version of Yahyā is short.

Abū Dāwūd said: Maimūn did not see 'Ā'ishah.

(4825) Abū Mūsā al-Ash'ārī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Glorifying Allah involves showing honour to a grey-haired Muslim and to one who can expound the Qur'ān, but not to one who acts extravagantly regarding it, or turns away from it, and showing honour to a just ruler.4212

Chapter 1732

ON A MAN WHO SITS BETWEEN TWO MEN WITHOUT THEIR PERMISSION

(4826) 'Amr b. Shu'āib, on his father's authority, said that his grandfather reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: One should not sit between two men except with their permission.

(4827) 'Amr b. Shu'āib, on his father's authority, said that 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is not lawful for a man to separate two persons except with their permission.4214

Chapter 1733

HOW SHOULD A MAN SIT?

(4828) Abū Sa'īd al-Khudrī said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: One should not sit between two men except with their permission.4211. This shows that all people should not be treated equally. They should be treated according to their ranks.

4212. It means that one should be moderate in the interpretation of the Qur'ān, and avoid discovering its hidden and allegorical meaning.

4213. To show honour to these three persons amounts to showing honour to Allah.

4214. It means that if two persons are sitting together, a third man should not interfere and force his place between them without their permission. One should first ask for their permission and then sit with them.
him) sat, he had his knees drawn up supported by his hands.

Abū Dāwūd said: 'Abd Allah b. Ibrāhīm was an old man and his traditions were rejected.

(4829) Qailah, daughter of Makhrumah, said that she saw the Prophet (may peace be upon him) sitting with his arms round his legs. She said: 'When I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) in such humble condition in the sitting position (according to Mūsā's version), I trembled with fear.4215

Chapter 1734
DISAPPROVED MANNER OF SITTING

(4830) ‘Amr b. al-Sharīḍ quoted his father al-Sharīḍ b. Suwaid as saying: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came upon me when I was sitting thus: having my left hand behind my back and leaning on the fleshy part of it, and said: Are you sitting in the manner of those with whom Allah is angry?

Chapter 1735
PROHIBITION OF TALKING AFTER NIGHT PRAYER

(4831) Abū Barzah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade sleeping before the night prayer and talking after it.4216

Chapter 1736
ON A MAN WHO SITS CROSS-LEGGED

(4832) Jābir b. Samurah said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prayed the dawn prayer, he sat cross-legged where he was till the sun had come well up.4217

4215. This shows that a man should sit in a humble way. He should not show pride and conceit by the manner of his sitting. Although the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was sitting humbly, Qailah trembled with fear by the dignified bearing of his Prophecy.

4216 The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade sleeping before night prayer so that one might not leave it, and talking after night prayer so that one might say dawn prayer in time.

4217. This shows that sitting cross-legged is permissible.
Chapter 1737

WHISPERING

(4833) ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Two persons should not talk privately ignoring the third, for that will grieve him.

(4834) A similar tradition has been transmitted by Ibn ‘Umar through a different chain of narrators. This version has: Abū Ṣāliḥ said: I asked Ibn ‘Umar: If they are four? He replied: Then it does not harm you.4218

Chapter 1738

IF A MAN GETS UP FROM HIS PLACE AND THEN RETURNS, HE IS ENTITLED TO HIS PLACE

(4835) Abū Ṣāliḥ said: I was sitting with my father and there was also a boy with him. He got up and then returned. So my father mentioned a tradition on the authority of Abū Hurairah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) saying: If anyone gets up from where he has been sitting and comes back to it, he has most right to it.

(4836) Ka‘b al-Ayyādī said: I used to visit Abū al-Dardā’. Abū al-Dardā’ said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would sit and we would also sit around him. If he got up intending to return, he would take off his sandals or something he was wearing, and his Companions recognising his purpose (that he would return) would stay where they were.

Chapter 1739

IT IS DISAPPROVED THAT A MAN GETS UP FROM THE MEETING AND DOES NOT REMEMBER ALLAH

(4837) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: People who get up from an assembly in which they did not remember Allah will be just as if they had got up from an ass’s corpse, and it will be a cause of grief

4218. The other man is not alone. They are two. He will not, therefore, be grieved.
Chapter 1740

ATONEMENT OF AN ASSEMBLY

(4839) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. al-‘Āṣ said: There are some expressions which a man utters three times when he gets up from an assembly he will be forgiven for what happened in the assembly; and no one utters them in an assembly held for a noble cause or for remembrance of Allah but that is stamped with them just as a document is stamped with a signet-ring. These expressions are: Glory be to Thee, C Allah, and I begin with praise of Thee, there is no god but Thou; I ask Thy pardon, and return to Thee in repentance.

(4840) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Abū Hurairah from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators.

(4841) Abū Barzat al-Aslaml said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) intended to get up from the assembly he used to say in the last: Glory be to Thee, O Allah, and I begin with praise of Thee, I testify that there is no god but Thou; I ask Thy pardon, and return to Thee in repentance. The man asked: Apostle of Allah! you utter the words now which you did not do in the past? He replied: (This is an) atonement for what takes place in the assembly.

Chapter 1741

COMPLAINT AGAINST SOMEONE IN THE ASSEMBLY

(4842) ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ūd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: None of my Companions must tell me anything about anyone, for I

4219. This tradition indicates that people should remember Allah when they assemble at some place for any work. When they get up from it, they should recite a prayer as prescribed by the Prophet (may peace be upon him) mentioned in the next chapter.

4220. This supplication should be uttered before leaving the assembly. By uttering this prayer, the people will be forgiven for what took place in that assembly.

4221. It means either “at the end of the assembly” or “towards the end of his life”
like to come out to you with no ill-feelings.\textsuperscript{4222}

\textbf{Chapter 1742}

\textbf{TO BE CAREFUL OF THE PEOPLE}

\textsuperscript{4843} ‘\textit{Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. al-Faghwā’ al-Khuza‘ī} quoted his father as saying: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) called me. He intended to send me with some goods to Abū Sufyān for distributing them among the Quraish at Mecca after the Conquest. He said: Search for a companion. Then ‘Amr b. Umayyat al-Ḍamrī came to me and said: I have been told that you are intending to make a journey and seeking a companion. I said: Yes. He said: I am your companion. I then went to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: I have found a companion. He asked: Who is he? I replied: ‘Amr b. Umayyat al-Ḍamrī. He said: When you come down to the territory of his people, be careful of him, for a maxim goes: If one is your real brother, do not feel safe from him. So we proceeded, and when I reached al-Abwā’,\textsuperscript{4223} he said to me: I have some work with my people at Waddān,\textsuperscript{4224} so stay here till I come back. I said: Go without losing your way. When he turned his back, I recalled the words of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). So I rode on my camel and went on galloping it. When I reached al-Asfār,\textsuperscript{4225} he was pursuing me with a group of men. Then I galloped it and excelled him. When he saw me that I had outstripped him, they returned and he came to me. He said to me: I had some work with my people. I said: Yes. We then went on, until we reached Mecca, and I gave the goods to Abū Sufyān.\textsuperscript{4226}

\textsuperscript{4844} Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying:

\begin{itemize}
\item A believer is not stung twice from the same hole.\textsuperscript{4227}
\end{itemize}

\textsuperscript{4222} The Prophet (may peace be upon him) loved all his Companions. If someone complained against any Companion, he might have ill-feeling for him. But he wished that when he died, he should be free from ill-feelings against his Companions.

\textsuperscript{4223} Al-Abwā’. The name of a mountain between Mecca and Medina.

\textsuperscript{4224} Waddān. A village not far from al-Abwā’ near al-Juḥfah.

\textsuperscript{4225} Al-Asfār. pl. of Asfār. Mountain passes through which the Prophet (may peace be upon him) went to Badr.

\textsuperscript{4226} This tradition shows that one should beware of one’s friends and relatives, for no one knows when one’s mind changes. One should not trust anyone, especially when one carries goods or money.

\textsuperscript{4227} It means that if a believer is deceived by someone, he should beware of him so that he may not be deceived again.
Chapter 1743

ON THE WALKING OF A MAN

(4845) Anas said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) walked, it looked as if he bent forwards.

(4846) Sa‘Id al-Jarir quoted Abū al-Ｔufail as saying: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). I asked: How did you see him? He said: He was white, good-looking, and when he walked, it looked as if he was descending to a low ground.4228

Chapter 1744

PLACING ONE LEG OVER THE OTHER WHILE LYING ON THE BACK

(4847) Jābir said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade that a man should lie placing (and according to Qutaibah’s version: “should raise”) one of his legs over the other. Qutaibah’s version adds: When he was lying on his back.4229

(4848) ‘Abbād b. Tamīm quoted his paternal uncle as saying that he had seen the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) lying on his back in the mosque according to Qa‘nābī’s version) placing one foot over the other.4230

(4849) Sa‘Id b. al-Musayyab said: ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb and ‘Uthmān b. ‘Affān used to do that.

Chapter 1745

PUBLISHING SECRETS AND TALKS OF OTHERS

(4850) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a man tells something and then departs, it is a trust.4231

(4851) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Meetings are confidential except three: those for the purpose of

4228. When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) walked, he bent forwards. As he used to walk rapidly, it looked as if he was descending to a low place.

4229. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to raise one leg over the other lest the private part should be disclosed. It is permissible if there is no such fear.

4230. This shows that if there is no fear that the private part will be unveiled, it is permissible to place one leg over the other when one lies on the back.

4231. It means that the thing should be treated as confidential.
shedding blood unlawfully, or committing fornication, or acquiring property unjustly.

(4852) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The most serious breach of trust in Allah’s sight is that a man who has intercourse with his wife, and she with him, spreads her secret.4232

Chapter 1746

ON A MISCHIEF-MAKER

(4853) Ḥudhaifah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: A mischief-maker will not enter Paradise.4233

Chapter 1747

A TWO-FACED MAN

(4854) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The worst of the people is a man who is double-faced: he presents one face to some and another to others.4234

(4855) ‘Ammār reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who is two-faced in this world will have two tongues of fire on the Day of Resurrection.

Chapter 1748

BACK-BITING

(4856) Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked: Apostle of Allah! what is back-biting? He replied: It is saying something about your brother which he would dislike. He was asked again: Tell me how the

4232. This tradition shows that a husband should not talk about his intercourse with his wife to others, nor should he tell people about defects or beauties he has found in her.

4233. It means that a man should not talk to the people about the secrets of others in order to make a mischief. If a man hears something from another man, that is a trust with him. He should not disclose it to the people. It is a great sin to tell the people about the secrets of others.

4234. It means that such a man is the worst type of liars and hypocrites. A man who pleases all people by his lying and hypocrisy has been condemned by the Prophet (may peace be upon him). A two-faced man does not care for truth and right, but tells every group of people what they like, whether it is right or wrong. This he does to show that he is one of them.
matter stands if what I say about my brother is true? He replied: If what you say of him is true, you have slandered him, and if what you say of him is not true, you have reviled him.4235

(4857) 'A'ishah said: I said to the Prophet (may peace be upon him): It is enough for you in Saflyyah that she is such and such (the other version than Musaddad's has :) meaning that she was short-statured. He replied: You have said a word which would change the sea if it were mixed in it. She said: I imitated a man before him (out of disgrace). He said: I do not like that I imitate anyone even if I should get such and such.4236

(4858) Sa'id b. Zaid reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The most prevalent kind of usury is going to lengths in talking unjustly against a Muslim's honour.4237

(4859) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The gravest sin is going to lengths in talking unjustly against a Muslim's honour, and it is a major sin to abuse twice for abusing once.4238

(4860) Anas b. Malik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When I was taken up to heaven I passed by people who had nails of copper and were scratching their faces and their breasts. I said: Who are these people, Gabriel? He replied: They are those who were given to back-biting and who aspered people's honour.

Abu Dāwūd said: Yahyā b. Uthmān has also transmitted it from Baqī'yyah; there is no mention of Anas in it.4240

(4861) This tradition has also been transmitted by 'Isa b. Abī 'Isā al-Sa'īlī from Abū al-MughIrāh, as Ibn al-Muṣaffā said.4241

(4862) Abu BarZat al-Aslāmī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: O community of people, who believed by their tongue, and belief

4235. Back-bitting is a major sin. When a man slanders another man in his absence, it is back-bitting. If any man wants to say about another man, true or false, he should say it to him or to others in his presence. If that is not true about him, it is reviling which is more serious than back-bitting.

4236. It is a major sin to speak about the faults of others before the people or to imitate them out of disgrace.

4237. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) educated the people to respect each other and avoid disgracing them.

4238. It is a sin to abuse even once. But it is a grave sin to abuse twice if one has abused once.

4239. Literally, eating people's flesh.

4240. This is a mursal tradition.

4241. This tradition has perfect chain.
did not enter their hearts, do not back-bite Muslims, and do not search for their faults, for if anyone searches for their faults, Allah will search for his fault, and if Allah searches for the fault of anyone, He disgraces him in his house.

(4863) Al-Mustawrid reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone eats once at the cost of a Muslim’s honour, Allah will give him a like amount of Jahannam to eat; if anyone clothes himself with a garment at the cost of a Muslim’s honour, Allah will clothe him with a like amount of Jahannam; and if anyone puts himself in a position of reputation and show Allah will disgrace him with a place of reputation and show on the Day of Resurrection.

(4864) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Everything of a Muslim is sacred to a Muslim: his property, honour and blood. It is enough evil for any man to despise his brother Muslim.

Chapter 1749

ON A MAN WHO GUARDS A MUSLIM FROM SLANDERING

(4865) Mu‘adh b. Anas reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone guards a believer from a hypocrite, Allah will send an angel who will guard his flesh on the Day of Resurrection from the fire of Jahannam; but if anyone attacks a Muslim saying something by which he wishes to disgrace him, he will be restrained by Allah on the bridge over Jahannam till he is acquitted of what he said.

(4866) Jābir b. ‘Abd Allah and Abū Ṭalḥah b. Sahl al-Anṣārī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: No (Muslim) man will desert a man who is a Muslim in a place where his respect may be violated and his honour aspered without Allah deserting him in a place where he wishes his help; and no (Muslim) man who will help a Muslim in a place where his honour may be aspered and his respect violated without Allah helping him in a place where he wishes his help.

Yaḥyā said: ‘Ubayd Allah b. ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar and ‘Uqbah b. Shaddād transmitted it to me.

Abū Dāwūd said: This Yaḥyā b. Sulaim is the son of Zaid, the freed slave of

4242. The pronoun is singular (i.e. his tongue and his heart).
4243. This shows that Muslims should conceal faults of others. If they search for them and disclose them, Allah will reveal their faults even if they do not reveal them. That will be disgrace to them.
4244. This shows that disgracing a Muslim is a grave sin and guarding him from slander is a virtue.
Chapter 1750

THE MAN WHOSE SLANDER IS NOT TAKEN INTO CONSIDERATION

(4867) Jundub said: A desert Arab came and, making his camel kneel and tethering it, entered the mosque and prayed behind the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) had given the salutation, he went to his riding beast and, after untethering and riding it, he called out: O Allah, show mercy to me and to Muhammad and associate no one else in Thy mercy to us. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: Do you think that he or his camel is farther astray? Did you not listen to what he said? They replied: Certainly.

Chapter 1751

IF A MAN SLANDERS ANOTHER MAN, HE MAKES IT LAWFUL FOR HIM

(4868) Qatadah said: Is one of you helpless to be like Abū Daigham or Daḍam (Ibn 'Ubaid is doubtful) who would say when morning came: O Allah, I gave my honour as alms to Thy servants?

(4869) 'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Ajlān reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Is one of you unable to be like Abū Daḍam? The people asked: Who is Abū Daḍam? He replied: A man of old before you. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect. This version has: Who would say (in

4245. This is a literal translation of the Arabic word "adallu". By this the Prophet (may peace be upon him) probably meant that he was ignorant. He named him so because he narrowed down the mercy of Allah.

4246. The bedouin deserved what the Prophet (may peace be upon him) had said about him. By saying it he aimed at teaching the people that they should not narrow the mercy of Allah. They should pray for all.

4247. Abū Daḍam was a man in the past communities. He sacrificed his honour for the people, meaning that he would not claim if anyone slandered him. Qatadah means that a man can forgive his brother beforehand every day by praying to Allah that if anyone slanders him, he forgives him. Thus the man who slanders him will not be sinful.
the morning): My honour is for the one who reviles me.\footnote{4248}

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has also been transmitted by Hāshim b. al-Qāsim from Muhammad b. ‘Abd Allah al-‘Amml from Thabit on the authority of Anas from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the same effect.

Abū Dāwūd said: The tradition of Ḥammād (i.e. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān’s version) is sounder.

\textit{Chapter 1752}

\textbf{SEARCHING FOR THE FAULTS OF THE PEOPLE}

(4870) Mu‘āwiyyah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If you search for the faults of the people, you will corrupt them, or will nearly corrupt them.\footnote{4249} Abū al-Dardā’ said: These are the words which Mu‘āwiyyah himself heard from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and Allah benefited him by them.

(4871) Jubair b. Nufair, Kathlr b. Murrah, ‘Amr b. al-Aswad, Miqdām b. Ma‘dilkarib, and Abū Umāmah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a ruler seeks to make imputations against the people, he corrupts them.\footnote{4250}

(4872) Zaid b. Wahb said: A man was brought to Ibn Mas‘ūd. He was told: This is so and so, and wine was dropping from his beard. ‘Abd Allah thereupon said: We have been prohibited to seek out (faults). If anything becomes manifest to us, we shall seize it.

\textit{Chapter 1753}

\textbf{CONCEALING THE FAULTS OF A MUSLIM}

(4873) ‘Uqbah b. ‘Āmir reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who sees something which should be kept hidden and conceals it will be like

\footnote{4248. By saying these words the man who reviles this man will not be sinful, for he has already forgiven him.}
\footnote{4249. It means that if people do wrongs secretly, one should not seek them out and then reveal them to the people. If their faults are disclosed, they might be shameless and do these wrongs openly.}
\footnote{4250. This is a prohibition of delving into other people’s affairs and disclosing things which should not be disclosed. When their faults are disclosed, they become more corrupt and perform wrong acts openly. The rulers have been prohibited to seek out the faults of the people.}
one who has brought to life a girl buried alive.4251

(4874) Abū al-Haitham quoted Dukhain, the scribe of ‘Uqbah b. Āmir, saying: We had some neighbours who used to drink wine. I prohibited them, but they did not stop. I then said to ‘Uqbah b. Āmir: These neighbours of ours drink wine, and I prevented them but they did not stop, and I am going to call the police for them. He said: Leave them. I again came to ‘Uqbah b. Āmir and said: Our neighbours have refused to refrain from drinking wine, and I am going to call the police for them. He said: Woe to thee! Leave them alone; I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say. He then mentioned the tradition to the same effect as recorded above on the authority of the narrator Muslim.

Abū Dāwūd said: In this version Hāshim b. al-Qāsim said on the authority of Laith: Do not do it, but preach them and threaten them.

Chapter 1754

BROtherHOOD

(4875) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A Muslim is a Muslim’s brother: he does not wrong him or abandon him. If anyone cares for his brother’s need, Allah will care for his need; if anyone removes a Muslim’s anxiety, Allah will remove from him, on account of it, one of the anxieties of the Day of Resurrection; and if anyone conceals a Muslim’s fault, Allah will conceal his fault on the Day of Resurrection.4252

(4876) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When two men abuse one another, what they say is laid to the charge of the one who began it, so long as the one who is wronged does not go over the score.4253

Chapter 1755

Humbleness

(4877) ‘Iyāḍ b. Ḥimār (al-Mujāshi’l) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah has revealed to me that you must be humble, so that

4251. It means that if a Muslim sees the fault of a Muslim, he should conceal it. He will be rewarded for it by Allah.
4252. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) aimed at building up a society in which its members lived like brothers. He thought of an ideal Muslim society free from all kinds of evils.
4253. It means that the man who begins abusing will be responsible for the abusing of both. But if the man who is wronged exceeds the limits, he will also be responsible for his transgression.
no one oppresses another and boasts over another.\textsuperscript{4254}

\textit{Chapter 1756}

\textbf{TAKING REVENGE}

(4878) Sa`Id b. al-Musayyab said: While the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was sitting and there were some Companions with him, a man reviled Abū Bakr and pained him. But Abū Bakr kept silence. He pained him twice, but Abū Bakr restrained from him. He pained him thrice and Abū Bakr took revenge on him. Then the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) got up when Abū Bakr took revenge. Abū Bakr said: Did you become angry with me, Apostle of Allah? The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) replied: An angel came down from the heaven and he was rejecting what he had said to you. When you took revenge, a devil came down. I was not going to sit when the devil came down.\textsuperscript{4255}

(4879) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Hurairah through a different chain of narrators. This version has: A man was reviling Abū Bakr. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition in a similar manner.

Abū Dāwūd said: Similarly, it has been transmitted by Ṣafwān b. ʿIsā, from Ibn ʿAflān, as Sufyān said.

(4880) Ibn ʿAwn said: I asked about the meaning of intīṣār (revenge) in the Qur’ānic verse: “But indeed if any do help and defend (intāṣara) after a wrong (done) to them, against such there is no cause of blame.”\textsuperscript{4256} Then ʿAlī b. Zaid b. Jadān told me on the authority of Umm Muḥammad, the wife of his father. Ibn ʿAwn said: It was believed that she used to go to the Mother of the Faithful (i.e. ʿĀʾishah). She said: The Mother of the Faithful said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came upon me while Zainab daughter of Jaḥsh\textsuperscript{4257} was with us. He began to do something with her hand.\textsuperscript{4258} I signalled to him until I made him understand about her. So he stopped. Zainab came on and began to abuse ʿĀʾishah. She prevented her, but she did not stop. So he (the Prophet) said to ʿĀʾishah: Abuse her. Then she

\textsuperscript{4254}. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) educated Muslims to show humbleness to one another, and avoid boasting and oppressing.

\textsuperscript{4255}. This is a ṣaḥīḥ tradition, as the link of the Companion is missing. But it has been transmitted through a different chain on the authority of Abū Hurairah.

\textsuperscript{4256}. Qur’ān, xlii. 41

\textsuperscript{4257}. The wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

\textsuperscript{4258}. Probably touching her with his hand, or something similar,
abused her and dominated her. Zainab then went to ‘Ali and said: ‘A‘ishah abused you and did (such and such).^39 Then Fātimah came (to the Prophet) and he said to her: She is favourite of your father, by the Lord of the Ka‘bah! She then returned and said to them: I said to him such and such, and he said to me such and such. Then ‘Ali came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and spoke to him about that.^40

Chapter 1757

PROHIBITION OF ABUSING THE DEAD

(4881) ‘A‘ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When your companion dies, leave him and do not revile him.^41

(4882) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Make a mention of the virtues of your dead, and refrain from (mentioning) their evils.

Chapter 1758

PROHIBITION OF OPPRESSION AND PRIDE

(4883) Abū Hurairah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: There were two men among Banū Isrā‘îl who were striving for the same goal. One of them would commit sin and the other would exert his best in the world. The man who exerted in worship continued to see the other in sin. He would say: Refrain from it. One day he found him in sin and said to him: Refrain from it. He said: Leave me alone and my Lord. Have you been sent as a watchman on me? He said: I swear by Allah, Allah will not forgive you, nor will He admit you to Paradise. Then their souls were taken back (by Allah), and they met together with the Lord of the worlds. He

4259. Since Zainab belonged to Banū Hāshim, she complained to ‘Ali.

4260. This tradition is not reliable. The traditions narrated by ‘Ali b. Zaid b. Jādān are not authentic. Besides, Umm Ja‘ān is unknown.

Rationally speaking, it is unthinkable that the wives of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) could abuse each other, and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) himself would ask ‘A‘ishah to abuse (God forbid).

4261. Reviling the dead is more serious than reviling the people who are alive, for there is no chance to beg pardon of a person who has died. Moreover, the man who dies may have the punishment for his evil deeds. It is, therefore, useless to abuse him. It may be that Allah forgives his sins, and the people do not know. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to abuse the dead.
(Allah) said to this man who had striven hard in worship. Had you knowledge about Me or had you power over that which I had in My hand? He said to the man who sinned: Go and enter Paradise by My mercy. He said about the other: Take him to Hell. Abū Hurairah said: By Him in Whose hand my soul is, he spoke a word by which this world and the next world of his were destroyed.⁴²⁶²

(4884) Abū Bakrah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There is no sin more fitted to have punishment meted out by Allah to its perpetrator in advance in this world along with what He stores up for him in the next world than oppression and severing ties of relationship.⁴²⁶³

Chapter 1759

ENVY

(4885) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Avoid envy, for envy devours good deeds just as fire devours fuel or (he said) "grass."⁴²⁶⁴

(4886) Sahl b. Abī Umāmah said that he and his father (Abū Umāmah) entered upon Anas b. Mālik at Medina during the time (regime) of 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz when he (Anas b. Mālik) was the governor of Medina. He was praying very light prayer as if it was the prayer of a traveller or near it.⁴²⁶⁵ When he saluted, my father said: May Allah have mercy on you! Tell me about this prayer: is it obligatory or supererogatory? He said: It is obligatory; it is the prayer performed by the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). I did not make a mistake except in one thing that I forgot. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to say: Do not impose austerities on yourselves and so austerities would be imposed on you, for people have imposed austerities on themselves and Allah imposed austerities on them.⁴²⁶⁶

4262. This shows that one should not be proud of one's worship and piety. Man will go to Paradise by the mercy of Allah.

4263. Allah will punish a man for all sins in the next world, but He may punish the man for these two sins in this world. Oppression, pride, self-conceit and severing ties of relationship are sins which are much serious in the sight of Allah. Hence one should avoid these sins.

4264. This tradition indicates that envy is such a bad quality that it destroys even other good deeds. Envy (ṣassad) has been defined as a desire for the loss of a blessing of another man and desire for having it for oneself.

4265. Anas might be the leader in prayer. Hence he was praying lightly according to the traditions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

4266. This shows that people should adopt moderation in their worship and should not go to extremes, such as continuous fasting, vigilance all the night and seclusion from wife and children.
survivors are to be found in cells and monasteries. (Then he quoted:) "Monasticism, they invented it; we did not prescribe it for them."4267 Next day he went in the morning and said: Would you not ride and go, so that you may see and take lesson? He said: Yes. Then all of them rode and reached a land whose inhabitants had perished, passed away and died. The town had fallen down upon its roofs. He asked: Do you know this land? I said: Who acquainted me with it and its inhabitants? (Anas said:) This is the land of the people whom oppression and envy destroyed. Envy extinguishes the light of good deeds, and oppression confirms or falsifies it. The eye commits fornication, and hand-palm, foot, body, tongue and private part of the body confirm it or falsify it.

Chapter 1760

CURSING

(4887) Abū al-Dardā' reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a man curses anything, the curse goes up to heaven and the gates of heaven are locked against it. Then it comes down to the earth and its gates are locked against it. Then it goes right and left, and if it finds no place of entrance it returns to the thing which was cursed, and if it deserves what was said (it enters it), otherwise it returns to the one who uttered it.4268

Abū Dāwūd said: Marwān b. Muḥammad said: He is Rabāḥ b. al-Walīd who heard from him (Nimrān). He (Marwān b. Muḥammad) said: Yaḥyā b. Ḥassān was confused in it.4269

(4888) Samurah b. Jundub reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not invoke Allah's curse, Allah's anger, or Hell.

(4889) Abū al-Dardā' said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Men given to cursing will not be witnesses or intercessors.4270

4267. Qurʾān, lvii. 27.
4268. This shows that one should avoid cursing others. Cursing is not a good habit. A man who curses is sometimes himself harmed.
4269. In the chain of this tradition Yaḥyā b. Ḥassān mentioned the name of the narrator al-Walīd b. Rabāḥ. But Marwān says that he was confused in the name. His correct name is Rabāḥ b. al-Walīd who heard traditions from Nimrān.
4270. Muslim’s version has: ‘on the Day of Resurrection’.

Witnessing has been explained in three ways: testifying to the preaching of the Prophets on the Day of Resurrection; according to the version of Abū Dāwūd which has no mention of the Day of
(4890) Ibn ‘Abbās said: A man cursed the wind. The narrator Muslim’s version has: The wind snatched away a man’s cloak during the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and he cursed it. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do not curse it, for it is under command, and if anyone curses a thing undeservedly, the curse returns upon him.4271

Chapter 1761
CURSING THE ONE WHO OPPRESSES

(4891) ‘Ā’ishah said that something of her was stolen, and she began to curse him (i.e. the thief). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to her: Do not lessen his sin.4272

Chapter 1762
ON A MAN WHO KEEPS APART FROM HIS MUSLIM BROTHER

(4892) Anas b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not hate each other; do not envy each other; do not desert each other; and be the servants of Allah as brethren. It is not allowable for a Muslim to keep apart from his brother for more than three days.4273

(4893) Abū Ayyūb al-Anṣārī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is not allowable for a Muslim to keep apart from his brother for more than three days. When they meet, this turns away from him, and that turns away from him. The better of the two is the one who initiates in salutation.

(4894) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is not allowable for a believer to keep apart from a believer for more than three days. If three days pass, he should meet him and give him a salutation, and if he

Resurrection: his testimony will not be accepted due to his sinfulness; or he will not be a martyr (‘Awn al-Ma’bud, IV, 430).

4271. This tradition shows that one should avoid cursing even the inanimate objects; otherwise the curse will return upon him.

4272. This shows that it is better to have patience on theft or similar other harm than to curse. The more a man curses the thief, the more his punishment in the next world will be diminished. Therefore, one should avoid cursing the oppressor.

4273. It is a sin to keep apart from a Muslim brother for more than three days. If a man disputes with another man, he should conciliate with him after three days. One who salutes first will be rewarded and the other will share it if he replies him. Similarly, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to hate, to envy or to desert a Muslim brother.
replies to it they will both have shared in the reward; but if he does not reply he will bear his sin (according to Aḥmad’s version) and the one who gives the salutation will have come forth from the sin of keeping apart. 4274

(4895) ‘Ā’ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is not right for a Muslim to keep apart from another Muslim for more than three days. Then when he meets him and gives three salutations, receiving during that time no response, the other bears his sin.

(4896) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is not allowable for a Muslim to keep apart from his brother for more than three days, for one who does so and dies will enter Hell. 4275

(4897) Abū Khīrāsh al-Sulaml4276 said that he heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If one keeps apart from his brother for a year, it is like shedding his blood. 4277

(4898) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The gates of Paradise are opened on Mondays and Thursdays, and forgiveness is granted to every man who does not associate anything with Allah, except for a man between whom and his brother there is rancour. Command will be given that they should be given respite till they conciliate.

Abū Dāwūd said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) kept apart from some of his wives for forty days, and Ibn ‘Umar kept apart from his son till he died. 4278

Abū Dāwūd said: If keeping apart is meant for the sake of Allah, then it has no concern with it. ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz covered his face from a man.

4274. It is unlawful to keep apart from a Muslim brother for more than three days in case one disputes. But it is allowed to keep apart from a Muslim for the right of Allah. For instance, if the children do not obey Allah, and disregard the parents’ instructions, they can keep apart from them for some time as an admonition. Similarly, a husband can keep apart from his wife for some time if she disobeys Allah, and does not care for his instructions.

4275. This is a sort of threat for keeping apart from a Muslim. It also shows the gravity of this sin.

4276. This version mentions al-Sulaml. But what is correct is al-Aslami. It is said that his name was Ḥadrad b. Abī Ḥadrad.

4277. It is also a sort of threat. It might mean that the punishment for this offence is the same as for murder, or it is an exaggeration to emphasise the seriousness of offence.

4278. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) kept apart from his wives as they demanded provision and worldly comforts. He did not want that his wives should have been interested in the comforts of this world. Abū Dāwūd quoted these instances to show that keeping apart for the sake of Allah does not fall under the category of prohibition. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to keep apart from a Muslim if there is a quarrel between two Muslims. But one is allowed to keep apart from a Muslim for Allah’s sake.
Chapter 1763

SUSPICION

(4899) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Avoid suspicion, for suspicion is the most lying form of talk. Do not be inquisitive about one another, or spy on one another.

Chapter 1764

SINCERITY AND PROTECTION

(4900) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The believer is the believer’s mirror, and the believer is the believer’s brother who guards him against loss and protects him when he is absent.\(^{4279}\)

Chapter 1765

PUTTING THINGS RIGHT BETWEEN PEOPLE

(4901) Abū al-Dardā’ reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Shall I not inform you of something more excellent in degree than fasting, prayer and almsgiving (ṣadaqah)? The people replied: Yes, Prophet of Allah! He said: It is putting things right between people, spoiling them is the shaver (destructive).\(^{4280}\)

(4902) Ḥumaid b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān quoted his mother as saying: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: He who forged in order to put things right between two persons did not lie. The version by Aḥmad b. Muḥammad and Musaddad has: The liar is not the one who puts things right between people, saying what is good and

\(^{4279}\) The version by al-Tirmidhī has the additional words: “so if he sees any fault in him, he should wipe it away from him”. A Muslim sees his own faults in another Muslim, as a man sees himself in the mirror. So he should wipe out the faults of himself and of his brother.

\(^{4280}\) It means that if there is dissension and disagreement among a group of Muslims, the other Muslims should remove it and try for their conciliation. Putting things right among the people is a great virtue. But if their mutual relations are spoiled, and no effort is made to improve the condition, it will be destructive for them. The discord among them will be as destructive as a razor removes the hair.
increasing good.4281

(4903) Umm Kulthūm, daughter of ‘Uqbah, said: I did not hear the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) giving licence for anything people say falsely except in three matters. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would say: I do not count liar a man who puts things right between people, saying a word by which he intends only putting things right, and a man who says something in war, and a man who says something to his wife and the wife says something to his husband.4282

Chapter 1766

SINGING

(4904) Al-Ruhayyi, daughter of Mu‘awwidh b. ‘Afra’, said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came and visited me in the morning when I had been conducted to my husband, and sat on my bedding as you are sitting beside me. Some little girls of ours began to play the tambourine and eulogise those of my ancestors who were killed in the battle of Badr, and then one of them said: And among us is a Prophet who knows what will happen tomorrow. He said: Stop this and say what you were saying.4283

(4905) Anas said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to Medina, the Abyssinians played for his coming out of joy; they played with spears.4284

4281. Muslim’s version has: She had not heard him, i.e. the Prophet (may peace be upon him) giving licence for anything people say falsely except in three matters: war, putting things right between people, and what a man says to his wife and a wife says to her husband. It means that if a man tells a lie, or speaks something falsely with the intention of reconciliation between two persons who are not on good terms, it will not be counted as lie or falsehood. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed to lie in war, conciliation and pleasing one’s wife or husband.

4282. This tradition indicates that speaking falsely or forging something to improve relations between two persons and lying in war, and mutual talk of husband and wife are not counted as lie which is a grave sin.

4283. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) allowed to play the tambourine and to sing songs in praise of the ancestors who were killed in battle. But he prohibited to exaggerate in his own praise. The shows that singing and playing tambourine on the occasion of marriage ceremony are allowed.

4284. This shows that singing, playing and simple amusement without music and musical instruments are allowed. Dancing, singing and music of modern times, especially by women, are prohibited.
Chapter 1767
DISAPPROVAL OF SINGING AND BLOWING PIPE

(4906) Nāfi‘ said: Ibn ‘Umar heard a pipe, put his fingers in his ears and went away from the road. He said to me: Are you hearing anything? I said: No. He said: He then took his fingers out of his ears and said: I was with the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and he heard like this and he did like this.

Abū ‘All al-Lū‘lū’ said: I heard Abū Dāwūd say: This is a rejected tradition.4283

(4907) Nāfi‘ said: I was sitting behind Ibn ‘Umar on the mount when he passed a shepherd who was blowing a pipe. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition in a similar manner.

Abū Dāwūd said: Between Muḥ‘im and Nāfi‘ the name of a narrator Sulaimān b. Ṭuḥā has been inserted.

(4908) Nāfi‘ said: When we were with Ibn ‘Umar, he heard the sound of a man who was blowing a pipe. He then mentioned a similar tradition.

Abū Dāwūd said: This is more rejected.

(4909) Salām b. Miskīn, quoting an old man who witnessed Abū Wā’il in a wedding feast, said: They began to play, amuse and sing. He untied the support of his hand round his knees that were drawn up, and said: I heard ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ūd) say: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Singing produces hypocrisy in the heart.

Chapter 1768
RULES ABOUT HERMAPHRODITES (MUKHANNATHUN)

(4910) Abū Hurairah said: A hermaphrodite (mukhannath) who had dyed his hands and feet with henna was brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He asked: What is the matter with this man? He was told: Apostle of Allah! he affects women’s get-up. So he ordered regarding him and he was banished to al-Naqī‘. The people said: Apostle of Allah! should we not kill him? He said: I have been prohibited from killing people-who pray.4286

4283. This shows that hearing music is not permissible.

4286. Mukhannath They were sexually abnormal men who imitated women. They were effeminate or hermaphrodites. They dressed like women and used to sing. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not kill the mukhannath because he prayed.
Abū Usāmah said: Naql‘ is a region near Medina and not at Baql‘.

(4911) Umm Salamah said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) came upon her when there was with her a hermaphrodite (mukhannath) who said to her brother ‘Abd Allah (b. Abī Umayyah): If Allah conquers al-Ṭā‘if for you tomorrow, I shall lead you to a woman who has four folds of fat in front and eight behind. Thereupon the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Put them out of your houses.4287

Abū Dāwūd said: The woman had four folds of fat on her belly.

(4912) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) cursed the hermaphrodites (mukhannathan) among men and women who imitated men, saying: Put them out of your houses, and put so and so out, that is to say, the hermaphrodites.

Chapter 1769

PLAYING WITH DOLLS

(4913) ‘A‘ishah said: I used to play with dolls. Sometimes the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) entered upon me when the girls were with me. When he came in, they went out, and when he went out, they came in.4288

(4914) ‘A‘ishah told that when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) arrived after the expedition to Tabūk or Khaibar (the narrator is doubtful), the wind raised an end of a curtain which was placed before her store-room, revealing some dolls which belonged to her. He asked: What is this? She replied: My dolls. Among them he saw a horse with wings made of rags, and asked: What is this I am seeing among them? She replied: A horse. He asked: What is this that it has on it? She replied: Two wings. He asked: A horse with two wings! She replied: Have you not heard that Solomon had horses with wings? She said: Thereupon the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) laughed so heartily that I could see his molar teeth.

4287. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) earlier allowed them to visit the houses of his wives. But when he knew that they were acquainted with the affairs of women and were interested in their beauty, he ordered to put them out.

4288. This tradition shows that playing with dolls by children is permissible. The dolls used as toys for children are not prohibited. They do not fall under the category of pictures of animate objects that are prohibited. But these dolls should be meant only for children.
Chapter 1770
SWING

(4915) ‘A’ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) married me when I was seven or six. When we came to Medina, some women came. According to Bishr’s version: Umm Rūmān came to me when I was swinging. They took me, made me prepared and decorated me. I was then brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and he took up cohabitation with me when I was nine. She halted me at the door, and I burst into laughter.

Abū Dāwūd said: That is to say: I menstruated, and I was brought in a house, and there were some women of the Anṣārī (Helpers) in it. They said: With good luck and blessing. The tradition of one of them has been included in the other.

(5916) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Usāmah in a similar manner through a different chain of narrators. This version has: “With good fortune.” She (Umm Rūmān) entrusted me to them. They washed my head and redressed me. No one came to me suddenly except the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) in the forenoon. So they entrusted me to him.

(4917) ‘A’ishah said: When we came to Medina, the women came to me when I was playing on the swing, and my hair were up to my ears. They brought me, prepared me, and decorated me. Then they brought me to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and he took up cohabitation with me, when I was nine.

(4918) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Hishām b. ‘Urwah through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: I was swinging, and I had my friends. They brought me to a house; there were some women of the Anṣār (Helpers). They said: With good luck and blessing.

(4919) ‘A’ishah said: We came to Medina and stayed with Banū al-Ḫārīth b. al-Khazraj. She said: I swear by Allah, I was swinging between two date-palms. Then my mother came, and made me come down; and I had my hair up to the ears. The transmitter then mentioned the rest of the tradition.

Chapter 1771
PROHIBITION OF PLAYING BACKGAMMON

(4920) Abū Mūsā al-Ŝaḥ‘arī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon
him) : He who plays backgammon disobeys Allah and His Apostle.\textsuperscript{4292}

(4921) Buraidah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone plays backgammon, he sinks his hand in the flesh of swine and its blood.\textsuperscript{4293}

\textbf{Chapter 1772}

\textbf{PLAYING WITH PIGEONS}

(4922) Abū Hurairah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) saw a man pursuing a pigeon. He said: A devil is pursuing a female devil.\textsuperscript{4294}

\textbf{Chapter 1773}

\textbf{MERCY}

(4923) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The Compassionate One has mercy on those who are merciful. If you show mercy to those who are on the earth, He Who is in the heaven will show mercy to you.

Musaddad did not say: The client of ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr. He said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said.

(4924) Abū Hurairah said: I heard Abū al-Qāsim (may peace be upon him)\textsuperscript{4295} who spoke the truth and whose word was verified say: Mercy is taken away only from him who is miserable.\textsuperscript{4296}

(4925) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Those who do not show mercy to our youngs and do not realise the right of our elders are not from us.

\textbf{Chapter 1774}

\textbf{SINCERE CONDUCT}

(4926) Tamīm al-Dārī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying:

\textsuperscript{4292} This tradition shows that playing backgammon is forbidden. Any play or game which makes a man unmindful of the duties to Allah and His remembrance is forbidden. This view is held by all the jurists.

\textsuperscript{4293} This is a simile to emphasise the prohibition of playing backgammon.

\textsuperscript{4294} Playing with pigeons is disapproved, for a man becomes unmindful of the remembrance of Allah.

\textsuperscript{4295} I.e. the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Abū al-Qāsim is his ḥāyāḥ (surname).

\textsuperscript{4296} It may refer to the infidel or to the profligate.
saying: Religion consists in sincere conduct; religion consists in sincere conduct; religion consists in sincere conduct. The people asked: To whom should it be directed, Apostle of Allah? He replied: To Allah, His Book, His Apostle, the leaders (public authorities) of the believers and all the believers, and the leaders (public authorities) of Muslims and the Muslims in general.4297

(4927) Jarir said: I swore allegiance to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) promising to hear and obey, and behave sincerely towards every Muslim. Abū Zur‘ah said: Whenever he sold and bought anything, he would say: What we took from you is dearer to us than what we gave you. So choose (as you like).

Chapter 1775
HELPING A MUSLIM

(4928) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone removes his brother’s anxiety of this world, Allah will remove for him one of the anxieties of the Day of Resurrection; if anyone makes easy for an impoverished man, Allah will make easy for him in this world and on the Day of Resurrection; if anyone conceals a Muslim’s secrets, Allah will conceal his secrets in this world and on the Day of Resurrection; Allah will remain in the aid of a servant so long as the servant remains in the aid of his brother.4298

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Uthmān did not transmit the following words from Abū Mu‘āwiyah: “If anyone makes easy for an impoverished man.”

(4929) ‘Udhaifah said: Your Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Every good act is a sadaqāh (almsgiving).4299

4297. Sincere conduct to Allah means belief in His unity and obedience to Him. Sincerity of conduct to the Book means belief in the Qur’ān and acting according to its teachings. Sincerity of conduct to the Apostle (may peace be upon him) means to believe in his prophethood and to obey him. Sincere conduct to the public authorities means to obey them in respect of those commands that are in conformity with the teachings of Islam. To the Muslims it means to teach them what is good and to forbid them what is evil.

4298. This shows that every Muslim should help his brother. For this help he will be rewarded by Allah.

4299. As a man is rewarded by Allah for giving alms (sadaqāh), he is rewarded for doing good and reputable acts (ma‘rūf).
Chapter 1776

CHANGE OF NAMES

(4930) Abū al-Dardā’ reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: On the Day of Resurrection you will be called by your names and by your fathers’ names, so give yourselves good names.

Abū Dāwūd said: (‘Abd Allah) b. Abī Zakaryyā did not see Abū al-Dardā’.

(4931) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Your names which are dearest to Allah are ‘Abd Allah and ‘Abd al-Rahmān.

(4932) Abū Wahb al-Jushamī, who was the Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), reported him as saying: Call yourselves by the names of the Prophets. The names dearest to Allah are ‘Abd Allah and ‘Abd al-Rahmān, the truest are Ḥārith 4300 and Hammām 4301, and the worst are Ḥarb 4302 and Murrah 4303.

(4933) Anas said: I took ‘Abd Allah b. Abī Talḥah, when he was born, to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was wearing a woollen cloak and rubbing tar on his camel. He asked: Have you some dates? I said: Yes. I then gave him some dates which he put in his mouth, chewed them, opened his mouth and put them in it. The baby began to lick them. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Anṣār’s favourite (fruit) is dates. And he gave him the name of ‘Abd al-Rahmān.

Chapter 1777

CHANGING THE BAD NAME

(4934) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) changed the name of ‘Āṣiyah 4304 and called her Jamīlah 4305.

(4935) Muḥammad b. ‘Amr b. ‘Aṭā’ said: Zainab daughter of Abū Salaman asked him: Which name did you give to your daughter? He replied: Barrah. 4306 She said:

4300. Meaning ploughman.
4302. Meaning war.
4304. This girl belonged to ‘Umar. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) changed her name, for ‘Āṣiyah means disobedient.
4305. Meaning beautiful.
4306. Meaning obedient.
The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade giving this name. I was called Barrah, but the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do not declare yourselves pure, for Allah knows best those of you who are obedient. He said: We asked: Which name should we give her? He replied: Call her Zainab.4307

(4936) Usamah b. Akhdari said: A man called Aṣram was among those who came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: What is your name? He replied: Aṣram. He said: No, you are Zur‘ah.4309

(4937) Shuraih b. Ḥanl quoted his father as saying that when he went with his people on a deputation to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) he heard them calling him by the kunyah (surname) Abū al-Ḥakam. So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) called him and said: Allah is the judge (al-Ḥakam), and to Him judgment belongs. Why are you given the kunyah Abū al-Ḥakam? He replied: When my people disagree about a matter, they come to me, and I decide between them, and both parties are satisfied with my decision.4310 He said: How good is this! What children have you? He replied: I have Shuraiḥ, Muslim and ‘Abd Allah. He asked: Who is the oldest of them? I replied: “Shuraiḥ. He said: Then you are Abū Shuraiḥ.

Abū Dāwūd said: This is Shuraiḥ who broke the chain, and who entered Tustar.4311

Abū Dāwūd said: I have been told that Shuraiḥ broke the gate of Tustar, and he entered it through a tunnel.

(4938) Sa‘īd b. al-Musayyab told that his father said on the authority of his grandfather (Ḥazn): The Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked: What is your name? He replied: Ḥazn (rugged). He said: You are Sahl (smooth). He said: No, smooth is trodden upon and disgraced. Sa‘īd said: I then thought that ruggedness would remain among us after it.

Abū Dāwūd said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) changed the names

4307. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) changed this name, for it indicated self-praise.
4308. Meaning harsh, severe, cut off.
4309. Meaning that which has been taken or derived from crop, or to sow seed. This shows that Muslims should give themselves good names. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) changed all such names as were bad.
4310. It is a common Arabic idiom to use Abū with names to show distinguishing characteristics. Since al-Ḥakam is one of the ninety-nine names of Allah, it was objectionable to call a person Abū al-Ḥakam. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) changed it.
4311. Tustar. The name of a city in Khuzistān in Central Asia. It was known for garments and turbans.
Changing the Bad Name

al-‘Āṣ, 'Azīz, 'Atalah, Shaiṭān, al-Ḥakam, Ghurāb, Hubāb, and Shihāb and called him Ḥisḥām. He changed the name Ḥarib (war) and called him Silm (peace). He changed the name al-Munba‘īth (one who lies) and called him al-Mudṭaji‘ (one who gets up). He changed the name of a land ‘Afrāḥ (barren) and called it Khádhrāḥ (green). He changed the name Shi‘b al-Ḍalālah (mountain path of stray), the name of a mountain path and called it Shi‘b al-Hudā (mountain path of guidance). He changed the name Banū al-Zīnyah (children of fornication) and called them Banū al-Rushdah (children of being on the right path), and changed the name Banū Mughwīyah (children of a woman who allures and goes astray), and called them Banū Rushdah (children of a woman who is on the right path).

Abū Dāwūd said: I omitted the chains of these for the sake of brevity.

(4939) Masrūq said: I met ʿUmar b. al-Khaṭṭāb (Allah be pleased with him) who said: Who are you? I replied: Masrūq b. al-Aḍa‘. ʿUmar then said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Al-Aḍa‘ (mutilated) is a devil.

(4940) Samurah b. Jundub reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not call your servant Yasār (wealth), Rabīḥ (profit), Nāfī (prosperous) and Aflāḥ (successful), for you may ask: Is he there? and someone says: ‘No.

(4941) Samurah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) forbade giving four names to our slaves: Aflāḥ (successful), Yasār (wealth), Nāfī (beneficial) and Rabīḥ (profit).

(4942) Jābir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If I survive (God willing), I shall forbid my people to give the names Nāfī (beneficial), Aflāḥ (successful) and Barakah (blessing). Al-A‘mash said: I do not know whether he mentioned Nāfī or not. When a man comes and asks: Is there Barakah (blessing)? The people say: No.

Abū Dāwūd said: A similar tradition has been transmitted by Abū al-Zubair on the authority of Jābir from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators. This version has no mention of Barakah.

(4943) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying:

4312. Meaning disobedient.
4313. Meaning mighty.
4314. Meaning rough.
4315. Meaning devil.
4316. Meaning judge.
4317. Meaning crow.
4318. The name of a devil. Also used of a serpent.
4319. Meaning a flame of fire.
4320. Meaning destroyer.
4321. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade calling by these names to avoid evil omen.
The vilest name in Allah's sight on the Day of Resurrection will be that of a man called Malik al-Amīlāk.4322

Abū Dāwūd said: This tradition has also been transmitted by Shu‘aib b. Abī Ḥamzah from Abī al-Zīnād through a different chain of narrators. This version has the words “akhna ismin” (most obscene name) instead of “akhna ismin” (the vilest name).

Chapter 1778

NICKNAMES

(4944) Abū Jubairah b. al-Ḍahhāk said: This verse was revealed about us, the Banū Salīmah: “Nor call each other by (offensive) nicknames: ill-seeming is a name connoting wickedness (to be used of one) after he has believed.”4323 He said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to us, every one of us had two or three names. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) began to say: O so and so! But they would say: Keep silence, Apostle of Allah! He becomes angry by this name. So this verse was revealed: “Nor call each other by (offensive) nicknames.”4324

Chapter 1779

ON GIVING THE KUNYAH (SURNAME) ABŪ ‘ĪSĀ

(4945) Zaid b. Aslam quoted his father as saying: ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb (Allah be pleased with him) struck one of his sons who was given the kunyah Abū ‘Īsā, and al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah had the kunyah Abū ‘Īsā. ‘Umar said to him: Is it not sufficient for you that you are called by the kunyah Abū ‘Abd Allah? He replied: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave me this kunyah. Thereupon he said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was forgiven all his sins, past and those followed. But we are among the people similar to us.4325 Henceforth he was called by

4322 Meaning King of Kings.
4323 Qur’ān, xlxi. 11.
4324 This Qur’ānic verse indicates that the Muslims should call each other by respectable names They should not call by nicknames which offend them.
4325 ‘Umar thought that giving the kunyah Abū ‘Īsā was a thing peculiar to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) That should not be followed by others. He contended that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was forgiven all his sins But they lived among the people who might be led astray by this kunyah They might believe that Jesus had a father In fact Jesus had no father Therefore it was better to avoid giving the kunyah Abū ‘Īsā (father of Jesus).
the *kunyah* Abū ‘Abd Allah until he died.\(^{4326}\)

**Chapter 1780**

**CALLING THE SON OF ANOTHER MAN “MY SONNY”**

(4946) Anas b. Mālik said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to him: My sonny. Abū Dāwūd said: I heard Yaḥyā b. Ma‘īn praising the transmitter Muḥammad b. ʿAbd Allāh, and he said: He transmitted a large number of traditions.

**Chapter 1781**

**ON A MAN WHO GIVES HIMSELF THE *KUNYAH* ABŪ AL-QĀSIM**

(4947) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Call yourselves by my name, but do not use my *kunyah* (surname).\(^{4327}\)

Abū Dāwūd said: Abū ʿAlī has transmitted it in a similar way from Abū Hurairah, and similar are the traditions of Abū Sufyān from Jābir, of Sālim b. Abl al-Ja‘d from Jābir, of Sulaimān al-Yashkurī from Jābir, and of Ibn al-Munkadir from Jābir and similar others and Anas b. Mālik.

**Chapter 1782**

**THE VIEW THAT BOTH THE NAME AND *KUNYAH* OF THE PROPHET (MAY PEACE BE UPON HIM) SHOULD NOT BE COMBINED IN GIVING NAMES**

(4948) Jābir reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone is called by my name, he must not be given my *kunyah* (surname), and if anyone...

\(^{4326}\) As the people were neo-Muslims in ‘Umar’s time, he forbade giving the *kunyah* Abū ‘Isā. But now there is no danger of straying from this belief. There is no harm in this *kunyah*.

\(^{4327}\) The *kunyah* (surname) of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) is Abū al-Qāsim. The Prophet may peace be upon him) allowed to call oneself by his (Prophet’s) name, i.e. Muḥammad, but forbade to call oneself by his *kunyah*, i.e. Abū al-Qāsim. This question is disputed amongst scholars.
Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn ‘Ajlān transmitted it to the same effect from his father on the authority of Abū Hurairah. It has also been transmitted by Abū Zur‘ah from Abū Hurairah in two different versions. And similar is the version of ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī ‘Amrah from Abū Hurairah. This version is disputed: Al-Thawrī and Ibn Juraij transmitted it according to the version of Abū al-Zubair; and Ma‘qil b. ‘Ubaid Allah transmitted it according to the version of Ibn Sirin. It is again disputed on Mūsā b. Yasār from Abū Hurairah, transmitting it in two versions: Ḥammād b. Khālid and Ibn Abī Fudāik varied in their versions.

Chapter 1783

PERMISSION FOR COMBINING BOTH HIS NAME AND THE KUNYAH

(4949) Muḥammad b. al-Ḥanafīyyah quoted ‘All as saying: I said: Apostle of Allah! tell me if a son is born to me after your death, may I give him your name and your kunyah? He replied: Yes. The transmitter Abū Bakr did not mention the words “I said”. Instead, he said: ‘All said to the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

(4950) ‘Ā’ishah said: A woman came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! I have given birth to a boy, and call him Muḥammad and Abū al-Qāsim as kunyah (surname), but I have been told that you disapproved of that. He replied: What is it which has made my name lawful and my kunyah unlawful, or what is it which has made my kunyah unlawful and my name aazB.

The question of using both the name and kunyah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) is disputed among scholars. Some are of opinion that using his name is allowed but not his kunyah. Others hold that combination of both the name and kunyah is not permissible. But both can be used separately. A third group thinks that the prohibition of using his name and kunyah was restricted to his lifetime. After his demise the use of his name Muḥammad, and his kunyah Abū al-Qāsim is allowed. A fourth view goes that the use of his kunyah Abū al-Qāsim was prohibited during his lifetime. Now there is no harm in using his name or his kunyah or both together.

4329 One version goes: Use my name but do not use my kunyah. The other version says: If anyone uses my name, he must not use my kunyah, and if anyone uses my kunyah, he must not use my name.

4330 The version which forbids the combination of his name and kunyah.

4331 The version which allows using his name but not his kunyah.

4332 It shows that both versions of this tradition, i.e. that which allows using his name and forbids using his kunyah, and the other which forbids the combination of his name and kunyah, but allow using both separately, have been transmitted by Abū Hurairah through a different chain of transmitters (‘Aww al-Ma‘būd, IV, 447-48).
Chapter 1784

ON A MAN WHO CALLS HIMSELF BY A KUNYAH BUT HE HAS NO CHILD

(4951) Anas b. Mālik said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to come to visit us. I had a younger brother who was called Abū 'Umair by kunyah (surname). He had a sparrow with which he played, but it died. So one day the Prophet (may peace be upon him) came to see him and saw him grieved. He asked: What is the matter with him? The people replied: His sparrow has died. He then said: Abū 'Umair! what has happened to the little sparrow?

Chapter 1785

ON GIVING THE KUNYAH TO A WOMAN

(4952) 'Ā'ishah said: Apostle of Allah! all my fellow-wives have kunyahs? He said: Give yourself the kunyah by 'Abd Allah, your son—that is to say, her nephew (her sister's son). Musaddad said: 'Abd Allah b. al-Zubair. She was called by the kunyah Umm 'Abd Allah.

Abū Dāwūd said: Qurrān b. Tammām and Ma'mar all have transmitted it from Hishām in a similar manner. It has also been transmitted by Abū Usāmah from Hishām, from 'Abbād b. Ḥamzah. Similarly, Ḥammād b. Salamah and Maslamah b. Qa'nāb have narrated it from Hishām, like the tradition transmitted by Abū Usāmah.

4333. The transmitter is not sure about the exact wording. This tradition indicates that using both his name and kunyah is allowed.

4334. Nughair. This bird is said to have been like a sparrow and to have had a red beak.

4335. This tradition indicates that one can give oneself a kunyah even one has no child. 'Umar was himself a boy. He had no child. But his kunyah was Abū 'Umar.

4336. This tradition has two chains: Ḥanāfī b. Zaid, Qurān b. Tammām and Ma'mar. All the three have transmitted it from Hishām b. 'Urwa on the authority of his father, from 'Ā'ishah. The other chain is: Abū Usāmah, Ḥammād b. Salamah and Maslamah b. Qa'nāb. They have transmitted it from Hishām b. 'Urwa on the authority of 'Abbād b. Ḥamzah, from 'Ā'ishah.
Chapter 1786

ALLUSIONS

(4953) Sufyān b. ʿAbd al-Ḥaḍrami said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: It is great treachery that you should tell your brother something and have him believe you when you are lying.4338

Chapter 1787

USING THE PHRASE “THEY ALLEGED,” OR “IT IS ALLEGED” BY A MAN

(4954) Abū Masʿūd asked Abū ʿAbd Allah,4339 or Abū ʿAbd Allah asked Abū Masʿūd:4340 What did you hear the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say about zaʿāmā (they alleged, asserted, or it is said).4341 He replied: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: It is a bad riding-beast for a man (to say) zaʿāmā (they asserted).4342

Abū Dāwūd said: This Abū ʿAbd Allah is Hudhaifah.

4337. Maʿṣūḏ (sing. miʿṣūṯ): words having double meaning, double entendre. It means to use a word whose obvious meaning is not meant by the speaker. By speaking such a word he makes the other man believe that he means it, but actually he does not mean so. But he is lying.

4338. In ordinary circumstances it is not allowed to deceive a Muslim by speaking words of double meanings which a man does not actually mean. But if there is some expediency which is permissible by the Shariʿah, it is allowed to use such words. For instance, if one’s life is at stake, one may save oneself by speaking in this way.

4339. This generally refers to Hudhaifah b. al-Yaman.

4340. The transmitter is doubtful about the man who exactly asked.

4341. This word is commonly used when a man is not certain about the information which he is giving to the other.

4342. It means that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) condemned giving information about a thing of which a man is himself not sure. He supplies this information to others on the basis of people’s allegations and hearsay. One should first get a report confirmed, and then transmit it to others. Al-Khaṭṭābi said: When a man intends to go to a city, he mounts a riding-beast. He goes on travelling on it until he reaches there. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) likened such catch-words which a man uses before his speech, and by means of such words he fulfils his need, by saying; people alleged such and such, or it is asserted so and so, etc. The Arabs use the word zaʿāmā when one is not confident about the information being passed on (ʿAwn al-Maʿṣūd, IV, 449-50).
Chapter 1788

USING THE PHRASE “TO PROCEED” (AMMA BA’D) BY A MAN IN HIS ADDRESS

(4955) Zaid b. Arqam said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) addressed them, saying: To proceed (ammā ba’d).

Chapter 1789

ON CALLING THE GRAPES KARM, AND SAFEGUARDING THE TONGUE

(4956) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: None of you should call (grapes) karm, for the karm is a Muslim man, but call (grapes) gardens of grapes (ḥaddiq al-a’nab).

Chapter 1790

A SLAVE SHOULD NOT SAY TO HIS MASTER AND MISTRESS “MY LORD”

(4957) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: None of you must say “My slave” (‘abdī) and “My slave-woman” (amātī), and a slave must not say: “My lord” (rabbī or rabbatī). The master (of a slave) should

4343. Amma ba’d. This phrase is used in Arabic speech after the praise of Allah and blessing on the Prophet (may peace be upon him). When a speaker begins the main theme of his speech, he begins with this phrase. This phrase is found in many of the speeches of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Therefore, following the Sumah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) speakers should use this phrase in the beginning of their speeches.

4344. Karm means grape-vine. The Arabs called grape-vine karm, for wine is made from it. They thought that wine creates honour, noble character, kindness and generosity in man. When wine was prohibited in Islam, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade to call the grape-vine karm which means honour and noble character, so that people might not recall wine by this name. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said that wine is not karm (noble character) but a Muslim is a karm. The Qur’ān says: “The most honoured among you in Allah’s sight is the most God-fearing among you” (xlix. 13). As karm suggests the idea of honour, it is not an appropriate word to use for the grape-vine.

4345. The objection to this word is that rabb (Lord) is used peculiarly for Allah in Islam. It cannot be used for a man. The people are Allah’s slaves or servants. Therefore, one should not say ‘abd (slave) to his slave, but ghulām (servant) or fātim (young man).
say: "My young man" (Fatāyū) and "My young woman" (Fatā‘ī), and a slave should say "My master" (Sayyīdī) and "My mistress" (Sayyīdātī), for you are all (Allah’s) slaves and the Lord is Allah, Most High.

(4958) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Hurairah through a different chain of narrators. This version does not mention the Prophet (may peace be upon him), i.e. it does not go back to him. It has: He must say: "My master" (Sayyīdī) and "My patron" (Mawlaya).

(4959) ‘Abd Allah b. Buraidah quoted his father as saying: Do not call a hypocrite Sayyid (master), for if he is a Sayyid, you will displease your Lord, Most High. 4346

Chapter 1791
ONE SHOULD NOT SAY "KHABUTHAT NAFSī" (MY HEART IS HEAVING)

(4960) Abū Umāmah b. Sahl b. Ḥunaif quoted his father as saying: None of you must say Khabūhat nafṣī (My heart is heaving), but one should say Laqīsat nafṣī (My heart is being annoyed). 4347

(4961) ‘A’ishah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: None of you should say Jā’shat nafṣī (My heart is being agitated), but one should say Laqīsat nafṣī (My heart is being annoyed).

(4962) Ḥudhaifah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not say: "What Allah wills and so and so wills," but say: "What Allah wills and afterwards so and so wills." 4348

Chapter 1792
THE SAME CAPTION AS ABOVE

(4963) ‘Adī b. Ḥātim said: A speaker gave sermon before the Prophet (may peace

4346 Sayyid is a title of honour. A hypocrite does not deserve this title. Therefore, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade calling him sayyid.

4347 The word khabūtha applies to unbelief, lie and bad action, and also to unlawful things, and atrocious qualities and laqīsa is used for being annoyed. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) taught discipline to use good words and avoid bad ones

4348 The particle wa (and) indicates connection and association, and thumma (afterwards) indicates order, one after the other. If a man uses wa, and with the will of Allah, he will associate a partner with Him. If he uses thumma (afterwards) with Allah’s will, that will not be an association of a partner.
be upon him). He said: He who obeys Allah and His Prophet will follow the right course, and he who disobeys them. . . . He (the Prophet) said: get up; or he said: Go away, a bad speaker you are.4349

(4964) Abū al-Malih reported on the authority of a man: I was riding on a mount behind the Prophet (may peace be upon him). It stumbled. Thereupon I said: May the devil perish! He said: Do not say: May the devil perish! for if you say that, he will swell so much so that he will be like a house, and say: By my power. But say: In the name of Allah; for when you say that, he will diminish so much so that he will be like a fly.4350

(4965) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When you hear . . . (Mūsā's version has): When a man says people have perished, he is the one who has suffered that fate most.4351

Abū Dāwūd said: Mālik said: If he says that out of sadness for the decadence of religion which he sees among the people, I do not think there is any harm in that. If he says that out of self-conceit and servility of the people, it is an abominable act which has been prohibited.

Chapter 1793

CALLING THE NIGHT PRAYER (‘ISHĀ’) ‘ATAMAH

(4966) Ibn ‘Umar reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: The desert Arabs may not dominate you in respect of the name of your prayer. Beware!

4349 The speaker used pronoun "them" for both Allah and His Apostle (may peace be upon him) indicating combination in disobedience. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) told him that it was objectionable. He should have said: ‘He who disobeys Allah and His Prophet’. The speaker should have separated one from the other. Some commentators are of opinion that that might be a peculiar occasion when the Prophet (may peace be upon him) forbade him to speak so; otherwise similar phrase has occurred in many traditions.

4350 This shows that when a man or an animal stumbles, one should say: In the name of Allah. He should not curse the devil. By cursing, the devil is encouraged and thinks that he has prevailed, and his power has been recognised.

4351 This is the translation of the reading ahlakuhum. There is a reading ahlakahum, meaning ‘he has caused them to perish’. He deserves to suffer the same fate for his self-conceit and pride. Allah is Most Merciful and Compassionate. He will forgive the sinners. According to the other reading (ahlakahum), it means that people did not perish, but he caused them to perish in his imagination.
It is al-‘ishā’, but they milk their camels when it is fairly dark.\footnote{4352}

\(\text{(4967)}\) Sālim b. Abl al-Ja‘dah said: A man said: (Mīs‘ar said: I think he was from the tribe of Khuzā‘ah): Would that I had prayed, and got comfort. The people objected to him for it.\footnote{4351} Thereupon he said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: O Bilāl, call \textit{iqāmah}\footnote{4354} for prayer; give us comfort by it.\footnote{4355}

\(\text{(4968)}\) ‘Ābd Allah b. Muḥammad b. al-Ḥanffyyah said: I and my father went to the house of my father-in-law from the \textit{ʿAnṣār} to pay a sick visit to him. The time of prayer came. He said to someone of his relatives: O girl! bring me water for ablution so that I pray and get comfort. We objected to him for it. He said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Get up, Bilāl, and give us comfort by prayer.

\(\text{(4969)}\) ‘Ā‘ishah said: I never heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) attributing anyone to anything except to religion.\footnote{4356}

\textbf{Chapter 1794}

\textbf{PERMISSION FOR THAT}

\(\text{(4970)}\) Anas said: The people of Madina were startled. The Apostle of Allah (may peace by upon him) rode on the horse belonging to Abū Talhah. He said: We did not see anything, or he said: We did not see (find) any fear. I found it (could run) like a river.\footnote{4357}

\footnote{4352. 'Atamah means darkness. The desert Arabs used to call the night prayer ‘atamah because they offered it late in the dark when they milked their camels. The name of the night prayer in the Qur‘ān is ‘ishā’. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) therefore, forbade to call night prayer ‘atamah. It should be called by the name it occurs in the Qur‘ān. As the name ‘atamah has been used in many traditions for night prayer, it is permissible to call it by this name.}

\footnote{4353. They objected to the words he uttered.}

\footnote{4354. The \textit{adhān} pronounced just before the congregation: I prayer. It has the additional words: ‘The time for prayer has come’, or ‘The prayer is ready’ (\textit{qad qamāt al-salāh}).}

\footnote{4355. This shows that there is no harm in saying that a man gets comfort by the prayer. The prayer brings peace and comfort for a Muslim—}

\footnote{4356. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not give weight to the attribution to lineage. He determined seniority and excellence of the people by their piety and achievement in religion.}

\footnote{4-57 The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used a simile for the rapid speed of the horse. He likened it to the river. This shows that use of simile is permissible. The commentators state that use of ‘atamah for night prayer is permissible as it is likened to darkness.}
Chapter 1795

STRICT PROHIBITION OF LYING

(4971) 'Abd Allah (b. Mas'ūd) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Avoid falsehood, for falsehood leads to wickedness, and wickedness to Hell; and if a man continues to speak falsehood and makes falsehood his object, he will be recorded in Allah's presence as a great liar. And adhere to truth, for truth leads to good deeds, and good deeds lead to Paradise. If a man continues to speak the truth and makes truth his object, he will be recorded in Allah's presence as eminently truthful.

(4972) Bahz b. Ḥakīm, on his father's authority, told that his grandfather reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Woe to him who tells things, speaking falsely, to make people laugh thereby. Woe to him! Woe to him!

(4973) 'Abd Allah b. 'Amir said: My mother called me one day when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was sitting in our house. She said: Come here and I shall give you something. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) asked her: What did you intend to give him? She replied: I intended to give him some dates. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If you were not to give him anything, a lie would be recorded against you.*

(4974) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is enough falsehood for a man to relate everything he hears. Abū Dāwūd said: Ḥafṣ did not mention Abū Hurairah (in his version).* Abū Dāwūd said: No other transmitter except this old man, that is, 'All b. Ḥafṣ al-Madā'īnī related the perfect chain of this tradition.

Chapter 1796

TO HARBOUR GOOD THOUGHTS

(4975) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying:

4358. This shows that one should talk carefully. A man is not allowed to speak falsely so that people may laugh thereby.

4359. This tradition shows that a man should keep his word. If he has promised a child to give him something, he should fulfil it.

4360. This tradition shows that a man should not transmit to others whatever he hears. He should be careful in publishing hearsay. When he hears a thing, he should first get it confirmed and ascertain that it is true. When its truth is confirmed, he may transmit it to others.

4361. This shows that this tradition is mursal (i.e. the link of the Companion is missing).
To harbour good thoughts is a part of well-conducted worship. 4362 (This is according to Naṣr’s version.)

Abū Dāwūd said: Mahnā is reliable and he is from Baṣrah.

(4976) Ṣaflīyah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was in the i‘tikāf (seclusion in the mosque). I came to visit him at night. I talked to him, got up and turned my back. He got up with me to accompany me. He was living in the house of Usāmah b. Zaid. Two men of the Ānṣār passed by him. When they saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), they walked quickly. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Be at ease; she is Ṣaflīyah, daughter of Ḥuyayy. They said: Glory be to Allah, Apostle of Allah! He said: The devil flows in man as the blood flows in him. I feared that he might inject something in your hearts, or he said “evil” (instead of something). 4363

Chapter 1797

PROMISE

(4977) Zaid b. Arqam reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a man makes a promise to his brother with the intention of fulfilling it and does not do so, and does not come at the appointed time, he is guilty of no sin. 4364

(4978) ‘Abd Allah b. Abl al-Ḥamsā said: I bought something from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) before he received his Prophetic commission, and as there was something still due to him I promised him that I would bring it to him at his place, but I forgot. When I remembered three days later, I went to that place and found him there. He said: You have vexed me, young man. I have been here for three days waiting for you.


Abū Dāwūd said: In a similar way I have been informed by ‘All b. ‘Abd Allah. Abū Dāwūd said: I have been told that Bishr b. al-Sarri transmitted it from ‘Abd

4362. This tradition indicates that a Muslim should have good opinion about every Muslim. One should avoid suspicion and thinking ill about anyone. The Qur’ān demands to avoid suspicion and thinking ill about people (xlix. 12) Some say that these good thoughts are in relation to Allah.

4363. This shows that one should not have suspicion about others.

4364. The point is that as the intention was good, something came in the way, he could not keep his word.
Chapter 1798

TO BOAST OF RECEIVING A THING WHICH A MAN HAS NOT BEEN GIVEN

(4979) 'Ammā', daughter of 'Abū Bakr, told of a woman who said: Apostle of Allah! I have a fellow-wife; will it be wrong for me to boast of receiving from my husband what he does not give me? He replied: The one who boasts of receiving what he has not been given is like him who has put on two garments of falsehood.4365

Chapter 1799

JOKING

(4980) Anas said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! give me a mount. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: We shall give you a she-camel's child to ride on. He said: What shall I do with a she-camel's child? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) replied: Do any others than she-camels give birth to camels?4366

(481) Al-Nu'man b. Bashir said: When Abū Bakr asked the permission of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to enter, he heard 'Ā'ishah speaking in a loud voice. So when he entered, he caught hold of her in order to slap her, and said: Don't I see you raising your voice to the Apostle of Allah? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) began to prevent him and Abū Bakr went out angry. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said when Abū Bakr went out: You see I rescued you from the man. Abū Bakr waited for some days, then asked permission of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to enter, and found that they had made peace with each other. He said to them: Bring me into your peace as you brought me into your war. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: We have done so; we have done so.

(4982) 'Awf b. Mālik al-Ashja'I said: I came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) at the expedition to Tabuk when he was in a small skin tent. I gave

4365. This is a double lying: one that a man does not have the thing of which he is boasting; the other that he is lying against a man who did not give that thing to him. This tradition shows that one should avoid telling a lie.

4366. This tradition indicates that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) sometimes cut jokes with his Companions. But there was no falsehood in that joke. Therefore, only such a joke is permissible as is not false.
him a salutation and he returned it, saying: Come in. I asked: The whole of me, Apostle of Allah? He replied: The whole of you. So I entered.\footnote{4367}

(4983) ‘Uthmān b. Abū ‘Afilkah said: The only reason why he asked whether the whole of him should come in was because of the smallness of the tent.

(4984) Anas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) addressed me as: O you with the two ears.

\textbf{Chapter 1800}

\textbf{ON A MAN WHO TAKES SOMETHING IN JEST}

(4985) ‘Abd Allah b. al-Sā‘ib b. Yazīd said that his father told on the authority of his grandfather who reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: None of you should take the property of his brother in amusement (i.e. jest), nor in earnest. The narrator Sulaimān said: Out of amusement and out of earnest. If anyone takes the staff of his brother, he should return it.\footnote{4369} The transmitter Ibn Bashshār did not say ‘Ibn Yazīd,’\footnote{4369} and he said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said.

(4986) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Lailā said: The Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) told us that they were travelling with the Prophet (may peace be upon him). A man of them slept, and one of them went to the rope which he had with him. He took it, by which he was frightened. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: It is not lawful for a Muslim that he frightens a Muslim.

\textbf{Chapter 1801}

\textbf{ELOQUENCE}

(4987) ‘Abd Allah said (Abū Dāwūd said: he is ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr): The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Allah, the Exalted, hates the eloquent one among men who moves his tongue round (among his teeth), as cattle do.\footnote{4370}

(4988) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: On the Day of Resurrection Allah will not accept repentance or ransom from

\footnote{4367. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to cut jokes with the Companions. The Companion asked this question for the smallness of the tent.}

\footnote{4368. This tradition shows that one should not take the things of another in jest. If a man takes something in jest, he should return it to him.}

\footnote{4369. It refers to ‘Abd Allah b. al-Sā‘ib b. Yazīd.}

\footnote{4370. This shows that one should speak carefully and avoid loose talk.}
him who learns excellence of speech to captivate thereby the hearts of men, or of people.4371

(4989) 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar said: When two men who came from the east made a speech and the people were charmed with their eloquence, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: In some eloquent speech there is magic.4372

(4990) One day when a man got up and spoke at length 'Amr b. al-'Äṣ said: If he had been moderate in what he said, it would have been better for him. I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: I think (or, I have been commanded)4373 that I should be brief in what I say, for brevity is better.

Chapter 1802

POETRY

(4991) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: It is better for a man's belly to be full of pus than to be full of poetry.

Abū 'All said: I have been told that Abū 'Uбaid said: It means that his heart is full of poetry so much so that it makes him negligent of the Qur’ān and remembrance of Allah. If the Qur’ān and the knowledge (of religion) are dominant, the belly will not be full of poetry in our opinion.4374 Some eloquent speech is magic.4375 It means that a man expresses his eloquence by praising another man, and he speaks the truth about him so much so that he attracts the hearts to his speech. He then condemns him and speaks the truth about him so much so that he attracts the hearts to another of his speech, as if he spelled the audience by it.

(4992) Ubayy b. Ka'b reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying:

4371. The transmitter is doubtful about the exact wording, whether it refers to men in particular or to people in general.

4372. It means that some speeches are so eloquent that the people are charmed with them. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to learn eloquence to make an ostentation and display of one's speech.

4373. The transmitter is doubtful about the exact words.

4374. If a man memorises some poems and he is not negligent of the remembrance of Allah, it is permissible. His belly will not be full of poetry. But if he is devoted to poetry so much so that he is negligent of prayer and other duties to Allah, it is not permissible.

4375. This is not the praise of eloquence in speech. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) in fact is criticising eloquence. It means that a man makes a good thing bad, and a bad thing good, in the eyes of the people by his eloquent speech. People become spell-bound by his words about the praise or condemnation of a thing. They cannot distinguish good from bad, as a man who has been charmed cannot make such a distinction.
In poetry there is wisdom.  

(4993) Ibn ‘Abbās said: A desert Arab came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and began to speak. Thereupon the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: In eloquence there is magic and in poetry there is wisdom.

(4994) Šāhhr b. ‘Abd Allah b. Buraidah on his father’s authority said that his grandfather told: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: In eloquence there is magic, in knowledge ignorance, in poetry wisdom, and in speech heaviness. Ša’ša‘ah b. Šūhān said: The Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) spoke the truth. His statement ‘In eloquence there is magic’ means: (For example), there is a right due from a man who is more eloquent in reasoning than the man who is demanding his right. He (the defendant) charms the people by his speech and takes away his right. His statement ‘In knowledge there is ignorance’ means: A scholar brings to his knowledge what he does not know, and thus he becomes ignorant of that. His statement ‘In poetry there is wisdom’ means: These are those sermons and examples by which people receive admonition. His statement ‘In speech there is heaviness’ means: That you present your speech and your talk to a man who is not capable of it, and who does not want it.

(4995) Sa‘īd said: ‘Umar passed by Ḥassān when he was reciting verses in the mosque. He looked at him. Thereupon he said: I used to recite verses when there was present in it the one who was better than you (i.e. the Prophet).

(4996) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Sa‘īd b. al-Musayyab through a different chain of narrators to the same effect. This version adds: So he (‘Umar) feared that he would refer to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him); therefore he allowed him.

(4997) ‘Ā‘ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to set up a pulpit in the mosque for Ḥassān who would stand on it and satirise those who spoke against the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) would say: The spirit of holiness (i.e. Gabriel) is with

4376. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like those poems and verses which prompt a man to commit sin and to do evil deeds. If the poetry is full of good instructions and exhorts man to do good works, it is appreciated. Some poems are full of wisdom.

4377. If a speech is addressed to someone who is not interested in it, it will be weariness. Hence it is necessary that a man should address a man who is worthy of his speech.

4378. Ḥassān used to recite verses in the mosque in the presence of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) who encouraged him. He defended Islam by his verses, replied to the criticism of the Qurāsh and praised Allah and His Prophet (may peace be upon him). When ‘Umar intended to prohibit him from reciting verses in the mosque he said that he used to do so in the presence of the Prophet himself (may peace be upon him). Hence he allowed him.
Chapter 1803

VISIONS

(4998) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The verse “And the poets—it is those straying in evil who follow them.” Ibn ‘Abbās said: The verse “And the poets—it is those straying in evil who follow them.” 4379 He (Allah) then abrogated it and made an exception saying: “Except those who believe and work righteousness, engage much in the remembrance of Allah.” 4380

(4999) Abī Hūairah said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) finished the dawn prayer, he would ask: Did any of you have a dream last night? And he said: All that is left of Prophecy after me is a good vision. 4381

(5000) ‘Ubadah b. al-Ṣamit reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A believer’s vision is the forty-sixth part of Prophecy. 4382

(5001) Abī Hūairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When the time draws near, a believer’s vision can hardly be false. The truer one of them is in his speech, the truer he is in his vision. Visions are of three types: Good visions are glad tidings from Allah, a terrifying vision is caused by the devil, and the
ideas which come from within a man. So when one sees anything he dislikes, he should get up and pray, and should not tell it to the people. He said: I like a fetter and dislike a shackle on the neck; a fetter indicates being firmly established in religion.

Abū Dāwūd said: “When the time draws near” means that when the day and night are equal.

(5002) Abū Razīn reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The vision flutters over a man as long as it is not interpreted, but when it is interpreted, it settles. And I think he said: Tell it only to one who loves (i.e. friend) or one who has judgment.

(5003) Abū Qatādah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: A good vision comes from Allah and a dream (qulm) from the devil. So when one of you sees what he dislikes, he must spit on his left three times, and seek refuge in Allah from its evil. It will then not harm him.

(5004) Jābir reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you sees a vision which he dislikes, he must spit on his left (three times), seek refuge in Allah from the devil three times, and turn from the side on which he was lying.

(5005) Abū Hurairah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: He who sees me in a dream will see me when awake, or “as if he will see me when awake,” for the devil does not take my likeness.

(5006) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone makes a representation of anything, Allah will punish him on the Day of Resurrection for it until he breathes into it, but he will be unable to do so. If anyone pretends to have had a dream which he did not see, he will be given the task of

4384. ‘He’ refers to Abū Hurairah. This is the statement of Abū Hurairah and not of the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

4385. Al-Bukhārī said that Qatādah, Yūnus, Hushaim (Hishām) and Abū Hilāl transmitted it on the authority of Ibn Sīrīn who quoted Abū Hurairah’s authority. Yūnus said that he thought that what was said about the fetters comes from the fetters, but Muslim said that he did not know whether it was in the tradition or whether Ibn Sīrīn said it. Another version says that the words “I dislike seeing a shackle on the neck...” to the end have been inserted in the tradition.

4386. So long as a vision is not interpreted, it remains unsettled. No one knows what it indicates. When it is interpreted, it is settled. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said that a man should inform his friend about his vision or a man of opinion or of sound judgment. A man of judgment will tell him the correct interpretation of the vision or will keep silence. Similarly, a friend will not inform others if it is a bad vision.

4387. The transmitter is doubtful about the exact wording.

4388. This tradition shows that if a man sees the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in his vision, he should believe that he has actually seen him, for the devil does not appear in his form.
joining barley-seed. If anyone listens to other people's talk when they try to avoid him, lead will be poured into his ears on the Day of Resurrection.

(5007) Anas b. Malik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: One night it seemed to me in a dream that we were in the house of 'Uqbah b. Rāfī', and were brought some of the fresh dates of Ibn Ṣād. I interpreted it as meaning that to us is granted eminence (rif'ah) in this world, a blessed hereafter ('aqibah), and that our religion has been good (tābah).

Chapter 1804

YAWNING

(5008) Abū Sa'īd al-Khudrī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you yawns, he should hold his hand over his mouth, for the devil enters.

(5009) The tradition mentioned above has also been mentioned in a similar way by Suhail through a different chain of narrators. This version has: "during prayer, so he should hold as far as possible"

(5010) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah likes sneezing but dislikes yawning. So when one of you yawns, he should restrain it as much as possible, and should not say Ha, Ha, for that is from the devil who laughs at him.

4389. It means that he will be asked to join two barley-seeds (as Bukhārī's version has), but he will be unable to do so. This is a metaphor for the punishment for a long time.

This tradition indicates that a Muslim should avoid pretending to have had a dream which he did not actually see.

4390. Ibn Ṣād was a man who lived in Medina or in the desert and who had dates. A particular type of Medina dates were attributed to him, known after his name.

4391. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) took good omen from the basic meanings of the parts of these names.

4392. The devil either actually enters the mouth, or it may mean his control and domination over the man. Some versions mention the word "prayer". In that case it is necessary to place one's hand over one's mouth, for the devil attempts to distract the concentration of the man at prayer. It is disapproved to yawn while praying.

4393. Allah likes sneezing because it indicates lightness of mind and freshness, but He dislikes yawning, for it is a sign of laziness.
Chapter 1805

SNEEZING

(5011) Abū Hurairah said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sneezed, he placed his hand or a garment on his mouth, and lessened the noise. The transmitter Yahyā is doubtful about the exact words ‘khafada or ghafja (lessened).

(5012) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: There are five qualities which a Muslim should display to his brother: return of salutation, response to the one who sneezes, acceptance of the invitation, paying sick visit to a patient, and accompanying the funeral.

Chapter 1806

RESPONSE TO THE ONE WHO SNEEZES

(5013) Hilāl b. Yasār said: We were with Sālim b. ‘Ubaid when a man from among the people sneezed and said: Peace be upon you. Sālim said: And upon you and your mother. Thereafter he said: Perhaps you found something (annoying) from what I said to you. He said: I wished you would not mention my mother with good or evil. He said: I have just said to you what the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said. We were in the presence of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) when a man from among the people sneezed, saying: Peace be upon you! The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: And upon you and your mother. He then said: When one of you sneezes, he should praise Allah. He further mentioned some attributes (of Allah), saying: The one who is with him should say to him: Allah have mercy on you, and he should reply to them: Allah forgive us and you.

(5014) The tradition mentioned above has also been mentioned by Sālim b. ‘Ubaid al-Ashja’ī to the same effect from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators.

(5015) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you sneezes, he should say: Praise be to Allah in every circumstance, and his brother or his companion should say: Allah have mercy on you! And he should then reply: May Allah guide you and give you well-being.

4394. When a man hears another man sneezing, he should say: ‘May Allah have mercy on you’

4395 Literally, “and make your condition well”
Chapter 1807

HOW MANY TIMES SHOULD ONE RESPOND TO THE ONE WHO SNEEZES?

(5016) Abū Hurairah said: Respond three times to your brother when he sneezes, and if he sneezes oftener, he has a cold in his head.4396

(5017) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Hurairah through a different chain from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). A transmitter Sa‘īd b. Sa‘īd said: I know him that he traced this tradition back to the Prophet (may peace be upon him).4397

Abū Dawūd said: Abū Nu‘aim transmitted it from Mūsā b. Qais, from Muhammad b. ‘Ajlān, from Sa‘īd, on the authority of Abū Hurairah, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

(5018) ‘Ubaid b. Rifa‘ah al-Zuraqī reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Invoke a blessing on one who sneezes three times; (and if he sneezes oftener), then if you wish to invoke a blessing on him, you may invoke, and if you wish (to stop), then stop.

(5019) Salamah b. al-Akwa’ said: When a man sneezed beside the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he said to him: Allah have mercy on you, but when he sneezed again, he said: The man has a cold in the head.

Chapter 1808

HOW SHOULD ONE INVOKE BLESSING ON A DHIMMI (PROTECTED NON-MUSLIM) WHEN HE SNEEZES?

(5020) Abū Burdah quoted his father as saying: The Jews used to try to sneeze in the presence of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) hoping that he would say to them: “Allah have mercy on you!” but he would say: May Allah guide you and grant you well-being.4398

4396 If a man sneezes more than three times, the other man should not respond to him, for he is suffering from cold.

4397. Al-Suyūṭī said: This tradition has been mentioned by Ibn ‘Asākir in his Ta’rīkh: When one of you sneezes, his companion should respond to him. If he sneezes more than three times, he has a cold in the head. He should not invoke blessing after the third time (‘Awn al-Ma‘būd, IV, 407).

4398. This shows that when a non-Muslim sneezes, the Muslim should respond by saying: May Allah guide you and grant you well-being.
Chapter 1809

ON A MAN WHO SNEEZES AND DOES NOT PRAISE ALLAH

(5021) Anas said: Two men sneezed in the presence of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said: Allah have mercy on you! to one and not to the other. He was asked: Apostle of Allah! two persons sneezed. Ahmad’s version has: “You invoked a blessing on one of them and left the other”. He replied: This man praised Allah, and this man did not praise Allah.4399

CHAPTERS ON SLEEPING

Chapter 1810

ON A MAN WHO LIES ON HIS STOMACH

(5022) Ya’ish b. Tikhfat al-Ghifari said: My father was one of the people in the Suffah.4400 The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Go with us to the house of ‘A’ishah. So we went and he said: Give us food, ‘A’ishah. She brought hashishah4401 and we ate. He then said: Give us food, ‘A’ishah. She then brought haiyah4402 as small in quantity as a pigeon and we ate. He then said: Give us drink, ‘A’ishah. So she brought a bowl of milk, and we drank. Again he said: Give us drink, ‘A’ishah. She then brought a small cup and we drank. He then said: If you wish, you may spend the night (here), and if you wish, you may go to the mosque. He said: While I was lying on my stomach due to pain in the lung,4403 a man began to shake me with his foot and then said: This is a method of lying which Allah

4399. This tradition indicates that it is not necessary to invoke blessing on a man who does not praise Allah when he sneezes. To invoke blessing on a man who praises Allah is recommendatory (mustahabb) and not obligatory (wajib). If one does not invoke blessing one will not be sinful.

4400. Suffah: a kind of verandah at the mosque of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in Medina where some poor people lived. They were devoted to the service to Islam, They learnt the injunctions of Islam from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and other Companions and went to preach Islam.

4401. Hashishah: a kind of food prepared from the flour of wheat in which meat and dates were mixed.

4402. Hais or kaisah: a mixture of dates and clarified butter.

4403. He could not lie on his back due to pain in his lung. Some explained it as pain in his liver.
hates. I looked and saw that he was the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). 4404

Chapter 1811

SLEEPING ON THE ROOF OF A HOUSE WITH NO STONE PALISADE.

(5023) ‘All b. Shaibān reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone spends the night on the roof of a house with no stone palisade, Allah's responsibility to guard him no longer applies. 4405

Chapter 1812

SLEEPING IN THE STATE OF PURIFICATION

(5024) Mu‘ādh b. Jabal reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If a Muslim sleeps while remembering Allah, in the state of purification, is alarmed while asleep at night, and asks Allah for good in this world and in the Hereafter, He surely gives it to him. 4406

Thābit al-Bunā‘ī said: Abū Ṭabyah came to visit us and he transmitted this tradition to us from Mu‘ādh b. Jabal from the Prophet (may peace be upon him).

Thābit said: So and so said: I tried my best to utter these (prayers) when I got up, but I could not do.

(5025) Ibn ‘Abbās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) got up at night, fulfilled his need 4407 and washed his face and hand and then slept.

Abū Dāwūd said: that is to say, he urinated.

Chapter 1813

WHERE SHOULD ONE FACE WHILE SLEEPING?

(5026) Some relative of Umm Salamah said: The bed of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was set as a man is laid in his grave; the mosque was towards his

4404 This shows that one should not lie on one's stomach. But it is allowed if one has some excuse. In normal conditions it is not allowed.

4405 It means that if a man falls from the roof with no protection, there will be no claim for compensation for his blood.

4406 This tradition indicates that it is commendable to sleep in the state of purification after performing ablution. If anyone is alarmed while sleeping, he should remember Allah and pray to Him.

4407 He urinated as explained by Abū Dāwūd.
Chapter 1814

WHAT SHOULD A MAN SAY WHEN GOING TO SLEEP?

(5027) Ḥafṣah, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) wanted to go to sleep, he put his right hand under his cheek and would then say three times: O Allah, guard me from Thy punishment on the day when Thou raisest up Thy servants.

(5028) Al-Bara' b. 'Azib said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: When you go to your bed, perform ablution like the ablution for prayer, and then lie on your right side and say: O Allah, I have handed over my face to Thee, entrusted my affairs to Thee, and committed my back to Thee out of desire for and fear to Thee. There is no refuge and no place of safety from Thee except by having recourse to Thee. I believe in Thy Book which Thou hast sent down and in Thy Prophet whom Thou hast sent down. He said: If you die (that night), you would die in the true religion, and utter these words in the last of that you utter (other prayers). Al-Bara' said: I said: I memorise them, and then I repeated, saying and in Thy Prophet whom Thou hast sent”. He said: No, say: “and in Thy Prophet whom Thou hast sent.”

(5029) Al-Bara' b. 'Azib said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: When you go to bed while you are in the state of purification, lay your head on your right hand. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition in a similar manner as above.

(5030) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-Bara’ b. ‘Azib from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to the same effect through a different chain of narrators. One transmitter said: When you go to your bed while you are in the state of purification. The other said: Perform ablution like the ablution for prayer. He then transmitted the tradition to the effect as Mu’tamir transmitted.

(5031) Hudhaifah said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) lay down on his bed (at night), he would say: O Allah! in Thy name I die and live. When he awoke, he said: Praise be to Allah Who has given us life after causing us to die and

4408 This shows that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) faced the Ka'bah while asleep. He used to lie on his bed as a man is laid in his grave facing the Ka'bah.

4409 The version by Muslim and al-Buk'ārī has: “O Allah, I have handed over my soul to Thee, turned my face to Thee...” and so on as in the text.

4410. This shows that the wordings of supplications should not be changed. The prayers should be repeated in Arabic as were taught by the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
Ch. 1814 | What Should A Man Say When Going to Sleep?  [ 1403

to Whom we shall be resurrected.

(5032) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When any of you goes to his bed, he should dust his bedding with the inner extremity of his lower garment, for he does not know what has come on to it since he left it. He should then lie down on his right side and say: In Thy name, my Lord, I lay down my side and in Thee I raise it up. If Thou keepest my soul, have mercy on it, but if Thou lettest it go, guard it with that which Thou guardest Thy upright servants.

(5033) Abū Hurairah said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) went to his bed, he used to say: O Allah! Lord of the heavens, Lord of the earth, Lord of everything, Who splittest the grain and the kernel, Who hast sent down the Torah, the Injil and the Qur'ān, I seek refuge in Thee from the evil of every evil agent whose forelock Thou seizest. Thou art the First and there is nothing before Thee; Thou art the Last and there is nothing after Thee; Thou art the Outward and there is nothing above Thee; Thou art the Inward and there is nothing below Thee. Wahb added in his version: Pay the debt for me and grant me riches instead of poverty.

(5034) 'All reported that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to say when he lay down: O Allah, I seek refuge in Thy noble Person and in Thy perfect Words from the evil of what Thou seizest by its forelock; O Allah! Thou removest debt and sin; O Allah! Thy troop is not routed, Thy promise is not broken, and the riches of the rich do not avail against Thee. Glory and praise be unto Thee!

(5035) Anas said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went to his bed, he would say: Praise be to Allah Who has fed us, given us drink, satisfied us and given us refuge. Many there are who have no one to provide sufficiency for them, or give them refuge.

(5036) Abū al-Azhār al-Anmārī said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went to his bed at night, he would say: In the name of Allah, I have laid down my side for Allah. O Allah! forgive me my sin, drive away my devil, free me from my responsibility, and place me in the highest assembly.


(5037) Farwāh b. Nawfal quoted his father as saying that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to Nawfal (his father): Say, O infidels! and then sleep at its end, for it is a declaration of freedom from polytheism.

(5038) 'Ā'ishah said: Every night when the Prophet (may peace be upon him) went to his bed, he joined his hands and breathed into them, reciting into them:

4411. Qur'ān, cix.
“Say: He is Allah, One” \(^{4412}\); and “Say: I seek refuge in the Lord of the dawn”\(^{4413}\); and “Say: I seek refuge in the Lord of men.\(^{4414}\) Then he would wipe as much of his body as he could with his hands, beginning with his head, his face and the front of his body, doing that three times.

(5039) ‘Irād b. Sāriyah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) used to recite al-Musābbīhā\(^{4415}\) before going to sleep, and say: They contain a verse which is better than a thousand verses.

(5040) Ibn ‘Umar said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went to his bed, he would say: Praise be to Allah Who has given me sufficiency, has guarded me, given me food and drink, been most gracious to me, and given to me most lavishly. Praise be to Allah in every circumstance. O Allah! Lord and King of everything, God of everything, I seek refuge in Thee from Hell.

(5041) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone lies on his side where he does not remember Allah, deprivation will descend on him on the Day of Resurrection; and if anyone sits in a place where he does not remember Allah, deprivation will descend on him on the Day of Resurrection.

Chapter 1815

WHAT SHOULD A MAN SAY WHEN HE IS ALARMED WHILE ASLEEP AT NIGHT?

(5042) ‘Ubādah b. al-Šāmit reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone is alarmed while asleep and he says when awakes: There is no god but Allah alone Who has no partner, to Whom dominion belongs, to Whom praise is due, and Who has power over everything (omnipotent). Glory be to Allah, and praise be to Allah, and there is no god but Allah, and Allah is most great, and there is no might and no power except in Allah, and then he prays: O my Lord, forgive me. Abū Dawūd said: Al-Walīd’s version has: “and he prays, his prayer will be answered. If he gets up, performs ablution, and prays, his prayer will be accepted.”

(5043) ‘Ā’ishah said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) awoke at night, he said: There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee, O Allah, I ask Thy

\(^{4412}\) Qur’ān. cxii.

\(^{4413}\) Qur’ān, cxii.

\(^{4414}\) Qur’ān, cxiv.

\(^{4415}\) These are said to be sūrahs lvii, lxxi., lxxii., lxxiv., lxxxvii. These sūrahs begin with the perfect, imperfect, or imperative of the verb sabbāqa (to glorify).
pardon for my sin and I ask Thee for Thy mercy. O Allah! advance me in knowledge; do not cause my heart to deviate (from guidance) after Thou hast guided me, and grant me mercy from Thyself; verily Thou art the Grantor.

Chapter 1816

GLORIFYING ALLAH AT THE TIME OF GOING TO BED

(5044) 'All said: Fāṭimah complained to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) of the effect of the grinding stone on her hand. Then some slaves (prisoners of war) were brought to him. So she went to him to ask for (one of) them, but she did not find him. She mentioned the matter to 'Ā'ishah. When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) came, she informed him. He (the Prophet) visited us ('All) when we had gone to bed, and when we were about to get up, he said: Stay where you are. He then came and sat down between us (her and me), and I felt the coldness of his feet on my chest. He then said: "Let me guide to something better than what you have asked. When you go to bed, say: "Glory be to Allah" thirty-three times, "Praise be to Allah" thirty-three times, and "Allah is Most Great" thirty-four times. That will be better for you than a servant."

(5045) 'All said to Ibn A’bad: Should I not tell you about me and about Fāṭimah, daughter of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). She was dearest to him of his family. When she was with me, she pulled mill-stone which affected her hand; she carried water with the water-bag which affected the upper portion of her chest; she swept the house so much so that her clothes became dusty; and she cooked food by which her clothes became black, and it harmed her. We heard that some slaves had been brought to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). I said: If you go to your father and ask him for a servant, that will be sufficient for you. She came to him and found some people talking to him. She felt shy and returned. Next morning he visited us when we were in our quilt. He sat beside her head, and she took her head into the quilt out of shame from her father. He asked: What need had you with me, O family of Muḥammad? She kept silence twice. I then said: I swear by Allah, I shall tell you. She pulls the mill-stone which has affected her hand; she carries water with the water-bag which has affected the upper portion of her chest; she sweeps the house by which her clothes have become dusty, and she cooks food by which her clothes have become dusty, and it harmed her.

4416. This is known as tasbīḥ Fāṭimah. It is commendable to utter these words at the time of going to bed and also after obligatory prayers.

4417. Literally, she kindled fire to heat the cooking-pot.
become black. We were told that some slaves or servants had come to you. so I said to her: Ask him for a servant. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect as mentioned by al-Ḥakam rather more perfectly.

(5046) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by ‘All to the same effect through a different chain of narrators. This version adds: ‘All said: I did not leave them since I heard them from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) except on the night of Ṣiffin, for I remembered them towards the end of the night and then I uttered them.

(5047) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: There are two qualities or characteristics which will not be returned by any Muslim without his entering Paradise. While they are easy, those who act upon them are few. One should say: “Glory be to Allah” ten times after every prayer, “Praise be to Allah” ten times, and “Allah is Most Great” ten times. That is a hundred and fifty on the tongue, but one thousand and five hundred in the scale.4418 When he goes to his bed, he should say: “Allah is Most Great” thirty-four times, “Praise be to Allah” thirty-three times, and Glory be to Allah thirty-three times, for that is a hundred on the tongue and a thousand in the scale. (He said:) I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) counting them on his hand. The people asked: Apostle of Allah! how is it so that while they are easy, those who act upon them are few? He replied: The devil comes to one of you when he goes to bed and he makes him sleep, before he utters them, and he comes to him while he is engaged in prayer and calls a need to his memory before he utters them.

(5048) Umm al-Ḥakam or Ḏubā’ah, daughters of al-Zubair, said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) got some prisoners of war (slaves). I, my sister and Fāṭimah, daughter of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). We complained to him about our condition, and asked him to command for giving us some prisoners (slaves). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The orphans of Badr came before you (and took the slaves). The transmitter then mentioned the story of glorifying Allah after every prayer. He did not mention sleeping.

Chapter 1817

WHAT SHOULD ONE SAY IN THE MORNING?

(5049) Abū Hurairah said: Abū Bakr al-Ṣiddiq said: Apostle of Allah I command

4418. The three phrases each uttered ten times after five daily prayers makes a hundred and fifty, and as a good deed gets a ten-fold reward, the total is treated as one thousand five hundred.
me something to say in the morning and in the evening. He said: Say: "O Allah, Creator of the heavens and the earth, Who knowest the unseen and the seen, Lord and Possessor of everything. I testify that there is no god but Thee; I seek refuge in Thee from the evil within myself, from the evil of the devil, and his (incitement to) attributing partners (to Allah)." He said: Say this in the morning.

(5050) Abū Hurairah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to say in the morning: "O Allah, by Thee we come to the morning, by Thee we come to the evening, by Thee are we resurrected." In the evening he would say: "O Allah, by Thee we come to the evening, by Thee we live, by Thee we die, and to Thee are we resurrected."

(5051) Anas b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone says in the morning or in the evening: "O Allah! in the morning we call Thee, the bearers of Thy Throne, Thy angels and all Thy Creatures to witness that Thou art Allah (God) than Whom alone there is no god, and that Muhammad is Thy Servant and Apostle," Allah will emancipate his fourth from Hell; if anyone says twice, Allah will emancipate his half; if anyone says it thrice, Allah will emancipate three-fourth; and if he says four times, Allah will emancipate him from Hell.

(5052) Buraidah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone says in the morning or in the evening: "O Allah! Thou art my Lord; there is no god but Thee, Thou hast created me, and I am Thy servant and hold to Thy covenant and promise as much as I can; I seek refuge in Thee from the evil of what I have done; I acknowledge Thy favour to me, and I acknowledge my sin; pardon me, for none but Thee pardons sins, and dies during the daytime or during the night," he will go to Paradise.

(5053) 'Abd Allah (b. Mas'ūd) told that when the evening came, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) would say: We have come to the evening, and in the evening the dominion belongs to Allah: "Praise be to Allah; there is no god but Allah alone Who has no partner." The version of Jarir adds: Zubair said that Ibrahim b. Suwaid said: There is no god but Allah alone Who has no partner; to Him belongs the dominion, to Him praise is due, and He is Omnipotent. O Allah! I ask Thee for the good of what this night contains, and the good of what comes after it; and I seek refuge in Thee from the evil of what this night contains, and from the evil of what comes after it. My Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from indolence, the evil of old age or of disbelief.4419 My Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from a punishment in Hell and a punishment in the grave." In the morning he said that also: We have come to the evening, and in the evening the dominion belongs to Allah: "Praise be to Allah; there is no god but Allah alone Who has no partner." The version of Jarir adds: Ibrahim b. Suwaid said: There is no god but Allah alone Who has no partner; to Him belongs the dominion, to Him praise is due, and He is Omnipotent. O Allah! I ask Thee for the good of what this night contains, and the good of what comes after it; and I seek refuge in Thee from the evil of what this night contains, and from the evil of what comes after it. My Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from indolence, the evil of old age or of disbelief. My Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from a punishment in Hell and a punishment in the grave.

4419. The transmitter was doubtful about the exact word.
morning, and in the morning the dominion belongs to Allah.

Abū Dāwūd said: Shu‘bah transmitted from Salamah b. Kuhail, from Ibrāhīm b. Suwaid, saying: “from the evil of old age”. He did not mention “the evil of disbelief”

(5054) Abū Sallām told that he was in the mosque of Ḥimṣ. A man passed him and the people said about him that he served the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He (Abū Sallām) went to him and said: Tell me any tradition which you heard from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and there were no men between him and you. He said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If anyone says in the morning and in the morning: “I am pleased with Allah as Lord, with Islam as religion, with Muḥammad as Prophet,” Allah will certainly please him.4420

(5055) ‘Abd Allah b. Ghannām reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone says in the morning: “O Allah! whatever favour has come to me, it comes from Thee alone Who has no partner; to Thee praise is due and thanksgiving,” he will have expressed full thanksgiving for the day; and if anyone says the same in the evening, he will have expressed full thanksgiving for the night.

(5056) Ibn ‘Umar said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) never failed to utter these supplications in the evening and in the morning: O Allah, I ask Thee for security in this world and in the Hereafter: O Allah! I ask Thee for forgiveness and security in my religion and my worldly affairs, in my family and my property; O Allah! conceal my fault or faults (according to ‘Uthmān’s version), and keep me safe from the things which I fear; O Allah! guard me in front of me and behind me, on my right hand and on my left, and from above me; and I seek in Thy greatness from receiving unexpected harm from below me.” Abū Dāwūd said: Wakl* said: That is to say, swallowing by the earth.

(5057) ‘Abd al-Ḥamīd, a client of Banū Ḥāshim, said that his mother who served some of the daughters of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) told him that one of the daughters of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to teach her saying: Say in the morning: “Glory be to Allah, and I begin with praise of Him; there is no power but in Allah; what Allah wills comes to pass and what He does not will does not come to pass; I know that Allah is Omnipotent and that Allah has comprehended everything in knowledge”; for whoever says it in the morning will be guarded till the evening, and whoever says it in the evening will be guarded till the morning.

4420. This tradition has been transmitted on the authority of Thawbān from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) by ʿAbdurrahmān Dāwūd and al-Tirmidhī.
Ch. 1817  What Should One Say in the Morning?  [ 1409

(5058) Ibn 'Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone repeats in the morning: "So glory be to Allah in the evening and in the morning; to Him is the praise in the heavens and the earth, and in the late evening and at noon... thus shall you be brought forth," he will get that day what he has missed; and if anyone repeats these words in the evening he will get that night what he has missed.

Al-Rab'ī transmitted it from al-Laith.

(5059) Abū 'Ayyāsh reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone says in the morning: "There is no god but Allah alone Who has no partner: to Him belongs the dominion, to Him praise is due, and He is Omnipotent," he will have a reward equivalent to that for setting free a slave from among the descendants of Ismā'il, will have ten good deeds recorded for him, will have ten evil deeds deducted from him, will be advanced ten degrees, and will be guarded from the devil till the evening. If he says them in the evening, he will have similar recompense till the morning.

The version of Ḥammād has: A man saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) in a dream and said: Apostle of Allah! Abū 'Ayyāsh is relating such and such on your authority. He said: Abū 'Ayyāsh has spoken the truth.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ismā'il b. Ja'far, Mūsā al-Zim'i and 'Abd Allah b. Ja'far transmitted it from Suhail, from his father on the authority of Ibn 'Ā'ish.

(5060) Anas b. Mālik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone says in the morning: "O Allah! in the morning we call Thee, the bearers of Thy Throne, Thy angels, and all Thy creatures to witness that Thou art Allah than Whom there is no god, Thou being alone and without a partner, and that Muḥammad is Thy servant and Thy Apostle," Allah will forgive him any sins that he commits that day; and if he repeats them in the evening, Allah will forgive him any sins he commits that night.

(5061) Al-Ḥārith b. Muslim al-Tamīmī quoted his father Muslim b. al-Ḥārith al-Tamīmī as saying that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) told him secretly: When you finish the sunset prayer, say: "O Allah, protect me from Hell" seven times; for if you say that and die that night, protection from it would be recorded for you; and when you finish the dawn prayer, say it in a similar way, for if you die that day, protection from it would be recorded for you. Abū Sa'īd told me that al-Ḥārith said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said this to us secretly, so we confine it to our brethren.

(5062) A similar tradition has been transmitted by Muslim b. al-Ḥārith b. Muslim

al-TamImI on the authority of his father from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators up to “protection from it”. But this version has: “before speaking to anyone”. In this version ‘Ali b. Sahl said that his father told him. And ‘Ali and Ibn al-Muṣaffā said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) sent us on an expedition. When we reached the place of attack, I galloped my horse and outstriped my companions, and the people of that locality received me with a great noise. I said to them: Say: “There is no god but Allah,” you will be protected. They said this. My companions blamed me, saying: You deprived us of the booty. When we came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), they told him what I had done. So he called me and appreciated what I had done, and said: Allah has recorded for you so and so (a reward) for every man of them. ‘Abd al-Rahmān said: I forgot the reward. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: I shall write a will for you after me. He did this and stamped it, and gave it to me, saying... He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect. Ibn al-Muṣaffā said: I heard al-Ḥarīth b. Muslim b. al-Ḥarīth al-TamImI transmitting it from his father.

(5063) Abū al-Dardā’ said: If anyone says seven times morning and evening: “Allah sufficeth me: there is no god but He; on Him is my trust—He, the Lord of the Throne (of glory) Supreme.”4421 Allah will be sufficient for him against anything which grieves him, whether he is true or false in (repeating) them.

(5064) Mu‘adh b. ‘Abd Allah b. Khubaib quoted his father (‘Abd Allah b. Khubaib) as saying: We went out one rainy and intensely dark night to look for the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to lead us in prayer, and when we found him, he asked: Have you prayed?, but I did not say anything. So he said: Say, but I did not say anything. He again said: Say, but I did not say anything. He then said: Say. So I said: What am I to say? He said: Say: “Say, He is Allah,4422 One,” and al-Mu‘awwadhatān4424 thirty three times in the morning and evening; they will serve you for every purpose.

(5065) Abū Mālik said: The people asked: Tell us a word which we repeat in the morning, evening and when we get up. So he commanded us to say: “O Allah! Creator of the heavens and the earth; Knower of all that is hidden and open; Thou art the Lord of everything; the angels testify that there is no god but Thee, for we seek refuge in Thee from the evil within ourselves, from the evil of the devil accused and from the evil of his suggestion about partnership with Allah, and that we earn sin for ourselves or drag it to a Muslim.”

4422. Qur'ān, ix. 129. 4423. Qur'ān, cxii
4424. Qur'ān, cxii., cxiv.
Abū Dāwūd said: And through the same chain of transmitters the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: When one gets up in the morning, one should say: “We have reached the morning, and in the morning the dominion belongs to Allah, the Lord of the universe. O Allah! I ask Thee for the good this day contains, for conquest, victory, light, blessing and guidance during it; and I seek refuge in Thee from the evil it contains and the evil contained in what comes after it.” In the evening he should say the like.

(5066) Shāriq al-Hawzānī said: I came to ‘Ā’ishah (Allah be pleased with her) and asked her: By which (prayer) the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) began when he woke up at night? She replied: You asked me about a thing which no one asked me before. When he woke up at night, he uttered: “Allah is Most Great” ten times, and uttered “Praise be to Allah” ten times, and said: “Glory be to Allah and I begin with His praise” ten times, and said: “Glory be to the King, the Most Holy” ten times, and asked Allah’s pardon ten times, and said: “There is no god but Allah” ten times, and then said: “O Allah! I seek refuge in Thee from the strait of the Day of Resurrection,” ten times. He then began the prayer.4425

(5067) Abū Hurairah said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was on a journey, he would say at daybreak: Let a hearer hear beginning with praise of Allah and His good favours and blessing to us. Our Lord, accompany us and show favour to us, and I seek refuge in Allah from Hell.

(5068) Abū Dharr said: If anyone says in the morning: “O Allah! whatever oath I take, whatever word I speak, and whatever vow I take, Thine will precedes all that; whatever Thou willeth, occurs, and whatever Thou dost not will, dost not occur. O Allah! pardon me and disregard me for it. O Allah! whomsoever Thou sendest Thine blessing, to him my blessing is due, and whomsoever Thou cursest, to him my curse is due,” exemption from it will be granted to him that day.4426

(5069) Abān b. ‘Uthmān said: I heard ‘Uthmān b. ‘Affān (his father) say: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If anyone says three times: “In the name of Allah when Whose name is mentioned nothing in earth or heaven can cause harm, and He is the Hearer, the Knower,” he will not suffer sudden affliction till the morning, and if anyone says this in the evening, he will not suffer sudden affliction till the evening. Abān was afflicted by some paralysis, and when a man who heard the tradition began to look at him, he would say to him: Why are

4425. This refers to the prayer at night, i.e. *taḥajjud* prayer.
4426. It means that if anyone takes a vow or an oath, or speaks a word, or invokes a blessing or curse to anyone, and he repeats these words in the morning, he will be pardoned for all slips of his tongue that day. By uttering these words in the morning he will not be a sinner for cursing anyone.
you looking at me? I swear by Allah, I did not tell a lie on 'Uthmān, nor did 'Uthmān tell a lie on the Prophet (may peace be upon him), but that day when I was afflicted by it, I became angry and forgot to say them.

(5070) A similar tradition has been transmitted by Abān b. 'Uthmān, from 'Uthmān, from the Prophet (may peace be upon him). This version does not mention the story of paralysis.

(5071) ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abl Bakrah said that he told his father: O my father! I hear you supplicating every morning: “O Allah! grant me soundness in my body; O Allah! grant me soundness in my hearing; O Allah! grant me soundness in my sight; there is no god but Thee,” you repeat them three times in the morning and three times in the evening. He said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) using these words as a supplication and I like to follow his practice.

The transmitter ‘Abbās said in this version: And you say: “O Allah! I seek refuge in Thee from infidelity and poverty; O Allah! I seek refuge in Thee from punishment in the grave; there is no god but Thee”; you repeat them three times in the morning and three times in the evening, and use them as a supplication. I like to follow his practice. He said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The supplications to be used by one who is distressed are: “O Allah! Thy mercy is what I hope for. Do not abandon me to myself for an instant, but put all my affairs in good order for me. There is no god but Thou.” Some transmitters added more than others.

(5072) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone says a hundred times in the morning: “Glory be to Allah, the Sublime, and I begin with praise of Him,” and says likewise in the evening, no one from the creatures will bring anything like the one which he will bring.\(4427\)

Chapter 1818

WHAT SHOULD A MAN SAY WHEN HE SIGHS THE NEW MOON?

(5073) Qatādah told that he was informed that when the Prophet of Allah (may peace be upon him) saw the new moon, he said: “A new moon of good and right guidance; a new moon of good and right guidance; a new moon of good and right guidance. I believe in Him Who created you” three times. He would then say: “Praise be to Allah Who has made such and such a month to pass and has brought such and such a month.”

\(4427\) Muslim’s and Bukhārī’s version has: “only one who said what he said, or more than it, will bring anything more excellent than he on the Day of Resurrection".
Chapter 1819

WHAT SHOULD A MAN SAY WHEN HE GOES OUT OF HIS HOUSE?

(5075) Umm Salamah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) never went out of my house without raising his eye to the sky and saying: “O Allah! I seek refuge in Thee lest I stray or be led astray, or slip or made to slip, or cause injustice, or suffer injustice, or do wrong, or have wrong done to me.”

(5076) Anas reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a man goes out of his house and says: “In the name of Allah, I trust in Allah; there is no might and no power but in Allah,” the following will be said to him at that time: “You are guided, defended and protected.” The devils will go far from him and another devil will say: How can you deal with a man who has been guided, defended and protected?

Chapter 1820

WHAT SHOULD A MAN SAY WHEN HE GOES INTO HIS HOUSE?

(5077) Abū Mālik al-Ash’ārī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a man goes into his house, he should say: “O Allah! I ask Thee for good both when entering and when going out; in the name of Allah we have entered, and in the name of Allah we have gone out, and in Allah or Lord do we trust.” He should then greet his family.

Chapter 1821

WHAT SHOULD A MAN SAY WHEN A STORMY WIND BLOWS?

(5078) Abū Hurairah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)

4428. He turned his face to prevent from its evil. It is said that he did so seeing the full moon, for it becomes dark when it is eclipsed.
4429. Both these traditions are mursal, i.e. the link of the Companion is missing.
4430. Some read as above, but others read “or lead others astray”.

say: The wind comes from Allah’s mercy. Salamah’s version has: It is Allah’s mercy: it (sometimes) brings blessing and (sometimes) brings punishment. So when you see it, do not revile it, but ask Allah for some of its good, and seek refuge in Allah from its evil.4431

(5079) ‘A’ishah, wife of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), said: I never saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) laugh fully to such an extent that I could see his uvula. He would only smile, and when he saw clouds or wind, his face showed signs (of fear). I asked him: Apostle of Allah! when the people see the cloud, they rejoice, hoping for that it may contain rain, and I notice that when you see it, (the signs of) abomination on your face. He replied: ‘A’ishah! what gives me safety from the fact that it might contain punishment? A people were punished by the wind.4432 When those people saw the punishment,4433 they said: This is a cloud which would give us rain.4434

(5080) ‘A’ishah said: When the Prophet (may peace be upon him) saw a cloud formation in the horizon of the sky, he left work, even if he were at prayer, and then would say: “O Allah! I seek refuge in Thee from its evil.” If it rained, he would say: “O Allah! send a beneficial downpour.”

Chapter 1822

RAIN

(5081) Anas said: A shower of rain fell on us when we were with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went out and removed his garment till some of the rain fell on him. We asked him: Apostle of Allah! why did you do this? He replied: Because it has recently been with its Lord.

Chapter 1823

COCKS AND BEASTS

(5082) Zaid b. Khālid reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as

4431. This shows that one should not curse the wind. It brings rain, but in the past the people of ‘Ād were destroyed by the wind; cf Qur’an xlvi. 24. They rejected the Prophet Hūd.
4432. They were the people of ‘Ād.
4433. They were destroyed by the wind. A cloud was sent towards their valleys and when they saw it, they said: This is a cloud formation which would give us rain.
4434. xlvi. 24.
saying: Do not curse the cock, for it awakens for prayer.

(5083) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When you hear the cocks crowing, ask Allah for some of His grace, for they have seen as angel; but when you hear an ass braying, seek refuge in Allah from the devil, for it has seen the devil.

Chapter 1824

THE BRAYING OF ASSES AND THE BARKING OF DOGS

(5084) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When you hear the barking of dogs and the braying of asses at night, seek refuge in Allah, for they see which you do not see.

(5085) Jābir b. 'Abd Allah and 'All b. 'Umar b. Ḥusain b. 'All reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not go out much when there are few people about, for Allah the Exalted scatters abroad of His beasts in that hour (according to Ibn Marwān's version). Ibn Marwān's version has: For Allah has creatures. He then mentioned the barking of dogs and braying of asses in a similar manner. He added in his version: Ibn al-Hāfid said: Sharaḥbil b. al-Ḥājib told me on the authority of Jābir b. 'Abd Allah from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) similar to it.

Chapter 1825

WHEN A CHILD IS BORN, ADHĀN (CALL TO PRAYER) SHOULD BE CALLED IN ITS EAR

(5086) Abū Rāfi' said: I saw the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) uttering the call to prayer (adhān) in the ear of al-Ḥasan b. 'All when Fāṭimah gave birth to him.4435

(5087) 'Ā'ishah said: Boys used to be brought to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and he would invoke blessings on them. Yūsuf added: "and soften some dates and rub their palates with them". He did not mention "blessings".

(5088) 'Ā'ishah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: Have the mugharribūn been seen (or some other word) among you? I asked:

4435. This shows that uttering adhān in the ear of a child after its birth is recommended. 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz used to utter adhān in the right ear and igāmah in the left ear. This is also attributed to the Prophet (may peace be upon him).
What do the *mugharribūn* mean? He replied: They are those in whom is a strain of the jinn.\textsuperscript{4436}

\textbf{Chapter 1826}

\textbf{ON A MAN WHO SEEKS REFUGE FROM ANOTHER}

\textsuperscript{5089} Ibn ʿAbbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone asks (you) for refuge for the sake of Allah, give him refuge; and if anyone asks you (for something) for the pleasure of Allah, give him. ‘Ubaid Allah said: If anyone asks you for the sake of Allah.

\textsuperscript{5090} Ibn ʿUmar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone asks you refuge for Allah’s sake, give him refuge; and if anyone asks you (for something) for Allah’s sake, give him. Sahl and Sulaimān said: If anyone calls you, respond to him. The agreed version goes: If you do not afford to compensate him, pray Allah for him until you know that you have compensated him.

\textbf{Chapter 1827}

\textbf{TOward Off THE EVIL PROMPTINGs}

\textsuperscript{5091} Abu Zumail said: I asked Ibn ʿAbbās, saying: What is that I find in my breast? He asked: What is it? I replied: I swear by Allah, I cannot speak about it. He asked me: Is it something doubtful? and he laughed. He then said: No one could escape that, until Allah, the Exalted, revealed: “If thou went in doubt as to what we have revealed unto thee, and ask those who have been reading the Book from before thee.” \textsuperscript{4437} He said: If you find something in your heart, say: “He is the First and the Last, the Evident and the Immanent, and He has full knowledge of all things.” \textsuperscript{4438}

\textsuperscript{4436} *Mugharribūn*. This happens if a man neglects to mention Allah when he has sexual intercourse with his wife. Literally it means that they are far away from the remembrance of Allah. Or it means that they have an alien vein and distant parentage. The jinn command the people to commit fornication, and their children are not lawful. Some say that *mugharribūn* are those children that are born of the union of a woman and a male jinn. But this is unusual. By mentioning this tradition Abu Dāwūd means that uttering *adkān* in the ear of a child after its birth protects it from the evil of the jinn. (‘Awn al-Muḥbūd, IV, 489).

\textsuperscript{4437} Qur’ān x. 94.

\textsuperscript{4438} Qur’ān, lii. 3.
(5092) Abū Hurairah said: His companions came to him and said: Apostle of Allah! we have thoughts which we cannot dare talk about and we do not like that we have them or talk about them. He said: Have you experienced that? They replied: Yes. He said: That is clear faith.4439

(5093) Ibn ‘Abbas said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! one of us has thoughts of such nature that he would rather be reduced to charcoal than speak about them. He said: Allah is Most Great, Allah is Most Great, Allah is Most Great. Praise be to Allah Who has reduced the guile of the devil to evil prompting.4440

Ibn Qudāmah said “reduced his matter” instead of “reduced his guile”.

Chapter 1828

ON A MAN (SLAVE) WHO FALSELY ATTRIBUTES HIMSELF TO A MAN AS HIS EMANCIPATOR WHO IS NOT HIS EMANCIPATOR

(5094) Sa‘d b. Mālik said: My ears heard it and my heart remembered it from Muḥammad (may peace be upon him) who said: If a man claims to be the son of a man who is not his father, Paradise will be forbidden for him. He said: I then met Abu Bakrah and mentioned it to him. He said: My ears heard it and my heart remembered it from Muḥammad (peace be upon him).4441

‘Āsim said: I said: Abū ‘Uthmān! two men testified before you. Who are they? He said: One of them is the one who is first to shoot arrow in the path of Allah or in the path of Islam, that is to say: Sa‘d b. Mālik. The other is the one who came from al-Ṭā‘if with ten and some men on foot. He then mentioned his excellence.

Abū Dāwūd said: When al-Nufail mentioned this tradition, he said: I swear by Allah, this is sweeter with me than honey, that is to say, his way of transmission.

Abū ‘All said: I heard Abū Dāwūd say: I heard Ahmad say: The people of Kūfah have no light in their traditions. I did not see them like the people of Baṣrah. They learnt it from Shu‘bah.

(5095) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying:

4439. Evil promptings are suggestions from the devil and similar other notions are forgiven if a man does not believe in them and talk about them.

4440. The devil could do more harm than suggesting evil to him. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) thanked Allah for the fact that he reduced his guile to no more than evil thoughts.

4441. This does not apply to a man who is known as a son of another man than his father, but he himself attributes himself to his father. He does not take that man as his father. This was Miqdād b. al-Aswād. He was the adopted son of al-Aswād.
If a man becomes the client of any people without the permission of his patrons (i.e. those who have freed him), on him will be the curse of Allah, of angels and of all people; no obligatory or supererogatory worship will be accepted from him.\footnote{Mawli is the man who emancipates a slave or purchases his freedom. If the slave has no relatives, he inherits from him. Now if a slave makes another man his patron, the man who freed him will be deprived of his inheritance. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to attribute one's freedom to any man other than the one who actually emancipated him. Mawli sometimes means the man who has been emancipated, i.e. slave.}

\footnote{This shows that a Muslim should not take pride in his ancestry. This is a custom of pre-Islamic time. Man is honourable in Allah's sight by his good actions. The Qur'an says: "The one who is most honourable in Allah's estimation is the most pious" (xlix. 13).}

\footnote{It means that he committed a sin and was destroyed like a camel which fell into a well, and it is unable to come out of it. This shows that one should not support one's people or tribe in wrongdoing}

\footnote{4442. Mawli is the man who emancipates a slave or purchases his freedom. If the slave has no relatives, he inherits from him. Now if a slave makes another man his patron, the man who freed him will be deprived of his inheritance. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to attribute one's freedom to any man other than the one who actually emancipated him. Mawli sometimes means the man who has been emancipated, i.e. slave.}

\footnote{4443. This shows that a Muslim should not take pride in his ancestry. This is a custom of pre-Islamic time. Man is honourable in Allah's sight by his good actions. The Qur'an says: "The one who is most honourable in Allah's estimation is the most pious" (xlix. 13).}

\footnote{4444. It means that he committed a sin and was destroyed like a camel which fell into a well, and it is unable to come out of it. This shows that one should not support one's people or tribe in wrongdoing}

\footnote{4442. Mawli is the man who emancipates a slave or purchases his freedom. If the slave has no relatives, he inherits from him. Now if a slave makes another man his patron, the man who freed him will be deprived of his inheritance. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to attribute one's freedom to any man other than the one who actually emancipated him. Mawli sometimes means the man who has been emancipated, i.e. slave.}

(5096) Anas b. Mâlik reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone pretends to be the son of a man other than his father, or attributes his freedom to people other than those who set him free, on him will be the curse of Allah that will continue till the Day of Resurrection.

\textbf{Chapter 1829\hfill PRIDE OF ANCESTRY\hfill}

(5097) Abû Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah, Most High, has removed from you the pride of the pre-Islamic period and its boasting in ancestors. One is only a pious believer or a miserable sinner. You are sons of Adam, and Adam came from dust. Let the people cease to boast about their ancestors. They are merely fuel in \textit{jahannam}; or they will certainly be of less account with Allah than the beetle which rolls dung with its nose.\footnote{This shows that a Muslim should not take pride in his ancestry. This is a custom of pre-Islamic time. Man is honourable in Allah's sight by his good actions. The Qur'an says: "The one who is most honourable in Allah's estimation is the most pious" (xlix. 13).}

\textbf{Chapter 1830\hfill PARTY SPIRIT\hfill}

(5098) ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ûd said: If anyone helps his people in an unrighteous cause, he is like a camel which falls into a well and is pulled out by its tail.\footnote{This shows that a Muslim should not take pride in his ancestry. This is a custom of pre-Islamic time. Man is honourable in Allah's sight by his good actions. The Qur'an says: "The one who is most honourable in Allah's estimation is the most pious" (xlix. 13).}

(5099) ‘Abd Allah b. Mas‘ûd said: I went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) when he was in a skin tent. He then mentioned something similar to it.

(5100) Wâthilah b. al-Asqa‘ said: I asked: Apostle of Allah! what is party spirit? He replied: That you should help your people in wrongdoing.
Chapter 1831

If a Man Loves Another Man, He Should Inform Him About It

(5101) Surāqah b. Mālik b. Ju'sham al-Mudlajj said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave us an address and said: The best of you is the one who defends his tribe, so long as he commits no sin.4445

Abū Dāwūd said: Abū Ayyūb b. Suwaid is weak.

(5102) Jubair b. Muṭ'im reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who summons others to party-spirit does not belong to us; and he who dies upholding party spirit does not belong to us.4446

(5103) Abū Mūsā reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The son of a sister of a people belongs to them.

(5104) 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī 'Uqbah quoted his father Abī 'Uqbah who was a client from the people of Persia as saying: I was present at Uhud along with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him), and on smiting one of the polytheists I said: Take this from me who is the young Persian. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then turned to me and said: Why did you not say: Take this from me who is the young Ansārī?4447

Chapter 1831

If a Man Loves Another Man, He Should Inform Him About It

(5105) Al-Miqdām b. Ma'dikarib, who is the Companion of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), reported him as saying: When a man loves his brother, he should tell him that he loves him.4448

(5106) Anas b. Mālik said: A man was with the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and a man passed by him and said: Apostle of Allah! I love this man. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then asked: Have you informed him? He replied: No. He said: Inform him. He then went to him and said: I love you for

4445 A man is allowed to help his people or tribe in good works or defending them against injustice done to them.

4446 Party spirit is such an evil quality that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) disowned a man who had it. This practice was in vogue in pre-Islamic Arabia, and Islam annihilated it. The Arabs in pre-Islamic days helped their tribes whether they were right or wrong. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) taught that a Muslim should help the one who is in the right.

4447 The people of Persia in those days were infidels. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) did not like his attribution to them. He suggested to attribute himself to the Ansār who were Muslims and who helped him.

4448 If he tells him about his love for him, his love will increase and both with be sincere friends.
Allah's sake. He replied: May He for Whose sake you love me love you!

(5107) 'Abd Allah b. al-Ṣāmit told that Abū Dharr said: Apostle of Allah! a man loves some people, but he cannot do work like their work. He replied: You, Abū Dharr, will be with those whom you love. He said: I love Allah and His Apostle. He said: You will be with those whom you love. Abū Dharr then repeated it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) also repeated it.

(5108) Anas b. Mālik said: I never saw the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) so happy about anything as I saw them happy about this thing. A man said: Apostle of Allah! a man loves another man for the good work which he does, but he himself cannot do like it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: A man will be with those whom he loves.

Chapter 1832
CONSULTATION

(5109) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who is consulted is trustworthy.4449

Chapter 1833
ON A MAN WHO GUIDES TO A GOOD (DEED)

(5110) Abū Mas‘ūd al-Anṣārī said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! I have been left without a mount. So give me a mount. He replied: I have no mount to give, but go to so and so; he may perhaps give you a mount. He then went to him and he gave him a mount. He came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and informed him about it. Thereupon the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If anyone guides someone to a good (deed), he will get the reward like the reward of the one who does it.4450

4449. *Mashwarah* (mutual consultation) is a basic character of conducting affairs in a Muslim society. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was ordered in the Qurʾān to consult his Companions in important affairs. Now the man who is consulted should give his opinion sincerely and after deep reflection. A man who consults another man has full reliance on him. Therefore, he should keep his matter secret and should be trustworthy and sincere to him.

4450. If a man guides another man to a good deed, and he does it, the man who guided him will also get reward like his reward, although he does not do it himself.
Chapter 1834

ABSTENTION FROM EVIL DESIRE

(5111) Abū al-Dardā' reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying:
Your love for a thing causes blindness and deafness.4451

Chapter 1835

INTERCESSION

(5112) Abū Mūsā reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying:
Make intercession to me, you will be rewarded, for Allah decrees what He wishes by
the tongue of His Prophet.4452

(5113) Mu‘āwiyyah said: Make intercession, you will be rewarded, for I purposely
delay a matter so that you intercede and then you are rewarded. The Apostle of
Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If you make intercession, you will be rewarded.

(5114) A similar tradition has also been transmitted by Abū Mūsā from the Pro-
phet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of transmitters.

Chapter 1836

IF A MAN WRITES A LETTER, HE SHOULD BEGIN IT
WITH HIS NAME

(5115) Some of the children of al-‘Alā’ b. al-Ḥaḍramī said: Al-‘Alā’ b. al-
Ḥaḍramī was the governor of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) at al-Baḥrāin,
and when he wrote to him he began with his own name.4453

4451. It means that a man becomes blind and deaf out of love for a thing. This tradition
suggests that a man should be careful in loving a thing. He should distinguish between good and
bad and should avoid what is evil. This tradition is said to be weak

4452. If a man intercedes the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about another Muslim, he
has sympathy with him. Therefore, he will be rewarded for his intercession. But he should not
think that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) will surely accept his intercession and will decide
in his favour. He might be a wrongdoer and the Prophet (may peace be upon him) can decide
against him. His decision is according to the decree of Allah.

4453. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) used to write letters in this way, i.e. first he
wrote his name and then the name of the addressee. It is recommended (ṣawmuh) to write letters in
this manner.
(5116) Ibn al-'Alā' said: Al-'Alā' b. al-Ḥadrāmī wrote to the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and he began with his name.

Chapter 1837

HOW TO WRITE A LETTER TO AN UNBELIEVER?

(5117) Ibn 'Abbas said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) wrote a letter to Heraclius: "From Muḥammad, the Apostle of Allah, to Hiraql (Heraclius), Chief of the Byzantines. Peace be to those who follow the guidance."

Ibn Yabyā reported on the authority of Ibn 'Abbas that Abū Sufyān said to him: We then came to see Hiraql (Heraclius) who seated us before him. He then called for the letter from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). Its contents were: "In the name of Allah, the Compassionate, the Merciful. From Muḥammad, the Apostle of Allah, to Hiraql, chief of Byzantines. Peace be to those who follow the guidance. To proceed."

Chapter 1838

KINDNESS TO THE PARENTS

(5118) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: A son does not repay what he owes to his father unless he buys him and emancipates him if he finds him in slavery.4454

(5119) 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar said: A woman was my wife and I loved her, but 'Umar hated her. He said to me: Divorce her, but I refused. 'Umar then went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and mentioned that to him. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Divorce her.4455

(5120) Bahz b. Ḥakīm on his father's authority said that his grandfather said: I said: Apostle of Allah! to whom should I show kindness? He replied: Your mother, next your mother, next your mother, and then comes your father, and then your relatives in order of relationship. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: If a man asks his slave whom he freed for giving him property which is surplus with

4454. It is a great act of kindness to purchase the father if he is a slave and then to emancipate him.

4455. This shows that one should obey the parents. But the parents should order their children for a thing which is beneficial for them.
him and he refuses to give it to him, the surplus property which he refused to give will be called on the Day of Resurrection as a large bald snake.

Abū Dāwūd said: *Aqrā*' means a snake whose hair of the head were removed on account of poison.

(5121) Kulaib b. Manfa'ah said that his grandfather told that he went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Apostle of Allah! to whom should I show kindness? He said: Your mother, your father, your sister, your brother and the slave whom you set free and who is your relative, a due binding (on you), and a tie of relationship which should be joined.

(5122) 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr (b. al-'Ās) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: A man's reviling of his parents is one of the grave sins. He was asked: Apostle of Allah! how does a man revile his parents? He replied: He reviles the father of a man who then reviles his father, and he reviles a man's mother and he reviles his.

(5123) Abū Usaid Mālik b. Rabl'ah al-Sā'id said: While we were with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) a man of Banū Salamah came to him and said: Apostle of Allah! is there any kindness left that I can do to my parents after their death? He replied: Yes, you can invoke blessings on them, forgiveness for them, carry out their final instructions after their death, join ties of relationship which are dependent on them, and honour their friends.

(5124) Ibn 'Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: One of the finest acts of kindness is for a man to treat his father's friends in a kindly way after he has departed.

(5125) Abū al-Ṭufail said: I saw the Prophet (may peace be upon him) distributing flesh at Ji'irrānāh, and I was a boy in those days bearing the bone of the camel, and when a woman who came forward approached the Prophet (may peace be upon him), he spread out his cloak for her, and she sat on it. I asked: Who is she? The people said: She is his foster-mother.

(5126) ʿUmar b. al-Sā'ib told that one day when the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was sitting, his foster-father came forward. He spread out a part of his garment and he sat on it. Then his mother came forward to him and he spread out the other side of his garment and she sat on it. Again, his foster-brother came forward. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) stood for him and seated him before himself.

4456. When a man reviles another's parents and he retaliates by reviling his, the one who initiated is responsible for having his parents reviled by the other.
Chapter 1839

EXCELLENCE OF A MAN WHO CARES FOR AN ORPHAN

(5127) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone has a female child, and does not bury her alive, or slight her, or prefer his children (i.e. the male ones) to her, Allah will bring him into Paradise. ‘Uthmān did not mention “male children”.

(5128) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone cares for three daughters, disciplines them, marries them, and does good to them, he will go to Paradise.

(5129) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Suhail through a different chain of narrators to the same effect. This version has: “three sisters, or three daughters, or two daughters, or two sisters”.

(5130) ‘Awf b. Mālik al-‘Ashja‘I reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: I and a woman whose cheeks have become black shall on the Day of Resurrection be like these two (pointing to the middle and forefinger), i.e. a woman of rank and beauty who has been bereft of her husband and devotes herself to her fatherless children till they go their separate ways or die.

Chapter 1840

ON A MAN WHO TAKES THE RESPONSIBILITY OF AN ORPHAN

(5131) Sahl (b. Sa‘d) reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying; I and the one who takes the responsibility of an orphan will be in Paradise thus, and he joined his middle finger and forefinger.

Chapter 1841

RIGHTS OF NEIGHBOURHOOD

(5132) ‘A’ishah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Gabriel kept on commending the neighbour to me so that I thought he would

4457. The Arabs used to hate female children in pre-Islamic time. They buried them alive. They liked to have male children who could fight in wars and earn booty for them. Islam forbade this practice. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) mentioned the excellence of supporting female children.

4458. She became black because of the distress she had endured.

4459. Bāsīl: it means to grow up or become independent and separate from each other.
(5133) Mujahid said that ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr slaughtered a sheep and said: Have you presented a gift from it to my neighbour, the Jew, for I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Gabriel kept on commending the neighbour to me so that I thought he would make an heir?

(5134) Abu Hurairah said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) complaining against his neighbour. He said: Go and have patience. He again came to him twice or thrice. He then said: Go and throw your property in the way. So he threw his property in the way and the people began to ask him and he would tell them about him. The people then began to curse him: May Allah do with him so and so! Then his neighbour came to him and said: Return, you will not see from me anything which you dislike.

(5135) Abu Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who believes in Allah and in the Last Day should honour his guest; he who believes in Allah and in the Last Day should not harm his neighbour; he who believes in Allah and in the Last Day should speak good or keep silence.

(5136) ‘A’ishah said: I asked: Apostle of Allah! I have two neighbours. With which of them should I begin? He replied: Begin with the one whose door is nearer to you.

Abu Dawud said: Shu‘bah said about this tradition: Talhah is a man of the Quraish.

Chapter 1842

RIGHTS OF A SLAVE

(5137) ‘All said: The last words which the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) spoke were: Prayer, prayer; fear Allah about those whom your right hands possess.4461

(5138) Ma‘rūr b. Suwaid said: I saw Abū Dharr at Rabadha.4462 He was wearing a thick cloak, and his slave also wore a similar one. He said: The people said: Abū Dharr! (it would be better) if you could take the cloak which your slave wore,

4460. This shows that one should have good terms with one’s neighbour. It is necessary to do good with him, and to help him.

4461. He left the last instructions about praying regularly and looking after the rights of the slaves.

4462. Rabadha. A place not far from Medina.
and you combined that with, and it would be a pair of garments (hullah) and you would clothe him with another garment. He said: Abū Dharr said: I abused a man whose mother was a non-Arab and I reviled him for his mother. He complained against me to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He said: Abū Dharr! you are a man who has a characteristic of pre-Islamic days. He said: They are your brethren; Allah has given you superiority over them; sell those who do not please you and do not punish Allah’s creatures.

(5139) Ma'rūr b. Suwaid said: We called on Abū Dharr at al-Rabadhah. He wore a cloak and his slave also wore a similar one. We said: Abū Dharr! if you took the cloak of your slave and combined it with your cloak, so that it could be a pair of garments (hullah) and clothed him in another garment, (it would be better). He said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: They are your brethren. Allah has put them under your authority; so he who has his brother under his authority must feed him from what he eats and clothe him with what he wears, and not impose on him work which is too much for him, but if he does so, he must help him.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ibn Numair transmitted it from al-A’mash in a similar way.

(5140) Abū Mas‘ūd al-Anṣārī said: When I was beating a servant of mine, I heard a voice behind me saying: Know, Abū Mas‘ūd—Ibn al-Muthannā said: “twice”—that Allah has more power over you than you have over him. I turned round and saw that it was the Prophet (may peace be upon him). I said: Apostle of Allah! he is free for Allah’s sake. He said: If you had not done it, fire would have burned you or “the fire would have touched you”.

(5141) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-A’mash in a similar way to the same effect through a different chain of narrators.

(5142) Abū Dharr reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Feed those of your slaves who please you from what you eat and clothe them with what you clothe yourselves, but sell those who do not please you and do not punish Allah’s creatures.

(5143) Rāfi‘ b. Makith who accompanied the Prophet (may peace be upon him) at al-Ḥudaibiyah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Treating those under one’s authority will produce prosperity, but an evil nature produces evil fortune.\textsuperscript{4464}

\textsuperscript{4463} Hullah. It means the two garments known as the isār (lower garment), and ridā’ (a cloak which covers the whole body).

\textsuperscript{4464} If a man treats his servants and slaves well, they will work hard, and it will produce prosperity. But his ill treatment will discourage them. That will bring him evil fortune.
(5144) Rāfi’ b. Makīth who was from the tribe of Juhainah, and who accompanied the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) at al-Hudaibiyah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Treating those under one’s authority well produces prosperity, but an evil nature produces evil fortune.

(5145) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and asked: Apostle of Allah! how often shall I forgive a servant? He gave no reply, so the man repeated what he had said, but he still kept silence. When he asked a third time, he replied: Forgive him seventy times daily.

(5146) Abū Hurairah said: Abū al-Qāsim, the Prophet of Atonement (may peace be upon him), said to me: If anyone reviles his slave when he is innocent of what he said, he will be beaten on the Day of Resurrection.

The transmitter Mu’ammal said: ‘Īsā narrated it to us from al-Fudail, that is, Ibn Ghazwān.

(5147) Hilāl b. Yassāf said: We were staying in the house of Suwaid b. Muqarrin. There was among us an old man who was hot-tempered. He had a slave-girl with him. He gave a slap on her face. I never saw Suwaid more angry than on that day. He said: There is no alternative for you except to free her. I was the seventh child in order of Muqarrin and we had only a female servant. The youngest of us gave a slap on her face. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) commanded us to set her free.

(5148) Mu‘āwiyah b. Suwaid b. Muqarrin said: I slapped a freed slave of ours. My father called him and me and said: Take retaliation on him. We, the people of Banū Muqarrin, were seven during the time of the Prophet (may peace be upon him), and we had only a female servant. A man of us slapped her. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Set her free. They said: We have no other servant than her. He said: She must serve them till they become well off. When they become well off, they should set her free.

(5149) Zadhān said: I came to Ibn ‘Umar when he set his slave free. He took a stick or something else from the earth and said: For me there is no reward even equivalent to this. I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: If anyone slaps or beats his slave the atonement due from him is to set him free.

Chapter 1843

ON A SLAVE WHO SHOWS SINCERE CONDUCT

(5150) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When a slave acts sincerely towards his master and worships Allah well, he will have a double reward.
Chapter 1844

ON A MAN WHO CORRUPTS THE SLAVE AGAINST HIS MASTER

(5151) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone corrupts (instigates) the wife of a man or his slave (against him), he is not from us.\footnote{4465}

Chapter 1845

ASKING PERMISSION TO ENTER A HOUSE

(5152) Anas b. Mālik said: A man peeped into some of the apartments of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). The Prophet (may peace be upon him) got up taking an arrowhead or arrowheads.\footnote{4466} He said: I can still picture myself looking at the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) when he was exploring to pierce him.\footnote{4467}

(5153) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone peeps into the house of a people without their permission and he knocks out his eye, no responsibility is incurred for his eye.

(5154) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one has a look into the house, then there is no (need of) permission.\footnote{4468}

(5155) Huza‘il said: A man came. ‘Uthmān’s version has: Sa‘d b. Abī Waqqās came. He stood at the door of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) asking his permission. He stood at the door. ‘Uthmān’s version has: (He stood) facing the door. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to him: Away from it, (stand) this side or that side. Asking permission is meant to escape from the look of an eye.\footnote{4469}

(5156) A similar tradition has already been transmitted by Ṭalḥah b. Muṣarrif from a man from Sa‘d from the Prophet (may peace be upon him) through a different chain of narrators.

\footnote{4465} This shows that one should not corrupt or instigate the wife or the slave of a man against him. It will spoil their relations.

\footnote{4466} The transmitter is doubtful about the exact wordings.

\footnote{4467} This tradition shows that before entering the house, one should ask permission.

\footnote{4468} It is necessary to ask permission before entering a house. If anyone peeps into the house, or has a look into it, there is no need of permission. It is a grave sin to look into a house before entering it.

\footnote{4469} There were no curtains on the door of the houses at that time. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked him to stand at the left or right side of the door. He forbade to face the door squarely so that one might not have his look in the house.
Chapter 1846

HOW SHOULD A MAN ASK PERMISSION?

(5157) Kaladah b. Hanbal said: Šafwān b. Umayyah sent him with some milk, a young gazelle and some small cucumbers to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) when he was in the upper part of Mecca. I entered but I did not give a salutation. He said: Go back and say: “Peace be upon you”! This happened after Šafwān b. Umayyah had embraced Islam. ‘Amr said: Ibn Šafwān told me all this on the authority of Kaladah b. Ḥanbal, and he did not say: I heard it from him.


(5158) Rib‘ī said that a man of Banū ‘Āmir told that he asked the Prophet (may peace be upon him) for permission (to enter the house) when he was in the house, saying: May I enter? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to his servant: Go out to this (man) and teach him how to ask permission to enter the house, and say to him: “Say: Peace be upon you. May I enter?” The man heard it and said: Peace be upon you! May I enter? The Prophet (may peace be upon him) permitted him and he entered.

(5159) Rib‘ī b. Ḥirāsh said: I was told that a man of Banū ‘Āmir asked the Prophet (may peace be upon him) for permission to enter the house. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect.

Abū Dāwūd said: Similarly, Musaddad transmitted it to us saying that Abū ‘Awānah related it to us from Mansūr. He did not say: “a man of Banū ‘Āmir”.

(5160) Rib‘ī said that a man of Banū ‘Āmir told him that he asked permission of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) to enter the house. He related the tradition to the same effect, saying: I heard it and so I said: Peace be upon you. May I enter?

Chapter 1847

HOW MANY TIMES SHOULD A MAN ASK PERMISSION TO ENTER THE HOUSE?

(5161) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: I was sitting in one of the meetings of the Ansūr. Abū Mūsā came terrified. We asked him: What makes you terrified? He replied: ‘Umar sent for me; so I went to him and asked his permission three times, but he did not permit me (to enter), so I came back. He asked: What has prevented
you from coming to me? I replied: I came and asked permission three times, but it was not granted to me (so I returned). The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) has said: When one of you asks permission three times and it is not granted to him, he should go away. He (‘Umar) said: Establish the proof of it. So Abū Sa‘īd said: The youngest of the people will accompany you. So Abū Sa‘īd got up with him and testified.4470

(5162) Abū Mūsā said that he came to ‘Umar and asked permission three times saying: Abū Mūsā asks permission, al-Ash’arī asks permission, and ‘Abd Allah b. Qais asks permission, but it was not granted to him. So he went away and ‘Umar sent for him, saying: What did you return? He replied: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: When one of you asks permission three times and it is not granted to him, he should go away. He said: Establish the proof of it. He went, came back, and said: This is Ubayy. Ubayy said: ‘Umar, do not be an agony for the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). ‘Umar said: I shall not be an agony for the Companions of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

(5163) ‘Ubaid b. ‘Umair said: Abū Mūsā asked ‘Umar for permission to enter the house. This version has: He went with Abū Sa‘īd who testified to it. He said: Did this practice of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) remain hidden from me? My engagement in the transaction in the market made me oblivious of it. Now give me salutation as you wish, and do not ask permission.

(5164) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Mūsā in a similar way through a different chain of narrators. This version has: ‘Umar said to Abū Mūsā: I do not blame you, but the matter of transmitting a tradition from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) is serious.

(5165) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Mūsā through a different chain of narrators in a similar manner. This version has: ‘Umar said to Abū Mūsā: I do not blame you, but I am afraid that the people may talk carelessly about the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

(5166) Qais b. Sa‘īd said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to visit us in our house, and said: “Peace and Allah’s mercy be upon you! Sa‘īd returned the salutation in a lower tone. Qais said: I said: Do you not grant permission to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) to enter? He said: Leave

4470. It is commendable to ask permission three times to enter the house. One should salute the man inside the house three times. If there is no response or the permission is not granted to him, he should return. If there is no possibility to give salutation to the man inside the house, he should ask his permission by ringing the bell or some other way.
Asking Permission by Knocking at the Door

Ch. 1848

him, he will give us many salutations. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then said: Peace and Allah's mercy be upon you! Sa'd again responded him in a lower tone. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) again said: Peace and Allah's mercy be upon you! So the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) went away. Sa'd went after him and said: Apostle of Allah! I heard your salutations and responded you in a lower tone so that you might give us many salutations. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) returned with him. Sa'd then offered to prepare wash-water for him, and he took a bath. He then gave him a long wrapper dyed with saffron or waws and he wrapped it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then raised his hands and said: O Allah, have Thy blessings and mercy on the family of Sa'd b. 'Ubādah! The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) then took meals. When he intended to return, Sa'd brought near him an ass which was covered with a blanket. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) mounted it. Sa'd said: O Qais, accompany the Apostle of Allah. Qais said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said to me: Ride. But I refused. He again said: Either ride or go away. He said: So I went away.

Hishām said: Abū Marwān (transmitted) from Muḥammad b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. As'ad b. Zurārah.

Abū Dawūd said: 'Umar b. ‘Abd al-Wāhid and Ibn Samā‘ah transmitted it from al-Auzā‘I in mursal form (the link of the Companion being missing), and they did not mention Qais b. Sa’d.

(5167) ‘Abd Allah b. Busr said: When the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to some people's door, he did not face it squarely, but faced the right or left corner, and said: Peace be upon you! peace be upon you! That was because there were no curtains on the doors of the houses at that time.

Chapter 1848

ASKING PERMISSION BY KNOCKING AT THE DOOR

(5168) Jābir said that he went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about the debt of my father. He said: I knocked at the door. He asked: Who is there? I replied: It is I. He said: I, I, as though he disapproved of it.

(5169) Nāfi‘ b. ‘Abd al-Ḥārith said: I went out with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).
peace be upon him) until I entered a garden, he said: Keep on closing the door. The door was then closed. I then said: Who is there? He then narrated the rest of the tradition.

Abū Dāwūd said: That is to say, the tradition of Abū Mūsā al-Ash'ārī. In this version he said: “He then knocked at the door.”

Chapter 1849

IF A MAN IS INVITED, IT WILL BE CONSIDERED PERMISSION

(5170) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A man’s messenger sent to another indicates his permission to enter.4474

(5171) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you is invited to take meals and comes along with the messenger, that serves as permission for him to enter.4475

Abū ‘All al-Lūlū’ said: I heard Abū Dāwūd say: Qatādah did not hear anything from Abū Rāfi’.4476

Chapter 1850

ASKING PERMISSION TO ENTER THE HOUSE ON THREE OCCASIONS OF UNDRESS APPOINTED BY THE QUR’ĀN

(5172) Ibn ‘Abbās said: Most of the people did not act upon the verse4477 about asking permission to enter the house. I have commanded this slave-girl of mine to ask my permission to enter.4478

Abū Dāwūd said: ‘Aṭā’ also transmitted it from Ibn ‘Abbās in a similar way. He

4474. This shows that when a man is invited and comes along with the messenger, that serves as permission for him to enter.

4475. He should ask permission if there are women in the house. Moreover, if the man who was invited became late and did not reach at the appointed time, he should ask permission. Besides, if both the time and place are changed, in that case he should also ask permission.

4476. Some other traditions recorded by al-Bukhārī indicate that Qatādah heard traditions from Abū Rāfi’.

4477: Qur’ān, xxiv 58.

4478. In verse xxiv. 59 the Qur’ān has commanded to ask permission to enter the house on three occasions: before morning prayer, while the people doff their clothes for the noonday heat, and after the late-night prayer. These are three times of undress. Ibn ‘Abbās suggests that people have abandoned to act upon this verse. But he himself ordered his slave-girl to ask his permission to enter the house on these occasions.
commanded to act upon this.

(5173) 'Ikrimah said: A group of people of Iraq said: Ibn 'Abbás, what is your opinion about the verse in which we have been commanded whatever we have been commanded, but no one acts upon it? The word of Allah, Most High, goes: "O ye who believe! let those whom your right hands possess, and the (children) among you who have not come of age ask your permission (before) they come to your presence, on three occasions: before morning prayer, the while you doff your clothes for the noonday heat; and after the late-night prayer. These are your three times of undress: outside those times it is not wrong for you or for them to move about." Al-Qa' nabl recited the verse up to "full of knowledge and wisdom". Ibn 'Abbás said: Allah is Most Clement and Most Merciful to the believers. He loves concealment. The people had no curtains and curtained canopies in their houses. Sometimes a servant, a child or a female orphan of a man entered while the man was having sexual intercourse with his wife. So Allah commanded them to ask permission in those times of undress. Then Allah brought them curtains and all good things. But I did not see anyone following it after that.

Abú Dáwúd said: The tradition of 'Ubaid Allah and of 'Atá, weakens this tradition.

4479, 4480. Qur'án, xxiv 59.

4481. Commenting on verse, xxiv, 58-59 Abdullah Yusuf Ali says: "We now come to rules of decorum within the family circle in refined society. Servants and children have rather more freedom of access, as they come and go at all hours, and there is less ceremony with them. But even in their case there are limitations. During the night, before morning prayer, i.e., before dawn, they must discreetly ask for permission before they enter, partly because they must not unnecessarily disturb people asleep, and partly because the people are then undressed. The same applies to the time for the midday siesta, and again to the time after night prayers, when people usually undress and turn to sleep. For grown-ups the rule is stricter: they must ask permission to come in at all times (xxiv. 59). . . .

"It is a mark of refinement for ladies and gentlemen not to be slipshod or vulgarly familiar, in dress, manners, or speech; and Islam aims at making every Muslim man or woman, however humble in station, a refined gentleman or lady, so that he or she can climb the ladder of spiritual development with humble confidence in Allah, and with the co-operation of his brothers and sisters in Islam. The principles here laid down apply, if they are interpreted with due elasticity, even if social and domestic habits change, with changes in climate or in racial and personal habits. Punctuations self-respect and respect for others, in small things as well as great, are key-notes in these simple rules of etiquette" (Abdullah Yusuf Ali, Tr., The Holy Qur'án, II, 915-16.

4482. These two traditions of 'Ubaid Allah and 'Atá, contain the commandment of asking permission to enter the house. This tradition is weak, for it contradicts the Qur'anic injunction.
CHAPTERS ON SALUTATION

Chapter 1851

SPREADING SALUTATION

(5174) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: By Him in Whose hand my soul is, you will not enter Paradise until you believe, and you will not believe until you love one another. Should I not guide you to something doing which you will love one another: Spread out salutation among you.4483

(5175) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr said: A man asked the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): Which aspect of Islam is best? He replied: That you should provide food and greet both those you know and those you do not know.

Chapter 1852

HOW SHOULD ONE SALUTE?

(5176) ‘Imrān b. Ḥuṣain said: A man came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Peace be upon you! He responded to his salutation. He then sat down. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Ten. Another man came and said: Peace and Allah’s mercy be upon you! He responded to his salutation when he sat down. He said: Twenty. Another man came and said: Peace and Allah’s mercy and blessings be upon you! He responded to him and said when he sat down: Thirty.4484

(5177) Mu‘ādh b. Anas told something to the same effect from the Prophet (may peace be upon him), adding that afterwards another man came and said: Peace and Allah’s mercy, blessings and forgiveness be upon you! whereupon he said: Forty, adding: Thus are excellent qualities rewarded.

Both traditions can be reconciled by saying that Ibn ‘Abbās stressed the asking of permission when there were no curtains on doors in the houses. When curtains hanged on the doors and the human civilisation developed, not much stress was laid on asking permission on these three occasions.

4483. Salutation is a symbol of Islam. It is commendable to salute each other. It will create love and mutual affection.

4484. These numbers refer to the blessings and reward the man would receive on the principle that a good deed will receive ten-fold reward. The reward increased according to the words he added to the salutation.
Chapter 1853

EXCELLENCE OF THE ONE WHO IS FIRST TO GIVE A SALUTATION

(5178) Abū Umāmah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Those who are nearest to Allah are they who are first to give a salutation.

Chapter 1854

WHO SHOULD GIVE A SALUTATION FIRST?

(5179) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: The young should salute the old, the one who is passing by should salute the one who is sitting, and a small company should salute a large one.

(5180) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: One who is riding should salute one who is walking. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition.

Chapter 1855

IF A MAN SEPARATES FROM ANOTHER MAN AND THEN MEETS HIM, HE SHOULD SALUTE HIM

(5181) Abū Hurairah said: When one of you meets his brother, he should salute him, then if he meets him again after a tree, wall or stone has come between them, he should also salute him.

Muʿāwiyah said: ‘Abd al-Wahhāb b. Bakht transmitted a similar tradition to me from Abū al-Zinād, from al-Aʿraj, from Abū Hurairah, from the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him)

(5182) Ibn ʿAbbās said: ‘Umar came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) when he was in his wooden oriel, and said to him: Peace be upon you, Apostle of Allah, peace be upon you! May ʿUmar enter?’

4485. This tradition is not apparently concerned with the sub-heading. The commentators explain it by saying that this is the abridged version of al-Bukhārī’s version. It says that ‘Umar first met the Prophet (may peace be upon him) after the dawn prayer. He saluted him at the time of meeting. He again went to him after some time in his upper room and asked permission through the servant. Thus he saluted him for asking permission to enter. He asked his permission thrice by salutation and he was granted permission. Since ‘Umar met him again, he greeted him.
**Chapter 1856**

**SALUTING THE CHILDREN**

(5183) Anas said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to some children who were playing. He saluted them.

(5184) Anas said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came to us when I was a boy among the boys. He saluted us and took me by my hand. He then sent me with some message. He himself sat in the shadow of a wall, or he said: near a wall until I returned to him.

**Chapter 1857**

**SALUTING THE WOMEN**

(5185) Asmā', daughter of Yazīd, said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him), passed us by when we were with some women and gave us a salutation.

**Chapter 1858**

**SALUTING THE PROTECTED PEOPLE (ahl al-dhimmah), NON-MUSLIMS**

(5186) Suhail b. Abī Ṣāliḥ said: I went out with my father to Syria. The people passed by the cloisters in which there were Christians and began to salute them. My father said: Do not give them salutation first, for Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Do not salute them (Jews and Christians) first, and when you meet them on the road, force them to go to the narrowest part of it.

(5187) ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of the Jews greets you saying: Death may come upon you, 4486. As the Prophet (may peace be upon him) was protected from perversions (fitnah), he gave a salutation to women. If a man has confidence in himself that he will not pervert by saluting women, he can salute them; otherwise it is better to keep silence. The Mālikī scholars allow to greet old women and not maidens. Abū Ḥanīfah does not allow women to salute men because they have been prohibited from announcing the call to prayer and reciting the Qur’ān loudly. But it is permissible to greet the relative women within prohibited degree.

4487. It is an honour for a man whom one greets. Therefore, the Muslims should take initiative in greeting. As regards forcing them to go on one side, it refers to the rush of the people on the way. When the road is vacant, they may walk in the middle.
Disapproval of Saluting "Upon You Be Peace"

[1437]

reply: The same to you.

Abū Dāwūd said: Mālik b. ‘Abd Allah b. Dīnār transmitted it in a similar manner, and al-Thawrī transmitted it from ‘Abd Allah b. Dīnār. He said in this version: The same to you.4488

(5188) Anas said: The Companions of the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to the Prophet (may peace be upon him): The people of the Book salute us. How should we reply to them? He said: Say: The same to you.

Abū Dāwūd said: Similar is the tradition transmitted by ‘Ā’ishah, Abū ‘Abd al-Rahmān al-Juhānī and Abū Basrāt al-Ghifārī.

Chapter 1859

SALUTING AT THE TIME OF LEAVING AN ASSEMBLY

(5189) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: When one of you comes to an assembly, he should give a salutation and if he feels inclined to get up, he should give a salutation, for the former is not more of a duty than the latter.4489

Chapter 1860

DISAPPROVAL OF SALUTING "UPON YOU BE PEACE"

(5190) Abū Jarrāy al-Hujaimī said: I came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and said: Upon you be peace, Apostle of Allah! He said: Do not say: Upon you be peace, for "Upon you be peace" is the salutation to the dead.4490

4488. In Arabic ʿād means death and ṣalām means peace. The Jews pronounced ṣalām omitting ʾām (l) which means death. Hence the Prophet (may peace be upon him) gave instructions to the Muslims to answer them in a good manner by saying: The same to you.

4489. As salutation is necessary at the time of arrival, it is also necessary at the time of leaving the assembly or departure from a place.

4490. This shows that it is disapproved to salute "Upon you be peace" in the beginning. What is recommended is to say: "Peace be upon you." When one goes to the graveyard, he says addressing the dead "Upon you be peace"; or it means that when the spirit of the dead meets another spirit, it says: Upon you be peace. Therefore, one should avoid saluting in this manner.
Chapter 1861

IT IS SUFFICIENT IF ONE MAN FROM AMONG THE ASSEMBLY REPLY TO THE SALUTATION

(5191) 'All b. Abl Ṭālib said—Abū Dāwūd said: Al-Ḥasan b. 'All traced this tradition back to the Prophet (may peace be upon him): When people are passing by, it is enough if one of them gives a salutation on their behalf, and that it is enough for those who are sitting if one of them replies.4491

Chapter 1862

ON SHAKING HANDS

(5192) Al-Barā’ b. ‘Azib reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If two Muslims meet, shake hands, praise Allah, and ask Him for forgiveness, they will be forgiven.4492

(5193) Al-Barā’ (b. ‘Azib) reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Two Muslims will not meet and shake hands having their sins forgiven them before they separate.

(5194) Anas b. Mālik said: When the people of the Yemen came, the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: The people of the Yemen have come to you and they are first to shake hands.

Chapter 1863

EMBRACING

(5195) Ayyūb b. Bushair b. Ka‘b al-‘Adawi quoted a man of ‘Anazah who said that he asked Abū Dharr when he left Syria: I wish to ask you about a tradition of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). He said: I shall tell you except

4491. To give salutation first is recommended and not necessary. If one of the company salutes, it will be enough for all. But replying the salutation is necessary. If one of the people sitting together replies, that will be sufficient. If none of them replies, all will be sinners.

4492. Shaking hands is recommended when two Muslims meet and salute each other. Men should shake hands with men and women with women. Men should not shake hands with strange women.

4493. Abū Dharr lived in Damascus when Mu‘āwiyyah was the governor of Syria during the Caliphate of ‘Uthmān. Abū Dharr disputed with Mu‘āwiyyah on the question of distribution of wealth. ‘Uthmān called Abū Dharr to Medina, and thus he had to leave Syria.
that it is something secret. Did the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) shake hands with you when you met him? He replied: I never met him without his shaking hands with me. One day he sent for me when I was not at home. When I came I was informed that he had sent for me. I came to him and found him on a couch. He embraced me and that was better and better.  

Chapter 1864

STANDING UP IN HONOUR OF SOME PERSON

(5196) Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī said: When Banū Quraiṣah capitulated agreeing to accept Sa‘d’s judgment, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) sent a messenger to him. When he came riding on a white ass, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Stand up to (show respect to) your chief, or he said: "to the best of you". He came and sat beside the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

(5197) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Shu‘bāh through a different chain of narrators. This version has: When he came near the mosque, he said to the Ansār: Stand up showing respect to your chief.

(5198) ‘Ā‘ishah, Mother of the Believers, said: I never saw anyone more like the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) in respect of gravity, calm deportment, pleasant disposition—according to al-Hasan’s version: in respect of talk and speech: al-Hasan did not mention gravity, calm deportment, pleasant disposition—than Fāṭimah, may Allah honour her face. When she came in to visit him (the Prophet) he got up to (welcome) her, took her by the hand, kissed her and made her sit where he was sitting; and when he went in to visit her, she got up to (welcome) him, took him by the hand, kissed him, and made him sit where she was sitting.

4494. It is recommended to embrace if two Muslims have profound love for each other. If a man returns from journey, it is commendable to embrace him. There is no basis for embracing on [the occasion of ‘Id.

4495. This shows that standing to show respect to an honourable man or a chief of the people is permissible. But it is forbidden if the people stand up to exalt a person out of his fear, greatness and pride. Real greatness belongs to Allah. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do not stand up as foreigners do showing respect to one another.

4496. There are two sets of traditions on standing up to show respect to a person. Some traditions allow standing up and others forbid. Therefore, there are two points of view on this subject. According to one point of view, it is permissible to stand up to a person on account of his learning, excellence, piety, honour and love for him, but it is not allowed to exalt a person or for ostenta­tion. According to the other view, it is absolutely forbidden to stand showing respect to a person, as it is the practice of the foreigners. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to stand
ON FATHER KISSING THE CHILDREN

(5199) Abū Hurairah said: Al-Aqra‘ b. Ḥābis saw that the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was kissing Ḥusain. He said: I have ten children and I have never kissed any of them. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: He who does not show tenderness will not be shown tenderness.

(5200) ‘Ā’ishah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Good tidings to you, ‘Ā’ishah, for Allah Most High has revealed your innocence. He then recited to her the Qur’anic verses. Her parents said: Kiss the head of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). I said: Praise be to Allah, Most High, not to you.

KISSING BETWEEN BOTH EYES (FOREHEAD)

(5201) Al-Sha’bl said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) received Ja’far b. Abī Talib, embraced him and kissed him between both of his eyes (forehead).

KISSING ON THE CHEEKS


(5203) Al-Barā‘ (b. ‘Āzib) said: I went in with Abū Bakr when he had newly come to Medina and he found his daughter ‘Ā’ishah lying down afflicted with fever. Abū Bakr went to her, and saying: How are you, girlie? kissed her on the cheek.

up to show respect and honour to the people. As for the tradition about standing up for Sa‘d, it is said that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) asked the Companions to stand up as he was ill, and not to show respect to him.

4497. Qur’ān, xxiv. 11-12.

4498. This is a mursal tradition. It is recommended to kiss the forehead.

4499. This shows that it is permissible to kiss the hand of a chief, a scholar or some pious man.
Chapter 1868

KISSING THE HAND

(5204) 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar told a story and said: We then came near the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and kissed his hand.

Chapter 1869

KISSING THE BODY

(5205) 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Lailā, quoting Usaid b. Ḥuḍair, a man of the Ānṣār, said that while he was given to jesting and was talking to the people and making them laugh, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) poked him under the ribs with a stick. He said: Let me take retaliation. He said: Take retaliation. He said: You are wearing a shirt but I am not. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) then raised his shirt and the man embraced him and began to kiss his side. Then he said: This is what I wanted, Apostle of Allah!

Chapter 1870

KISSING THE FOOT

(5206) Umm Abān, daughter of al-Wāzi b. Zāri, quoting his grandfather, who was a member of the deputation of 'Abd al-Qais, said: When we came to Medina, we raced to be first to dismount and kiss the hand and foot of the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). But al-Mundhir al-Ashājj waited until he came to the bundle of his clothes, and he put on his two garments, and then he went to the Prophet (may peace be upon him). He said to him: You have two characteristics which Allah likes: gentleness and deliberation. He asked: Have I acquired them or Allah has created (them) in me by nature? He replied: No, Allah has created (them) in you by nature. He then said: Praise be to Allah Who has created in me by nature two characteristics which Allah and His Apostle like.

4500. This shows that it is permissible to kiss the hand of a chief, a scholar or some pious man.
Chapter 1871

ON A MAN WHO SAYS: MAY ALLAH MAKE ME RANSOM FOR YOU

(5207) Abū Dharr said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) addressed me, saying: O Abu Dharr! I replied: At thy service and at thy pleasure, Apostle of Allah! may I be ransom for thee.

Chapter 1872

ON A MAN WHO SAYS: MAY ALLAH MAKE YOUR EYE HAPPY

(5208) ‘Imrān b. Ḥuṣain said: In the pre-Islamic period we used to say: “May Allah make the eye happy for you,” and “Good morning” but when Islam came, we were forbidden to say shah.

‘Abd al-Razzāq said on the authority of Ma‘mar: It is disapproved that a man should say: “May Allah make the eye happy for you,” but there is no harm in saying: “May Allah make your eye happy.”

Chapter 1873

ON A MAN WHO SAYS TO ANOTHER MAN: MAY ALLAH GUARD YOU

(5209) Abū Qatādah said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) was on journey. The people became thirsty, and they went quickly. I guarded the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) on that night. He said: May Allah guard you for the reason you have guarded His Prophet!

Chapter 1874

THE STANDING UP OF A MAN FOR ANOTHER MAN

(5210) Abū Mijlaz said: Mu‘āwiyah went out to Ibn al-Zubair and Ibd ‘Āmir. Ibn ‘Āmir got up and Ibn al-Zubair remained sitting. Mu‘āwiyah said to Ibn ‘Āmir: Sit down, for I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: Let him who likes people to stand up before him prepare his place in Hell.

4501. This being a salutation of pre-Islamic times, the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited it. It is also said that this phrase is confusing. One may think that “Allah’s eye may be happy on account of you.” Hence it was forbidden.

4502. This shows that it is not permissible to get up to exalt a man. One may get up to show respect to a learned man or a relative out of love for him.
(5211) Ḥārūn said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came out to us leaning on a stick. We stood up to show respect to him. He said: Do not stand up as foreigners do for showing respect to one another.

Chapter 1875

ON A MAN WHO SAYS: SO AND SO GIVES YOU A GREETING

(5212) Ghālib said: When we were sitting at al-Ḥasan's door, a man came along. He said: My father told me on the authority of my grandfather, saying: My father sent me to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: Go to him and give him a greeting. So I went to him and said: My father sends you a greeting. He said: Upon you and upon your father be peace.

(5213) ʿĀʾishah told that the Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to her: Gabriel gives you a greeting. Replying she said: Upon him be peace and grace of Allah.

Chapter 1876

ON A MAN WHO CALLS ANOTHER MAN AND HE SAYS: AT YOUR SERVICE

(5214) ʿAbd al-Rahmān al-Fihrī said: I was present with the Apostle of Allah in the battle of Ḥunain. We travelled on a hot day when the heat was extreme. We halted under the shade of a tree. When the sun passed the meridian, I put on my coat of mail and rode on my horse. I came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) who was in a tent. I said: Peace, Allah's mercy and His blessings be upon you! The time of departure has come. He said: Yes. He then said: Get up, Bilāl. He jumped out from beneath a gum-acacia tree and its shade was like that of a bird. He said: I am at your service, and at your pleasure, and I make myself a sacrifice for you. He said: Put the saddle on the horse for me. He then took out a saddle both sides of which were puffed with palm-leaves; it showed no arrogance and pride. So he rode and we also rode. He then mentioned the rest of the tradition.

Abū Dāwūd said: ʿAbd al-Rahmān al-Fihrī did not transmit any tradition except this one. This is a tradition of an expert transmitted by Ḥammād b.
Chapter 1877

ON A MAN WHO SAYS TO ANOTHER MAN: MAY ALLAH MAKE YOUR TEETH LAUGH

(5215) Ibn Kinānah b. ‘Abbās b. Mirdās, quoting his father, told that his grandfather Mirdās said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) laughed. Abū Bakr or ‘Umar said to him: May Allah make your teeth laugh!14 05 He then mentioned the tradition.

Chapter 1878

BUILDING A HOUSE

(5216) ‘Abd Allāh b. ‘Amr said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came upon us when my mother and I were plastering a wall of mine. He asked: What is this, ‘Abd Allāh? I replied: It is something I am repairing. He said: The matter is quicker for you than that.4506

(5217) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by al-A‘mash through a different chain of narrators. This version has: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came upon me when we were repairing our cottage that was broken. He asked: What is this? We replied: This cottage of ours has broken and we are repairing it. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: I see that the command is quicker than that.4507

(5218) Anas b. Mālik said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came out and seeing a high-domed building said: What is it? His Companions replied to him: It belongs to so and so, one of the Āmīr. He said: He said nothing but kept the matter in mind. When its owner came and gave him a salutation among the people, he turned away from him. When he had done this several times, the man realised that anger was connected with him and the turning away was because of him.

14 05 It means: May Allah keep you laughing for ever.

4506 Al-amr: Command matter, or what has been commanded is more urgent than that Al-amr may refer to death or the resurrection of the dead. It means that death is liable to come before the house falls down. A man should take care of his life hereafter.

4507 Building a house for one’s need is permissible. It is not permissible to build grand and lofty houses not needed by a man. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) disliked a Muslim’s full devotion to this worldly comfort. Lofty buildings indicate man’s devotion to this world.
So he complained of that to his Companions, saying: I swear by Allah that I cannot understand the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him). They said: He went out and saw your domed building. So the man returned to it and demolished it, levelling it to the ground. One day the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) came out and did not see it. He asked: What has happened to the domed building? They replied: Its owner complained to us of your turning away, and when we informed him about it, he demolished it. He said: Every building is a misfortune for its owner, except what cannot, except what cannot, meaning except what cannot be done without.4508

Chapter 1879

BUILDING A ROOM UPSTAIRS

(5219) Dukain b. Sa‘īd al-Muzainī said: We came to the Prophet (may peace be upon him) and asked him for some corn. He said: Go, ‘Umar, and give them. He ascended with us a room upstairs, took a key from his apartment and opened it.

Chapter 1880

CUTTING A LOTE-TREE

(5220) ‘Abd Allah b. Ḥabashī reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone cuts the lote-tree, Allah brings him headlong into Hell.4509

Abū Dāwūd was asked about the meaning of this tradition. He said: This is a brief tradition. It means that if anyone cuts uselessly, unjustly and without any right a lote-tree under the shade of which travellers and beasts take shelter, Allah will bring him into Hell headlong.

(5221) Ḥassān b. Ibrāhīm said: I asked Hishām b. ‘Urwah about the cutting of a lote-tree when he was leaning against the house of ‘Urwah. He said: Do you not see these doors and leaves? These were made of the lote-tree of ‘Urwah which ‘Urwah used to cut from his hand? He said: There is no harm in it. Ḥumaid’s version adds: You have brought an innovation, O ‘Irāqī! He said: I said: The innovation is from you. I heard someone say at Mecca: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him).

4508. This shows that building a house for the need of dwelling is permissible. Lavish expenditure on buildings is forbidden.

4509. It means cutting the lote-tree in the prohibited area of the Haram where the cutting of trees is forbidden. It may also mean that lote-tree which spreads long shades and people sit under it. The cutting of leafy and shady trees is forbidden.
cursed him who cuts a lote-tree.\textsuperscript{4510} He then mentioned the rest of the tradition to the same effect.

Chapter 1881

REMOVING A HARMFUL THING FROM THE ROAD

(5222) Abū Buraidah said: I heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say: A human being has three hundred and sixty joints for each of which he must give alms. The people asked him: Who is capable of doing this? He replied: It may be mucus in the mosque which you bury, and something which you remove from the road; but if you do not find such, two rak‘ahs in the forenoon will be sufficient for you.

(5223) Abū Dharr reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: In the morning alms are due from every bone in man’s fingers and toes. Salutation to everyone he meets is alms; enjoining good is alms; forbidding what is disreputable is alms; removing what is harmful from the road is alms; having sexual intercourse with his wife is alms. The people asked: He fulfils his desire, Apostle of Allah; is it alms? He replied: Tell me if he fulfilled his desire where he had no right, would he commit a sin?\textsuperscript{4511} He then said: Two rak‘ahs which one prays in the forenoon serve instead of all that.

Abū Dāwūd said: Ḥammād did not mention enjoining good and forbidding what is disreputable.

(5224) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Dharr through a different chain of narrators. In this version the transmitter mentioned the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in the middle of the tradition.\textsuperscript{4512}

(5225) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: A man never did a good deed but removed a thorny branch from the road; it was either in the tree and someone cut it and threw it on the road, or it was lying in it, he removed it. Allah accepted this good deed of his and brought him into Paradise.\textsuperscript{4513}

\textsuperscript{4510} This shows that cutting the lote-tree for useful purposes is permissible. The prohibition might refer to the trees in the Haram.

This tradition is weak as there is a confusion in its chain.

\textsuperscript{4511} If having unlawful intercourse is a sin, lawful intercourse must logically be a good deed.

\textsuperscript{4512} It means that he mentioned the tradition from Abū Dharr. Then he mentioned the Prophet (may peace be upon him) in the middle.

\textsuperscript{4513} This shows that one should not look down upon a small good deed. Sometimes Allah accepts it and brings the man into Paradise.
Chapter 1882

EXTINGUISHING THE FIRE AT NIGHT

(5226) Sālim quoting his father (Ibn ‘Umar) said (sometimes he traced back to the Prophet [may peace be upon him]): Do not leave a fire burning in your houses while you are asleep.

(5227) Ibn ‘Abbās said: A mouse came dragging a wick and dropped it before the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) on the mat on which he was sitting with the result that it burned a hole in it about the size of a dirham. He (the Prophet) said: When you go to sleep, extinguish your lamps, for the devil guides a creature like this to do thus and sets you on fire.4314

Chapter 1883

KILLING THE SNAKES

(5228) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: We have not made peace with them4315 since we fought with them, so he who leaves any of them alone through fear does not belong to us.4316

(5229) Ibn Mas‘ūd reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Kill all the snakes, and he who fears their revenge does not belong to me.4317

(5230) Ibn ‘Abbās reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: He who leaves the snakes alone through fear of their pursuit,4318 does not belong to us. We have not made peace with them since we have fought with them.

(5231) Al-‘Abbas b. ‘Abbās said to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him): We wish to sweep out Zamzam, but in it there are some of these jinnān, meaning small snakes; so the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered that they should be killed.

4514. There are many advantages and benefits in following the Sunnah of the Prophet (may peace be upon him). Before going to sleep, one should extinguish the fire.

4515. I.e. snakes.

4516. The enmity between man and snake continues since they were created. This enmity is by nature. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) instructed to kill the snakes. They are dangerous for man.

4517. The people in pre-Islamic days feared to kill the snakes. They believed that one of the pair would take revenge. Hence a Muslim should kill the snake. If it is in a house one should wait for three days. One should adjure it by Solomon and wait for three days. The snake may be a jinn.

4518. Meaning taking revenge by them
Ibn ‘Umar reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: Kill snakes, kill those which have two streaks and those with small tails, for they obliterate the eyesight and cause miscarriage.\(^{4519}\)

Sālim said: ‘Abd Allah (b. ‘Umar) used to kill every snake which he found. Abū Lubābah or Zaid b. al-Khaṭṭāb saw him chasing a snake. He said: He (the Prophet) prohibited killing house-snakes.\(^{4520}\)

Abū Lubābah said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited killing the \emph{jinnān} (small snakes) that are in the house, except the one which has two streaks and the one with a small tail, for they obliterate the eyesight and cause miscarriage.

Nāfi’ said: After that, that is, after Abū Lubābah had mentioned him this tradition, Ibn ‘Umar found a snake in his house; he commanded regarding it and it was driven away to al-Baqī’.

The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Nāfi’ through a different chain of transmitters. In this version Nāfi’ said: After that I saw it again in his house.

Muhammad b. Abī Yabyā said that his father told that he and his Companion went to Abū Sa‘īd (al-Khādīj) to pay a sick visit to him. He said: Then we came out from him and met a companion of ours who wanted to go to him. We went ahead and sat in the mosque. He then came back and told us that he heard Abū Sa‘īd al-Khādīj say: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) said: Some snakes are \emph{jinn}; so when anyone sees one of them in his house, he should give it a warning three times.\(^{4521}\) If it returns (after that), he should kill it, for it is a devil.

Abū al-Sā‘īb said I went to visit Abū Sa‘īd al-Khādīj, and while I was sitting I heard a movement under his couch. When I looked and found a snake there, I got up. Abū Sa‘īd said: What is with you? I said: Here is a snake. He said: What do you want? I said: I shall kill it. He then pointed to a room in his house in front of his room and said: My cousin (son of my uncle) was in this room. He asked his permission to go to his wife on the occasion of the battle of Troops (\emph{dībāb}), as he was

---

4519. They were poisonous snakes and caused harm to the people. The people are commanded to kill them.

4520. The version by al-Bukhārī and Muslim has: For they are resident \emph{jinn}.

4521 \emph{Fa Ḱ-yuḥarrij}: The verb means to make things difficult. It means that one should tell the snake three times that it will be in difficulties if it returns. It should not blame one if it is driven away and killed. The warning should be given for three days. There is a difference of opinion whether it should be given three times or for three days. What is agreed is that it should be given three times for three days.
recently married. The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) gave him permission and ordered him to take his weapon with him. He came to his house and found his wife standing at the door of the house. When he pointed to her with the lance, she said: Do not make haste till you see what has brought me out. He entered the house and found an ugly snake there. He pierced in the lance while it was quivering. He said: I do not know which of them died first, the man or the snake. His people then came to the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and said: Supplicate Allah to restore our companion to life for us. He said: Ask forgiveness for your Companion. Then he said: In Medina a group of jinn have embraced Islam, so when you see one of them, pronounce a warning to it three times and if it appears to you after that, kill it after three days.

(5238) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Ibn ‘Ajlān through a different chain of narrators briefly. This version has: He should give it a warning three times. If it appears to him after that, he should kill it, for it is a devil.

(5239) The tradition mentioned above has also been transmitted by Abū Sa‘īd al-Khudrī in a similar manner through a different chain of narrators. This version is more perfect. In this version he said: Give it a warning for three days; if it appears to you after that, then kill it, for it is only a devil.

(5240) Ibn Abī Lailā said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) was asked about the house-snakes. He said: When you see one of them in your dwellings, say: I adjure you by the covenant which Noah made with you, and I adjure you by the covenant which Solomon made with you not to harm us. Then if they come back, kill them.

(5241) Ibn Mas‘ūd said: Kill all the snakes except the little white one which looks like a silver wand.

Abū Dāwūd said: A man said to me: A white snake does not wind in its movement. If it is correct, that is a sign in it, if Allah wills.

Chapter 1884

KILLING THE GECKOS

(5242) ‘Āmir b. Sa‘īd, quoting his father, said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) ordered a gecko to be killed, and calling it a noxious little creature.

(5243) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: If anyone kills a gecko with the first blow, such and such number of good deeds will be recorded for him;4522 if he kills it with the second blow, such and such

4522. The version by Muslim has: “a hundred good deeds will be recorded for him”
number of good deeds will be recorded for him less than the former; and if he kills it with the third blow, such and such number of good deeds will be recorded for him, less than the former.  

(5244) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: For the first blow seventy good deeds will be recorded.

**Chapter 1885**

**KILLING THE ANTS**

(5245) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: A Prophet got down beneath a tree and he was stung by an ant. He ordered regarding the baggage and it was removed from beneath it. He then ordered regarding it and it was burnt. Allah then revealed to him: Why not (just) one ant?  

(5246) Abū Hurairah reported the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) as saying: An ant stung a Prophet. He ordered a colony of ants to be burned. Allah revealed to him: Because an ant stung you, you have perished a community which glorifies Me.  

(5247) Ibn 'Abbās said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited to kill four creatures: ants, bees, hoopoes, and sparrow-hawks.

(5248) 'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Abd Allah quoted his father as saying: When we were on a journey with the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) and he had gone to relieve himself, we saw a *hummarah* with two young ones. We took the young ones. The *hummarah* came and began to spread out its wings. Then the Prophet (may peace be upon him) came and said: Who has pained this young by the loss of her young? Give her young ones back to her. We also saw an ant-hill which we had burned. He asked? Who has burned this? We replied: We have. He said: It is not fitting that anyone but the Lord of the Fire should punish with fire.

---

4523 The animal feels pain if it is killed with several blows. Hence the man who kills with a single blow is rewarded most.

4524 The version by al-Bukhārī and Muslim has: “Because an ant stung you, you have burnt a community which glorifies Me.” This shows that the animals should not be burnt. Only Allah can punish by fire.

4525 A small bird like a sparrow, or a lark.
Chapter 1886

KILLING FROGS

(5249) 'Abd al-Rahmân b. 'Uthmân said: When a physician consulted the Prophet (may peace be upon him) about putting frogs in medicine, he forbade him to kill them.4526

Chapter 1887

THROWING PEBBLES

(5250) 'Abd b. Mughaffal said: The Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) prohibited throwing pebbles (in sport) saying: Game is not caught by such means, neither is an enemy injured, but it may sometimes put out an eye or break a tooth.

Chapter 1888

CIRCUMCISION OF GIRLS

(5251) Umm 'Attyyat al-Ansârîyyah said: A woman used to perform circumcision in Medina. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said to her: Do not cut severely as that is better for a woman and more desirable for a husband.

Abû Dâwûd said: It has been transmitted by 'Ubaid Allah b. 'Amr from 'Abd al-Mâlik to the same effect through a different chain.

Abû Dâwûd said: It is not a strong tradition. It has been transmitted in mursal form (missing the link of the Companions):4527

Abû Dâwûd said: Muhammâd b. ハウスan is obscure, and this tradition is weak.

4526. As the Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited the killing of frogs, it is unlawful to eat them. Professor Robson says: “The flesh of frogs with olive oil was used as an antidote for snake bite, and the fat was considered helpful for extracting teeth. The prohibition of killing frogs most probably applies only to killing them for medicinal purposes” (Mishkât, p 949)

4527. The reference is to the circumcision of girls. It was practised in Arabia when Islam came. It is disputed amongst the jurists. Some Shâ'î scholars hold that circumcision of girls is obligatory, but others think that it is recommended. ‘Aţâ', ˁHâmad b. ˁHanbal and some Mâlikî jurists also hold that it is obligatory (wâjîb). Abû Haunted maintains that it is recommended and not obligatory. Mâlik also holds that it is recommended. According to ˁHâmad, circumcision of women is recommended but it is obligatory on men (‘Awn al-Mabûd, IV, 541 42).
Chapter 1889

THE WALKING OF WOMEN WITH MEN IN THE ROAD

(5252) Abū Usaid al-Anṣārī said that he heard the Apostle of Allah (may peace be upon him) say when he was coming out of the mosque, and men and women were mingled in the road: Draw back, for you must not walk in the middle of the road; keep to the sides of the road. Then women were keeping so close to the wall that their garments were rubbing against it.4528

(5253) Ibn 'Umar said: The Prophet (may peace be upon him) prohibited that one, i.e. man, should walk between two women.

Chapter 1390

ON A MAN WHO ABUSES TIME

(5254) Abū Hurairah reported the Prophet (may peace be upon him) as saying: Allah Most High says: “The son of Adam injures me by abusing time, whereas I am time. Authority is in My hand. I alternate the night and the day.”4529

Ibn al-Sarh said: “on the authority of Ibn al-Musayyab instead of Sa‘īd”

THE END

4528. Islam does not allow mixed gathering of men and women. They should remain separate from each other. While walking in the road the women should walk keeping to the sides of the road.

4529. Al-доhr means time, long time or the whole period of time. The Arabs in pre-Islamic times believed that the events were brought about by time. Hence they attributed their miseries and misfortunes to time. They used al-доhr for fate. They abused time when some misfortune befell them. There were two sections: one believed in Allah and the other in time. The Qur’ān says: “And they say: What is there but our life in this world? We shall die and we live, and nothing but time can destroy us” (aliv. 24). When Islam came, it prohibited to have this wrong belief and pointed out to them that events are brought about by Allah. Hence it is of no use to abuse time. Besides, since Allah creates time by varying night and day, to abuse time amounts to abusing Allah. The Prophet (may peace be upon him) said: Do not abuse time, for Allah is time, meaning He has the authority of bringing about favourable and unfavourable, pleasant and unpleasant circumstances. Al-доhr is not included among the names of Allah. Being time means having full authority over events. This tradition shows that a Muslim should have firm belief in Allah, and should not attribute his misfortunes to time or anything else, and should not abuse it. He should believe that everything comes from Allah (‘Awn al Ma‘būd, IV. 543-44).
INDEX

A

Abān, 85, 264, 486, 1038
Abān al-‘Aṭṭār, 114
Abān b. Sa‘īd, 759
Abān b. ‘Uthmān b. ‘Affān, 486, 1411, 1412
‘Abbād, 39, 338, 715
‘Abbād b. ‘Abd Allah b. al-Zubair, 714, 1061
‘Abbād b. Abī Sāliḥ, 925
‘Abhād b. Bishr, 64, 580
‘Abbād b. Ḥamzah, 1383
‘Abbād b. Kathīr, 640
‘Abbād b. Manṣūr, 1245
‘Abbād b. Shurahbīl, 724
‘Abbād b. Tamīm, 24, 42, 300, 301, 1357
‘Abbās b. al-Jārīrī, 1101
‘Abhās b. ‘Abd Allah b. al-‘Abbās, 555
‘Abbās b. al-Walīd, 1261
‘Abbās b. Sahl, 190, 245, 606
‘Abbās b. ‘Ubaid Allah b. ‘Abbās, 1148
‘Abdah, 483, 1237, 1267
‘Abdah b. Sulaimān, 319
‘Abd al-A‘lā, 175 n., 214, 375, 1015, 1049, 1323
‘Abd al-‘Azīz, 2, 196, 303, 823 n., 825, 1016, 1025, 1033, 1286
‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. ‘Abd al-Mālik, 130
‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. al-Mukhtār, 596
‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. Juraij, 373
‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. Muḥammad, 640
‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. Rufā‘ī, 508, 1010
‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, 1286
‘Abd al-Ḥamīd, 1408
‘Abd al-Ḥamīd b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān, 66
‘Abd al-Ḥamīd b. Ja‘far, 604
‘Abd al-Ḥamīd b. Muḥammad, 174
‘Abd al-Ḥamīd b. Ṣaffār, 592
‘Abd al-Ḥamīd Ṣiddīq, Maulānā, 12 n., 18 n., 19 n., 20 n., 26 n., 36 n., 38 n., 46 n., 245
‘Abd al-Jabbār, 385

1453
Sunan Abū Dāwūd

'Abd al-Jabbār b. Wā'īl b. Hujr, 186
'Abd al-Jālīl b. Ḥumaid, 452
'Abd al-Karīm, 157 n.
'Abd al-Khaṭīr, 688
'Abd Allah, 83, 406, 434 n., 457, 616, 683, 714, 718, 744, 987 n., 1078 n., 1089, 1090, 1135, 1160, 1207, 1362, 1377, 1378, 1392
'Abd Allah al-Hāḍramī, 655 n.
'Abd Allah al-Hawzānī, 867
'Abd Allah al-Khutāmī, 719
'Abd Allah al-Muzān, 337
'Abd Allah al-Sāhtm, 627
'Abd Allah b. 'Abd al-'Alā, 315
'Abd Allah b. al-'Aṣ, 648
'Abd Allah b. al-Fādil, 562
'Abd Allah b. al-Hārith, 156, 170, 488, 845
'Abd Allah b. al-Muhārakah, 39 n.
'Abd Allah b. al-Muḥārībī, 122
'Abd Allah b. Sa'b. 170, 298, 498, 500, 1392
'Abd Allah b. al-Sāmit, 1420
'Abd Allah b. al-Shīkhkhīr, 230, 1345
'Abd Allah b. al-Zubair, 170, 191, 252, 393, 538 n., 550 n., 1018, 1032, 1036, 1341, 1383
'Abd Allah b. 'Āmir, 1389
Index

592, 616, 663, 667, 674, 685-88, 691, 698, 701-02, 720, 754, 783, 814, 821, 878, 889, 953, 983, 995, 1004, 1007, 1015, 1035, 1039, 1048, 1064, 1068, 1086, 1092, 1122, 1135, 1185, 1199, 1200 n., 219, 1223, 1268 n., 1276, 1277, 1281, 1287, 1313, 1323, 1326, 1336, 1352, 1355, 1375

'Abd Allah b. 'Amr b. al-Faghwa' al-Khuza'I, 1356
'Abd Allah b. 'Amr b. Murrah, 1207
'Abd Allah b. 'Amr b. 'Uwaim, 1073
'Abd Allah b. Bu'dail, 683
'Abd Allah b. Buhanah, 265
'Abd Allah b. Buraidah, 167, 243, 285, 1158, 1386
'Abd Allah b. Bu'sr, 288, 293, 665, 1054, 1066, 1195, 1431
'Abd Allah b. Dāwūd, 62
'Abd Allah b. Dinar, 29 n., 315, 340 n., 1437
'Abd Allah b. Fuḍailah, 112
'Abd Allah b. Ghālib al-Laithī, 741
'Abd Allah b. Ghanam, 1408
'Abd Allah b. Ḥābashī al-Khuṭabī al-Sa'īdī, 348, 380, 1445
'Abd Allah b. Hanzalah b. Abī 'Āmir, 11
'Abd Allah b. Ḥārith b. Jaz', 47
'Abd Allah b. ʿIssān al-'Ānbarī, 872
'Abd Allah b. Ḥawālah al-Azḍī, 703, 704
'Abd Allah b. Ḥishām, 831
'Abd Allah b. Ḥunain, 485, 486
'Abd Allah b. Ibrāhīm, 1353
'Abd Allah b. Jābr, 25
'Abd Allah b. ʿIyās b. Iyās, 1409
'Abd Allah b. Ja'far, 264, 396, 708, 711, 892, 1078, 1165, 1191, 1251, 1310, 1409
'Abd Allah b. ʿIyās b. ʿImran, 564
'Abd Allah b. Jubair, 737
'Abd Allah b. Ka'b, 594, 845, 1292
'Abd Allah b. Kāthīr al-Dārī, 592
'Abd Allah b. Khubaib, 1410
'Abd Allah b. Mālik, 512
'Abd Allah b. Maqītil b. Muqarrīn, 98
'Abd Allah b. Maslamaḥ, 422
'Abd Allah b. Mat'ār, 793
'Abd Allah b. Mu'āwiyah al-Ghadīrf, 413
'Abd Allah b. Mughaffal, 7, 25, 337, 384, 751, 800, 1158, 1345, 1450
'Abd Allah b. Muḥammad, 23
'Abd Allah b. Muḥammad b. al-Ḥanafīyyah, 1388
‘Abd Allah b. Mūsā, 1277, 1326, 1340
‘Abd Allah b. Muslim, 1173
‘Abd Allah b. Qais, 297, 725, 1213, 1430
‘Abd Allah b. Qurt, 463
‘Abd Allah b. Rābāh al-Anṣārī, 114
‘Abd Allah b. Rawāḥah, 420, 661, 969-71
‘Abd Allah b. Sa‘d al-Anṣārī, 51
‘Abd Allah b. Ṣafwān, 1010, 1192 n.
‘Abd Allah b. Sahl, 1266
‘Abd Allah b. Sa‘d b Abl al-Hind, 943
‘Abd Allah b. Salām, 269, 1240
‘Abd Allah b. Salamāh, 56
‘Abd Allah b. Sālim, 413
‘Abd Allah b. Sarjas, 7, 332
‘Abd Allah b. Shaddād, 76, 406, 986
‘Abd Allah b. Shaqīq, 243, 326, 329, 339, 1390
‘Abd Allah b. Ṣufyān, 426
‘Abd Allah b. Ṣunābīh, 111
‘Abd Allah b. Ṣūriyā, 1241 n.
‘Abd Allah b. Ṭāriq, 736 n.
‘Abd Allah b. Ṭāwūs, 191
‘Abd Allah b. Thābit, 885
‘Abd Allah b. Ṭhā‘labah, 423, 424
‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ubayd Allah, 206
‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ubayd b. ‘Umair, 1051
‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ubayy, 629 n., 881
‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ukaim, 1150, 1151
‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umair, 907
‘Abd Allah b. Umm Maktūm, 645 n.
‘Abd Allah b. Unais, 361, 1232
‘Abd Allah b. ‘Utbah 567, 627
‘Abd Allah b. Wahb al-Rāsibi, 1335
‘Abd Allah b. Wāqid, 315, 790 n.
‘Abd Allah b. Yasār, 86
‘Abd Allah b. Yazīd (al-Anṣārī), 423, 913, 1114 n.
'Abd Allah b. Yazid b. Rukānah, 591
'Abd Allah b. Zaid, 26, 30, 126-28, 133, 134, 135, 301
'Abd Allah b. Zakariya, 1187
'Abd Allah b. Zālim, 1304
'Abd Allah b. Zam'ah, 13-8
'Abd Allah 'Uthmān b. Abī Shaibah, 567
'Abd al-Malik, 321, 822, 823, 1302, 1451
'Abd al-Malik b. Abī Bakr, 569
'Abd al-Malik b. Abī Sulaimān, 375, 480, 924
'Abd al-Malik b. al-Rabl h b. al-Saburah, 125
'Abd al-Malik b. Maisarah, 77
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān, 509 n., 1303
'Abd al-Malik b. 'Umar, 1227
'Abd al-Mu'tālib, 124, 568, 845, 890 n.
'Abd al-Mu'tālib b. Rabī'ah b. al-Ḥārith, 844
'Abd al-Qais. 235, 275, 1046, 1047, 1049, 1311, 1411
'Abd al-Rahmān 37, 79, 156, 466, 470, 501, 529, 555, 640, 718, 752, 824, 841, 910, 1021, 1072, 1142, 1180, 1362, 1377, 1410
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Hurmuz al-A'rāj, 555, 1119
'Abd al-Rahmān al-Mu'āwli, 251
'Abd al-Rahmān al-Taimi, 28
'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Abd Allah, 1450
'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Abd Allah b. Ka'b b. Mālik, 1265
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī 'Amr, 1347
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī 'Amrah, 1382
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Bakrah, 516, 928, 1018, 1019, 1412
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Lailā, 29, 617, 651, 1151 n., 1392, 1441
'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Ābis, 296
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Sa'id al-Khudrī, 91
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī 'Uqbah, 1419
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abū Bakr, 166, 438, 468, 469, 528
'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abzā, 84, 214
'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Ajlān, 1361
'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Akhnas, 1304
'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Asb'ath, 1302 n.
'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Aswad, 161, 254
'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥakam, 555, 622
'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥārith, 1285
'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥubab, 1107
'Abd al-Raḥmān b. al-Quṣayr, 70, 75
'Abd al-Raḥmān b. 'Amr al-Sulamī, 1294
'Abd al-Raḥmān b. 'Amr b. Abī 'Umar al-Anṣārī, 1347
'Abd al-Raḥmān b. 'Āṣim, 620
'Abd al-Raḥmān b. 'Awf, 36, 37, 71, 73, 75, 337 n., 445, 565, 593, 822, 836, 864, 883,
912, 913, 937, 1041, 1133, 1137, 1251, 1304, 1305
Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Awsajah, 143
Abd al-Rahmān b. Azhar, 334, 1254, 1255
Abd al-Rahmān b. Bishr al-Ansārī al-Azraq, 1014, 1072
Abd al-Rahmān b. Buja'īd, 1269
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ghanam al-Ash'arī, 752, 1045, 1129
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ghazzān, 746
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ḥasanah, 6
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ḥasyyān al-Achārī, 1175
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ḥunain, 1244
Abd al-Rahmān b. Iṣhāq al-Kūfī, 194, 211, 682
Abd al-Rahmān b. Jubair, 88, 266
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ka'b b. Mālik, 275, 851, 1264
Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walīd, 696, 745
Abd al-Rahmān b. Mahdī, 39, 537, 585
Abd al-Rahmān b. Maimūn, 1339
Abd al-Rahmān b. Maslama, 673
Abd al-Rahmān b. Mas'ūd, 420
Abd al-Rahmān b. Mu'ādh, 517, 519
Abd al-Rahmān b. Muḥairīz, 1229
Abd al-Rahmān b. Sa'd b. Zurārah, 600
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ṣafwān, 500, 538
Abd al-Rahmān b. Sahl, 1266, 1267
Abd al-Rahmān b. Samurah, 308, 309 n., 326, 751, 827, 903, 930, 1183
Abd al-Rahmān b. Shibb, 221, 1069
Abd al-Rahmān b. Shuraiḥ al-Iskandarānī, 1194
Abd al-Rahmān b. Sumairah, 1184
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ţāriq, 532
Abd al-Rahmān b. Thābit, 463
Abd al-Rahmān b. Thawbān, 297 n.
Abd al-Rahmān b. Ţurafūh, 1175
Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Uba'id b. Nisṭās, 360
Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Uthmān, 451, 1087, 1451
Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Uyainah, 768
Abd al-Rahmān b. Yazīd, 366, 520, 523
Abd al-Rahmān Ya'tmar al-Dailī, 516
Abd al-Razzāq, 114, 129, 227, 370, 415, 424, 428, 589, 592, 601, 826, 904 n., 916, 960, 977 n., 1080, 1264, 1442
Abd al-Salam b. Abl Ḥāzim Abū Ṭālūt, 1328
Abd al-Salām b. Ḥarb, 4, 199
Abd al-Samād, 74, 326, 661 n., 1279
Abd al-'Uzzāh, 744 n.
Abd al-Wahhāb, 1329
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Abd al-Wahhāb al-Thaqāfl</td>
<td>1125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd al-Wahhāb b Bakht</td>
<td>1435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd al-Wahhāb b. Najdah</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd al-Wāhid</td>
<td>252, 263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd al-Wāhid b. Ziyād</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd al-Wārith</td>
<td>2, 118, 119, 257, 433, 462, 909</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd b. Zam'ah</td>
<td>615</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd Khair</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd Rabbiḥ b. Sa'id al-Anṣārī</td>
<td>383, 956</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abd Yazīd</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abī al-Zinād</td>
<td>597, 1380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abī b. al-Mubārak</td>
<td>264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abidah al-Salmānī</td>
<td>809 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abī Dhi'b</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abī 'Iṣmah</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abī Rushd</td>
<td>355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Abīs b. Rabī'ah</td>
<td>493</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abraham</td>
<td>249, 250, 494 n., 503, 507, 510, 538, 596, 597, 686, 785, 1114, 1198, 1310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Abtāh</td>
<td>137, 508, 532, 533</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘Abd Allah</td>
<td>530, 1380, 1381, 1384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘Abd al-Raḥmān</td>
<td>3, 37, 83, 361, 396, 544, 833, 1315, 1437, 1443</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Aḥmad</td>
<td>948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘Ā'ishah</td>
<td>297</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-'Abbās</td>
<td>464, 603, 702</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-'Abyah</td>
<td>423 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Aḥwaṣ</td>
<td>81, 1134, 1249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-'Ajfa al-Sulaimī</td>
<td>564</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-'Alā'</td>
<td>123, 1125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-'Āliyah</td>
<td>23, 49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-'Āṣ</td>
<td>234, 603 n., 747</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Ashhab</td>
<td>1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Aswad al-Dailamī</td>
<td>183, 338, 467, 821</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-'Awwām</td>
<td>1073</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-A'yas ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Salmān</td>
<td>1302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Aẓhar al-Ānmārī</td>
<td>1403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Aẓhar al-Mughīrah b. Farwah</td>
<td>31, 637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘All</td>
<td>232, 283, 365, 978, 1393, 1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘All al-Hamādīl</td>
<td>915</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘All al-Ḥanafī</td>
<td>603</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘All al-Lū’lū</td>
<td>1432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘All al-Ṭabarī</td>
<td>191 o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Buddāh b. ‘Āṣim</td>
<td>523, 524</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Page Numbers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------------------</td>
<td>--------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Bukhtārī, 405, 841</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Dardā', 44 n. 112, 144, 148, 183, 337 n 368, 376, 398, 578, 653, 660, 676 n., 699, 718, 818 n., 876, 1034, 1087, 1091, 1112, 1140, 1141, 1187, 1196, 1203, 1344, 1354, 1362, 1367, 1370, 1377, 1410, 1422</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Fadl, 332, 857</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Ghaith, 809</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Ghusn, 415</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Haitham, 1082, 1363</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-İnakam, 1378</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Hārith, 1113</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Hasan, 463</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Hawrā, 374</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Husain, 1131</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘All al-Lula’, 1135</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Ja‘d, 548 n.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Jauzā, 341</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Juwairīyyah al-Jarmī, 769</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Khallī, 280</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Khushaib, 1249</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Lahm, 302, 761</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Mallah (b. Usāmah), 14, 273, 1122, 1152, 1191, 1387</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Mughīrah, 1159</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Mundhir 361, 383</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Mutawakkil, 678</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Muṭawas, 657</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Muthannā, 134</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Naḍr, 143, 181</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Najāshī, 965</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘Alqamah, 28</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Qāsim, 124, 141, 369, 634 n., 639, 851, 881, 927, 1162, 1199, 1241, 1348, 1375, 1381 n., 1382, 1427</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Raṣīf, 885</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Ṣahbā’, 184, 593</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Sā‘ib, 1448</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Salt, 81, 1296</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Samḥ, 97</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Sanā‘īl b. Ba’kāh, 627</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Sha‘tha, 141, 423 n., 864</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Tayyāḥ, 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Ṭufail, 495, 496, 841, 1357, 1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-‘Ushārā, 794</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Wadāk. 185</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Wāḍī‘, 934, 1336</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Wahhāb, 1271</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Page Numbers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Walid</td>
<td>1184, 1344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Walid al-Tayālīsī</td>
<td>74, 119, 212, 385 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Yaqzān</td>
<td>70, 77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Yusr</td>
<td>402, 1107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Zāhibiyah</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Za'rā Hārūn b. Tamīm</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Zirād</td>
<td>957, 1217, 1435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū al-Zubair</td>
<td>204, 314, 321, 393, 450, 462, 565, 587, 588, 958, 1072, 1074, 1218, 1228, 1379, 1382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Āmir</td>
<td>1120 n., 1129, 1131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Āmir al-Hawdhanl</td>
<td>1290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Amr, 1036, 1113, 1115, n., 1119 n., 1121 n.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Amr al-Auzā'ī</td>
<td>637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Amr b. al-'Alā</td>
<td>1119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Amr b. Ḥafṣ</td>
<td>619</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Amr Dhakwān</td>
<td>561</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Amr Ya'qūb</td>
<td>1119 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Asad b. 'Amr</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Āṣim</td>
<td>311, 413, 565, 589, 1237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Asmā' al-Rahbl</td>
<td>650</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Aṭiyah</td>
<td>157, 646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Awānah</td>
<td>12 n., 29, 81, 412, 1015, 1127, 1184, 1429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Awf</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Awfā</td>
<td>416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Awīn</td>
<td>1298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū 'Ayyāsh al-Zaraqī</td>
<td>329, 1409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Ayyūb al-Anṣārī</td>
<td>3, 18, 44 n., 110, 117, 152, 333, 337 n., 373, 486, 669, 676 n., 696, 700, 745, 1074 n., 1081, 1368</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Ayyūb b. Sawaid</td>
<td>1419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Bakrah. 57, 176, 327, 332, 516, 635, 662, 771, 778, 903, 1083, 1085, 1182, 1183, 1186, 1198, 1239, 1301, 1308, 1345, 1349, 1366, 1417</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Bakr al-Hamdānī</td>
<td>901 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Bakr al-Khaṭṭābī</td>
<td>247 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Bakr b. 'Abd al-Rahmān</td>
<td>168 n., 214, 314 n., 331 n., 526, 649</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Bakr b. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥārith b. Hishām. 999, 1000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Bakr b. Abī al-Jahm</td>
<td>620</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Bakr b. al-'Arabī</td>
<td>15 n., 174 n., 249 n.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Abū Bakr b. ‘Ayvāsh, 259, 981, 1303
Abū Bakr b. al-Ḥarīth b. Hishām, 259
Abū Bakr b. al-Mundhir, 191 n.
Abū Bakr b. Ḥafṣ, 183
Abū Bakr b. Ḥazm, 1016 n.
Abū Bakr b. Sulaimān b Abī Ḥātbahah, 259
Abū Barzah, 106, 984, 1328, 1353
Abū Barzat al-Aslaml, 744, 904, 983, 1355, 1359
Abū Bashīr al-Anṣārī, 708, 774
Abū Basrat al-Ghifārī, 651, 1437
Abū Bishr, 724
Abū Bishr Jaʿfar b. Abī Waḥṣibyyah, 70, 127
Abū Buraidah, 38, 1446
Abū Burdah, 12, 558, 911, 930, 986, 1015, 1127, 1128, 1174, 1213, 1256, 1399
Abū Burdah b. ‘Abd Allah, 399
Abū Burdah b. Abī Mūsā al-Ash’arī, 270
Abū Burdah b. Niyār, 786, 787 n.
Abū Daigham, 1361
Abū Daḏām, 1361
Abū Dhīb, 1074
Abū Fīrās, 1273
Abū Ghālib, 908
Abū Ghassān, 52
Abū Ghuṭaif al-Hudball, 15, 1253
Abū Ḥafṣ Mughraḥah, 41, 620, 621
Abū Ḥammām al-Ahwāzī, 1403
Abū Ḥamzah, 309, 621, 882, 907, 1328
Abū al-Juhaim b. al-Ḥārith b. al-Simmat al-Anṣārī, 86
Abū Ilyās al-Asadī, 418
Abū Ṭimār, 696 1167
Abū Ṭūfān, 794, 1380
Abū Ishāq, 56. 145, 194 n., 225, 231, 284, 364, 374, 411, 558, 622, 639, 815, 913, 968 n., 1192
Abū Isrā’īl, 934
Abū Ja’far 70, 79, 134, 360, 1073, 1113, 1115 n., 1116 n., 1120 n.
Abū Ja’far ‘Abd Allah b. Nāfi‘, 882
Abū Ja’far al-Bāqir, 249 n.
Abū Ja’far al-Khaṭṭāl, 966
Abū Ja’far Muhammad b. ‘All, 1031
Abū Ja’far Yazīd b. al-Qa‘qā, 1119
Abū Jahl, 459, 553, 742. 753, 758
Abū Jahm, 233, 619, 1132, 1272
Abū Jamrah, 1046
Abū Janāb, 195 n.
Abū Jubairah b. al-Dāhāk, 1380
Abū Juḥaifah, 137, 177, 194, 991, 1064
Abū Juḥaim, 180
Abū Jurayy al-Hujaimī, 1437
Abū Jurayy Jābir b. Sallam, 1139
Abū Kabshah, 341 n., 1084
Abū Kāmil, 218, 415, 1236
Abū Karīmah, 1058
Abū Kāthīr al-‘Ubarī, 1043
Abū Khalīd, 23
Abū Khālid, 159. 355
Abū Khālid al-Wālibī, 349
Abū Khālid b. al-Ḥuwairith, 1068
Abū Khālid b. Sulaimān b. Ḥayyān, 560
Abū Khirāsh al-Sulaimī, 1369
Abū Lubābah, 385, 941, 942, 1448
Abū Labīd, 751, 962 n.
Abū Madhhūr, 1108
Abū Maṣṭurah, 128-30, 241 n.
Abū Maimūnah Salmī, 617
Abū Mājīdah, 903, 976
Abū Mālik, 84 n., 85, 175, 202, 1414
Abū Mālik al-Asb‘al, 691, 1045, 1104, 1129, 1181, 1413
Abū Ma‘mar, 205, 458, 546, 1198
Abū Maṣṭur al-Ḥārith b. Maṣṭur, 1045
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Abu Ma'qil</td>
<td>526</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Marhab</td>
<td>913</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Marhum</td>
<td>1339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Marthad al-Ghanawi</td>
<td>917</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Marwân</td>
<td>1431</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Maryam</td>
<td>832, 1049, 1336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Ma'shar</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mas'ud al-Ansârî</td>
<td>103, 150, 153, 154, 157, 175, 250, 297 n., 454, 832, 975, 991, 1014, 1201, 1343, 1384, 1420, 1426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mijlaz</td>
<td>194, 524, 1188, 1442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Masbah al-Muqarrî</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mishar</td>
<td>724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mu'awiyah</td>
<td>6, 520, 578, 763, 891, 901, 1376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Muhammâd</td>
<td>111, 178, 372, 385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Muhammâd b. 'Amr</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mu'zim</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mulaikhah</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Murrah</td>
<td>663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mū'a al-Ash'ârî</td>
<td>1, 6, 12, 39, 83, 104, 247, 297, 321, 325, 326, 327 n., 331 n., 373 n., 396, 397, 442, 549, 558, 646 n., 650 n., 698, 716, 759, 815, 816, 827, 828, 880, 882, 884, 891, 892, 930, 949, 1023, 1027, 1044, 1161, 1163, 1183, 1185, 1187, 1213, 1214, 1279, 1314, 1352, 1374, 1380, 1384, 1419, 1421, 1429, 1430, 1432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Muş'ab</td>
<td>1025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Mushir</td>
<td>637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Muslim</td>
<td>924</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Muťamîr</td>
<td>1151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Naďrah</td>
<td>100, 101 n., 362, 583, 584, 1125, 1236, 1440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Najîh al-Sulâmî</td>
<td>1111</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Namlaţ al-Ansârî</td>
<td>1035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Nu'aîm</td>
<td>210, 669, 1074, 1141, 1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Nûh</td>
<td>746</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Nujaid</td>
<td>405, 1343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Qais</td>
<td>88, 559 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Qaraďâh</td>
<td>8, 19, 112, 114, 115, 120, 142, 150, 188, 203, 205, 233, 234, 245, 279, 280, 349, 376, 489, 665, 756, 757, 768, 777, 906, 949, 1048, 1292, 1343, 1396, 1442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Qilâbah</td>
<td>155, 215, 216, 650, 796, 951 n., 1109, 1118, 1119, 1176, 1216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Qudâmâh</td>
<td>368 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Quhâfâh</td>
<td>240, 1168, 1308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Râfî</td>
<td>53, 151, 170, 369, 433, 533, 596, 770, 771 n., 950, 999, 1294, 1415, 1432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Râfî b. 'Amr al-Ghifârl</td>
<td>725</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Raibânîh</td>
<td>793, 1131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Ramlah</td>
<td>783 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abu Razîn</td>
<td>27, 478, 1246, 1324, 1396</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Abū Righāl, 878
Abū Rimthāh, 257, 1135, 1168, 1257
Abū Rukānāh, 591
Abū Ṣafwān b. ‘Umairah, 948
Abū Ṣaghīrah, 637
Abū Sahl, 80
Abū Saḥlat al-Sā'īb b. Khallād, 123
Abū Saʻīd al-Mu‘allā, 382
Abū Saʻīd b. al-Aʻrābī, 1065
Abū Saʻīd b. al-ʻĀṣ, 759
Abū Sālām, 336, 705, 1037
Abū Sālāmah, 13, 53, 54, 59, 75, 183, 234, 329, 359, 462, 564, 595, 624, 471, 887, 888, 934, 935, 1007, 1014, 1097, 1205, 1261-64, 1342, 1377
Abū Sālāmah b. ʻAbd al-Asad, 155
Abū Sālāmah b. ʻAbd al-Rahmān, 11, 58, 197, 259, 351, 592, 598, 619, 620, 953 n., 1048, 1174, 1215, 1253, 1269
Abū Ṣāliḥ al-Ghiţārī, 119, 124, 125, 180, 204, 287, 412, 898, 1252 n., 1253, 1354, 1381
Abū Sallām al-Jaibānī, 9
Abū Sallām, 1408
Abū Sāsān, 1251
Abū Shāh, 536, 1036, 1261, 1262
Abū Shuʻaib, 338
Abū Shurāyḥ al-Kaʻbī, 1058, 1258, 1261
Abū Sinān, 452, 567
Abū Sīrīn, 331 n.
Abū Sīrmah, 1031
Abū Sūfīyān, 254, 260, 565, 619, 624, 724, 742, 743, 858, 1003, 1356, 1381, 1422
Abū Sūfīyān b. Ḥarb, 857
Abū Sūfīyān b. Saʻīd b. al-Mughīrah, 47
Abū Sulaymān b. Mālik b. al-Ḥuwairith, 215, 216
Abū Ṭālīb, 443, 114, 525, 666 n., 748, 757, 1042, 1069, 1155, 1156, 1360, 1388
Abū Ṭālīb, 22 n., 533 n., 772, 821, n., 914 n.
Abū Tamāmah al-Juŷaimī, 371, 596
Abū Taubah, 868
Abū Thābit, 1090, 1231
Abū Tha‘labah al-Khishānī, 726, 801, 802, 804, 1078, 1208, 1210
Abū Thawr, 91 n., 159 n., 466 n., 548 n., 550 n., 555 n., 569 n., 577 n., 600 n., 653 n., 681 n., 723 n., 765 n., 972 n., 973 n., 983 n., 995 n., 1001 n., 1074 n., 1079 n., 1108 n., 1149 n., 1222 n., 1229 n.
Abū Thumāmah al-Ḥanā‘it, 148
Abū Ṭibbah, 974 n., 1145
Abū Tumailah, 1276
Abū ‘Ubaidah, 253, 263, 550 n., 818 n., 858, 1008 n., 1079, 1207, 1331
Abū ‘Ubad al-Walīd, 179 n.
Abū ‘Umair, 126, 127, 299, 1383
Abū ‘Umais, 266
Abū Umāmah, 32, 39, 139, 146, 336, 338, 402, 420, 518, 687, 693, 808, 1003, 1010 n., 1081, 1158, 1203, 1221, 1312, 1344, 1362, 1366, 1435, 1443
Abū Umāmah b. Sahīl, 420, 1248, 1259, 1386
Abū Umāmah b. Tha‘labah al-Anṣārī, 1158
Abū Umāmah al-Bāhīl, 689
Abū ‘Umar, 256, 1383 n.
Abū ‘Umar ‘Īsā b. Yūnus al-Fakhūrī al-Ramīl, 256
Abū Umayyāh (al-Makhzūml), 257, 335, 530, 1208, 1220, 1221
Abū ‘Umrah, 762
Abū ‘Uqbah, 1419
Abū Usaid al-Anṣārī, 120, 189, 245, 737, 1452
Abū Usaid Mālik b. Rabī‘ah al-Sā‘īdī, 1423
Abū Usāmah, 10, 287, 647, 1208, 1373, 1374, 1383
Abū ‘Uthmān, 596, 1073, 1417
Abū ‘Utmān al-Nahḍl, 194, 208, 1130
Abū ‘Utmān al-Shāml, 1107
Abū Uwais, 83, 359, 870
Abū Wāḥib al-Jusnāml, 706, 707, 709, 1377
Abū Wā‘il, 246, 412, 587, 698, 1340, 1372
Abū Walīd, 528
Abū Waqīd al-Laithīl, 298, 452, 755, 803
Abū Waqqās, 1305 n.
Abū Yūsuf, 15 n., 36 n., 39 n., 54 n., 103 n., 294 n., 301 n., 348 n., 359 n., 455 n., 507 n., 525 n., 569 n., 572 n., 818 n., 862 n., 873 n., 908 n., 910 n., 963 n., 967 n., 969 n., 998 n., 1039 n., 1068 n., 1104 n., 1105 n., 1149 n., 1229 n., 1245 n., 1251 n., 1256 n., 1274 n.
Abū Yūnus Sulānī b. Jubāir, 1324
Abū Zaid, 22, 1109
Abū Zaid Suḥail b. ‘Amr, 742
Abū Zabyāh, 1401
Abū Ziyād Khiyār b. Salamah, 1077
Abū Zubair al-Anmarī, 1403
Abū Zubair al-Numairī, 239
Abū Zubyān, 1227
Abū Zumail, 1128, 1416
al-Abwā‘, 384, 485, 1356
Abyaḍ b. Ḥammāl, 860, 870, 871
Abyun, 1099
Abyssinia, 235 n., 242 n., 558, 564, 759 n., 793, 911 n.
Abyssinians, 1045, 1197, 1199, 1226, 1371
Adam, 269, 339, 470, 576, 577, 1182, 1183, 1297, 1307, 1310, 1314, 1317, 1318, 1418
‘Adawī. 424
‘Adawliyyah, 1083
al-‘Ağbā‘, 518, 940, 941, 1344
‘Addā’ b. Khālid b. Ḥudbah, 509, 510
Aden, 1099 n., 1200
Adhākhīr, 183
Adhruḥ, 1327
‘Adl, 524 n.
‘Adl b. ‘Adl (al-Kindl), 590, 836, 1210
‘Adl b. Arḥāt, 718, 1342
‘Adl b. Badda, 1024
‘Adl b. Ḥātim, 283, 644, 793, 800-02, 930, 13 86
‘Adl b. Ka‘b, 980, 1132
‘Adl b. Thābit, 70, 76, 77, 158
‘Adl b. ‘Umairat al-Kindl, 1015
‘Adl b. Zaid, 541
Aflah b. Abī al-Qu‘ais, 548, 1379
Afṣat b. Khalīṣah, 57
‘Afṣā‘, 742
‘Afrāḥ, 1379
al-Agharr al-Muzanāl, 395
Abhār al-Zait, 302, 1184
Abḥād b. ‘Abd al-Wāḥid, 637
Ahmad b. Ibrahim, 604, 909
Ahmad b. Khalid al-Wahbl, 319
Ahmad b. Muhammad, 934, 935, 1370
Ahmad b. Sa'id, 1323
Ahmad b. Saffih, 227, 306, 339, 424, 613, 778, 826, 981, 1076, 1090, 1222, 1318
Ahmad b. Shabbūvah, 934
Ahmad b. Jaz', 229
Ahmad ibn Mānî, 982
Ahmas, 777, 872
Aḥnaf b. Qais, 864, 1186
Aḥliya, 590
al-‘Ainî, 512 n., 933 n.
‘A‘ir, 540
1368, 1369, 1373, 1374, 1382, 1383, 1386, 1388, 1391, 1374, 1400, 1403-05, 1411, 1414, 1415, 1424, 1425

A'jam, 1185
Ahram al-Asadl, 768
'Alk Dhū Khaiwān, 859, 860
al-'Aλa, 640, 641
al-'Aλa' b. al-Hashraml, 1421, 1422
'Ala' b. al-Musayyab, 70, 79, 1207
'Ala' b. Ziyād, 907
Alexandria, 915 n.
All b. 'Abd Allah, 1390
'All b. al-Ḥusain, 214, 553, 571 n.
'All b. All., 199
'All b. al-Madīnl, 178, 977 n., 1323
'All b. al-Mubārak, 142, 475, 588, 935
'All b. 'Ayyāsh, 69
'All b. Bakr, 755
'Ali b. Budhaimah, 66, 1047
'All b. Ḥāfṣab Madā'inl, 1389
'All b. Majīdah, 976 n.
'All b. Nufail, 1141
'All b. Rabī'ah, 719
'All b. Rukānah, 1137
'All b. Sahl, 1401
'All b. Shaibān, 107, 1401
'All b. Shammakb, 909
'All b. Ţalq, 50, 256
'All b. 'Umar b. Ḥusain b. All., 1415
'All b. Yaḥyā b. Khalīlād, 219
'All b. Yazīd b. Rukānah, 595
'All b. Zaid, 1279, 1364, 1365 n.
'Amr b. Malik, 341, 444
'Amr b. Muhajir, 618
'Amr b. Murrah, 394, 592, 1207
'Amr b. Muslim, 601, 784
'Amr b. Salamah, 154, 155, 216
'Amr b. Thabit, 73
'Amr b. Umayyah al-Damr, 116, 1356
'Amr b. 'Uqais, 704
'Amr b. 'Uthmân, 266, 726
'Amr b. Yahyâ al-Mâzinî, 30
'Amr b. Zâhirîyyah, 976
Anas b. Abî Marthad al-Ghanawî, 692
Anas b. al-Naḏr, 1289
Anas b. 'Ayyâsh, 931
Anas b. Hâkim al-Dabbî, 221
Anas b. Sirûn, 72, 587
'Anazah, 1438
al-‘Anbarî, 46
'Anbasah, 114
'Aqabah, 484, 662
'Aqil, 433 n., 533 n., 715, 821 n., 1008, 1144, 1351
Aqra' b. Hâbîs (al-‘Ahnâzî), 427, 452, 1260, 1333, 1440
al-Aqṣâ, 457, 540
A‘râbî, 1323, 1338, 1339
Arabia, 386 n., 427 n., 441 n., 526, 535 n., 597 n., 612 n., 630 n., 743, 746, 851 n., 852 n., 853 n., 860, 861, 925 n., 974 n., 975 n., 978 n., 980 n., 983 n., 1007 n., 1095 n., 1098 n., 1111, 1197, 1200, 1212, 1243 n., 1262 n., 1419
Arabs, 9 n., 169 n., 282 n., 286 n., 328, 385 n., 386 n., 415, 469 n., 471 n., 508, 515 n.,
Index

516 n., 526 n., 538 n., 539 n., 551 n., 563 n., 571 n., 634 n., 709 n., 749, 772, 796, 832, 862 n., 863 n., 916 n., 973, 1023 n., 1077 n., 1079 n., 1083, 1085 n., 1090 n., 1093, 1096 n., 1097 n., 1098, 1117, 1137 n., 1138 n., 1260 n., 1297, 1385 n., 1387, 1388 n., 1424 n., 1452

'Arafah, 456 n., 470, 479 n., 507, 516, 529 n., 635, 664, 666, 671, 672

'Arafat, 328, 455, 471 n., 479, 505, 508, 511, 513, 517, 521 n., 672 n., 783, 1325

al-A'raj, 150, 480, 597, 649, 924

'Arfah b. al-Ḥārith al-Kandil, 463

Arfajah b. As'ad, 1175, 1333

'Ārif b. al-Dailami, 1110

'Ashā', 443

A'rij, 1435

As'ad b. Zurārah, 275, 881

Aṣāfir, 1356

Asbāt b. Naṣr, 1220

'Āṣ b. Wā'īl, 813, 1379

Ash'arīn/Ash'aris, 1117 n., 1213, 1314 n.

Ash'ath, 798, 921

Ash'ath b. Ishāq, 778

Ash'ath b. Jābir, 807

Ash'ath b. Qais, 998, 1028

Ash'ath b. Sulaim, 513

Ashja', 488, 1260

Ashja'ı, 1304

'Ashhar, 1199

Ashyam al-Ḍubābī, 826

'Āṣim, 16, 77, 391, 411, 1113, 1114 n., 1115 n., 1118, 1119, 1174, 1245, 1246, 1302, 1417

'Āṣim b. 'Adl, 605, 606

'Āṣim b. Ahwāl, 259

'Āṣim b. Ḥumaid, 197

'Āṣim b. Kulaib, 187, 190, 193 n., 215, 786, 946

'Āṣim b. 'Umar, 592, 1233

'Āṣim b. Thābit, 736

'Āsiyah, 1377

Aslam, tribe of, 497, 673, 734, 780, 1233-35

Aslamīyah, 538

Asmā', 11, 69, 75, 82, 95, 217, 308, 390, 405 n., 406 n., 437, 445, 457, 480, 502, 515, 618, 639 n., 647, 872, 1058, 1039, 1116, 1126, 1132, 1144, 1145, 1176, 1391, 1436

Asmā' b. al-Ḥakam, 396

al-Asma'l, 1055, 1252

Asmar b. Muṣarrīs, 873
\textit{Asqalān}, 724 n.
\textit{Aṣrām}, 1378
\textit{Aswād}, 336, 366, 602
\textit{Aswād} b. "Āmir, 11
\textit{Aswād} b. Yāzīd, 356, 816


\textit{Aṭā’} al-Ḥasan al-Ḥašī, 231 n., 261 n.
\textit{Aṭā’} al-Kaikharānī, 1344
\textit{Aṭā’} al-Khurāsānī, 162, 571, 588
\textit{Aṭā’} b. "Abd al-Rahmān, 109. 259
\textit{Aṭā’} b. Abl Ṭabāh, 89 n., 97 n., 120 n., 276, 313 n., 318, 383, 470, 550 n., 983 n., 1265 n., 1275
\textit{Aṭā’} b. Suḥāib, 965
\textit{Aṭā’} b. Ya’qūb, 1344
\textit{Aṭā’} b. Yāsār, 33, 90, 262, 426, 429, 781, 793
\textit{Aṭā’} b. Yāzīd al-Laythī, 180
\textit{Aṭā’} b. Zuhair, 429
\textit{Atalab}, 1379
\textit{Athran}, 563
\textit{Aṭīyyah}, 1049, 1078 n., 1341
\textit{Aṭīyyah} al-Quraẓī, 1227
\textit{Aṭīyyah} b. Sa’d al-Awfl, 1115
\textit{Aṭtāb} b. Usāid, 419
\textit{Awālī}, 107
\textit{Awf} b. Mālik al-Ashja’ī, 223, 421, 431, 742, 757, 758, 834, 1029, 1039, 1096, 1302, 1391, 1424
\textit{Awn} b. Kahmās, 143
\textit{Aws}, 851
\textit{Aws} al-Thaqaff, 91
\textit{Aws} b. Aws al-Thaqaff, 39, 91, 269, 397
\textit{Aws} b. Ḥudhaifah, 365
\textit{Aws} b. Sāmīt, 598, 599
\textit{Awtās}, 577
Index


Ayāz b. Salamah, 729

'Ayyāsh, 58, 846

'Ayyāsh b. Abl Rabī‘ah, 621

Ayyāsh b. Sahl al-Sā‘īdī, 189, 245

Ayyūb. 69, 88, 109, 134, 142, 191, 216, 259, 273, 314, 321, 415, 422, 433, 449, 482, 592, 594, 595, 634, 651, 766, 839, 920, 935, 965, 966, 977 n., 1023, 1056, 1074, 1075, 1106, 1216, 1270, 1298, 1299

Ayyūb Abū al-‘Aīlā, 76

Ayyūb al-Sūkhtiyānī, 1277

Ayyūb b. Bushair b. Ka‘b al-‘Adawī, 1438

Ayyūb b. Mūsā, 1148

Ayyūb b. Sulaimān, 934

Azd, 819, 831, 1117 n., 1131

Azdíyyah, 80

Azhar b. ‘Abd Allah al-Ḥarārī, 1221

‘Azīz, 1379

‘Azrah, 375

al-Azraq b. Qais, 257

‘Azwarā, 778

B

Badhl al-Majhūd, 9 n., 16 n., 67 n.

Badr, 599, 733, 746, 782, 963, 1046; Battle of, 155, 242 n., 627, 732, 738, 742, 747 n., 759, 760 n., 761, 763, 846 n., 850, 851, 881 n., 965, 1306, 1309 n., 1371; Day of, 764, 845, 886; prisoners of, 750

Baghdad, 1010, 1023 n., 1333 n.

Baghdādī, 16 n.

al-Bāhill, 667

al-Bahlyyy, 620, 905

Bahlyyyah, 71

al-Bahrain, 36 n., 275, 406, 864, 1421

Bahz b. Ḥakīm, 353, 411, 574, 1030, 1031 n., 1123, 1384, 1422

al-Balāḏrī, 83 n., 460, 464, 465

al-Baḥaqqī, 67 n., 74 n., 84 n., 101 n., 275 n., 374 n., 876 n., 913 n., 1199 n., 1256 n., 1284 n.

Baisān, 1204, 1205

Bait al-Maqdis, 3, 38, 118, 1131

Bakkār b. Yaḥyā, 94

Bakr, 57, 1340

Bakr b. ‘Abd Allah b. al-Muzānī, 13, 171, 536
Bakr b. Laith, 1247
Bakr b. Mubashshir al-Ansārī, 299
Bakr b. Muḍar, 168
Bakr b. Sawādah, 90
Bakr b. Wā'il, 865, 873
Balqā', 1327 n.
Banī Sa'd, 505
Banū 'Abd Allah b. Ka'b, 660
Banū al-Ashkal, 99, 342
Banū 'Abd al-Dār, 486, 627
Banū 'Abd al-Muttalib, 184, 506, 514, 748, 821 n., 842, 843, 950
Banū 'Abd Manaf, 499
Banū 'Abd Shams, 553, 842, 843 n.
Banū 'Adī, 1276
Banū al-'Ajlan, 610
Banū al-'Anbar, 1026
Banū al-Dā'il b. Bakr b. Kīnānah, 870
Banū al-Hajjāj, 742
Banū al-Ḥārith b. al-Khazraj, 1374
Banū al-Ḥārith b. 'Āmir b. Nawfāl, 886
Banū al-Mulawwih, 741
Banū al-Muntafiq, 34, 35, 1114
Banū al-Muṣṭaliq, 435, 582, 728, 1103 n.
Banū al-Najjār, 117, 118, 1156, 1329
Banū al-Rushdah, 1379
Banū al-Sa'yah, 853
Banū al-Zinād, 1379
Banū 'Āmir, 87, 478, 1345, 1429
Banū 'Āmir b. Luwayy, 627
Banū 'Amr b. 'Awf, 117, 239, 240
Banū 'Āqīl, 940
Banū Asad, 56, 426, 1136, 1151, 1152, 1160
Banū Asad b. Khuzaimah, 152
Banū Azd, 819 n.
Banū Bakr, 518
Banū Bayyādah, 275, 562, 598, 974 n., 1263
Banū Ṕamrah, 509
Banū Dhuḥl, 847
Banū Fazārah, 611
Banū Ghifār, 81, 387
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Banū Ghubār</td>
<td>724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Ḥanīfah</td>
<td>741, 772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Ḥarām</td>
<td>334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Ḥārithah</td>
<td>793, 852, 966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Ḥāshim</td>
<td>70, 77, 206, 433 n., 434 n., 533 n., 821, 840, 842, 843, 845 n., 1365 n., 1408</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Hishām b. al-Mughfrah</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Hudhail</td>
<td>767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Isrā’īl</td>
<td>6, 45 n., 1207, 1365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Khath’am</td>
<td>777 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Khidrah</td>
<td>625</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Khuzā’ah</td>
<td>819 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Kinānah</td>
<td>272, 533, 534 n., 821</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Kulaib</td>
<td>1333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Laith</td>
<td>1179, 1260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Liḥyān</td>
<td>695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Maghālah</td>
<td>1205, 1361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Makhzūm</td>
<td>433, 620</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Mālik</td>
<td>365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Mat‘ān</td>
<td>419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Murrāh b. ‘Awf</td>
<td>714</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Nabhān</td>
<td>1333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Naḍr b. Mālik</td>
<td>1268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Nawfāl</td>
<td>588, 842, 843 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Qainuqa‘</td>
<td>845, 850, 851 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Qurayḥah</td>
<td>739, 852, 942 n., 1018, 1019 n., 1032, 1227, 1257 n., 1439</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Qushair</td>
<td>660</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Rifā‘ah</td>
<td>872</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sa‘d b. Bakr</td>
<td>124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sadūs</td>
<td>847</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sahm</td>
<td>525, 976, 1024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sā‘idah</td>
<td>16 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sūlamah</td>
<td>268, 361, 757, 1380, 1423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sulaim</td>
<td>320, 379, 403 n., 568, 769, 786, 872, 1054</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sulma</td>
<td>847</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Taghlib</td>
<td>863, 865</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Taim Allah b. Tha‘labah</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Tamlīm</td>
<td>386 n., 873, 1030, 1175 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Thaqif</td>
<td>773 n., 858, 859, 872 n., 1268 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Umayyah</td>
<td>1302 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Zubaid</td>
<td>845</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Zuhair b. ‘Uqaiṣh</td>
<td>849</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Banū Zuhrah, 737
Banū Zuraiq, 598, 714
al-Baqli, 650, 952, 1236, 1373, 1448
Baqli al-Gharqad, 426, 1314
Baqli al-Khabkhab, 878
Baqīyyah, 191, 935, 1098, 1359
Barā' b. 'Āqib, 39, 44, 125, 143, 162, 163, 173, 193, 217, 228, 296, 304, 316, 376, 474, 483, 631, 717, 735, 737, 786, 787, 815, 913, 1012, 1129, 1136, 1164, 1240, 1243, 1329-31, 1338, 1340, 1402
Barakah, 1379
Bāriq, 1239
al-Barmakī, 492
Barqah, 9 n.
Barrah, 1379
Barīrah, 434, 601, 602, 1102
Bashīr, 104, 917
Bashīr b. Abl Mašūr al-Kalīf, 662 n.
Bashīr b. Abū Mašūd, 703
Bashīr b. al-Khaṣāṣīyyah, 415
Bashīr b. Sa'd, 256
Bashīr b. Yaṣār, 529, 763 n., 854, 855, 856 n., 1268
Baṣrah, 1, 38, 88, 112, 273 n., 297, 299 n., 424, 460, 483, 571, 634, 788, 882, 903, 907 n., 1113, 1114 n., 1120, 1198 n., 1199 n., 1204, 1280, 1315, 1390, 1417
Baṣrah b. Aktham, 571
al-Bahrī, 213
al-Baṭhā, 177, 464, 469, 492, 534, 543, 1156, 1322
Baṭhan, 1090
Baṭn Baṭhān, 299
Baṭn Sarīf, 529
Bawāzīj, 451
Bayān, 77
al-Bazzār, 33 n., 869 n.
al-Bazzī, 1113
Bilāl b. Abl Mūsā, 1015
Bilāl b. al-Ḥārīth, 477
Bilāl b. al-Ḥārīth al-Muzanī, 869, 870, 945 n.
Bilāl b. Mīrdās al-Fazārī, 1015
Bilāl b. Yaḥyā al-‘Absī, 449
Bilāl b. Yaṣār b. Zaid, 395
Bilāt, 152, 1259
Index

Bint al-Hārith b. al-Nu‘mān, 284
Birda*, 567
Blr Jamāl, 86
Bishr, 57, 244, 811, 1376
Bishr b al-Burrā‘ b. Ma‘rūr, 1235 n., 1264, 1265
Bishr b. al-Mufaddal, 187
Bishr b. al-Sarrī, 1390
Bishr b. ‘Āṣim, 726
Bishr b. Bakr, 599, 1195
Bishr b. Khalid, 1374 n.
Bishr b. Marwān, 284
Bishr b. Rāfi‘, 901 n.
Buḍā‘ah, 16, 17
Budair b. Warqā’ al-Khuza‘ī, 773, 857
Buḥair b. Raisān, 915
Buḥaisah, 438, 989
Bujualb, 864
Bukair, 770
Bukair b. al-Ashajj, 592
Bukhārā, 1192 n.
Buḫtī, 460
Buṇānab, 1175
Buraidat al-Aslamī, 1046 n.
Burd b. Sinān, 766
Busaisah, 724, 898
Bushair b. Ka‘b, 1343
Busr, 1078
Busr b. Arṭāt, 1228
Busrah, 44 n:
Buwānab, 939
Byzantine, 755, 757, 769
Byzantines, 771, 774, 1194, 1422

Cairo, 661
Caliphs, 200 n., 841 n.
Central Asia, 1200 n., 1378
D

Dubā'ah, 1406
al-Ḍabāb, 782
al-Ḍahhāk, 327 n., 559
Ḍahhāk b. Frūz 604
Ḍahhāk b. Qais, 266, 290, 745
Ḍahhāk b. Sufyān, 826
Dahnā, 873
Dailam al-Ḥimyar, 1044
Dailamī, 1050
Dair Mustablīl, 637
Dajjāl, 400, 702, 1178, 1179, 1195, 1199, 1200-04, 1314, 1331
Ḍajrān, 273, 274
Damascus, 123, 249, 653, 662, 1034, 1113, 1183, 1196, 1203, 1280, 1302, 1438 n.
Ḍamḍam, 1361
Ḍamdam b. Qatādah, 611 n.
Ḍamām b. Tha‘labah, 124
Daniel, 1096 n.
Daqūqā, 1023
Dāraqūṭnī, 193 n., 652 n., 977 n.
al-Ḍarāwarīl, 140, 331
al-Dārīml, 1279
Daus, mountain of, 759 n.
David, 648 n., 666, 667, 674, 1207
Daws, idols of, 777 n.
Ḍawūd, 107 n., 613, 648 n., 653 n., 667, 669 n., 674, 680 n., 764, 784 n., 1109 n., 1231 n.
Ḍawūd al-Ẓahrīl, 53 n., 335 n., 548 n., 550 n., 556 n., 795 n., 1149 n.
Ḍawūd b. ‘Abd al-Furāt, 924
Ḍawūd b. al-Ḥusain, 260, 321, 824, 956, 1245
Ḍawūd b. ‘All, 593 n.
Ḍawūd b. ‘Āmir b. Sa‘d b. Abī Waqqāṣ, 900
Ḍawūd b. Qais, 263
Ḍawūd b. Sāliḥ b. Dīnār al-Timmār, 20
Ḍawūd b. Sawār al-Muzanī, 126
Ḍawūd b. Sawwād, 1147
Index

Delhi, 45 n.
Dhakwān, 337, 379
Dhāt al-Jaish, 83 n.
Dhāt al-Nuṣub, 870
Dhāt al-Riqā', 48, 322, 323 n., 324
Dhāt al-Ṣalāṣil, 88
Dhū al-Jaushan, 782
Dhū al-Khalāṣah, 777
Dhū al-Majāz, 456
Dhū al-Marwah, 872
Dhū al-Thadyah, 778 n.
Dhū al-Zawā'id, 835
Dhulūqiyah, 1187
Dhū Mikhbar, 116, 774, 1194, 1195
Dhū Qarad, 760
Dhū Ṭuwā, 491, 492
Dhū Yazan, 1128
Dhiya b. Khalīfah al-Kalbī, 662, 848, 849, 1148
Dijlah, 1198
Diyār Bakr, 939 n.
Ḍubā'ah, 465, 846, 878
Dubai'ah b. Ḥusain al-Thalabī, 1309
Duḥaibah, 872
Dukain b. Sa'id al-Muzānī, 1445
Dukhain, 1263
Ḍilham b. Ṣalih, 38
Ḍūmah, 862
al-Dūr, 1113

Edinburgh, 1322 n.,
Egypt, 9, 47, 110, 316, 419, 767, 807, 862, 1034 n., 1130 n., 1158, 1174, 1200 n.
Encyclopaedia Britannica, 18 n.
Ethiopia, 116, 699 n.
Euphrates, 1201

F
Fadak, 836 n., 838-40, 855, 861, 868
al-Faḍl, 478, 511, 912
al-Faḍl, b. 'Abbās, 184, 355, 477, 479, 506, 522, 844
al-Faḍl b. Dāi'am, 882 n., 1231
al-Faḍl b. Mūsā, 599
Faḍl b. Ya'qūb, 499
Fā'īd, 1073
al-Faji‘ al-‘Āmirī, 1074
Fakhtah, 976 n.
Faraj, 871
Farwah b. Musaik, 1099, 1117
Farwah b. Nawfal, 401, 1403
Fath al-Bārī, 269 n.
Fath al-Mulhim, 5 n., 46 n.
Fāṭimah, 69, 70, 72, 75, 76, 78, 449, 480, 504, 507, 553, 554 n., 570, 618-23, 676, 839-41, 843, 845, 889, 894 n., 1060, 1145, 1147, 1155, 1170, 1191, 1203, 1204, 1218, 1365, 1405, 1406, 1415
Fazārah, 749
Firās, 77
al-Firyābī, 43, 256, 948
Fudail, 14, 1427
Fudālah, b. ‘Ubaid, 316, 388, 692, 915, 951, 952, 1068, 1158, 1229
Fulaiḥ, 190
Fulaiḥ b. Sulaimān, 1008
Fulait al-‘Āmirī, 57
Furaitaḥ, 628
Furāt b. Ḥavyān, 733, 734
Fustāt, 9, 661, 662

G
Gabriel, 102, 104, 1157, 1305, 1326, 1327, 1359, 1394, 1424, 1425
Gathrān, 563
Ghābah, 279, 662
Ghailān, 666
Ghālib, 1279, 1443
Ghālib al-Qaṭṭān, 829
Ghālib b. ‘Abd Allah, 741 n.
Ghālib b. al-Abjar, 1072, 1073
Ghāmil, 1238, 1239
Ghāmidfyyah, 904 n., 1236
al-Gharqad, 950 n.
Ghassān, 862, 1117 n., 1239
Ghaṭafān, 324, 403 n., 1117, 1260
al-Ghazālī, 1194 n.
Ghifār, 1141
Ghubairah, 1045 n.
Ghudsaiq b. al-Ḥarīth, 55
Ghuftaylāh, 1043
Ghumaisa, 689 n.
Ghandar, 792
Index

Ghuráb, 1379
al-Ghūṭah, 1196, 1302
Greeks, 1089, 1200 n.

H

al-Ḥabashah, 116
Ḥabbān b. Hilāl, 341
Ḥabbān b. Wāsi‘, 20
Ḥālib, 43, 76, 77, 355, 546 n.
Ḥālibah, 600
Ḥābib al-Anṣārī, 24
Ḥābib al-Mālikī, 405
Ḥābib al-Mu‘allim, 506
Ḥābib b. Abī Marzūq, 104
Ḥābib b. al-Shahid, 18, 259
Ḥābib b. Maslamah al-Fihri, 766, 767
Ḥābib b. Salim, 1244
Ḥadrad b. Abī Ḥadrad, 1369 n.
Ḥadrāmawt, 921, 922, 1029
al-Ḥaḍrami, 537
Ḥāfṣ al-Hirawī, 877 n.
Ḥāfṣ, 187, 520, 1113, 1115 n., 1119 n.
Ḥāfṣah, 8, 79, 90, 294, 476, 528, 619, 675, 676, 811, 1051, 1090, 1402
Ḥāfṣ b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, 1149
Ḥāfṣ b. ‘Āṣim, 316
Ḥāfṣ b. Ghiyāth, 168, 375, 653, 678
Ḥāfṣ b. ‘Inān al-Ḥanafi, 965
Ḥāfṣ b. Maisarah, 263
Ḥāṭ b. ‘Ubaid Allah, 319
Ḥafūy, 714
al-Ḥaitham, 155
Ḥaiwah b. Shuraiḥ, 120
Ḥajar, 16 n., 947
Ḥajjāj, 30, 116, 190–509 n., 524, 538 n., 1217, 1302, 1303
Ḥajjāj b. al-Sawwāf, 142
Ḥajjāj b. ‘Amr, 490, 491
Ḥajjāj b. Artah, 154
Ḥajjāj b. Ḥajjāj, 551
Ḥajjāj b. Ḥassān, 1166
al-Ḥakam, 70, 79, 84 n., 85, 97, 249, 760 n., 882, 965, 1025 n., 1046, 1082, 1097, 1406
al-Ḥakam al-Ghifārī, 1072
al-Ḥakam b. Abān, 599
Ḥakam b. al-A‘raj, 673
Sunan Abū Dāwūd

Hakam b. 'Amr, 21
Hakam b. Ayyūb, 791
Hakam b. Ḥazn al-Kulāfī, 263
Hakam b. Ṣufyān al-Thaqafī, 40
Hakam b. 'Uyainah, 1150
Hakīm b. Aflāḥ, 351
Hakīm b. Ḥizām, 962, 984, 995, 1255
Hakīm b. Jubair, 426
Hakīm b. Muʿāwiyyah al-Qushairī, 574
Hamdān, 859
Hamdān, 1021
Hamī b. Mālik b. al-Nābighah al-Hudhail, 1283
Ḥāmid, 423
Hamīd al-Aʿrāj, 1119
Ḥammād, 2, 13, 22, 30, 91, 118, 176, 220, 227, 258, 259, 374, 406, 447, 512, 575, 678, 984, 1001, 1074, 1106, 1208 n., 1209 n., 1265, 1267, 1308, 1362, 1409, 1442
Ḥammād b. Abl Sulaimān, 487 n., 1002, 1229
Ḥammād b. Khālid, 1382
Ḥammād b. Masʿādah, 311
Ḥammād b. Salamah, 58, 72, 140, 191, 273, 287, 314, 348, 349, 354, 374, 447, 448, 467, 642, 794 n., 1073, 1107, 1125, 1217, 1277, 1282, 1284, 1321, 1383
Ḥammād b. Sulaimān, 560 n.
Ḥammād b. Zaid, 16, 69, 88, 433, 592, 594, 909, 1023, 1060, 1185, 1282, 1285
Ḥammām, 134, 157, 182, 187, 190, 205, 463, 480, 798, 984, 1034, 1159, 1221, 1344, 1377, port of, 5
Ḥammām b. al-Ḥaṭīḥ, 96
Ḥammām b. Munabbih, 443, 728
Ḥammām b. Yaḥyā, 129, 981 n.
Ḥammānah, 72, 73, 80, 124 n.
Ḥammānah b. Jaḥsh, 345
al-Ḥamsā, 508 n.
Ḥamzāh, 617, 618, 659, 738, 846, 893, 1113, 1115 n., 1116 n., 1118 n., 1123 n.
Ḥamzah b. 'Abd al-Muṭṭalib, 845
Ḥamzat al-Aslaml, 659, 740
Ḥamzat al-Zayyāt, 43, 1119
Ḥanāfs, 16 n., 48 n., 120 n., 138 n., 163 n., 193 n., 239 n., 263 n., 304 n., 311 n., 333 n., 371 n., 373 n., 502 n., 505 n., 519 n., 523 n., 525 n., 605 n., 647 n., 785 n., 843 n., 927 n., 931 n., 979 n., 1044 n., 1136 n., 1212 n., 1240 n., 1262 n.
Ḥanash, 784
Ḥanbalīs, 647 n., 785 n.
Ḥānī b. Kulṭūm al-Rabī', 1187
Ḥānīb. Kulṭūm b. Sharīk al-Kīnānī, 1187
Hannād, 5, 49, 50, 510, 752, 1330
Hanţalah b. Qais, 949, 964 n., 965
Hārām b. Ḥakīm, 52
Hārām b. Muḥayyīlshāh, 1012
Hārb, 1377
Hārb b. ʿUbayd Allāh, 865
al-Ḥārīth, 97, 207, 231, 356, 411, 488, 581, 638, 665, 672, 728, 913, 1193 n., 1377
Hārīthah b. Muḍarrīb, 772
Hārīthah b. Wahb al-Khuzaʿī, 521, 1344
Ḥārīth al-Aslamīyyah, 627
Ḥārīth al-ʿAwar, 410
Ḥārīth b. ʿAbd Allāh b. Aus, 521
Ḥārīth b. ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib, 433 n., 947
Ḥārīth b. ʿAbī Rabīʿah, 1192
Ḥārīth b. al-Barṣā al-ʿAlaith, 741
Ḥārīth b. al-Muṣṭalīq, 1103
Ḥārīth b. ʿAmr al-Sahmī, 456, 1019 n.
Ḥārīth b. Ḥarrātīn, 1192
Ḥārīth b. Ḥāṭīb, 641
Ḥārīth b. Ḥishām, 621
Ḥārīth b. Kalādaḥ, 1087
Ḥārīth b. Mīskīn, 855, 861
Ḥārīth b. Muslim al-Tamlīf, 1409, 1410
Ḥārīth b. Nawfal, 906
Ḥārīth b. Qais al-Asadī, 604
Ḥārīth b. ʿUmair, 1023
Ḥārīth b. Wajīh, 62
Ḥarmās b. Ẓiyāḍ al-Bāḥilī, 518
Ḥarqūs, 1336
Ḥarrah, 642, 1074; battle of, 749
Ḥarrat al-Righā, 1268
Ḥārūn, 627, 931, 1257, 1282
Ḥārūn al-Nahwī, 349, 1060, 1116
Ḥārūn b. Zaid, 253
Ḥarūrah, 65 n., 727 n.; day of, 1336
Ḥarūrīyyah, 65, 727, 1128
Ḥasān al-Baṣrī, 85 n., 97 n., 120 n., 154 n., 176 n., 213, 235 n., 249, 299, 327, 329,
Hasan al-Lakhmi, 275 n.
Hasan al-Nakah'il, 1010 n.
Hasan b. Abu al-Hasan, 187
Hasan b. al-Hakam al-Nakah'il, 1117
Hasan b. 'Ali, 61 n., 170, 373, 374 n., 604, 770 n., 882, 1151, 1184, 1235, 1250, 1308, 1415, 1438
Hasan b. 'Ali al-Wasi'il, 56
Hasan b. Hayy, 85
Hasan b. Muhammad b. Abu Talib, 1233
Hasan b. Salih, 176 n., 264 n., 637, 1008 n.
Hasan b. Yahya, 968 n.
Hasban, 470
Hashim b. al-Qasim, 1362, 1363
Hashraj b. Ziyad, 761
Hasan b. 'Afliyyah, 89, 104, 774, 1194
Hasan b. Ibrahimm, 1445
Hasan b. Thabit, 443, 1249 n., 1250
Hatib b. Abu Balta'ah, 733
Hatim, 500, 538 n.
Hatim b. Abu Sagherah, 636
Hatim b. Isma'il, 482, 507
Hatim b. Muslim b. Abu Sagherah, 637
Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies, 1198 n.
Hawazin, 386 n., 683 n., 692, 734, 747, 858 n.
Hayyaj b. 'Imran b. Husain, 738
Hayyan, 1050
Hazm al-Nablt, 275
Hazm b. Ubayy b. Ka'b, 204
al-Haziml, 215 n.
Heraclius, 1422
Hidayah, 876 n.
Hijaz, 24 n., 60 n., 304 n., 368 n., 422 n., 569, 767, 861 n., 931, 1178, 1288 n.
Hijr, 538 n.
Hilal, 396, 419, 608, 609
Hilal al-Ra'il, 341
Hilal b. Khabbab, 413
Hilal b. Murrah b. al-Ashja'il, 567
Hilal b. Umayyah, 607, 707 n.
Hilal b. Usamah, 617
Hilal b. Yasir, 241, 1304, 1398, 1427
Index

Himṣ, 704; gate of, 637

Himṣl, 665

Himyar, 239, 771, 1117 n., 1128 n.

Hind, 1003

al-Ḥirah, 574, 1151

Hiraql, 1422

Ḥirāsh, 1182

Ḥirmās b. Ḥabīb, 1030

Hishām, 10, 44 n., 51, 169, 182, 287, 321, 374, 427, 431, 467, 626, 627, 647, 651, 678, 813, 874, 931, 936, 1141, 1192, 1265, 1332, 1379, 1383, 1396 n., 1431

Hishām al-Dustawāl, 142, 375, 670, 951, 1203

Hishām b. al-Ghāz, 1135

Hishām b. ʿĀmir, 914

Hishām b. ʿArūbah, 1282

Hishām b. Ḥakīm b. Ḥizām, 386, 865

Hishām b. Ḥassān, 525, 984

Hishām b. Isḥāq b. ʿAbd Allah b. Kinānah, 301

Hishām b. Ismāʿīl, 822

Hishām b. Saʿd, 126, 263, 315, 1121

Hishām b. Salamah, 259


Hishām b. Zaid, 791

Ḥittān, 321

Ḥittān b. ʿAbd Allah al-Ruqāshl, 247, 248

Ḥubāb, 1379

Ḥubāb b. ʿAmr, 1107

Ḥudaibiyah, 116, 273, 437, 459, 483, 489-91, 495, 528, 529 n., 567, 750, 760 n., 762, 763, 773, 789, 855, 857, 925 n., 1095, 1305 n., 1426, 1427; treaty of, 770 n., 1306

Hzādān b. al-Mundhir al-Ruqāshl, 1251

Hzādān b. al-Mundhir Abū Sāsān, 1252

Hzdāfah, 6, 13, 57, 157, 158, 223, 326, 347, 636, 676 n., 1053, 1176, 1177, 1179, 1201, 1207, 1208 n., 1309, 1314, 1348, 1358, 1376, 1386, 1402

Hzdāfah b. al-Yamān, 44 n., 297, 680 n., 1178, 1317

Hzdāfah b. Usaid al-Anṣārī, 1200

Hzdhal, 386 n., 505, 736, 947, 1261, 1281, 1283, 1303

Hzdhal b. Thurmūlah, 474

Hzjfat Allāh al-Bālighah, 46 n.

Hzjr b. Hzjr, 1294

Hzmaid, 57, 143, 196, 199, 213, 259, 424, 569, 678, 831, 1298, 1347, 1445

Hzmaid b. ʿAbd al-Rahmān al-Ḥimyarī, 21, 1060, 1160, 1315, 1316, 1370

Hzmaid al-Aʿrāf, 592

Hzmaid al-Ṭawll, 1298
Ibn 'Abbās, 1
Index


Ibn 'Abdah, 98, 838
Ibn 'Abd al-'Azlz, 637
Ibn 'Abd al-Barr, 638 n., 755 n., 856 n., 971 n., 977 n.
Ibn 'Abd al-Malik, 253, 1072
Ibn 'Abd al-Rahman, 7
Ibn 'Abd al-Rahman b. Abzâ, 85
Ibn Abî Ahmad, 260
Ibn Abî al-Huqaiq, 853
Ibn Abî 'Amrah, 1021
Ibn 'A'ish, 1409
Ibn Abî A'rawâ, 986, 1073
Ibn Abî 'Arûbah, 1251, 1271
Ibn Abî Dhî'b, 25, 60, 71, 150, 168, 905 n.
Ibn Abî Dûmairah, 161
Ibn Abî Farwah, 196, 765
Ibn Abî Fudaik, 1382
Ibn Abî Ḥadrâd, 1020
Ibn Abî Ḥâtîm, 22 n., 193 n.
Ibn Abî Khalaf, 805, 1031, 1149 n.
Ibn Abî Khâlid, 1005
Ibn Abî al-Mujâhid, 987
Ibn Abî al-Sarî, 571
Ibn Abî l-Wâ兹îr, 59
Ibn Abî Marhab, 912
Ibn Abî Mulaikah, 28, 207, 385, 553, 881, 1027, 1177, 1143, 1246
Ibn Abî Najîh, 315, 518
Ibn Abî Qatâdah, 19
Ibn Abî Rabîh, 1074 n.
Ibn Abî Râfî', 290
Ibn Abî Rizmah, 480, 948
Ibn Abî Samahah, 182
Ibn Abi Ṭālib, 554
Ibn Abī Uwais, 935
Ibn Abī Zakariyā, 1187
Ibn Abjar, 1072
Ibn Abū al-Rijāl, 284
Ibn A‘bud, 846, 1405
Ibn Abzā, 986
Ibn Adam, 418
Ibn-‘Adī, 72, 78
Ibn ‘Affān, 1264
Ibn A‘īdāh, 817
Ibn ‘Ajīlān, 122, 1382, 1449
Ibn Akhtal, 794
Ibn al-‘Alā’, 510, 598, 889, 1208, 1325, 1422
Ibn al-‘Arabi, 654
Ibn ‘Asākir, 1399 n.,
Ibn al-Asqa, 1120
Ibn al-Aswad, 918
Ibn al-Azhār, 1255
Ibn al-Dāhdāh, 902
Ibn al-Dailami, 1317
Ibn al-Firās, 432
Ibn al-Hād, 365, 1250, 1415
Ibn al-Ḥakam, 41
Ibn al-Ḥanṣāllyyāh, 1140
Ibn al-Ḥasan, 589
Ibn al-Humām, 673 n.
Ibn al-Jarrāḥ, 1654
Ibn al-Jawzl, 341, 634 n., 1108 n.
Ibn al-Laith, 83
Ibn al-Lutablīyyah, 831
Ibn al-Mājishūn, 638
Ibn al-Mubārak, 35 n., 54, 141 n., 151 n., 190, 193 n., 210 n., 256, 297, 368 n., 426 n., 493 n., 589, 765, 835, 905, 910 n., 934, 964, 1030, 1149 n., 1264
Ibn al-Mughirah, 37
Ibn al-Muḥabbāq, 1231
Ibn al-Mundhir, 206 n., 228 n., 306 n., 548 n., 550 n.
Ibn al-Munkadir, 196, 1219, 1381
Ibn al-Muṣaffā, 535, 706, 834, 1359, 1410
Ibn al-Muthannā, 72, 78, 131, 133, 563, 628, 748, 909, 981, 1011, 1323, 1426
Ibn al-Mutawakkil, 870, 871
Ibn al-Muwwāḥah, 772
Ibn al-Muṭawwas, 657
Ibn al-Naḍr, 870
Ibn al-Qayyim, 477 n., 603 n.
Ibn al-Ṣabbāh, 292, 589, 1385
Ibn al-Ṣaʿīd, 1205, 1206
Ibn al-Sāʿiḍ, 432, 831
Ibn al-Saḥbān, 202, 211, 224, 301, 339, 539, 595, 613, 744, 832, 947, 1021, 1090, 1144, 1292
Ibn al-ʿUtbiyyah, 832
Ibn al-Zubair, 37, 191, 194, 261 n., 264 n., 265, 276, 373 n., 491, 509, 548 n., 558, 592, 672 n., 749, 843, 1061, 1068, 1108 n., 1179, 1183 n., 1192 n., 1442
Ibn ʿĀmir, 1113, 1114 n., 1115 n., 1116 n., 1117 n., 1119 n., 1121 n.
Ibn ʿĀmir, 884
Ibn ʿĀqil, 73, 75
Ibn ʿĀṣa, 952
Ibn ʿAwn, 866
Ibn ʿAwn, 348, 518, 727, 728, 848, 1298, 1299, 1364
Ibn Bashshār, 353, 356, 532, 881, 1323, 1392
Ibn Buḥainah, 264 n.
Ibn Buraidah, 105, 1013
Ibn Dāsah, 87
Ibn Dāwūd, 178, 532
Ibn Dawkān, 1113
Ibn Dukain, 948
Ibn Fudail, 236, 1155
Ibn Ghazwān, 1427
Ibn Ghunj, 1225
Ibn Ḥabbān, 278
Ibn Ḥabbūs al-Malikī, 54 n.
Ibn Ḥajār al-ʿAsqālānī, 19 n., 193 n., 341 n., 502
Ibn Ḥanbal, 178 n., 193 n., 512, 809 n.
Ibn ʿHurb, 58
Ibn Harmalah, 931
Ibn Ḥassān, 651
Ibn Ḥawālah, 686, 704
Ibn Ḥayyān, 1304
Ibn Ḥazm, 54 n., 215 n., 250, 331 n., 337, 550 n., 911
Ibn Ḥibbān, 44 n., 181 n., 193 n., 195 n., 341 n., 1224 n., 1252 n.
Ibn Hisbām al-Baghdādī, 1119 n.
Ibū Ḥujajrah ʿal-ʿAṣghar, 367
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Idris</td>
<td>560, 598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn 'Isa</td>
<td>355, 399, 458, 682, 945, 1294, 1347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn 'Iṣām al-Muzani</td>
<td>728</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn 'Isḥaq</td>
<td>71, 83, 114, 168, 319, 578, 598, 680, 768, 830, 874, 956, 1148, 1174, 1223, 1296, 1323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jābir</td>
<td>271, 315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jabr b. 'Atīk</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Ja'far</td>
<td>396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jaḥsh</td>
<td>558</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jamīl</td>
<td>424, 425 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jarīf</td>
<td>555 n., 1109 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jarīr al-Ḍabbīl</td>
<td>194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jarīr al-Ṭabrīf</td>
<td>15 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jawwās</td>
<td>374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Jubair</td>
<td>453 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Juḥadāh</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Ka'b b. Mā'īk</td>
<td>941, 1264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Kaṭhir</td>
<td>295, 344, 365, 986, 1104, 1113, 1114 n., 1115 n., 1120 n., 1121 n., 1200 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Khaḍīj</td>
<td>965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Khālidūn</td>
<td>614, 1190 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Khatīl</td>
<td>614</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Khaṭṭāb</td>
<td>476</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Khuzaimah</td>
<td>215 n., 306 n., 789 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Kinānah b. 'Abbas b Mūrūd</td>
<td>1444</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Mahdī</td>
<td>236, 344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Ma'tīn</td>
<td>193 n., 341 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Mājah</td>
<td>25 n., 27 n., 33 n., 61 n., 65 n., 125 n., 722 n., 894 n., 936 n., 913 n., 1181 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Mǎjidāh</td>
<td>976 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Malḥān al-Qaisī</td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Ma'mar</td>
<td>727</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Ma'nūf</td>
<td>1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Ma'qīl</td>
<td>1072, 1073</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Marwān</td>
<td>1415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn Maslamah</td>
<td>399</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Ibn Mawhāb, 451, 766, 1127
Ibn Minhāl, 459, 1027
Ibn Minhāb, 334
Ibn Mirba‘ al-Anṣārī, 510
Ibn Miswar, 1204
Ibn Mu‘ādh, 192, 378, 1324, 1350
Ibn Mughaffal, 19
Ibn Muḥairīz, 372
Ibn Muḥaisin, 1113
Ibn Mundar, 45 n.
Ibn Mūsā, 815 n.
Ibn Musāfīr, 1172
Ibn Muṭi‘, 809
Ibn Na‘īr, 90
Ibn Nufail, 82, 503, 880, 1162
Ibn Numair, 10, 378, 542, 1426
Ibn Qauqal, 759 n.
Ibn Qayyīm, 137 n., 528 n., 778 n., 947 n., 1062 n., 1136 n., 1137 n.
Ibn Qudāmah, 392, 525 n., 1030, 1417
Ibn Qutaibah, 1127
Ibn Rabī‘ah, 505 n.
Ibn Rāfī‘, 253
Ibn Rāshid, 1280
Ibn Rawāḥah, 970, 971
Ibn Sa‘d, 387
Ibn Ṣafwān, 1429
Ibn Ṣakhr, 166
Ibn Salamah, 678, 1205
Ibn Salamah b. al-Akwā‘, 734
Ibn Sallām, 1045
Ibn Samā‘ah, 1431
Ibn Samurah, 1184
Ibn Ṣayyād, 1205, 1206
Ibn Sayyīd al-Nās, 215 n.
Ibn Shamāsah, 943
Ibn Shawkar, 472
Ibn Shib‘wāh, 253
Ibn Shihāb, 74, 83, 103, 114, 238, 259, 283, 297, 300, 409, 420 552, 606, 613, 628, 665, 841, 843, 856, 857, 877, 942, 1019 n., 1044, 1218, 1226, 1248, 1263
Ibn Shubrumah, 565 n., 953 n., 1274 n., 1285 n.
Ibn Sinān, 1306
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim, 61, 70, 76, 183, 261, 304, 405, 521, 595, 652, 745, 891, 905, 965, 983 n., 1243, 1245</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. 'Abd Allah, 1130</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. 'Abd al-Rahman b. 'Awwf, 99</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Abi Musa, 50</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Nafi, 13, 44 n. 76, 143 n., 286, 487 n., 650 n., 656 n., 927 n., 1074 n., 1108 n., 1206, 1265 n., 1274 n., 1284 n.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim al-Taimi, 43</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. 'Ata, 425</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Maisarah, 564</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Musa, 315, 1106</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Nafi', 1344</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Sa'd, 11, 71, 74, 150</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Sa'id al-Madini, 482</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim al-Sa'igh, 924</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Suwaid, 1407, 1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. Tahmam, 627</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrahim b. 'Uqbah, 510</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Idris, 1096 n.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ikrimah b. 'Ammar, 4, 965</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ikrimah b. Khalid, 321, 592</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ilaj b. 'Amr, 513</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Imran b. Abl Anas, 259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Imran b. Sahl, 967</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Injil, 1403</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Irak b. Mlik, 183, 656</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Irq, 24 n., 60 n., 92, 457, 546, 686 n., 767, 857 n., 861, 862 n., 877 n., 1191, 1253, 1288 n., 1302 n., 1433</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Iraq, 1445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irba'd b. Sariyah, 643, 866, 1294, 1404</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irbil, 1023 n.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Isa, 206, 256, 463, 742, 1295</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Isa b. 'Abd Allah, 190</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Isa b. Abi 'Isa al-Sailahinl, 1359</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Isa b. Ayyub, 240</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Isa b. Fai'id, 386 n.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Isa b. Hammad, 654</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Index

Iyäs, 505 n.
Iyäs b. ‘Abd, 990
Iyäs b. ‘Abd Allah b. Abl Dhubāb, 575
Iyäs b. Abl Ramlah al-Shāmī, 276
Iyäs b. al-Ḥārith al-Mu’āiqīb, 1173
Iyäs b. Daghfal, 798, 1440
Iyäs b. Salamah b. al-Akwa’, 718
Iyäs b. Tha’labah, 1158

J


Jābir b. ‘Aţīk, 415, 735, 885


Jābir b. Šubh, 1064

Jābir b. Yazīd, 151

Jābir b Yazīd b. al-Aswād, 161

Jābir b. Zaid, 181, 182, 249 n., 423 n., 483, 676 n., 990 n., 1049, 1107

al-Ja’d al-Ḍarmī, 271

Jadilah, 777 n.

Jadilah Qais, tribes of, 641

al-Jadīl, 1253

Ja’far, 199, 342, 433, 533 n., 558, 617, 618, 714, 821 n., 1065, 1131

Ja’far b. al-Mu’āllīm, 888

Ja’far b. Burqān, 970

Ja’far b. Jubair, 661

Ja’far b. Muḥammad, 502, 506

Ja’far b. Musāfir, 356

Ja’far b. Rabī’ah, 69, 150, 651

Ja’far b. Sulaimān, 341, 909, 1167

Ja’far b. ‘Umar, 939

Jahm b. Šafwān, 1322 n.

Jāḥsh, 71-74, 79, 80, 576 n., 624, 834, 1051, 1047, 1249 n., 1364
al-Jamā'īn, battle of, 749, 1302
Jamal, battle of, 352 n., 1181 n., 1309 n.
Jāmi' al-Tirmidhī, 1 n., 5 n., 246
Jamīl, 984
Jamīlah, 1377
Jamrat al-‘Aqabah, 479
Japheth, 1198 n.
Jarba, 1327
Jarhad, 1123
Jarīr, 6, 38 n., 411, 412, 576, 731 n., 1060, 1070 n., 1122, 1214, 1330, 1345, 1376, 1407
Jarīr b. ‘Abd Allah, 730, 777, 1324
Jarīr b. Ḥāzim, 42, 375, 1105
al-Jarīrī, 584, 1125
al-Jassāsah, 1204, 1205
al-Jauzaqānī, 1019 n.
al-Jawantyyah, 237
Jaz' b. Mu'āwiyyah, 864
Jerboa, 1336
Jerusalem, 3, 118, 130 n., 133, 268, 286, 340, 590 n., 680 n., 937, 1131, 1195, 1203 n., 1312
Jesus, 702, 1155 n., 1190 n., 1199 n., 1270, 1206 n., 1302, 1310, 1311 n., 1380
Jews, 64, 117, 124, 126, 130 n., 167 n., 169 n., 230 n., 21, 579 n., 580, 582, 646, 665 n., 864 n., 865, 866, 891, 917, 964 n., 967 n., 969-71, 992, 1014 n., 1024 n., 1035, 1155, 1166 n., 1168, 1239, 1241-43, 1266, 1269, 1290, 1310, 1399, 1436
Jibrā'il, 475 n., 491 n., 495, 498, 528, 529, 747 n.
Jonah, 49, 1310
Jordan, 1204 n.
Joseph, 378
Juṣid b Ḥujair, 1225
Jubair b. Muḥammad b. Jubair, 1323
Jubair b. Muṣ'im, 60, 196, 197, 207, 445, 499, 746, 825, 842, 843 n., 1419
Jubair b. Nufair, 63, 88, 774, 1362
Judaim, 52 n.
Judāmat al-Asadīyyah, 1089
Judhām, 1117 n., 1204
Juhainah, 208, 703 n., 866, 872, 1150, 1151 n., 1239; tribe of, 1237, 1316, 1427
al-Juḥfah, 395 n.
al-Juḥfah, 384, 457, 778 n., 1356 n.
Index

Jumai' b. 'Umair, 60
Junādah b. Abī Umayyah, 1228
Jundub, 1036, 1361
Jundub b. Mākīth, 741
Jurayy b. Kulaib, 788
Juwairīyyah, 392, 665, 728, 1103, 1225
Juwāthā, 275

K

al-Ka'bah al-Yamānīyyah, 777 n.
Ka'b al-Ayādl, 1354
Ka'b b. al-Ashraf, 775, 776 n., 849, 850
Ka'b b. 'Alqamah, 943
Ka'b b. Mālik, 19, 275, 594, 720, 728, 777, 780, 849, 941, 942, 1020, 1081, 1292
Ka'b b. 'Ujrah, 249, 250, 253 n., 342, 489, 490, 625
Kabšah, 19, 559 n., 1049
Kābul, 326, 751
al-Kadīd, 741
Kalādah b. Ḥanbal, 1429
Karbālā, 1199 n.
Kardām, 563, 939, 940
Karīmah, 1159
Kadhīr, 595, 911, 1084, 1347
Kaṭḥīr b. 'Abd Allah b. 'Amr b. 'Awf al-Muzānī, 869, 870
Kadhīr b. al-Šalt, 296
Kadhīr b. Farqad, 965
Kadhīr b. Jamāḥān, 501
Kadhīr b. Kadhīr b. al-Muṭṭalib b. Abī Wīdā'ah, 535
Kadhīr b. Murrah, 173, 1362
Kadhīr b. Qais, 1034
Kadhīr b. 'U바id, 1268 n.
Kāṭḥīr b. Ziyād, 80
al-Kauthar, 1328
Kayyīsah, 1085
Kendura, 1198 n.
Khabbāb, 205, 732, 810, 896, 900
Khabbāb b. al-Arāt, 876 n.
al-khābā'īt, 2 n.
Sunan Abū Dawūd

Khādījah, 747
al-Khaḍīr, 879
Khadrāh, 1379
al-Khafif, 1119 n.
Khair, 81, 317, 420, 430, 567, 751-54, 759, 763, 781, 810, 811, 836 n., 838 n., 839, 840, 842, 848, 850 n., 851 n., 854-56, 866, 941, 952, 964 n., 969, 970, 1031, 1038 n., 1068, 1071, 1072, 1092, 1180, 1196, 1263, 1264, 1267, 1268. 1373; battle of, 113, 115 n., 554 n., 705, 761, 853; booty of, 857; Day of, 1073; people of, 853
al-Khaif, 191, 533
Khāthimah al-Baṣrī, 107, 365, 570, 1015
Khākh, meadow of, 733
Khalaf, 642, 1113, 1119
Khālid, 42, 155, 382, 596, 758, 764, 796, 936, 1077, 1119, 1135, 1151, 1152, 1187, 1208, 1238, 1239, 1280, 1287
Khālid al-Ḥadhdhā. 650, 1297, 1298
Khālid al-Juhani, 357
Khālid b. 'Abd Allah, 932, 1284
Khālid b. 'Abd Allah al-Ṭāḥhān, 992, 1207
Khālid b. 'Abd Allah al-Wāṣiṣ, 354, 731
Khālid b. al-Walid, 320, 424, 426, 620, 739, 740 n., 750, 757, 858, 862, 1054, 1068, 1069, 1071, 1251 n. 1254, 1255, 1334
Khālid b. Dihqān, 1186, 1187
Khālid b. Duraik, 1145
Khālid b. Khālid al-Yashkuri, 1179
Khālid b. Maʿdān, 197, 325, 665 n., 774, 876
Khālid b. Qais, 271
Khālid b. Saʿīd b. al-ʿĀṣ, 860
Khālid b. Sufyān al-Hudhall, 328
Khālid b. Sumair, 114, 115 n.
Khallī, 614
Khallād, 1113
Khallād b. al-Sāʾib al-Anṣārī, 479
Khallās al-Hujarī, 67
Khāluq, 1162 n., 1163
Khandaq, battle of, 107; Day of, 834, 1228
Khansāʾ, 562
Khārijah, b. al-Ṣalt al-Tamīmī, 973, 1092, 1093
Khārijah b. Ḥudhāfah, 88, 372
Khārijah b. Zaid, 331 n.
Khārijah Qais Ailān, tribe of, 1107
Kharsab b. al-Hurr al-Fazārī, 153
Khashāf b. Mālik, 1276 n.
Khath'am, 731; tribe of, 477
Index

Khaṭṭāb. 257
Khawārij, 1309 n.
Khawlah, 95, 599
al-Khazraj, 581
Khidhām al-Anṣārīyyah, 562
al-Khīdr, 1319
al-Khirbāq, 260
Khirāsh, 1182
Khubaib, 736, 886
al-kuḥbīth, 2 n.
al-Khuḍr, 879
Khunduf, 1260
Khuraim al-Asadī, 1141
Khuraim b. Fāṭik, 1022, 1183
Khuṣāif, 263, 326
Khuwailah, 598
Khuza‘ah, 819, 820, 1261, 1388: tribe of, 521
al-Khuza‘î, 111
Khuza‘imah, 1025
Khuza‘imah b. Thūbit, 10, 38
Khuwāstan, 1378 n.
Kidā, 492
Kilāb, battle of, 1175
Killā, 1221
Kinānah, 508 n., 777 n.
Kindah, 921, 1014, 1028, 1029, 1117 n.
al-Kindī, 922
al-Kisā‘ī, 1113, 1115 n., 1116 n., 1119 n., 1120 n.
Kitāb al-Awwal, 863 n.
Kitāb al-‘Ilal, 1252 n.
Kudā, 492
Kulaib, 93, 751
Kulaib b. Manṣa‘ī, 1423
Kum Ṣharik, 9
Kuraib, 170, 314, 334, 510, 638
al-Kutaibah, 855, 856
Kuthair, 93

Lābiq, 192
Lailā, 81 n., 897
al-Laith. 68, 69, 71, 85 n., 90, 264, 311 n., 314 n., 482, 487 n., 555 n., 613, 665, 675, 679 n., 742, 760 n., 761 n., 893, 938 n., 942, 969 n., 977 n., 1001 n., 1108 n., 1185, 1215 n., 1218, 1222 n., 1226, 1276 n., 1363, 1409
Laith b. Abī Sulaim, 1184
al-Lajlaj, 1236, 1237
Lakhm, 1117 n., 1204
Landlord and Peasant in Early Islam, 955 n., 971 n.
Lane, A., 958 n.
Laqīt b. Saburah, 34, 35, 649, 1114
al-Lāt, 923
Layyāh, valley of, 1268 n.
Layyat al-Bahrāh, bank of, 1268
Liyyah, 539
Lubābah, 97
Ludd, gate of, 1203

al-Maʿāfir, 1131
Maʿālim, 617 n.
Maʿān, 559 n.
Maʿān b. Yazīd, 769
Maʿārib, 860, 890
Maʿārif al-Sunan, 1 n., 2 n., 85 n., 86 n., 128 n., 134 n., 164 n., 210 n.
Maʿbad b. Hūdhah, 652
Mābūs, 227
al-Madāʾin, 157, 158, 1053, 1307
Madhlij, 1117 n.
al-Madīnī, 193 n.
Maghṭīzī, 540 n.
Maghrā, 145
Magians, 860 n., 869, 1314
Mahdī, 616, 681 n., 702 n., 1190 n., 1191, 1192 n., 1193 n., 1395
Mahdī b. Māmūn, 342
Mahmūd b. Jazʿīl, 845
Mahmūd, 239
Mahmūd b. al-Rabl, 1187
Mahmūd b. Ghailān, 904 n.
Mahmūd b. Khālid, 1268
Mahnā, 1390
Mahrān, 517
al-Mahzūr, 1032
Maimūn, 279
Maimūn al-Makki, 190
Maimūn b. Abl Shabīb, 1352
Maimūn b. Abl Shābīb, 749
Maimūn b. Mahrān, 491, 623
Mā'īz b. Mālik, 904, 1219, 1232-36, 1238
al-Makhdajī, 372
Makhlad, 241, 512, 1348
Makhlad b. Khālid, 1265
Makhład b. Khufāf al-Ghifārl, 997
Makhrafaṭ al-'Abdi, 947
Makhramah, 234, 872, 1127, 1353
Makhul, 70, 72, 92, 103 n., 120 n., 169 n., 210, 286, 297 n., 314, 566, 600 n., 651 n., 661 n., 703 n., 755 n., 767, 774, 820, 1074, 1301, 1302
Makhzūml, 1225, 1226
Makkūk Khālid, 931
Malḥān, 688, 689
1251 n., 1256 n., 1252 n., 1267 n., 1270 n., 1274 n., 1276 n., 1277 n., 1285 n., 1286 n., 1305 n., 1318, 1321, 1351 n., 1387
Mālik b. 'Abd Allah b. Dīnār, 1337
Mālik b. Abl Maryam, 512, 592, 1045
Mālik b. al-Hārith, 512, 592
Mālik b. Aws b. al-Ḥadthān, 833, 836-38
Mālik b. Dīnār, 130, 949
Mālik b. Ghurfatāh, 29
Mālik b. Ḥamzah b. Abū Usaid al-Sā'idī, 737
Mālik b Hubairah al-Sabā'ī, 637, 899
Mālik b. al-Huwairith, 155, 157, 192, 216, 253 n.
Mālik b. Mighwāl, 390
Mālik b. Mughūl, 924
Mālik b. Murārah al-Rahāwl, 859
Mālik b Naḍlah, 433
Mālik b. Numair al-Khuza'ī, 252
Mālik b. Sinān, 625
Mālik b. Tha'labah, 598
Mālik b. Yasār al-Sakūnī, 389
Mālikis, 519 n., 525 n., 1236 n., 1240, 1436 n.
Ma'alqam b. Talabb, 1070
Ma'mar, 71, 74, 83, 104, 114, 128, 143, 150, 211, 214, 228, 264, 319, 404, 412, 415, 428, 491, 589, 592, 601, 681, 715, 728, 731, 826, 1027, 1080, 1097, 1149, 1241, 1264, 1296, 1382, 1442
Ma'mar al-Zubaidī, 676
Ma'mar b. Abl Ma'mar, 980
Manāt, 501
Manṣūr 184, 587, 636, 882, 966, 1193, 1245, 1281, 1304, 1429
Manṣūr al-Kalbl, 662
Maṣūr b. a-Mu'tamīr, 656, 1253
Manṣūr b. Zādhān, 1245
Mānūs, 227
al-Maqīm, 493 n.
Maqīm Ibrāhīm, 476, 493 n., 858 n., 1191 n.
Ma'qīl, 1107
Ma'qīl al-Kathbāml, 70
Ma qīl b. Abl Ma'qīl al-Āsadī, 3
Ma'qīl b. Sinān, 567
Ma'qīl b. 'Ubayd Allah, 1862
Ma'qīl b. Yasār, 545, 558, 818, 889
al-Maqīls, 744
Marḥāb, 912, 1263
Māriyah Qiblī, 891 n.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Marr al-Fadl</td>
<td>845</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marr al-Zahrān</td>
<td>857</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marthad b. 'Abd Allah</td>
<td>110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marthad b. Abl Marthad al-Ghanawi</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Aḥrūr b. Suwaid</td>
<td>1425, 1426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marwah</td>
<td>147 n., 468-72, 475, 476, 495-97, 499, 501-03, 526 n., 534</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marwan</td>
<td>294, 295, 460, 526, 555, 621, 622, 623 n., 747, 840, 909, 1199, 1304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marwān al-Asfar</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marwan b. al-Ḥakam</td>
<td>43, 94 n., 207, 323, 331, 771 n., 1223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marwan b. Jānāh</td>
<td>910</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marwan b. Muḥammad</td>
<td>1367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marwān b. Sālim al-Muqaffā</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>1200, 1207, 1302, 1310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Mash'ar al-Ḥarām</td>
<td>506, 513 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masjid al-Ṭabar</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masjid Ḥarām</td>
<td>515 n., 673, 943</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maslamah</td>
<td>155, 260, 755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maslamah b. Mukhallad</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maslamah b. Qaʾnab</td>
<td>1383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masrūq</td>
<td>140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masrūq b. Aws</td>
<td>1279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masʿūd</td>
<td>140, 1266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masʿūd b. al-Aswad</td>
<td>1218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Masʿūdī</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matar al-Warrāq</td>
<td>368 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mathanī</td>
<td>202 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mattā</td>
<td>1310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mā Warā al-Nahr</td>
<td>1192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mazdaism</td>
<td>864</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meccans</td>
<td>745-746 n., 760 n., 770 n., 773 n., 1305 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Medina, 3 n., 16 n., 26 n., 46 n., 57 n., 83 n., 86, 87, 106, 107, 114, 117, 130 n., 132</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Index

Mu‘ādh b. ‘Abd Allah al-Juham, 208
Mu‘ādh b. ‘Abd Allah b. Khubaib, 126, 1410
Mu‘ādh b. ‘Afra’, 758 n.
Mu‘ādh b. ‘Amr b. al-Janūb, 758 n.
Mu‘ādh b. Anas, 338, 1125, 1360, 1434
Mu‘ādh b. Anas al-Juhani, 380, 726
Mu‘ādh b. Mu‘ādh, 560, 1017
Mu‘ādh b. Zuhrah, 647
Mu‘a’iqib, 241
Mu‘alla, 80, 492 n.
Mu‘ammal, 217, 583, 584, 1030, 1351, 1427
Mu‘ammar, 60
al-Mu‘arras, 492, 543
Mu‘āwiyyah al-Qushairl, 575
Mu‘āwiyyah b. Abī ‘Ayyāsh, 592
Mu‘āwiyyah b. Abī Sufyān, 95, 163, 266, 276, 363, 473, 1160, 1176, 1252, 1290
Mu‘āwiyyah b. al-Hakam al-Sulamī, 236, 237, 931, 1096
Mu‘āwiyyah b. Khudaij, 261
Mu‘āwiyyah b. Qurrah, 520, 1077, 1138
Mu‘āwiyyah b. Ṣāliḥ, 819
Mu‘āwiyyah b. Sallām, 142
Mu‘āwiyyah b. Suwaid b. Muqarrin, 1427
Mu‘awwidh, 742
Mu‘awwidh b. ‘Afra’, 31, 32, 1371
Mu‘ādar, tribe of, 443, 610, 1046, 1303
al-Mu‘ādhdh, 1379
Mufaddal, 314, 316
Mufaddal b. Muhalhal, 966
al-Mughirah, 77, 97, 419, 1005, 1077 n., 1166
al-Mughirah b. Abū al-Salamah, 450
Mughfrah b. Muslim, 450, 1124
Mughfrah b. Shu‘bah, 1, 36, 40, 46, 162, 172, 265, 266, 297 n., 365, 393, 773, 817, 840, 872, 902, 992, 1076, 1281, 1282, 1304 n., 1306, 1380
Mughfīth, 601, 602
al-Mughnīl, 488 n., 525 n.
Mu‘ārifiz, 582
Muhäjir b. Qunfudh, 4
al-Muhallab b. Abî Ṣufrah, 718
Muḥallam b. Jathāmat al-Laithî, 1260, 1261
Muḥammad, Imām, 36 n.
Muḥammad al-Firyābī, 1299
Muḥammad al-Shaibānī, 301 n.
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd Allah, 444
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd Allah al-ʿAmmī, 1362
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd Allah b. Abî Maryam, 13
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz, 1173 n.
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd al-Raḥmān b. ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz, 1173 n.
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd al-Raḥmān b. Thawbān, 570, 592
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd al-Raḥmān b. Yazīd, 426
Muḥammad b. Abî Bakr, 457, 502
Muḥammad b. Abî Yahyā, 1448
Muḥammad b. Abū al-Muṣrāh, 751
Muḥammad b. ʿAjlān, 1399
Muḥammad b. al-Asḥāth, 997
Muḥammad b. al-ʿĀthār, 560
Muḥammad b. al-Ḥanāffy, 1299, 1382
Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan, 39 n., 481 n., 572 n., 783 n., 925 n., 967 n., 969 n., 998 n., 1009 n., 1229 n., 1251 n., 1256 n., 1277
Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan al-Makẓūmī, 871
Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan ibn al-Muṣayyab, 963 n.
Muḥammad b. ʿAll Juʿfī, 507
Muḥammad b. ʿAll b. ʿUsād, 502
Muḥammad b. al-Muḥājir, 707
Muḥammad b. al-Muṣkaṭ, 46, 399, 579, 1206
Muḥammad b. al-Muṣṣaffā, 1098
Muḥammad b. al-Muṣṭannā, 472 n.
Muḥammad b. al-Nuʿmān al-Muqrī, 888
Muḥammad b. al-Qāsim, 717
Muḥammad b. al-Ṣabāḥ, 1268 n.
Muḥammad b. al-Zubair, 935
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. 'Amr</td>
<td>71, 72, 150, 359, 560, 604, 1264, 1284, 1377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. 'Amr al-'Amir</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. 'Amr b. al-Hasan</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. 'Amr b. 'Aţā'</td>
<td>189, 245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Bakr al-Barsîn</td>
<td>1237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Bashshār</td>
<td>472 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Bishr al-'Abdi</td>
<td>375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ḥarb</td>
<td>1044</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ḥasan</td>
<td>1451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ḥātib</td>
<td>641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ḥātim</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ḥumaid</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ibrahim</td>
<td>302, 362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. 'Isā</td>
<td>599, 1160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. 'Isā b. al-Ṭabbā</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ishāq</td>
<td>11, 417, 483, 540 n., 543, 593 n., 1174, 1233, 1249, 1276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ishāq b. Khuzaimah</td>
<td>964 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ismā'īl al-Ṭabar</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ismā'īl b. Samurrah</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Iyās b. al-Bukair</td>
<td>592</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ja'far</td>
<td>472 n., 1096, 1279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Jubair b. Mu'tim</td>
<td>1323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Juhādah</td>
<td>190, 215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ka'b</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ka'b al-Qurazî</td>
<td>249 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Kathīr</td>
<td>867</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Khālid</td>
<td>1068</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Khālid al-Sulami</td>
<td>880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Mahbur</td>
<td>1381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Maslamah</td>
<td>189, 245, 775, 817, 850, 855, 1282, 1309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Muhammad b. Khāṭṭāb Abū 'Umar</td>
<td>931</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Muslim</td>
<td>264, 301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Muṭarrīf</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Rāfī'</td>
<td>495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Rashid</td>
<td>612, 1098, 1279, 1280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Ṣafwān</td>
<td>793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Sahl</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Salamah</td>
<td>86 n., 91, 1223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Shu'aib</td>
<td>318</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Sirīn</td>
<td>96, 169, 348, 379, 563 n., 895, 1217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Sulaimān</td>
<td>568, 1073, 1164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad b. Thābit</td>
<td>86, 87</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Muḥammad b. Thawr, 428
Muḥammad b. 'Ubaid, 561, 590
Muḥammad b. 'Uthmān, 78
Muḥammad b. Wazīr al-Miṣrī, 599
Muḥammad b. Yāhūd, 469, 592, 1390
Muḥammad b. Yāhūd b. Fāris, 212
Muḥammad bi Yāhūd b. Ḥabbān, 11, 278, 1223
Muḥammad b. Yaṣār, 835
Muḥammad b. Yūsuf, 1090
Muḥammad b. Zāid, 168
Muḥārib, 585
al-Muḥāribī, 1207
Muharrī al-Ka'bī, 529
al-Muḥāṣṣāb, 532, 533, 534
al-Muḥāṣṣir (valley), 506, 513 n., 515
Muḥāṣṣah, 853, 974, 1266, 1267
Muʿiqāl, 811
Mujāhid, 37 n., 76, 117, 142, 280, 313 n., 321, 326, 337, 406 n., 458, 471 n., 521 n., 528, 591, 592, 600 n., 626 n., 647 n., 649 n., 659 n., 660 n., 681 n., 809 n., 818 n., 979 n., 990 n., 1005, 1009, 1108 n., 1119, 1188, 1225, 1230, 1242 n., 1277, 1282, 1285 n., 1425
Mujāhid b. Saʿīd, 859 n.
Muʿjam, 1329 n.
Muʿjam al-Ausāf, 947 n.
Mujammiʿ b. Jāriyah, 762, 763 n., 855
al-Mujāshīf, 786, 1333
Mujazziz al-Mudlajī, 613
Mujībat al-Bāhiyyah, 667
Mujaʿah, 847
Mukaitil, 1260
Mukhwawal b. Rāshid, 1253
al-Mukhtār al-Ṭhaqafī, 1206
Mulaikah, 161, 1283
al-Munbaʿith, 1379
al-Mundhir al-Asḥajj, 1441
al-Mundhir b. al-Ḥarām, 444
at-Mundhir b. Jarīr, 451
al-Mundhīrī, 74 n., 446, 472 n., 522 n., 741 n., 904 n., 1255 n.
Muqāṭil b. Ḥabbān, 723
al-Muqūsī, 424, 1324
Muraisf, 1103 n.
Murārah b. al-Rabl', 777 n.
Murji'ah/Murji'I, 1311 n., 1316
Murrah, 1377
Mūsā, 89, 105, 118, 125, 137, 140, 192, 294, 307, 422, 467, 583, 584, 706, 736, 795, 1084, 1095, 1234, 1260, 1276, 1309, 1353, 1387; see also Moses
Mūsā al-Zim'I, 1409
Mūsā b. 'Abd al-'Azīz, 341 n.
Mūsā b. Ismā'Il, 1374 n.
Mūsā b. Khalaf, 1105, 1116
Mūsā b. Qais, 1399
Mūsā b. Sa'd, 278
Mūsā b. Sahl al-Ramīl, 778
Mūsā b. Tāriq, 482
Mūsā b. 'Uqbah, 482
Mūsā b. Yasār, 1382
Muṣ'ab, 898
Muṣ'āb b. Sa'd, 222, 764
Muṣ'āb b. Thābit, 1229 n.
Muṣ'āb b. 'Umar, 896,
Muṣ'āb b. 'Umar, 810
Musaddaqah, 564
Musāfi' al-Hajabl, 59
Musāfi' b. Shaibah, 539
Musaiakah, 629
Musailimah, 772, 778 n.
al-Mush'ath, 1184
Mushir, 182
Muslim, Imām, 153 n., 157 n., 436, 451 n., 648 n., 662 n., 669, 786 n., 900 n., 928 n., 959 n., 1055 n., 1057 n., 1229 n. 1269 n., 1322 n., 1338 n., 1349 n., 1378 n., 1402, 1412, 1436 n., 1448 n., 1450
Muslim b. al-Hārith al-Tamīlī, 1409
Muslim b. Ibrāhīm, 326
Muslim b. Khālid, 360
Muslim b. Shu'bah, 413
Muslim b. 'Ubaid Allah, 669
Muslim b. Yasār al-Juhānī, 951, 1318
Musnad, 134 n. 253 n., 524 n., 856 n.
Musnad Abī Ya'tīrā, 947 n.
Mustaḥill, 637 n.
al-Mustamir b. al-Riyyān, 341
al-Musta'ṣim Billāh, 1198 n.
al-Mustawrid b. Shaddād, 36, 831, 1360
Mūtah, battle of, 714, 757, 889
al-Mutalammis, 429
Mu'tamir, 206, 230, 599, 630, 1073, 1402
Muṭarrīf, 214, 230, 1345
Muṭarrīf b. ‘Abd Allah, 588
Muṭ'īm, 1392
Muṭ'īm b. ‘Adl, 746
Muṭṭalib, 340, 911
al-Muṭṭalib b. ‘Abd Allah b. Ḥanṭab, 1035
al-Muwaqqīf, 624 n., 765 n.
Muzāhir, 589
al-Muzanl, 297 n., 395 n., 591, 649 n., 1029, 1072, 1073, 1138, 1316
Muzdalifah, 313 n., 504, 505, 507, 508, 510-15, 517, 526 n., 635
al-Muẓīnīl, 300

N

Nabhān, 518
al-Nadr, 849, 1014, 1257
Nāḍr b. Kāthīr al-Sā'īdī, 191
al-Nāḍr b Shumail, 416, 418, 1151, 1261, 1278, 1279, 1282
Nāfi‘ b. ‘Abd al-Ḥārīth, 1431
Nāfi‘ b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān, 1119
Nāfi‘ b. ‘Alqamah, 413
Nāfi‘ b. Jubair, 179, 365
Nāfi‘ b. Maḥmūd b. al-Rābl‘ al-Anṣārī, 210
Nāfi‘ b. Ujjair b. Abū Yazīd b. Rukānāh, 591, 595
Nāfi‘ Dhū al-Thādyah, 1336
al-Nahrāwān, 1333, 1336 n.
Nail al-Awṭār, 94 n.
Najd, 102, 324, 457, 516, 741, 759, 765, 870 n., 1333; battle of, 323
Najdat, 760, 761
Najdah b. Nufail, 694
Najdat al-Shirtīf, 843
Najh, 1379
Najiyat al-Aslamī, 462
Najjār, 24 n., 137
Najrān, 861, 863, 896
Index


Nakhlah, valley of, 22 n.

Namrah, valley of, 504, 509 n.

Naql, 275, 877, 925 n., 1372, 1373

Naql al-Khaḍumât, 275

al-Nasāʿī, 33 n., 39 n., 65 n., 133 n., 341 n., 374 n., 376 n., 382 n., 671 n., 890 n., 960 n., 967 n., 977 n.

Naṣibah, 24 n.

al-Nāṣir, 84 n.

Naṣr, 132, 133, 603, 1390

Naṣr al-Mujaddir, 342

Naṣr b. 'All, 807

Naṣr b. 'Āṣim al-Laithi, 1179

Naṣr b. 'Imrān al-Ḍubâ'ī, 1046

Naṭā, 855


Nawfal b. al-l-Jārīth, 155, 845

al-Nawwāb b. Sim'ān al-Kilābī, 1202

Nazzāl b. Samurah, 1052

Negus, 116, 235, 558, 564, 565, 699, 911, 1131, 1175, 1325

al-Nihāyah, 1198 n.

Nimrān, 1367

Noah, 1198 n., 1305, 1332; see also Nūh

Nuʿaim b. 'Abd Allah b. al-Nahḥām, 1108

Nuʿaim b. Hammār, 339

Nuʿaim b. Masʿūd, 772

Nuʿaim b. Rabīʿah, 1318

Nuʿaim b. Sulāmāh, 286

Nubaih b. Wahb, 485, 486

Nubaishah, 790, 795

Nubait, 509

al-Nufaill, 301, 411, 427, 453, 459, 682, 879, 1250, 1417

Nūḥ, 357; see also Noah

Numailah, 1070

al-Nuʿmān b. ʿAbd al-Salām, 450


al-Nuʿmān b. Muqarrī, 723, 735
Pakistan, 564 n.
Palestine, 724, 1187
Parthians, 1198 n.
Persia, 159, 835, 863, 1419 n.
Persians, 1089, 1171

Qaballyyah, 869, 870, 945 n.
Qabilah, 272, 621, 1245
Qabilah b. Dhuwailb, 817, 1253
Qabilah b. Halb, 267, 1067
Qabilah b. Hurayth, 1231
Qabilah b. Waqqās, 113
Qadarlyyah, 1314
Qā'if al-Thaqaffiyah, 897
Qailah, 872, 1353
Qais, 619-23, 777 n., 1147, 1203, 1204, 1348, 1431
Qais al-Anṣārīyyah, 1083
Qais b. ‘Abbād, 735, 1270, 1309
Qāis b. Abī Gharazah, 944
Qais b. al-Ḥārith, 604
Qais b. al-Nu‘mān, 1047
Qais b. ‘Alqamah, 1305
Qais b. ‘Amr, 333
Qais b. ‘Āshim, 93
Qais b. Bishr al-Taghibī, 1140
Qais b. Kathīr, 1034 n.
Qais b. Sa‘d, 574 n., 1430
Qais b. Ṭalq b. ‘Alī, 44, 165, 377, 644
al-Qa‘nabī, 184, 219, 357, 453, 537, 562, 690, 795, 1318, 1357, 1433
Qanṭūrī, 1198,
al-Qa‘qā, 77
Qarashi, 1004
Qaraṣḥah b. Ka‘b, 772
al-Qariḥā, 782
al-Qarn al-Aswad, 539
al-Qāsim, 23, 70, 75, 323, 487 n., 589, 602, 752, 915, 1214
al-Qāsim al-Jarmī, 145
al-Qāsim b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān, 998
al-Qāsim b. Maṣrūr, 74
al-Qāsim b. Muhammad, 78, 183, 291 n., 331 n., 333 n., 622, 625 n., 629 n., 638 n.
al-Qāsim b. Rabī‘ah, 1277
al-Qāsim b. Yazīd, 1227
al-Qas‘ma‘ī, 1142
al-Qasṭallānī, 925 n.
al-Qaswā, 502, 504-06, 773
Qatādah, 7, 24, 42, 49, 50, 69, 70, 72, 85, 98, 120 n., 168, 181, 182, 200, 202, 212, 311 n., 321, 352, 375, 384, 395, 571, 591, 656 n., 659 n., 716, 788, 797, 798, 817, 818, 848, 893, 895, 925 n., 932 n., 951, 981, 996, 997, 1004, 1027, 1049, 1057, 1101 n., 1104, 1105, 1107, 1119, 1120 n., 1133, 1179, 1192, 1203, 1217, 1229 n., 1244, 1251, 1265, 1333, 1343, 1361, 1412, 1413, 1432
Qatādah b. Mahān, 679 n.
Qāṭān b. Qabīsah, 1096
Qaza‘ah, 582, 659, 719
Qinnisrin, 752, 1151
Qu‘aiqī‘ān, 496
Qubā, 10, 236, 272 n., 542, 689, 1171 n.
Qudaim, 828
Qudmāmah b. Wābirah, 271
Quds, 870
al-Qudūm, 625
Quff, 1241
Qumair, 70, 77
Qunba‘ah, 1113
Qurād, 746
Quraisīsh, 507, 508 n., 511, 533, 538 n., 580, 672, 742, 743, 770, 771 n., 774, 821, 835, 849-51, 857, 858, 932, 933, 1079, 1090, 1091, 1093, 1218, 1333, 1356, 1394 n., 1425
Sunan Abu Dawud

1202 n., 1206 n., 1207 n., 1208 n., 1210 n., 1211 n., 1212 n., 1213 n., 1214 1215 n., 1216 n., 1217 n., 1218 n., 1219 n., 1220 n., 1221 n., 1222 n., 1230 n., 1231 n., 1232, 1241 n., 1242 n., 1244 n., 1245 n., 1246 n., 1247 n., 1248 n., 1251 n., 1260 n., 1273 n., 1293 n., 1294 n., 1295, 1297, 1300, 1302, 1303, 1306 n., 1310 n., 1312 n., 1313 n., 1315 n., 1318 n., 1319 n., 1321 n., 1322, 1324 n., 1326 n., 1327 n., 1328, 1329 n., 1330 n., 1331 n., 1334, 1335, 1341 n., 1349, 1352 n., 1364 n., 1376 n., 1380 n., 1385 n., 1388 n., 1390 n., 1393, 1395 n., 1403, 1404 n., 1409 n., 1410 n., 1414 n., 1416 n., 1418 n., 1420 n., 1423 n., 1433 n., 1436 n., 1440 n., 1452

Qurrah b. Khalid, 314, 1298
Qurrah b. Tamim, 1383
al-Qurtubl, 638 n.. 640 n.
Qutaibah, 17, 34, 69, 198, 235, 316, 377, 385, 448, 965, 1055, 1227 n., 1126, 1357
Quzaḥ, 513

R

Rabīb b. Ḥudhaifah, 822
al-Rabadahah, 1425, 1426
Rabīb, 1379
Rabīb b. al-Ḥārith, 1305
Rabīb b. al-Walid, 699, 1367
Rabīb b. Rabī‘, 739
Rabīb b. Zaid, 404
al-Rabl‘, 824, 1409
al-Rabl‘ah, 27 n., 79, 158, n., 198, 447, 448, 504, 552, 616, 742, 743, 784 n., 821, 1025, 1026, 1046, 1284, 1303
Rabl‘ah al-Jarashl, 197
Rabl‘ah b. Abl ‘Abd al-Rahmān, 44 n., 543, 869
Rabl‘ah b. al-Hudair, 543
Rabl‘ah b. Ka‘b al-Aslami, 347
Rabl‘ah b. Shaibān, 374
Rabl‘ah b. Yazīd, 41
al-Rabl‘ b. Anas, 1163
al-Rabl‘ b. Khālid al-Ḍabbāl, 1302
al-Rabl‘ b. Saburah, 475, 554
al-Rabl‘ b. Sulaimān al-Mu‘adhdhin, 210, 1025
Rāfi‘ b. ‘Amir al-Muzāri, 519
Rāfi‘ b. Khaddij, 111, 331 n., 548 n., 793, 829, 963-67, 968 n., 974, 975, 1136, 1223, 1266, 1269
Rāfi‘ b. Makith, 1426, 1427
Rāfi‘ b. Rifā‘ah, 975
Rāfi‘ b. Simān, 605
Rahbah, 29
Ramībah, 724 n.
Index

al-Raqqa, 241
Rāshid b. Sa'd, 819
Rawāhah, 1005
al-Rawḥā, 456, 1195
Rawḥ b. al-Musayyab, 341
Rawḥ b. Dīnār, 1266
Rawḥ b. ‘Ubādah, 284, 1105

Rib'ī b. Hirāsh, 636, 641, 1429
Rifā'ah b. Rāfī', 197, 198, 220
Rijā' b. Haiwah, 1298
al-Riyāshī, 416
Rizq b. Sa'id b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān, 706
Robson, James, 1198 n., 1451 n.
Romans, 696, 1200 n., 1301
Rome, 915, 1131, 1187 n.
al-Rubayyi', 31, 32, 1289, 1371
Rūdis, 915
Rukānah b. ‘Abd Yazīd, 595, 596
Rukbah, 1026
Ruqaiqah, 6, 760 n.
Rawaifi' b. Thābit, 9, 578, 753

S
Sabā, 860
al-Ṣa'b b. Jaththām, 877
Saburah b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz b. ‘Abd al-Rabl', 872
Sa'd. 25 n., 205, 264, 542, 743, 884, 890, 963, 964, 1087, 1129, 1214. 1260, 1313, 1346, 1440 n.
Sa'dān b. Yahyā, 1223
Sa'd b. Abī Waqqās. 44 n., 138, 215 n., 266, 313 n., 373 n., 385, 387 n., 465, 541, 615, 764, 778, 805, 836, 899 n., 954, 1071 n., 1170 n., 1182, 1210, 1304, 1305, 1312, 1428
Sa'd b. al-Rabl'. 816
Sa'd b. Hishām, 351, 354, 914
Sa'd b. Ibrāhīm, 428
Sa'd b. Jubair, 725
Sa'd b. Khawlāh, 627, 896
Sa'd b. Mālik, 1099, 1305, 1417
Sa'd b. Mu'ādh, 160, 705, 850, 883, 943 n., 1035
Sa'd b. Sa'id, 333
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sa'd b. 'Ubaidah</td>
<td>2 n., 385, 386 n., 441, 882 n., 938, 1082, 1231, 1271, 1431</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'd b. 'Ubaidah</td>
<td>885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'd b. Yazid</td>
<td>571</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sadaqah</td>
<td>788</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şaf'ir</td>
<td>147 n., 468-72, 475, 476, 493, 495-97, 499, 501-03, 526 n., 534, 1200 n., 1326</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Şaftah</td>
<td>1068</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Safina</td>
<td>1070, 1103, 1303, 1304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Safina Abū 'Abd al-Rahmān</td>
<td>1060</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafiyah</td>
<td>24, 313, 314, 433, 494, 531, 532 n., 547, 569, 590, 681, 848, 849, 872, 893, 931, 1011 n., 1012, 1049, 1057, 1144, 1148, 1225, 1293, 1359, 1390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafiyah Umm Ṭalḥat al-Ṭalḥāt</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafwan</td>
<td>44 n., 176, 577, 678 n., 865, 905 n., 1225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafwān b. 'Abd Allah</td>
<td>1225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafwan b. 'Isa</td>
<td>1364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafwan b. Muḥammad</td>
<td>793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafwan b. Umayyah</td>
<td>1010, 1066, 1224, 1429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şafwān b. Ya'lā</td>
<td>1011, 1118, 1285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şahīh</td>
<td>98 n., 181 n., 195 n., 247 n., 451, 505 n., 548 n., 669, 915, 928, 1271 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şahīb Muslim</td>
<td>1 n., 13 n., 18 n., 19 n., 20 n., 24 n., 26 n., 36 n., 38 n., 46 n., 436 n., 438 n., 446 n., 982 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sahl</td>
<td>1267-69, 1416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sahl al-Anṣārīyyah</td>
<td>600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sahl b. Abī Ḥathmah</td>
<td>179, 321, 322, 420, 429, 854, 855, 957, 1266-68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sahl b. Abī 'Umarah</td>
<td>1366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sahl b. al-Ḥanzalīyyah</td>
<td>127, 233, 692, 707</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sahl b. Hunayf</td>
<td>51, 1090</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sahl b. Muʿādh</td>
<td>691, 727, 1339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Sā'ib</td>
<td>1350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Sā'ib b. Farrūkh</td>
<td>702</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id</td>
<td>125, 182, 200, 441, 637, 745, 796, 826, 861, 995, 1027, 1107, 1131, 1384, 1394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id Abī Shujā</td>
<td>967</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id al-Jarīl</td>
<td>1357</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id b. Abū al-'Azīz</td>
<td>92, 861, 1149, 1351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id b. Abū al-Rahmān b. Abzā</td>
<td>84, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id b. Abī al-Ḥasan</td>
<td>716, 1349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Said b. Abī 'Arūbah</td>
<td>188, 938, 951, 984, 1027, 1105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id b. Abī Ṣa'daqaq</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id b. Abī Sa'id</td>
<td>170, 219, 385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id b. Abī Waqqāṣ</td>
<td>391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sa'Id b. al-'Āṣ</td>
<td>297, 326, 758, 1146</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Index

Sa'id b. al-Hasan, 630
Sa'id b. 'Amr al-Qurashi, 1154
Sa'id b. Bashir, 272
Sa'id Ghazwan, 182
Sa'id b. Iẏas al-Baṣrī, 1125 n.
Sa'id b. Minā, 958
Sa'id b. Sa'id, 1399
Sa'id b. 'Ubaidah, 923
Sa'id b. Ya'qūb al-Ṭāliqānī, 905, 967, 1276
Sa'id b. Yarbūʿ al-Makhzūmī, 744
Sa'id b. Yasar al-Anṣārī, 1155, 1156
Sa'id b. Zaid, 873, 899 n., 1189, 1304, 1305, 1337, 1359
Sa'id b. Ziyād b. Shubāihat al-Ḥanaflī, 230
Ṣakhir, 871, 872
Ṣakhir al-Ghāmidī, 721
Ṣakhir b. 'Abd Allah b. Buraidah, 1394
Ṣakhir b. Wadā'ah, 721
al-Sakhtiyānī, 1075
Salamah, 85, 446 n., 697, 749, 1084, 1092, 1414
Salamah b. al-Akwā', 110, 166, 279, 280, 632, 705, 768, 1399
Salamah b. al-Fadl, 319
Salamah b. al-Muḥammad b. Ṣalāḥ b. Ṣalāḥ, 661, 1150, 1231, 1244, 1245
Salamah b. Hishām, 378
Salamah b. Kuhaul, 84, 355, 447, 513, 1335, 1408
Salamah b. Ṣakhir al-Bayāḍī, 597
Salamah b. Shabib, 491
Salām b. Abī Muṭṭī, 798
Salām b. Miskin, 1217, 1372
Ṣāliḥ, 315
Ṣāliḥ b. Dirham, 1199
Ṣāliḥ b. Kaisān, 601, 763 n., 1199, 1296
Ṣāliḥ b. Khawwāt, 322
Ṣāliḥ b. Muḥammad b. Zā'idah, 755
Ṣāliḥ b. Rūmān, 565
Ṣālim, 70, 109, 145, 291 n., 315, 487 n., 549, 550, 588, 809, 902, 977 n., 1106 n., 1111, 1447, 1448
Ṣālim 'Abd Allah b. 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz, 409, 638 n., 755, 965
Sālim Abū al-Naḍr; 727
Sālim al-Aftās; 1207
Sālim al-Makki; 979
Sālim b. ‘Abd Allah; 77, 85 n., 313 n., 483, 625 n.
Sālim b. Abī al-Ja‘d; 1381
Sālim b. Abī al-Ja‘dah; 1388
Sālim b. ‘Ubaid; 1398
Sālmān, 2, 389, 1062, 1073, 1307, 1308 n.
Sālmān al-Fārisī; 61 n.
Sālmān b. ‘Āmir; 646
Sālmān b. Rabī‘ah; 475, 816
al-Ṣalt b. ‘Abd Allah b. Nawfāl b. ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib; 1174
Sam‘ān b. Mushannaj; 949
Samarqand; 1192 n.
al-Ṣammā, 665
Sammāk b. al-Walid al-Ḥanaflī; 1128
Ṣarīf; 468
Sarmah b. Qais al-Anṣārlī, 632
Sarrāb, 518
Ṣa‘ṣa‘ah b. Sawḥān; 286, 1394
Saudah; 70, 572, 573, 615, 616 n., 742, 1051
Sawwād b. Dāwūd al-Muzānī al-Sairāfī, 1147
Scythians; 1200 n.
Shabbīr Aḥmad, Maulānā; 45 n.
Shabtīb, 419 n., 450
al-Ṣaḥīḥ, 15 n., 37, 70, 77, 85 n., 154 n., 202, 231 n., 235 n., 249 n., 266, 291 n., 471 n., 555, 600 n., 620, 629 n., 650 n., 659 n., 661 n., 796 n., 843 n., 908, 945 n., 972 n., 1001, 1023, 1025 n., 1108 n., 1109 n., 1229 n., 1233, 1251 n., 1271 n., 1284, 1285 n., 1440
Shaddād b. Aws; 171, 650, 791
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Index</th>
<th>1521</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

Shahr b. Hawsbab, 1116
Shâh Walîlûtâh, 45 n.
Shaibah, 1144
Shaibah b. Jubair, 30, 486, 494, 590, 742
Shaibah b. Naṣṣâh, 1119
Shaib n., 650
Shaibân al-Qatbâni, 9
Shaibân b. Umayyah, 9
al-Shaibâni, 969 n.
Shaitân, 1379
al-Shâitham b. Shaft, 1131
al-Shâmil, 1114 n., 1118 n.
Shaqqî, 1120, 1121
Shaqqî b. Salamah, 29, 50, 83, 150
al-Shârid, 932, 1030
al-Shârid b. Sawaid, 1252, 1353
Sharîk, 22, 25, 70, 246, 263, 933, 968, 1018, 1127, 1174
Sharîk b. Ḥanbal, 1077
Sharîk b. Sahmâ, 607, 608
Sharîq al-Hawzâni, 1411
al-Shawkânî, 276 n., 672 n., 1015 n.
Shîb b. Ḍâlalâh, 1379
Shîb al-Hudâ, 1379
Shîbî b. 'Alâ', 640
Shihâb, 1008, 1379
Shu'âib, 1172, 1201, 1351
Shu'âib b. Abî Ḥamzâh, 104, 150, 196, 214, 404, 597, 621, 715, 765, 886, 1380
Shu'ābī b. Zuraiq al-Ṭā'īfī, 283


Shubaibah, 850

Shurāḥbīl, 1111, 1194, 1346

Shurahbīl b. al-Simt, 752, 792 n.

Shurahbīl b. Aws, 1253

Shurahbīl b. Ḥajib, 1415

Shurahbīl b. Ḥasanah, 564

Shuraisy, 286, 600 n., 818, 876, 983 n., 1010 n., 1109 n.

Shuraisy b. Ḥanīf, 14, 38 n., 342, 1378

Shuraisy b. ‘Ubaid, 63

Shutair b. Shāki b. Ḥumaid, 401

Silīfin, 1111, 1181 n.; battle of, 1309 n

Sīkat al-Mirbad, 907

Simāk, 339, 637, 642, 717, 1220, 1225, 1234, 1323

Simāk b. Ḥarb, 953

Sirat al-Nabi, 311 n.

Sirīn, 79

Sirīmah b. al-Akwj, 811

Subai, 1150

Suburāh, 627, 628

Subai b. Khālid, 1178

Subayy b. Ma‘bad, 474

Suffah, people of, 972

Sufyān, 320, 344, 394, 411, 423, 428, 978, 981, 982, 1047, 1062, 1168, 1191, 1230, 1253, 1275, 1296, 1299, 1304, 1364


Sufyān b. ‘Abd Allah al-Thaqafl, 419

Sufyān b. al-Ḥakam, 40

Sufyān b. Aṣid al-Ḥaḍramī, 1384

Sufyān b. Ḥusain, 460, 977 n.

Sufyān b. ‘Uyaynah, 71, 114, 178, 723, 982 n.

Sufyān b. Wahb, 419

Ṣuhaib, 235, 905 n.

Suhail, 75, 416, 773, 901, 905 n., 1025, 1026, 1156, 1253, 1409, 1424

Suhail b. Abi Ṣāliḥ al-Ḥumaidī, 69, 1093, 1436
Index

Suhail b. al-Ba'idâ', 905
Suhail b. 'Amr al-Quraishî, 549
Suhail b. Ḥunaîf, 396
Suhaimîh, 595
Sulaik al-Ghaṭafânî, 287
Sulaim, 688
Sulaim b. 'Āmir, 771
Sulaim b. Muṭair, 835
Sulaimân, 12, 61, 152, 159, 248, 393, 424, 445, 467, 503, 505, 506, 569, 633, 861, 920, 1392, 1416
Sulaimân al-A'mash, 375, 1303
Sulaimân al-Mahrî, 1038 n.
Sulaimân al-Yâshkurî, 327, 1381
Sulaimân b. 'Abd al-Hamîd, 389
Sulaimân b. 'Abd al-Rahmân al-Dimashqî, 637
Sulaimân b. Abî 'Abd Allah, 541
Sulaimân b. Abî al-Ḥâwas, 521, 522, 946
Sulaimân b. Arqam, 904 n., 935
Sulaimân b. Bilâl, 447, 1245
Sulaimân b. Buraida, 722, 723
Sulaimân b. Dâwûd, 22, 125, 301, 394, 1020, 1091
Sulaimân b. Ḥârb. 32, 176, 483 n. 940, 993, 1054
Sulaimân b. Kathîr. 71, 74, 421, 452
Sulaimân b. Mûsâ, 105, 916, 1022, 1270, 1372
Sulaimân b. Rabî'âh, 446
Sulaimân b. Šurad, 1340
Sulaimân b. Yaṣîr. 44 n., 68, 97, 331 n., 487 n., 599, 622, 966, 1269
al-Sulami al-Mawâzî, 1120 n., 1173, 1369 n.
Sumayy, 72, 77
al-Šunâbihî, 396
Sunan Abû Dâwûd, 70 n., 1002 n., 1017 n., 1114 n., 1192 n., 1194 n.
Sunan al-Nasâ'î, 937 n., 959 n.
al-Suqya, 1055
Surâqah b. Mâlik b. Ju'sham al-Mudâji, 470, 475, 504, 1419
Sûriyâh, 1243
al-Suwaídâ', 835
Suwaîd b. Ghaflah, 412, 413, 445, 1068
Suwaîd b. Ḥanzâlah, 925
Suwaîd b. Muqarrin, 1427
Suwaîd b. Qais, 947
Suwaîd b. Târiq, 1087
Suwaîd b. Waḥb, 1339
Suyūṭī, 552 n., 1198 n., 1252 n., 1321 n., 1399
T
al-Tabrānī, 33 n.
Tabūk, 36, 132, 313, 314, 319, 862 n., 872, 874, 875, 941 n., 1075, 1150; battle of, 316, 554 n., 594, 608 n., 777 n., 780, 1292
al-Ṭahāwī, 33 n., 335 n., 422 n., 755 n., 783 n.
al-Ṭā'īf, 22 n., 117, 276, 419 n., 481 n., 488, 495 n., 493 n., 520 n., 521, 539, 747 n., 858 n., 871, 878, 1026 n., 1111, 1260 n., 1373; battle of, 540 n.
Taimā, 861
al-Taimī, 72, 400
Taimiyyyah, 543 n.
Ṭalḥah, 32, 34, 471, 676, 825, 841, 1304, 1425
Ṭalḥah b. ʿAbd Allah b. ʿAwf, 909
Ṭalḥah b. al-Barāʾ, 897
Ṭalḥah b. Muṣarrīf, 32, 1119, 1428
Ṭalḥah b. ʿUbad Allah, 102, 177, 261, 543, 777, 923, 979
Ṭalḥah b. ʿUmar, 486
Ṭalḥah b. Yaḥyā, 943 n.
Ṭālīb, 821 n.
Ṭalq b. Ghannām, 199
Ṭalq b. Ḥabīb, 13, 70
Tamīmah al-Ḥujainī, 596
Tamīm al-Dārī, 222, 279, 823, 1024, 1203, 1331 n., 1374
Tamīm b. Salamah, 183
al-Tanʿīm, 468, 469, 529, 532, 745
Ṭāriq b. ʿAbd al-Rahmān al-Qarashi, 975
Ṭāriq b. al-Muraqqaʾ, 563
Ṭāriq b. Shihāb, 274, 275
Ṭawāf al-Ifḍah, 532 n., 534 n.
Ṭawāf al-Ziyārah, 524 n., 525 n.
Ṭawāf Qūḍām, 531 n.
Ṭawūs, 37 n., 158 n., 194, 216, 313 n., 333 n., 337, 340 n., 457, 471 n., 550 n., 593, 600 n., 932 n., 963, 990 n., 1006 n., 1074 n., 1108 n., 1135, 1185, 1225, 1274, 1282, 1318
al-Ṭayyalsī, 472 n.
Ṭayy, 386 n., 517, 561 n.
Thābit, 160, 678, 1057, 1116, 1169, 1217, 1362
Thābit al-Burānī, 49, 143, 1401
Thābit b. al-Dāhāk, 925, 939
Thābit b. Qais b. Ghusn, 415, 688, 816, 1090
Thābit b. Qais b. Shammās, 600, 1090, 1103
Thābit b. 'Ubad, 266
Thābit b. 'Umārah, 202
Thābit b. Wad'ah, 1069
Thābit Jarîr b. Ḥāzim, 289
Tha'labah b. 'Abd Allah b. Abū Su'air, 423
Tha'labah b. Abī Malik, 1032
Tha'labah b. Ḍubai'ah, 1309
Tha'labah b. Zahdara, 326
ThanTyyat al-Wada', 714, 780
Thaqif, 41, 365, 386 n., 539, 540 n., 858, 859, 871, 878 n., 940, 1087
Thawbān, 23, 35, 266, 431, 600, 650, 651, 790, 902, 1170, 1180, 1196, 1408 n.
Thawr, 463, 540, 1403
Thawr b. Yazīd, 24, 665 n
Thawr b. Zaid, 870
Thawrī, 43, 51, 85 n., 86 n., 103 n., 120 n., 151 n., 154 n., 206 n., 209 n., 231 n.,
249 n., 284 n., 297 n., 299 n., 321, 326, 327 n., 370, 426, 427, 429, 443, 447, 471 n.,
487 n., 495 n., 537 n., 550 n., 554 n., 559, 565 n., 569 n., 601 n., 653 n., 659 n.,
661 n., 672 n., 679 n., 682 n., 760 n., 761 n., 789 n., 824 n., 869 n., 877 n., 901,
902, 926 n., 927 n., 969 n., 980 n., 986 n., 1035 n., 1010 n., 1071 n., 1108 n., 1184,
1185, 1246 n., 1437
Thumāmah b. 'Abd Allah b. Anas, 406
Thumāmah b. Uthāl, 741
al-Ṭībi, 67 n.
Tigris, 1198
al-Tirmidhi, 27 n., 39 n., 65 n., 163 n., 185 n., 193 n., 199 n., 253 n., 334 n., 378 n.,
480 n., 524 n., 582 n., 635 n., 652 n., 731 n., 901 n., 913 n., 919 n., 934 n., 962
n., 1004 n., 1019 n., 1034 n., 1035 n., 1117 n., 1134 n., 1181 n., 1224 n., 1244 n.,
1252 n., 1270 n., 1276 n., 1408 n.
Torah, 1240-43, 1403
Transoxania, 1192 n.
Trench, battle of, 883
Tripoli, 9 n.
Ṭufāwah (tribe), 583
al-Ṭufāwī, 584
Tū'mah, 315
Turks, 1197
Tūstār, 1178, 1378

U
'Ubadah b. al-Sāmit, 111, 113, 122, 209, 210, 250, 286, 372, 598, 599, 689, 897, 901,
951, 972, 1187, 1202, 1231, 1317, 1395, 1404
'Ubaid, 116, 334
'Ubaid Abī al-Ḥasan, 1072
'Ubaidah al-Salmānī, 1333
Sunan Abu Dawud

'Ubaidah b. al-Ḥārith, 738

'Ubaid Allah, 96, 140, 170, 191, 273, 323, 422, 532, 558 n., 603, 616, 621, 763 n., 766, 965, 966, 1416, 1433

'Ubaid Allah al-Khaḍwānī, 1156

'Ubaid Allah b. 'Abd al-Lahūn, 11, 83, 259, 326, 331 n., 1080

'Ubaid Allah b. 'Abd al-Lahūn b. 'Abd al-Lahūn, 298, 627

'Ubaid Allah b. Abl Bakr b. Anas, 652

'Ubaid Allah b. Abl Nahlah, 385 n.

'Ubaid Allah b. Abl. b. al-Khiyar, 428

'Ubaid Allah b. al-Nāfis, 309

'Ubaid Allah b. al-Qibṭīyyah, 1192 n.

'Ubaid Allah b. Amr, 1451

'Ubaid Allah b. Ayyāsh, 886

'Ubaid Allah b. Muslim al-Qurashī, 669 n.

'Ubaid Allah b. Salmān, 781

'Ubaid Allah b. Sulaim, 1360

'Ubaid Allah b. 'Umar, 448, 482, 521, 977 n.

'Ubaid Allah b. Yazīd, 385

'Ubaid Allah b. Ziyād, 1328

'Ubaidat al-Salmānī, 1206, 1336

'Ubaid b. al-Ḥasan, 217

'Ubaid b. Firūz, 787

'Ubaid b. Jurayj, 465

'Ubaid b. Khālid al-Sulami, 700, 885

'Ubaid b. Rif'ā'ah al-Zuraqī, 1399

'Ubaid b. Thumāmah al-Murādī, 47

'Ubaid b. 'Umar, 436, 456, 1430


Ubnā, 724

al-Ubullah, 1199

al-'Udhain, 475

 Uhud, 237, 465, 704, 705, 793, 892, 893, 896, 899, 900, 906 n., 914, 916, 1150, 1335, 1307, 1315, 1317, 1419; battle of, 351, 699, 717, 737, 759 n., 810, 816, 1053; Day of, 834, 1228

Ukaidir, 862

Ulaibah, 872

Ūlat al-Jaish, 83

Umāmah b. Abl Najlīyah, 6, 90

'Umair, 86, 302, 761, 809

'Umair al-Thaqafī, 865

'Umair b. Usāmah, 273 n.

'Umair, Dhū Marwān, 859
Index

‘Umais, 75, 396, 457, 502
Umāmah, 234, 568, 1175
Umāmah al-Taiml, 455
Umāmah b. Zaid, 510
‘Umārah b. Buwāibah, 112, 284
‘Umārah b. Ghazlīyah, 1346
‘Umārah b. Gharāb, 67
‘Umārah b. Khuzaimah, 1024
‘Umārah b. ‘Umar, 1002
‘Umārah b. ‘Uqba, 745
‘Umar b. ‘Abd Allah, 627
‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, 103, 226, 266, 297 n., 311, 314 n., 537, 554, 563 n., 570 n., 634, 659 n., 836, 840, 904 n., 914 n., 963 n., 1101 n., 1108 n., 1194 n., 1222 n., 1228, 1229 n., 1242 n., 1285 n., 1296, 1297 n., 1300, 1368, 1369, 1415
‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Awf, 937
‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-Wāhid, 475, 1431
‘Umar b. Abī al-Hākam, 670
‘Umar b. Abū Salamah, 165, 1065, 1230 n., 1253
‘Umar b. al-Sā‘ib, 1423
‘Umar b. Khaldah, 1000
‘Umar b. Marzūq, 472 n.
‘Umar b. Mu‘ṭab, 588
‘Umar b. ‘Ubaid, 486
‘Umar b. ‘Ubaid Allah b. Mā‘mar, 485, 727
‘Umar b. Ya‘lā, 406
‘Umar Yaḥyā al-Bahrānī, 1050
Umayyads, 1302 n., 1303 n.
Umayyah, 81, 206
Umayyah b. Khalaf, 369 n., 742, 743
Umayyah b. Khālid, 931
Umayyah b. Makshī, 1064
Umm Abān, 1441
Umm 'Abd Allah, 1383
Umm al-'Alā', 880
Umm al-Dardā', 1187
Umm al-Faḍl, 207, 638, 672
Umm al-Ḥakam, 846, 1406
Umm al-Hudhail, 79
Umm al-Ḥusain, 484
Umm al-Mundhar, 108
Umm al-Qur'ān, 209
'Ummān, 1302
Umm 'Askīl, 627
Umm Bujaid, 437
Umm Bussah, 80
Umm Farwah, 11
Umm Ghuṭaif, 1283
Umm Ḥabīl, 931
Umm Ḥabīlah, 44 n., 69, 71, 73, 74, 79, 80, 95, 328, 333, 547, 558, 564, 624, 709, 931
Umm Ḥakīm, 627
Umm Ḥānī b. Abū Ṭālib, 339, 663, 676, 772, 1165
Umm Ḥarām, 160, 688, 689
Umm Ḥiibīn, 936 n.
Umm Hisbām bint Ḥārithah b. al-Nu'mān, 284
Umm Ja'ān, 1365 n.
Umm Jaḥdar al-'Āmirīyyah, 100
Umm Khālid, 1126
Umm Khallad, 688
Umm Kulthūm, 897, 906, 1133, 1371
Umm Kurz al-Ka'biyyah, 797
Umm Ma'qīl, 526, 527
Umm Mubashshir, 1264, 1265
Umm Muḥammad, 1364
Umm Qais, 95, 97, 242, 1088
Umm Rukānāh, 591
Umm Rūmān, 1374
Umm Sa'd, 441, 826
Umm Salamah, 59, 63, 68, 80, 94, 98, 99, 139, 156 n., 168, 169, 267, 334, 335, 384, 406, 451, 495, 514, 530, 547, 549, 550, 569, 627, 640, 654, 675, 682, 683 n., 784, 887, 888, 1011, 1016, 1017, 1045, 1049, 1101, 1103, 1116, 1117, 1120, 1126, 1144, 1145, 1147, 1148, 1154, 1191, 1192, 1330, 1333, 1373, 1401, 1413
Umm Sharīk, 619
Umm Sulaim, 59, 160, 172, 689, 702, 757, 848
Umm 'Umārah, 24
Index

Umm Waraqah, 155, 156
Umm Yahya, 1023
Umm Ya'rub, 1160
Umm Yasir, 392 n.
'Umrah, 284, 466-78, 480-93, 681, 1005
Unais al-Aslami, 1239
'Uqail, 59, 359, 452, 1149, 1296
'Uqail b. Khalid, 1255
'Uqba, 1371
'Uqba b. Abi Mu'ait, 1452
'Uqba b. al-Harith, 1023
'Uqba b. Malik, 726
'Uqba b. Muslim, 120
'Uqba b. Rafi', 1397
'Urainah, 838, 1216
al-'Urs b. 'Amirat al-Kindi, 1209
'Urwah b. Abi al-Ja'd al-Bariqf, 961, 962
'Urwah b. Mughirah, 37
'Urwah b. 'Amir al-Qurashi, 1098
'Urwah b. Mas'ud, 773, 1306
'Urwah b. Mudarris al-Tai, 517
'Urwah b. Muhammad b. al-Sadaf, 1340
'Urwah b. Ruwaim, 341
'Urwa al-Muzani, 43
'Urwa al-Qasim, 294 n.
'Uryan mosque, 134
Usbadhiyfn, 864
'Usfân, 320, 475, 659
Usaid, 627
Usaid b. Abü Usaid, 892
Usaid b. Hujair, 64, 82, 160, 580, 1441
Usaid b. Zuhair, 966
Usairah, 392 n.
Usamah, 484, 505, 510, 511, 613, 724, 1226
Usamah b. Akhadafi, 1378
Usamah b. 'Amir, 273 n.
Usāmah b. Sharlkh. 534, 1083
‘Uṣayyah, 379
‘Uṭārid, 277, 1130
‘Utbah, 615, 742, 1159
‘Utbah b. ‘Abd al-Sulāmī, 706, 787, 1127
‘Utbah b. Farqād, 1130
‘Utbah b. Rabī‘ah, 738
‘Utbah b. Shaddād, 1361
‘Uthmān b. Kulaib, 93, 94
‘Uthmān al-Batti, 1299
‘Uthmān b. Abl al-‘Āṣ, 117, 140, 659 n., 672 n., 859, 903, 1091
‘Uthmān b. Abl Ḥazīm, 871
‘Uthmān b. Abl Shaibah, 472 n., 1239
‘Uthmān b. Abl Sulaimān, 862
‘Uthmān b. Abū ‘Atkāh, 1392
‘Uthmān b. ‘Aṭā’, 271
‘Uthmān b. Ḥakīm, 668, 1130 n.
‘Uthmān b. Shammās, 909
‘Uthmān b. Ṭalḥāh al-Ḥajābī, 537, 538
‘Uthmān b. ‘Umar, 453 469
‘Uwaimir b. Aṣghar al-‘Ajlānī, 605, 610
‘Uyainah, 607, 1260
‘Uyainah b. Abd al-Raḥmān, 903
‘Uyainah b. Badr al-Fazārī, 1333
‘Uyainah b. Ḥiṣn, 427
‘Uzainah, 1043

Wābiṣah, 176, 242, 1183
Wabrah, 523
Waddān, 1356
Wādī al-Qurā. 670, 754, 861 n., 874, 875
Wahb, 570, 1149, 1234, 1403
Yahyā b. Ḥabib, 1429
Yahyā b. Ḥassān, 1367
Yahyā b. Kathīr al-‘Anbarī, 1298
Yahyā b. Ma‘īn, 44 n., 73, 80, 338, 374, 652, 948, 999 n., 1323, 1381
Yahyā b. Rāshid, 1021
Yahyā b. Sa‘īd, 72, 193 n., 274, 284, 323, 333, 334, 353, 412, 448, 592, 680, 748, 811, 935, 988, 1267
Yahyā b. Sa‘īd al-Qattān, 43, 517, 929
Yahyā b. Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āṣ, 622
Yahyā b. Subaih, 906
Yahyā b. ‘Ubayd Allah, 929
Yahyā b. ‘Uthmān, 1359
Yahyā b. Yahyā al-Ghassāni, 1187
Yahyā b. Ya‘mur, 55, 1315, 1316
Yahyā b. Yazīd al-Ḥannānī, 311
Ya‘ish b. Ṭikhfat al-Ghifārī, 1400
Ya‘jūj, 747
Ya‘lā, 412, 495, 532, 1123
Ya‘la b. Ḥakīm, 966
Ya‘lā b. Mumallak, 384
Ya‘lā b. Munyāh, 701
Ya‘lā b. Shaddād b. Aws, 286
Ya‘lā b. Umayyah, 311, 481, 536, 701 n., 1286
Yamāmah, 644, 741, 847; battle of, 816
Ya‘qūb, 626, 849, 1108, 1116 n., 1117 n.
Ya‘qūb al-Ḥadramī, 1113
Ya‘qūb al-Qummī, 342
Ya‘qūb al-Sadūsī, 1277
Ya‘qūb b. al-Qa‘qā, 903
Ya‘qūb b. ‘Aṭā‘, 449
Ya‘qūb b. ‘Utbah, 1323
Ya‘qūt, 1327 n.
Ya‘qūtah, 427
Yasūr, 95, 336, 497, 1379
Yāsīn al-Zayyāt, 1224
Yazīd, 193, 560, 627, 823, 892, 1116, 1126, 1172 n., 1175, 1176, 1215, 1328, n., 1431
Yazīd Abū Khālid al-Dalānī, 49, 50
Yazīd al-Faqīr, 326
Yazīd al-Fūrisī, 201
Yazīd b. ‘Abd Allah, 364, 849
Yazīd b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ghufailat al-Sahmī, 1043
Yazīd b. ‘Abd Rabbihī, 693, 1044
Yazid b. Abī Ḥabīb, 992, 1008
Yazīd b. Abī Mālik, 31, 66
Yazīd b. Abī ‘Ubaid, 1092
Yazīd b. Abī Yazīd, 386 n., 522, 896 n.
Yazīd b. al-ʾAṣamm, 144, 1186
Yazīd b. al-Aswad, 151
Yazīd b. al-Sakan, 405 n., 618, 1089
Yazīd b. ʿĀmir, 152
Yazīd b. Aws, 891
Yazīd b. Ḥabīb, 916
Yazīd b. Harūn, 56, 472, 626, 1010
Yazīd b. Hurmuz, 760, 843
Yazīd b. Khālid, 1182
Yazīd b. Khumair al-Rahbi, 293, 876
Yazīd b. Muʿāwiya, 553, 1206 n.
Yazīd b. Namrān, 182
Yazīd b. Nuʿaim, 571, 1219, 1232
Yazīd b. ʾRūmān, 322
Yazīd b. ʿṢāliḥ, 116
Yazīd b. ʿShaibān, 510
Yazīd b. ʿṢulaiḥ, 116
Yazīd b. Ṭahmān, 1151
Yazīd b. ʿUmairah, 1295
Yazīd b. Yazīd, 144
Yazīd b. Ziyād, 193 n.
Yazīd b. Zurair, 375, 1105
Yazīd Dhū Miṣr, 787
al-Yazīdī, 1113
Yūbnā, 724
Yūbannah, 616
Yūnūs, 37, 54, 59, 71, 74, 83, 114, 148, 211, 221, 259, 280, 283, 325, 359, 552, 558, 610, 621, 681, 942, 957, 1149, 1218, 1245, 1301, 1396 n.
Yūnūs al-Aʿlī, 676
Yūnūs b. ʿUbaidurrahmān, 587
Yūnūs b. Muḥammad, 69
Yūnus b. “Usaid, 717, 1245
Yūsuf b. ʿAbd Allāh b. Salām, 278, 926, 1077, 1351
Yūsuf b. Mālik al-Makkī, 1003
Yūsuf b. Mihrān, 325
Yūsuf b. Muḥammad, 1090
Yūsuf b. Muḥammad, 795 n.
Yusairah, 392

Zabbān b. Fā'id, 691 n.
al-Zabīdī, 942, 1044
Zīd al-Ma'ād, 477 n., 603 n., 763 n., 778 n.
Zādhān, 1427
Zāfar b. al-Hudhaīl, 548 n.
al-Zāhīdi, 259
al-Zāhir, 1108 n.
Zāhirīs, 86 n., 250 n., 405 n., 477, 658 n., 1056, 1107 n., 1222 n.
Zaḥm b. Ma'bād, 917
Zaid, 333, 369, 429, 549, 613, 695, 1163, 1360
Zā'īdah, 898, 1191, 1225
Zaid al-Khail al-Ṭū'i, 1333
Zaid al-Ukālīn, 669
Zaid b. Abl al-Zarqā, 970
Zaid b. Abī Unaisah, 965
Zaid b. Abū 'Ayyāsh, 954
Zaid b. al-Dāthnāh, 736
Zaid b. al-Khāṭṭāb, 11, 1448
Zaid b. Arqa'm, 2, 242, 262 n., 276, 393, 488, 613, 614, 883, 908, 1327, 1385, 1390
Zaid b. Arštāt, 718
Zaid b. Aṣlam, 77, 262, 587, 652 n., 833, 1134. 1380
Zaid b. Ḥārithah, 613 n., 617, 747, 757, 843, 889
Zaid b. Khālid al-Juḥānī, 11, 44 n., 230, 447, 448, 695, 753, 786, 1020, 1095, 1155, 1156, 1239, 1247, 1414
Zaid b. Qunfudh, 168
Zaid b. Sūḥān, 446, 475
Zaid b. 'Umar, 906 n.
Zaid b. Usāmah, 273 n.
Zaid b. Wahb (al-Juḥānī), 1335, 1362
Zainab, 59, 72-75, 234, 345, 576, 603, 624, 625, 747, 831, 844, 845, 848 n., 875, 895 n., 1011 n., 1051, 1057, 1089, 1139, 1175, 1218, 1293, 1364, 1365, 1373, 1378
Zain al-'Ābidīn, 553 n.
Zakariyyā Abī 'Imrān, 1239
Zakariyyā b. Ishāq, 413
Zakariyyā b. Salīm, 1239
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Zam'ah</td>
<td>572, 573, 616 n., 742</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zamakhshari</td>
<td>275 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zamzam</td>
<td>1447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zaurū</td>
<td>280, 302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziaul Haq, Dr</td>
<td>955 n., 971 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zifār</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zinbā' Abū Rawb</td>
<td>1266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zirr b. Ḥubaish</td>
<td>29, 361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād</td>
<td>126, 221, 332, 345, 395, 425, 530, 621, 902, 1135, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyādat al-Kindī</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād b. 'Abd al-Rahmān</td>
<td>1349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād b. al-Ḥārīth al-Sudā‘ī</td>
<td>135, 427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād b. 'Ilāqah</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād b. Jāriyah al-Tamīmī</td>
<td>767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād b. Jubair</td>
<td>463, 953 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād b. Sa‘d</td>
<td>681, 775, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ziyād b. Sa‘d b. Dūmāraḥ al-Sulaml</td>
<td>1260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zubaid</td>
<td>375, 1407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zubaid al-'Anbarī</td>
<td>1026</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zubaidī</td>
<td>59, 150, 214, 404, 621, 819, 1149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zubair</td>
<td>63, 254, 255, 426, 445, 539, 733, 790 n., 841, 862, 872, 873, 1304, 1309 n., 1406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zubair b. ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib</td>
<td>465, 846, 878</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zubair b. ‘Adī</td>
<td>249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zubair b. al-'Awwām</td>
<td>593 n., 664 n., 836, 858, 1133, 1304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zubair b. Khuraq</td>
<td>89 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zubair b. Muḥammad</td>
<td>640</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zufār</td>
<td>970 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zughar</td>
<td>1204, 1205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuhair</td>
<td>71, 410, 411, 547, 966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuhair b. Mu‘āwiyyah</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zubair b. Muḥammad</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuhair b. Rāfī‘</td>
<td>965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuhair b. ‘Uṭḥmān</td>
<td>1057</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zur'ah b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān</td>
<td>194, 1378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zurārah b. Awfā</td>
<td>353, 354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Zurqānī</td>
<td>971 n.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>